



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

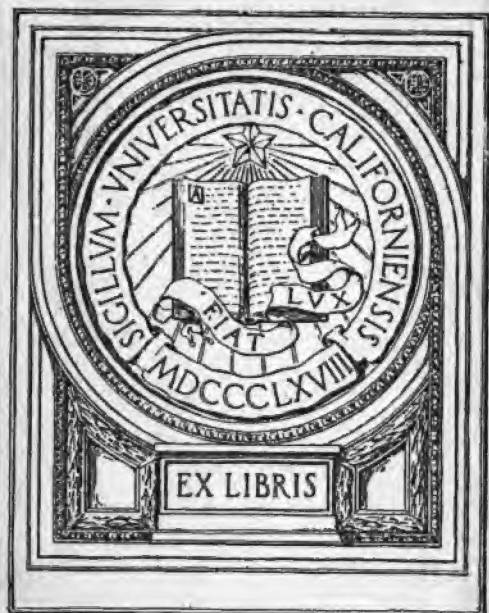
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





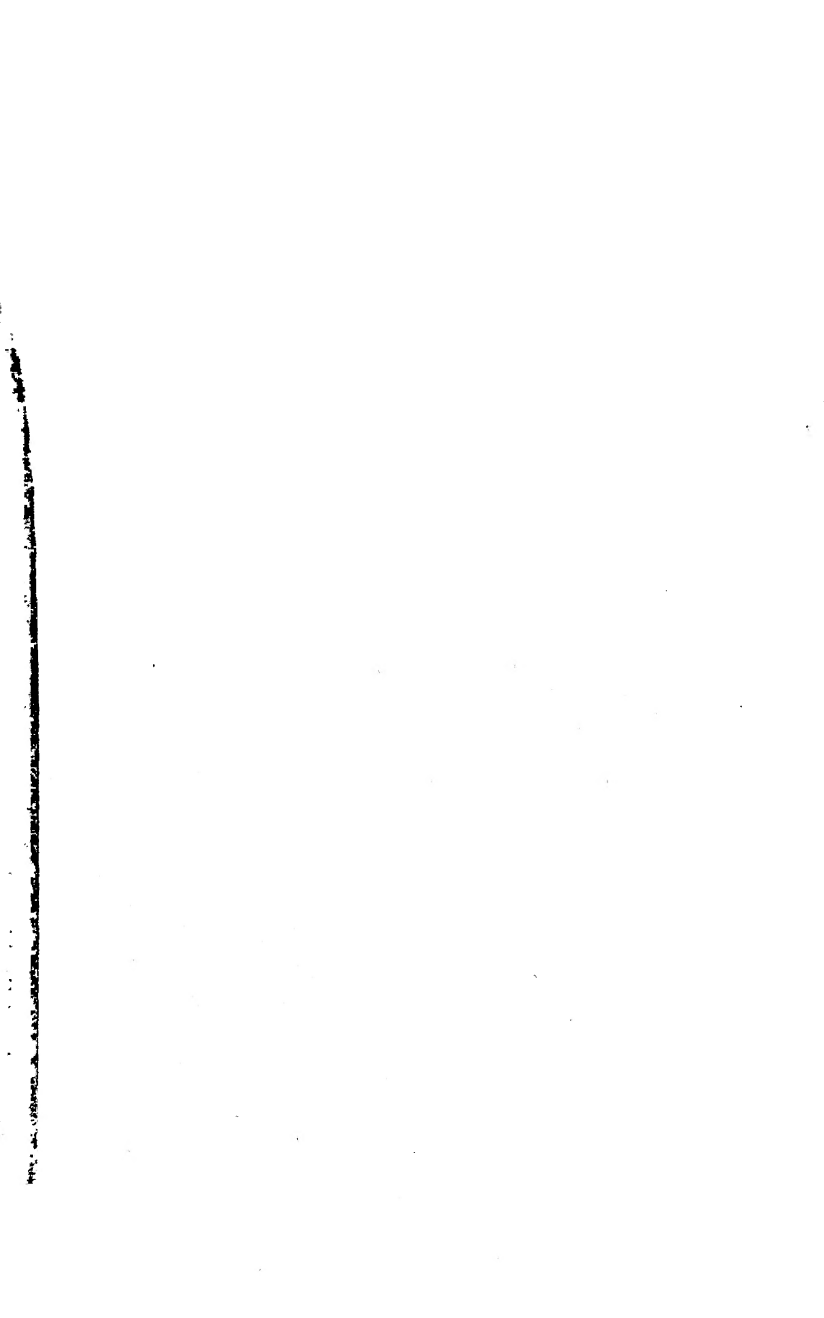
EX LIBRIS

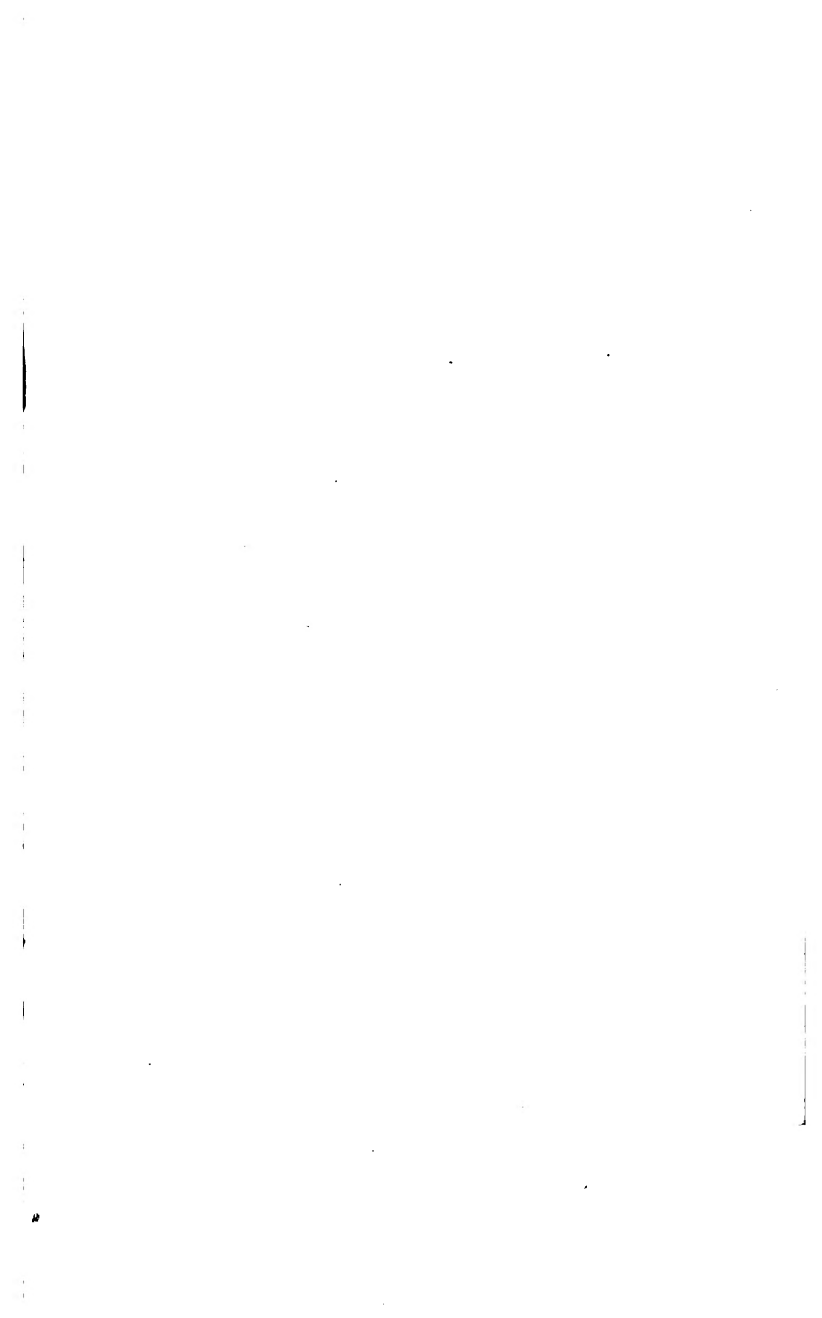
786

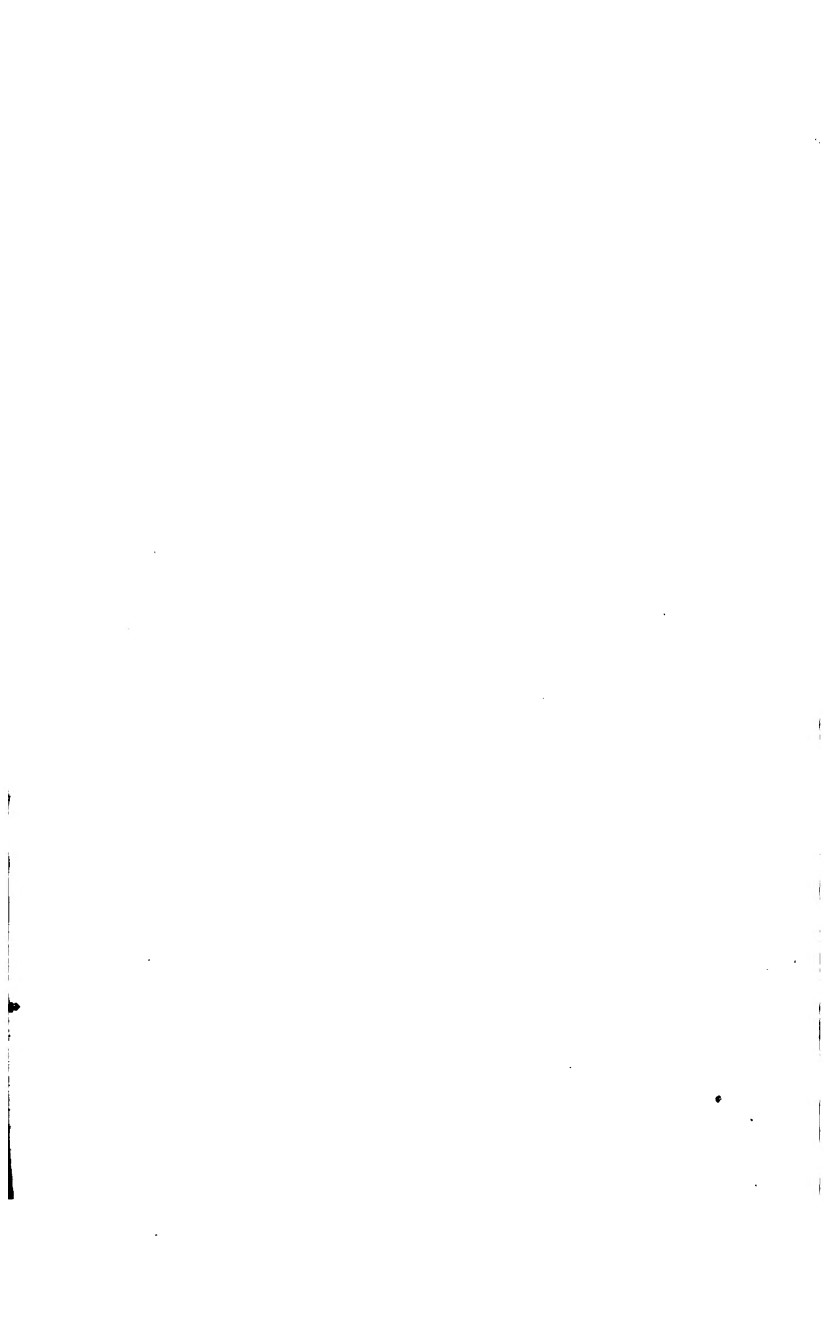
K67











A

# .GRAMMAR

OF THE

## MODERN SPANISH LANGUAGE .

*AS NOW WRITTEN AND SPOKEN IN THE  
CAPITAL OF SPAIN.*

BY

WILLIAM I. KNAPP, PH.D., LL.D.,

LATE STREET PROFESSOR OF MODERN LANGUAGES IN YALE UNIVERSITY.

---

SECOND EDITION

CAREFULLY REVISED BY THE AUTHOR.

*Copyright 1900*

BOSTON, U.S.A.:

GINN & COMPANY, PUBLISHERS.

1900

786  
K67

PRESERVATION  
COPY ADDED

1882

221799

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1882, by  
WILLIAM I. KNAPP,  
in the Office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.

TO THE  
LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

## PREFACE.

---

**I**T has seemed to the writer of this volume that a systematic presentation of the laws that govern the official Castilian language, at the present stage of its development, and fresh from its native atmosphere, would need no apology. Whether in public or private instruction, nothing can adequately substitute the thorough acquisition of the forms and inflections of a language, and these are best comprehended and retained by the tabular arrangement, which at the same time furnishes an accessible base of supplies for reviews or reference.

Spanish is not usually the first foreign tongue the student meets, and therefore the experience he has gained in Greek and Latin, or in French and German, may be turned to profit in saving much irksome routine indispensable to his earlier studies. He does not need, for example, to be taught the rules of agreement, to which general grammar has already accustomed his mind, but what he wants above all to know is, the forms of the article, the pluralization of words, the variation of adjectives, and the conjugation of verbs. This done, he can proceed to read any ordinary prose, leaving the syntactical peculiarities to be noted by experience, until a second and more critical rehearsal puts him in possession of all the facts of the language. Therefore, a grammar that will facilitate this end, giving him, at a small outlay of time, the requisite preliminaries to reading and writing, while furnishing ample means for more thorough subsequent studies, would seem to be the one most urgently called for. At least this is the case in our colleges, wherein the use of the so-called speaking-methods is impracticable by reason of the diffusion of grammatical material.

The plan of teaching with the present book involves two perusals. The first will take the learner over essentials in a little more than eight weeks, at five recitations each. The lessons are arranged for the ordinary college class, by whom many of the rules and forms would require to be read over only, or would be self-evident by virtue of previous experience and discipline. With younger pupils, and such as are destitute of linguistic training, shorter lessons can be easily provided by a suitable parcelling out of the full ones. For a considerable distance in Section IV, only English themes are furnished for translation into Spanish, since this method best tests the student's diligence at the early stage of his work. Subsequently, however, after the essential elements have been reviewed, a Spanish dialogue has been inserted, made up out of a popular Madrid play, reduced and re-fashioned to adapt it to class purposes.

The second perusal of the grammar is to be made in conjunction with another volume, — the *Modern Spanish Readings*. While thus entering into the spirit of the literary life of the Spaniard of to-day, the learner, by a carefully graded series of Spanish-English and English-Spanish themes, will be insensibly conducted along to a degree of familiarity with the spoken language that will call for and satisfy every principle recorded in the present text-book. At the same time, he will have learned the mode of life and the manners and customs of the people of the Peninsula; and the usages of society, polite address, correspondence, etc., as they exist, or are carried on in all circles at Madrid. To possess the technical terms popularly employed there in most of the relations of life, will be, it is hoped, appreciated; at least they will be sought for in vain elsewhere in books.



# CONTENTS.

---

## SECTION FIRST.

|                                       | PAGE |
|---------------------------------------|------|
| <b>PHONOLOGY</b> — Alphabet . . . . . | 1    |
| Vowels . . . . .                      | 2    |
| Diphthongs and triphthongs . . . . .  | 5    |
| Consonants . . . . .                  | 7    |
| Tonic accent . . . . .                | 15   |
| Graphic accent . . . . .              | 17   |
| Division of syllables . . . . .       | 18   |
| Capital letters . . . . .             | 19   |
| Orthographic signs . . . . .          | 20   |
| Castilian vulgarisms . . . . .        | 21   |

## SECTION SECOND.

|                                      |    |
|--------------------------------------|----|
| <b>FORM AND INFLECTION</b> . . . . . | 25 |
| Article . . . . .                    | 28 |
| Noun — Gender . . . . .              | 32 |
| Number . . . . .                     | 44 |
| Inflection . . . . .                 | 49 |
| Adjective . . . . .                  | 51 |
| Number . . . . .                     | 52 |
| Gender . . . . .                     | 53 |
| Apocopation . . . . .                | 57 |
| Position . . . . .                   | 61 |
| Comparison . . . . .                 | 65 |
| Comparative formulae . . . . .       | 67 |
| Superlative relative . . . . .       | 70 |
| Superlative absolute . . . . .       | 74 |
| Numerals — Cardinals . . . . .       | 80 |
| Ordinals . . . . .                   | 83 |
| Fractionals . . . . .                | 85 |
| Multiplicatives, etc. . . . .        | 87 |

|   | PAGE |
|---|------|
| Personal pronoun . . . . .                                | 90   |
| Inflection . . . . .                                      | 94   |
| Cases . . . . .   | 96   |
| Position of object . . . . .                              | 102  |
| Disjunctive form . . . . .                                | 104  |
| Pleonastic construction . . . . .                         | 105  |
| Inflection and use of <i>usted</i> . . . . .              | 106  |
| Reflexive pronoun . . . . .                               | 108  |
| Two objective pronouns . . . . .                          | 110  |
| <i>Mismo, propio</i> . . . . .                            | 114  |
| Possessive adjectives and pronouns . . . . .              | 116  |
| Demonstratives . . . . .                                  | 124  |
| Relative pronouns . . . . .                               | 129  |
| Interrogative pronouns . . . . .                          | 138  |
| Indefinite pronouns . . . . .                             | 140  |
| Verb . . . . .  | 161  |
| Conjugation of the auxiliary verb <i>haber</i> . . . . .  | 162  |
| Remarks on . . . . .                                      | 163  |
| Conjugation of the impersonal verb <i>haber</i> . . . . . | 165  |
| Remarks on . . . . .                                      | 167  |
| Regular verb — active conjugation . . . . .               | 168  |
| Verb endings . . . . .                                    | 169  |
| First conjugation — <i>hablar</i> . . . . .               | 171  |
| Second conjugation — <i>comer</i> . . . . .               | 174  |
| Third conjugation — <i>vivir</i> . . . . .                | 178  |
| Remarks on the three conjugations . . . . .               | 181  |
| Regular euphonic changes . . . . .                        | 184  |
| Progressive form of the verb . . . . .                    | 188  |
| Conjugation of <i>estar</i> . . . . .                     | 190  |
| Passive voice . . . . .                                   | 192  |
| Conjugation of <i>ser</i> . . . . .                       | 193  |
| Passive conjugation — <i>ser llamado</i> . . . . .        | 196  |
| Remarks on . . . . .                                      | 198  |
| Use of <i>ser</i> and <i>estar</i> . . . . .              | 200  |
| Reflexive verb . . . . .                                  | 201  |
| Conjugation of <i>alabarse</i> . . . . .                  | 203  |
| Conjugation of <i>figurarse</i> . . . . .                 | 206  |
| Remarks on the reflexive verb . . . . .                   | 208  |
| Special uses of . . . . .                                 | 212  |
| Passive and reflexive . . . . .                           | 213  |
| Reciprocal verb . . . . .                                 | 216  |

Verb — *continued.*

|   | PAGE |
|---|------|
| Impersonal verb . . . . .                             | 217  |
| Irregular verb . . . . .                              | 221  |
| Stems and changes . . . . .                           | 221  |
| Present stem . . . . .                                | 224  |
| Tonic preterit stems . . . . .                        | 227  |
| Future stems . . . . .                                | 229  |
| First class — first and second conjugations . . . . . | 229  |
| <i>e</i> stems — first conjugation . . . . .          | 230  |
| Euphonic changes . . . . .                            | 231  |
| <i>e</i> stems — second conjugation . . . . .         | 232  |
| <i>o</i> stems — first conjugation . . . . .          | 233  |
| Euphonic changes . . . . .                            | 234  |
| <i>o</i> stems — second conjugation . . . . .         | 236  |
| Euphonic changes . . . . .                            | 237  |
| Second class — third conjugation . . . . .            | 238  |
| <i>e</i> stems and <i>o</i> stems . . . . .           | 241  |
| Third class — third conjugation . . . . .             | 242  |
| Euphonic changes . . . . .                            | 244  |
| Fourth class — verbs in <i>-uir</i> . . . . .         | 245  |
| Fifth class — tonic preterit verbs . . . . .          | 247  |
| First conjugation . . . . .                           | 248  |
| Second conjugation . . . . .                          | 249  |
| Third conjugation . . . . .                           | 255  |
| Sixth class — miscellaneous . . . . .                 | 257  |
| Defective verbs . . . . .                             | 263  |
| Irregular past participles . . . . .                  | 265  |
| Index to irregular verbs . . . . .                    | 271  |
| Adverb . . . . .                                      | 283  |
| Use of certain adverbs . . . . .                      | 290  |
| Negation in Spanish . . . . .                         | 296  |
| Comparison of adverbs . . . . .                       | 299  |
| Preposition . . . . .                                 | 304  |
| Use of . . . . .                                      | 306  |
| Conjunction . . . . .                                 | 318  |
| Interjection . . . . .                                | 320  |

## SECTION THIRD.

|  | PAGE |
|--|------|
| <b>ESSENTIALS OF SYNTAX</b> — Article . . . . .  | 323  |
| Numerals . . . . .                               | 335  |
| Laws of agreement — Adjective and noun . . . . . | 339  |
| Verb with its subject . . . . .                  | 341  |
| Use of the tenses . . . . .                      | 344  |
| Subjunctive mode . . . . .                       | 356  |
| Correspondence of tenses . . . . .               | 362  |
| Use of the infinitive mode . . . . .             | 363  |
| Gerund . . . . .                                 | 370  |
| Use of the past participle . . . . .             | 371  |
| Regimen of verbs . . . . .                       | 374  |

## APPENDIX TO SECTION SECOND.

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| <b>DIMINUTIVES AND AUGMENTATIVES</b> . . . . . | 382 |
|--|-----|

## SECTION FOURTH.

|                                      |     |
|--------------------------------------|-----|
| <b>DRILL-BOOK</b> . . . . .          | 393 |
| El Barómetro — Comedia . . . . .     | 415 |
| Spanish-English Vocabulary . . . . . | 440 |
| English-Spanish Vocabulary . . . . . | 465 |

# SECTION FIRST.

## PHONOLOGY.

### *The Spanish Alphabet.*

1. The Spanish Alphabet has in use at the present day twenty-four simple letters, with which certain compound and ligatured forms have been associated as independent signs. The whole, therefore, stands thus :—

|    |      |                       |    |          |                      |
|----|------|-----------------------|----|----------|----------------------|
| a  | á    | ä in <i>ah</i> .      | n  | ene      | ā'ney.               |
| b  | bé   | bā in <i>bale</i> .   | ñ  | eñe      | ain'yey.             |
| c  | cé   | thā in <i>thane</i> . | o  | ó        | ō.                   |
| ch | ché  | chā in <i>chase</i> . | p  | pé       | pā in <i>pale</i> .  |
| d  | dé   | dā in <i>dale</i> .   | q  | cú       | coo in <i>cool</i> . |
| e  | é    | ā in <i>ale</i> .     | r  | ere      | ā'rey.               |
| f  | efe  | ā'fey.                | rr | erre     | air'-r-rey.          |
| g  | gé   | 'hā in 'hate.         | s  | ese      | ā'cey.               |
| h  | ache | ä'tchey.              | t  | té       | tā in <i>take</i> .  |
| i  | f    | ē in <i>eve</i> .     | u  | ú        | oo in <i>ooze</i> .  |
| j  | jota | 'hō'tä.               | v  | vé       | vā in <i>vale</i> .  |
| l  | ele  | ā'ley.                | x  | équis    | ā'keece.             |
| ll | elle | ai'l'yey.             | y  | y griega | ē grē'ä'gä.          |
| m  | eme  | ā'mey.                | z  | zeta     | thā'tä.              |

a. The Gothic or Black Letter (called in Spain *letra gótica*, or *de Tórtis*, from an early Venetian printer) was used for Mss. (*libros de mano*) throughout the Middle Age. The same was employed almost exclusively in printed books (*libros de molde*) from the introduction of the art into Spain (1474) till about 1550, when it had

well-nigh disappeared from new books, and was only occasionally seen in reprints of old Black Letter texts.

*b.* *U* and *v* were constantly interchanging in the older language, and are still designated in the primary schools by the ancient names *ú* and *ú de corason* (heart-shaped *u*, that is, *v*) since the new Academic *vé* is not practically distinguishable from *bé*.<sup>1</sup>

*c.* The letter *k* is at present authorized by government and by the Academy in a very few imported words, such as *kilómetro*, *kilometre*; *kilogramo*, *kilogram*; *képis* or *képi*, *a fatigue cap*.

*d.* *W*, called *doble ú*, is found only in foreign names or in learned transliterations. The Gothic and Arabic initials, *v*, *w*, usually became *gu* in Castilian. Thus *wad-ál-kebír*, *the great river*, became *Guadalquivir*; *al-wexír*, *the visier*, became *alguacil*, *the constable*. The Teutonic "*war*" appeared as *guerra*; "*wassail*" as *guasa*, *jest*; and to "*ward*," *guard*, or *keep*, became *guardar*.

2. All letters of the alphabet are feminine in Spanish, and commonly stand with one of the articles:—

|                                     |  |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| ponga usted una <b>h</b> ,          | <i>put in an h.</i>                    |
| cuando vayas al correo no te        | <i>when you go to the Post, don't</i>  |
| olvides de mirar en la <b>F</b> ,   | <i>forget to look in F.</i>            |
| halagüeño se escribe con <b>h</b> , | <i>halagüeño is spelled with an h.</i> |

### Pronunciation.

3. The present section on the Castilian pronunciation is based on the reformed orthography initiated by the Royal Spanish Academy in their Dictionary of 1803, improved in that of 1822, and finally adopted in their *Ortografía* of Madrid, 1826. A view of the ancient pronunciations or reference to the obsolete orthography do not come within the design of this elementary work.

### The Vowels.

4. *Important General Law.*—In Castilian the vowel sounds predominate over those of the consonants to a

<sup>1</sup> *Vé*, as the name of the letter *v*, was first, I think, introduced into the Academy's Dictionary of 1837,—the eighth edition. Before that it was often called *ú consonante*, *u* consonant.

degree without parallel in the other Romance tongues; and whereas the vowel sounds are full and sonorous, those of the consonants are subordinate, smothered, and frequently suppressed.

5. The vowels have but one quality of sound each, and this they preserve uniformly in all situations. In ordinary passive discourse, however, *e* and *o* slightly lower their primitive key when they stand in an open syllable or before the letters *n* and *r* final.

6. The vowels are *a*, *e*, *i* (*y*), *o*, and *u*, pronounced as follows : —

|                       |                              |  |                               |
|-----------------------|------------------------------|--|-------------------------------|
| <b>a</b>              | like <i>a</i> in <i>ah</i> , | never as in <i>add</i> , <i>made</i> : | <i>malo</i> , <i>ánimo</i> .  |
| <b>e</b>              | " <i>a</i> " <i>ale</i> ,    | " <i>me</i> , <i>met</i> :             | <i>mesa</i> , <i>lecho</i> .  |
| <b>i</b> ( <b>y</b> ) | " <i>e</i> " <i>me</i> ,     | " <i>hit</i> , <i>dish</i> :           | <i>tino</i> , <i>tinta</i> .  |
| <b>o</b>              | " <i>o</i> " <i>lone</i> ,   | " <i>not</i> :                         | <i>odio</i> , <i>tesoro</i> . |
| <b>u</b>              | " <i>oo</i> " <i>ooze</i> ,  | " <i>bud</i> , <i>use</i> :            | <i>gula</i> , <i>usted'</i> . |

*a*. Before *n* and *r* final, *o* sounds as in *gone*, and *e* as in *there* : —

**error**, error, — *air-r-rorr'*.

**nacion**, nation, — *nah-the'on'*.

**comer**, to eat, — *ko-mair'*.

**placer**, pleasure, — *plah-thair'*.

*b*. *E* final has the *a* quality, but it is given short as *y* in *merry*. So *triste*, *sad*, — *tree'-stě*, not *triss'-tay*.

7. *Y* standing alone or final is a vowel, and is then a mere substitute for the Spanish *i*. At the beginning of a word or syllable (between vowels) it is a true consonant with the phonetic value of *y* in *year*, enunciated with emphasis : —

| Y VOWEL.                  |                            | Y CONSONANT.             |                               |
|---------------------------|----------------------------|--------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <b>y</b> , and.           | <i>muy</i> , <i>very</i> . | <b>yo</b> , <i>I</i> .   | <i>leyes</i> , <i>laws</i> .  |
| <b>ley</b> , <i>law</i> . | <i>voy</i> , <i>I go</i> . | <b>ya</b> , <i>now</i> . | <i>reyes</i> , <i>kings</i> . |



**REMARK.**—In English one syllable is often accentuated at the expense of the vowel sounds in the other syllables; but in Spanish a vowel never suffers its original quality to be absorbed or shrunk because the syllable in which it lies does not receive the primary stress. Thus, do not pronounce, for example, *cansado*, *tired*; *piélago*, *sea*; *animalito*, *a small animal*; *imposibilidad*, *impossibility*, — as if written *cán-sah'-do* or *k'n-sah'-do*, *pyaił'-t-go*, *ännä-müll-ee'-to*, *imm-possy-billy-dahd'*; but *kän'-sah''-t<sup>h</sup>o*, *pyaił''-ah'-go*, *ah'-ne'-mah'-le'-to*, *eem'-po'-se'-be'-le'-dah<sup>h</sup>k''*.

8. The five vowels are divisible into strong (*a, o, u*) and weak (*e, i*), with reference to the phonetic influence they exert on the consonants *c* and *g*: —

9. *C* before the strong vowels equals *k*:                      *ca, co, cu.*
10. *C* before the weak vowels equals *th* in *think*:        *ce, ci.*
11. *G* before the strong vowels equals *gh* (*g* hard):    *ga, go, gu.*
12. *G* before the weak vowels equals guttural '*h*':        *ge, gi.*
13. *C* with the *k* sound is written *qu* before weak vowels: *que, qui.*
14. *C* with the *th* sound is written *s* before strong vowels: *za, zo, zu.*
15. *G* with the *gh* sound is written *gu* before weak vowels: *gue, gui.*
16. *G* with the guttural sound is written *j* before strong vowels: *ja, jo, ju.*

17. *U* is silent between *q* or *g* and the weak vowels. When it should be vocal in those positions it assumes the diaeresis (*ü*), and *cu, gü* diphthongal are pronounced *kw, gw*, as also elsewhere, when *u* is not mute.

18. Note well, therefore, the following combinations:

#### Vowels.

|                 |            |             |             |            |            |
|-----------------|------------|-------------|-------------|------------|------------|
| Like <b>k</b> : | <i>ca,</i> | <i>que,</i> | <i>qui,</i> | <i>co,</i> | <i>cu.</i> |
| " <b>th</b> :   | <i>za,</i> | <i>ce,</i>  | <i>ci,</i>  | <i>zo,</i> | <i>zu.</i> |
| " <b>gh</b> :   | <i>ga,</i> | <i>gue,</i> | <i>gui,</i> | <i>go,</i> | <i>gu.</i> |
| " <b>'h</b> :   | <i>ja,</i> | <i>ge,</i>  | <i>gi,</i>  | <i>jo,</i> | <i>ju.</i> |

#### Diphthongs.

|                  |             |             |             |             |
|------------------|-------------|-------------|-------------|-------------|
| Like <b>kw</b> : | <i>cua,</i> | <i>cue,</i> | <i>cui,</i> | <i>cuo.</i> |
| " <b>gw</b> :    | <i>gua,</i> | <i>güe,</i> | <i>güi,</i> | <i>guo.</i> |
| " <b>'hw</b> :   | <i>jua,</i> | <i>jue,</i> | <i>jui,</i> | <i>juo.</i> |

19. The two stem vowels *e* and *o* amplify into *ie* and *ue* respectively when the accent falls on those vowels ; but they recover their primitive form as soon as the stress is transferred to another syllable : —

|  |                                |
|--|--------------------------------|
| sentir', <i>to feel.</i>               | siento, <i>I feel.</i>         |
| sentimos, <i>we feel.</i>              | sienten, <i>they feel.</i>     |
| tendéro, <i>shopkeeper.</i>            | tienda, <i>shop.</i>           |
| sentimental', <i>sentimental.</i>      | sentimiento, <i>feeling.</i>   |
| rogar', <i>to request.</i>             | ruego, <i>I request.</i>       |
| rogámos, <i>we request.</i>            | ruegan, <i>they request.</i>   |
| bondad', <i>goodness.</i>              | bueno, <i>good.</i>            |
| agoréro, <i>diviner.</i>               | agüero, <i>omen.</i>           |
| Oscénse, <i>of Huesca (Lat. Osca).</i> | Huesca, <i>name of a town.</i> |

a. Hence *ie* is the diphthong of *e*, and *ue* that of *o*.

### Diphthongs and Triphthongs.

20. These are vowels in juxtaposition which are pronounced in one wave of sound, forming, either alone or with a foregoing consonant, a single syllable ; they are, therefore, divisible neither in prosody nor in printing. They always preserve the alphabetic sound of each of the vowels composing them, never passing over into new phonetic combinations as in English and French. Nevertheless the complex sounds they produce are reckoned as *one*, and the tonic accent, if it be on that syllable, is distributed over the vowels as if they constituted a single long vowel. Hence, if one of the vowels *i* or *u* is accentuated, these do not form diphthongs or triphthongs with the other vowels. Thus *uo* in *continuo*, *continuous*, is a diphthong, but not in *continúo*, *I continue* ; so *reino*, *a kingdom*, — diphthong ; *leído*, *read*, — not a diphthong ; *venia*, *indulgence* ; *venía*, *I came*.

21. True diphthongs and triphthongs are : —

|           |         |           |           |       |
|-----------|---------|-----------|-----------|-------|
| ai (ay) : | balle,  | donaire,  | hablais,  | hay.  |
| au :      | causa,  | pauta,    | caudal'.  |       |
| ea :      | línea,  | tráquea,  | Bóreas.   |       |
| ei (ey) : | reina,  | peine,    | hableis,  | grey. |
| eo :      | idóneo, | marmóreo, | virgíneo. |       |

|             |             |             |            |       |
|-------------|-------------|-------------|------------|-------|
| eu :        | deuda,      | reuma,      | Europa.    |       |
| ia :        | gracia,     | ténia,      | calumnia.  |       |
| ie :        | cielo,      | slento,     | tiene.     |       |
| io :        | precio,     | ódio,       | estudio.   |       |
| iu :        | ciudad,     | triunfar,   | enviudado. |       |
| oi (oy) :   | heróico,    | dolte,      | sois,      | hoy.  |
| ua :        | fragua,     | recua,      | igual.     |       |
| ue :        | duelo,      | bueno,      | pues.      |       |
| ui (uy) :   | cuidado,    | ruidoso,    | huiría,    | muy.  |
| uo :        | mutuo,      | arduo,      | antíguo.   |       |
| ial :       | aviais,     | cambiais,   | variais.   |       |
| iel :       | aviels,     | cambleis,   | variels.   |       |
| ual (uay) : | averiguais, | santiguais, | fraguais,  | guay. |
| uel (uey) : | averigüels, | santigüels, | fragtüels, | buey. |

## 22. Improper diphthongs are :—

|      |        |          |      |           |           |
|------|--------|----------|------|-----------|-----------|
| ae : | trae,  | Páez.    | io : | amorío,   | desvarío. |
| ai : | raiz,  | traído.  | oa : | canóa,    | proa.     |
| au : | baul,  | ataud.   | oe : | héroe,    | corroe.   |
| ea : | pelea, | lancea.  | oi : | oldo,     | olste.    |
| ee : | leer,  | lee.     | oo : | loor,     | Feijóo.   |
| ei : | leí,   | sonreí.  | ua : | ganzúa,   | falúa.    |
| eo : | veo,   | beodo.   | ue : | continúe, | cruento.  |
| ia : | día,   | alegría. | ui : | ruido,    | huida.    |
| ie : | fle,   | confie.  | uo : | continúo, | duo.      |

23. Thus are pronounced, rapidly indeed, but not constituting true diphthongs, all concurrent vowels in different words ; as, *la alegría, the joy ; la alta casa, the lofty house ; mi alma, my soul ; la ida, the departure ; tu esposa, thy wife ; su época, his times ; á usted, to you.* Identical letters are more perfectly run together in the ordinary language ; *la amistad, the friendship ; su utilidad, his usefulness ; de este, of this ; mi ida, my departure.* This principle has occasioned many contractions, as, *del* for *de el* ; *deste*, for *de este* ; *dende*, from Latin *de inde, thence ; donde*, from *de unde, where.*

24. Likewise vowels separated by the silent *h* are sounded as if concurrent : —

|                                 |                                       |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| ahí, <i>there</i> .             | desahucio, <i>ejection (law)</i> .    |
| ahora, <i>now</i> .             | almohadilla, <i>cushion</i> .         |
| tahona, <i>bakery</i> .         | rehusar, <i>to refuse</i> .           |
| tahur, <i>gambler</i> .         | Sahagun, <i>St. Facundus (town)</i> . |
| ha hablado, <i>has spoken</i> . | mi hijo, <i>my son</i> .              |

25. In poetry a diphthong may be dissolved by the diæresis when the metre requires it : —

|                                |                                    |
|--------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| suave, <i>mild</i> , — súa·ve. | riela, <i>twinkles</i> , — ríe·la. |
|--------------------------------|------------------------------------|

### Consonants.

#### B, V.

26. These two letters are distinct in theory, and in most situations interchangeable in practice.<sup>1</sup> The Castilian does not give either of them the full English sound, except after *m*, because with him the approximation of the organs employed in their production amounts to simple contact without pressure (§ 4) : —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| beber, <i>to drink</i> (anc. <i>bever</i> ). | volver, <i>to turn</i> (anc. <i>boluer</i> ).    |
| vivir, <i>to live</i> (anc. <i>biuir</i> ).  | enviar, <i>to send</i> (anc. <i>embiar</i> ).    |
| vuelta, <i>turn</i> (anc. <i>buella</i> ).   | envidia, <i>jealousy</i> (anc. <i>ymbidia</i> ). |

The ancient orthography is, as usually happens in Spain, the modern popular pronunciation, especially in the Castiles.

---

<sup>1</sup> Blanco White, a learned Spaniard of this century, declared the identity of *b* and *v* rather strongly, in these words: "My friend's destination was a town in the mountains or Sierra de Ronda, called Olbera or Olvera, for we make no difference in the pronunciation of the *b* and the *v*." — *Letters from Spain*, by Don Leucadio Doblado, London, 1822, p. 161. The Spanish Academy affirm, also, that these two letters "are alike in a great part of Spain, although they ought not to be." — *Gramática*, ed. of 1870, p. 315. See, also, their *Ortografía*, Madrid, 1826, p. 51.

## C HARD and Qu.

27. *C*, before the strong vowels or another consonant, and *qu* before the weak vowels, sound always like *k*: —

|                              |                                  |
|------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| casa, <i>house</i> .         | que, <i>that, which</i> .        |
| cosa, <i>thing</i> .         | quiere, <i>he wishes</i> .       |
| cura, <i>parish priest</i> . | tabique, <i>thin partition</i> . |
| claro, <i>clear, light</i> . | inquieto, <i>restless</i> .      |

## C WEAK and Z.

28. *C*, before the weak vowels, and *z* before the strong vowels, have the value of *th* in *think*: —

|  |                              |
|--|------------------------------|
| cena, <i>supper</i> .                  | hizo, <i>he made, did</i> .  |
| cita, <i>appointment</i> .             | brazo, <i>arm</i> .          |
| cielo, <i>heaven</i> .                 | corazon, <i>heart</i> .      |
| hace, <i>makes, does</i> .             | razon, <i>reason</i> .       |
| acento, <i>accent</i> .                | caza, <i>game</i> .          |
| acéquia, <i>canal for irrigation</i> . | azogue, <i>quicksilver</i> . |
| nacion, <i>nation</i> .                | taza, <i>(tea) cup</i> .     |

a. *Z* cannot stand before the weak vowels, but is changed into *c*: —

|                        |                              |
|------------------------|------------------------------|
| razon, <i>reason</i> . | racional, <i>rational</i> .  |
| feliz, <i>happy</i> .  | felicidad, <i>felicity</i> . |
| luz, <i>light</i> .    | luces, <i>lights</i> .       |

b. *Cc* are found together only before the vowel *i*, and are pronounced regularly *k'th*: —

|                         |  |
|-------------------------|--|
| accion, <i>action</i> . | faccioso ( <i>Carlist</i> ) <i>rebel</i> . |
|-------------------------|--|

## Ch.

29. This letter has been considered as distinct in the Dictionaries only since 1803. Its constant phonetic value is that of *ch* in *church*. Formerly it represented also the *k* sound in classic and scripture words; but these are now written with *c* before the strong vowels, and *qu* before the weak ones: —

|                                   |                                 |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| mucho, <i>much.</i>               | ducho, <i>expert.</i>           |
| hecho, <i>done, made.</i>         | cuchara, <i>spoon.</i>          |
| muchacho, <i>boy.</i>             | bicho, <i>insect.</i>           |
| avechucho, <i>sparrow-hawk.</i>   | alcachofa, <i>artichoke.</i>    |
| chillar, <i>to shout, scream.</i> | chiquitin, <i>a little one.</i> |
| Acates, <i>Achates.</i>           | Aquiles, <i>Achilles.</i>       |
| Cristiano, <i>Christian.</i>      | Ecequías, <i>Hezekiah.</i>      |

## D.

30. *D* has technically the common English sound; but, as in the case of *b* and *v*, there is simple contact without pressure, on the part of the organs involved in its formation. The Spanish *d*, therefore, has never the decided English sound, being rather inclined to a smothered *th* in *though* :—

|                                |                            |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------|
| dorar, <i>to gild.</i>         | índio, <i>East Indian.</i> |
| desde, <i>from.</i>            | arde, <i>it burns.</i>     |
| dehesa, <i>pasture ground.</i> | sordera, <i>deafness.</i>  |
| súbdito, <i>subject.</i>       | tildar, <i>to censure.</i> |
| albedrío, <i>free will.</i>    | verdadero, <i>true.</i>    |

31. Between vowels, especially in the endings *ado*, *eda*, *ido*, *odo*, *udo*, *d* has a less equivocal sound of *th* in *though*, *weather*. At the end of a word its quality is the same, but it is asserted with much less decision :—

|                                  |                            |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------|
| hado, <i>fate.</i>               | comed, <i>eat ye.</i>      |
| olvidado, <i>forgotten.</i>      | virtud, <i>virtue.</i>     |
| marido, <i>husband.</i>          | ciudad, <i>city, town.</i> |
| polvareda, <i>cloud of dust.</i> | verdad, <i>truth.</i>      |
| lodo, <i>mud.</i>                | usted, <i>you.</i>         |
| engrudo, <i>paste.</i>           | vivid, <i>live ye.</i>     |

The *d* thus pronounced may be graphically represented by the *th* raised above the line to suggest the tenuity of its value; as, *ä<sup>th</sup>o*, *co-me<sup>th</sup>*, *la<sup>th</sup>rár*. This *th*

must never be pronounced as in *think*, however, which is the characteristic of *c* weak (§ 28).

*a.* *Dr* always equals *d'r* or *th'r*, but not as in *dream*: *drama*, *drama*; *adrede*, *on purpose* (obsolete); *Madrid*.

#### G HARD and Gu.

32. *G*, before the strong vowels or another consonant, and *gu* before the weak vowels, sound like *g* in *go* and *guilt*:—

*gasto*, *expense*.

*goce*, *fruition*.

*gula*, *gluttony*.

*guante*, *glove*.

*greda*, *chalk*.

*albergue*, *refuge*.

*manguito*, *muff*.

*guinda*, *cherry*.

*malagueño*, *of Málaga*.

*guisado*, *stew*.

*a.* If etymology or uniformity of the *g* value in inflection require the *u* in *gue*, *gui*, to become vocal, as it is in the combinations *gua*, *guo*, then the diæresis must always be employed:—

*agua*, *water*.

*lengua*, *tongue*.

*fragua*, *he forges*.

*desagüe*, *drainage*.

*lingüista*, *linguist*.

*fragüe*, *he may forge*.

So also

*agüero*, *omen* (*augurium*). | *agüelo*, *grandfather* (for *abuelo*).

#### G, J, GUTTURAL.

33. *G*, before the weak vowels, and *j* in all positions, but chiefly before the strong vowels, have the guttural sound of the Arabic *hhd*. This sound is often represented by the German *ch* after strong vowels (as in *Bach*, *Loch*, *Buch*; not as in *Pech*, *Licht*, *Bücher*), and the modern Greek *τεῖχος*, *μάχαιρα*, etc., but it is like none of them sufficiently to be cited as equivalents, save the Arabic. It must be learned from a native of Castile:—



|                                 |  |
|---------------------------------|--|
| giro, <i>money-order</i> .      | hijo, <i>son</i> .                     |
| algibe, <i>cistern</i> .        | jarro, <i>water-pitcher</i> .          |
| aflige, <i>he afflicts</i> .    | atajo, <i>short cut (path)</i> .       |
| diligencia, <i>mail-coach</i> . | trabajo, <i>labor</i> .                |
| gime, <i>he groans</i> .        | mujer, <i>woman</i> .                  |
| página, <i>page</i> .           | bandeja, <i>waiter (for serving)</i> . |

a. In Andalusia (Southern Spain) this sound is reduced to the Arabic *hā*.

## H.

34. *H* is totally silent. In the sixteenth century it had a decided aspiration, of which it still retains a slight trace before the diphthong *ue*, not, however, appreciable to most foreigners:—

|                           |                                    |
|---------------------------|------------------------------------|
| hablar, <i>to speak</i> . | huevo, <i>egg</i> .                |
| haber, <i>to have</i> .   | huerta, <i>plantation</i> .        |
| ahí, <i>there</i> .       | hueso, <i>bone</i> .               |
| hacemos, <i>we make</i> . | Huelva, } <i>names of places</i> . |
| hermano, <i>brother</i> . | Huesca, }                          |

## M.

35. *M* sounds as in English. The Latin *mīn*, or, by loss of the short vowel, *m'n*, becomes Spanish by changing *n* into *r* and inserting *b*, which in this situation is distinctly enunciated. Thus,

|                         |      |                               |
|-------------------------|------|-------------------------------|
| hombre, <i>man</i> ,    | from | homīne-m.                     |
| nombre, <i>name</i> ,   | “    | nomīn[e-m] for <i>nomen</i> . |
| cumbre, <i>top</i> ,    | “    | culmīne-m.                    |
| lumbre, <i>light</i> ,  | “    | lumīn[e-m] “ <i>lumen</i> .   |
| mimbre, <i>rush</i> ,   | “    | vimīne-m.                     |
| hambre, <i>hunger</i> , | “    | fam[īne-m] “ <i>famem</i> .   |
| hembra, <i>female</i> , | “    | foemīna-m.                    |

a. *Mn*, not contracted from *mīn*, usually becomes *ñ* (*nn*) by assimilation of the *m*<sup>1</sup>; *somnu-m* makes *sueño*, *sueño*, *dream*. Even in words in which the *mn* are retained, the lower orders often pronounce them *pn* and *gn*; as *hipno* or *higno* for *himno*, *hymn*. So the ancients (thirteenth century) occasionally wrote *Dypna* and

<sup>1</sup> See note on *ñ*.

Dygna for Calila e Dimna (Fables of Bilpay). Compare the Greek *hupnos* and Latin *somnus*.

*b.* Latin and English *mm* stand in modern Spanish as *nm* : —

inmenso, *boundless*.

inmortal, *immortal*.

**R SMOOTH.**

36. Single *r*, between vowels, has the pure alphabetic sound, as in *very* : —

ara, *altar*.

| bolero, *a dance*.

| toro, *bull*.

37. Before any consonant, and after *b, d, t, v*, — *r* must always have a full, decided, and independent sound : —

arde, *it burns*.

| ladra, *(the dog) barks*.

hombre, *man*.

| lastre, *ballast*.

catre, *cot-bed*.

Thus *arr<sup>th</sup>ey*, *õm'-b'rey*, *kä't'rey*.

38. When final, the single *r* is still more distinctly pronounced, and is emphasized almost into the character of the double *rr* : —

hablar, *to speak*.

| vivir, *to live*.

comer, *to eat*.

| placer, *pleasure*.

The vowel before *r* is to be given quick and emphatic, not drawling as in English.

**R ROUGH.**

39. When the single *r* stands at the beginning of a word, or after the letters *l, n, s*, it is pronounced with a rolling sound.<sup>1</sup> The same is always the case and in all positions when the *r* is doubled : —

<sup>1</sup> This rough sound of *r* after *l, n, s*, has occasioned the intercalation of *d*, as well as the obsolete makeshift of transposition. Thus *valdrá* for *val'rd*; *vendrâ* for *ven'rd* (ancient *verna*); *tendrâ* for *ten'ra* (ancient *terna*); *Esdras*, *Ezra*, for *Es'ras*. So also *tierno*, *tender*, came from *ten'ro* (*těněru-m*) and *yerno* (French *gendre*) from *gen'ro* (*gěněru-m*), by metathesis of *nr*.

## R SMOOTH.

pera, *pear*.  
 aro, *hoop*.  
 pardo, *grey*.  
 puerto, *port*.  
 tarde, *evening*.  
 cordero, *lamb*.  
 bruto, *brute*.  
 ladron, *thief*.  
 triste, *sad*.  
 arar, *to plough*.  
 acabar, *to finish*.  
 ver, *to see*.

## R ROLLING.

ruedo, (*door*) *mat*.  
 rogar, *to request*.  
 ramo, *bough*.  
 roto, *broken*.  
 ruido, *noise*.  
 alrededor, *around*.  
 enredo, *snarl, plot*.  
 honra, *honor*.  
 Israelita, *Israelite*.  
 error, *error*.  
 parra, *grapevine*.  
 torre, *tower*.

## S.

40. *S* is always and in every position pronounced like the English *s* in said, never as in phase, ways : —

mesa, *table*.  
 camisa, *shirt*.  
 base, *basis*.  
 los, *las, the*.  
 desde, *from, since*.

racimos, *clusters*.  
 pasas, *raisins*.  
 ese, esa, eso, *that (is, ea, id)*.  
 grueso, *bulky*.  
 leña, *awl*.

## X.

41. *X* is now everywhere pronounced as in English, that is, *ks* : —

exacto, *exact*.

sexo, *sex*.

REMARK. — The national prefix *es*, when it comes from the Latin *ex*, has now been graphically (at least) fixed by the Academy as *ex*. The people, however, very generally continue to pronounce, for example,

extranjero, *foreigner*, } while they write { extranjero.  
 exterior, *external*, } exterior.

This has produced among the illiterate great confusion, by reason of their interchanging the *es* from *ex* with *es* prothetic, as in espléndido, escuela, from the Lat. *splendidus*, *schola*. So one hears explemor, excalera, excándalo, and even excoba, — for esplendor,

*splendor*; *escalera*, staircase; *escándalo*, scandal; and *escoba*, a broom.<sup>1</sup>

### Ligatured Consonants.

#### Ll.

42. *Ll* is pronounced like *l'y* in "will you," or *lli* in *William* : —

sello, stamp.

silla, chair.

polilla, moths.

rastrillo, rake.

llave, key.

lloro, weeping.

lleno, full.

llueve, it rains.

#### Ñ.

43. *N* with tilde<sup>2</sup> (*ñ*) is pronounced *n'y*, as in "an yew," or like *ni* in *union*<sup>3</sup> : —

año, year.

peldaño, round (of a ladder).

leña, firewood.

guiñada, wink.

otoño, autumn.

barreño, dish-trough.

engañio, deception.

rebaño, flock.

44. Ligatured vowels are diphthongs and triphthongs.

<sup>1</sup> A copy of the last Dictionary of the Academy (1869), printed on one side of a leaf only, leaving the other blank, and which belonged to the late Academician Señor Segovia Izquierdo, fell into my possession at Madrid shortly after the owner's death in 1875. In it I find in his handwriting twenty-eight examples of these false *ex*'s under this characteristic epigraph: "Voces que, comenzando con la sílaba *es*, han dado los ignorantes en escribir con *ex*." He omitted, however, *explendor* and *expléndido*, which I have often heard from otherwise clever, though unlearned, persons.

<sup>2</sup> From *titüle-m*, a corrupt form of *titulu-m*, in its later signification of mark, sign — contracted regularly *tit'le-m*, and by metathesis of the *t'l*, *tille*, tilde.

<sup>3</sup> The origin of *ñ* is the mark of abbreviation over the original *nn*, *nm* (*damnu-m*, *danno*, *daño*, *loss*). In the earliest Spanish MSS. the bar (*rasgo*) appears as a mere sign of shortening, as *āno* for *anno*. Mr. Vollmöller, in his edition of the *Poema del Cid*, has mistaken this *rasgo* for a phonetic sign or tilde, which it certainly came to be later. Mr. Pidal was therefore correct in regarding it as a mere note of abbreviation, and in printing *anno*, although we opine it were preferable to have reproduced faithfully the original bar (*āno*).

**Tonic Accent.**

45. Words ending in a consonant not inflectional, are regularly accentuated on the ultimate, unless otherwise graphically indicated : —

|                                       |  |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| verdad, <i>truth.</i>                 | cáliz, ( <i>sacramental</i> ) <i>cup.</i>    |
| comer, <i>to eat.</i>                 | huésped, <i>guest.</i>                       |
| jardin, <i>garden.</i>                | árbol, <i>tree.</i>                          |
| amor, <i>love.</i>                    | mármol, <i>marble.</i>                       |
| desleal, <i>disloyal.</i>             | cárcel, <i>prison.</i>                       |
| despues, <i>afterwards.</i>           | alcázar, ( <i>fortified</i> ) <i>palace.</i> |
| Adam, <i>Adam.</i>                    | útil, <i>useful.</i>                         |
| Frances, <i>Frenchman.</i>            | Cádiz, <i>Cadiz.</i>                         |
| Aleman, <i>German.</i>                | Támesis, <i>Thames.</i>                      |
| capaz, <i>capable.</i>                | Estéban, <i>Stephen.</i>                     |
| desliz, ( <i>moral</i> ) <i>slip.</i> | Búrgos, <i>Burgos</i> (Πύργος).              |

An inflectional termination is the plural sign (*s, es*) or the tense endings (*s, es, mos, an, en*).

*a.* The words **carácter**, *character*, and **régimen**, *government, regimen*, form the irregularly accented plurals *caractères, regímenes*.

*b.* Infinitives and Imperatives second person plural, follow the regular rule of consonant terminals : —

|                         |                         |
|-------------------------|-------------------------|
| querer, <i>to wish.</i> | quered, <i>wish ye.</i> |
| comprar, <i>to buy.</i> | comprad, <i>buy ye.</i> |

*c.* The second person plural of verbs has the accentuation on the ultimate, or the diphthong, unless otherwise graphically marked : —

|                          |                                    |
|--------------------------|------------------------------------|
| llamais, <i>ye call.</i> | llamábais, <i>ye were calling.</i> |
| queréis, <i>ye wish.</i> | queríais, <i>ye were wishing.</i>  |
| decís, <i>ye say.</i>    | compráseis, <i>ye should buy.</i>  |

*d.* Proper names in *ez* and a few in *es* accentuate the penult; the rest follow the general rule of consonant terminals : —

|            |            |                      |
|------------|------------|----------------------|
| Fernández. | Cervántes. | Solís.               |
| Martínez.  | Móntes.    | Madóz.               |
| Sánchez.   | Sanchíz.   | Valdés.              |
| Díez.      | Rufz.      | Vivés.               |
| Flóres.    | Muñíz.     | Cortés. <sup>1</sup> |

46. Words ending primarily in a vowel or a diphthong (which is always considered as constituting a single syllable) are regularly accentuated on the penult, unless otherwise marked : —

|                                |                             |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| odio, <i>hatred.</i>           | lástima, <i>pity.</i>       |
| rostro, <i>countenance.</i>    | zángano, <i>drone.</i>      |
| buitre, <i>vulture.</i>        | máquina, <i>machine.</i>    |
| manteca, <i>butter.</i>        | alegría, <i>joy.</i>        |
| audiencia, <i>upper court.</i> | alelí, <i>gilly flower.</i> |
| andamio, <i>staging.</i>       | compró, <i>he bought.</i>   |

*a.* This principle is not modified by inflectional endings. See, however, § 45, *b, c* : —

|                           |                            |
|---------------------------|----------------------------|
| odios, <i>rancor.</i>     | máquinas, <i>machines.</i> |
| amas, <i>thou lovest.</i> | quieren, <i>they wish.</i> |

47. Compound words have the accentuation of their simple components, and adverbs in *mente* follow the natural stress of the adjective to which that ending is attached : —

|                                      |                                 |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| un pisa-verde, <i>an exquisite.</i>  | fácilmente, <i>easily.</i>      |
| un saca-corchos, <i>a corkscrew.</i> | sábiamente, <i>sagely.</i>      |
| un corta-plumas, <i>a penknife.</i>  | tenázmente, <i>tenaciously.</i> |

<sup>1</sup> The unaccented endings *ez, es*, are patronymics, formed on the basis of the Latin ablative *is*. Thus, Fernández is from *ð Ferdinandis*, of the *Ferdinand family*; Cervántes, from *ð Servandis*, of the *Servandos*. The accented ending *es*, on the contrary, is geographical, from *-ensis*, formed like *Cartha-*

*Graphic Accent.*

48. The acute accent (') is the only mark now in use in Spanish. It should be graphically applied only in the following cases : —

a. To indicate an irregularly accentuated syllable : —

|                                   |                           |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------|
| melancólico, <i>melancholy</i> .  | mucho, <i>much</i> .      |
| paréntesis, <i>parenthesis</i> .  | español, <i>Spanish</i> . |
| veníamos, <i>we were coming</i> . | francés, <i>French</i> .  |

b. To distinguish homonyms : —

|                              |   |
|------------------------------|---|
| a, <i>has</i> (obsolete).    | á, <i>to, in, at</i> .                      |
| al, <i>to the</i> .          | ál, <i>otherwise (aliàs)</i> .              |
| aún, <i>yet, still</i> .     | áun, <i>even, also</i> .                    |
| de, <i>of, from</i> .        | dé, <i>he may give</i> .                    |
| e, <i>I have</i> (obsolete). | é, <i>and (before i or hi)</i> .            |
| el, <i>the</i> .             | él, <i>he, him</i> .                        |
| ha, <i>has</i> .             | há, <i>ago</i> .                            |
| luego, <i>afterward</i> .    | luégo, <i>therefore</i> .                   |
| mí, <i>my</i> .              | mí, <i>me</i> (prepositional case).         |
| mas, <i>but</i> .            | más, <i>more</i> .                          |
| o, <i>oh</i> .               | ó, <i>or (and ú before o)</i> .             |
| se, <i>one's self</i> .      | sé, <i>I know; be thou</i> .                |
| si, <i>if</i> .              | sí, <i>yes; one's self (prepos. case)</i> . |
| te, <i>thee</i> .            | té, <i>tea</i> .                            |
| tu, <i>thy</i> .             | tú, <i>thou</i> .                           |

c. To distinguish verbs identical in form with other parts of speech ; also verbs with pronouns attached to them : —

|                                |                                    |
|--------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| como, <i>as</i> .              | cómo, <i>I eat</i> .               |
| sueño, <i>dream</i> .          | suéño, <i>I dream</i> .            |
| dáme, <i>give me</i> .         | siéntese, <i>sit down</i> .        |
| téngase, <i>let him have</i> . | véte, <i>be off (go thyself)</i> . |

*giniensis*, Span. *Cartaginés*; *Valdensis*, Span. *Valds*. See Godoy Alcántara: *Apellidos Castellanos*, Madrid, 1871, — a very interesting, but not very scholarly, book, in view of the author's facilities.



d. To distinguish demonstrative adjectives used substantively : —

|                             |                         |
|-----------------------------|-------------------------|
| aquel, <i>that (ille)</i> . | aquél, <i>that one.</i> |
| ese, <i>that (iste)</i> .   | ése, <i>that one.</i>   |
| este, <i>this (hic)</i> .   | éste, <i>this one.</i>  |

e. To distinguish the interrogative and exclamatory use, direct and indirect, of certain pronouns and adverbs : —

|                          |                          |
|--------------------------|--------------------------|
| como, <i>as.</i>         | cómo, <i>how?</i>        |
| cual, <i>as, which.</i>  | cuál, <i>which?</i>      |
| cuan, <i>as.</i>         | cuán, <i>how!</i>        |
| cuando, <i>when.</i>     | cuándo, <i>when?</i>     |
| cuanto, <i>as much.</i>  | cuánto, <i>how much?</i> |
| cuyo, <i>whose.</i>      | cúyo, <i>whose?</i>      |
| donde, <i>where.</i>     | dónde, <i>where?</i>     |
| que, <i>which, that.</i> | qué, <i>what?</i>        |
| quien, <i>who.</i>       | quién, <i>who?</i>       |

f. In certain correlatives : —

|   |
|---|
| quién—quién, <i>one—another, some—others.</i> |
| cuáles—cuáles, <i>some—others.</i>            |

REMARK.—The Academy does not always strictly observe its own rules touching the graphic accent, but the great printers of Madrid (Aribau & Co., Fortanet, and Ginesta) are sufficient guides.

### *Division of Syllables.*

49. A single consonant between vowels begins a syllable : —

|                      |                             |
|----------------------|-----------------------------|
| me-sa, <i>table.</i> | la-bor, <i>needle-work.</i> |
|----------------------|-----------------------------|

a. The letters *ch*, *rr*, *ll*, and *ñ*, are considered as simple consonants, and follow the same rule : —

|                                |                       |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------|
| mu-cha-cho, <i>boy.</i>        | ni-ño, <i>child.</i>  |
| pan-ta-lla, <i>lamp-shade.</i> | tie-rra, <i>land.</i> |

50. Two separable consonants standing between vowels are divided : —

|                        |  |                           |
|------------------------|--|---------------------------|
| puer-ta, <i>door</i> . |  | gus-to, <i>pleasure</i> . |
|------------------------|--|---------------------------|

*Exception.* — The letters *b, c, ch, d, f, g, j, p, q, t, v, z*, followed by *l* or *r*, cannot be separated, unless they unite compound words : —

|                                |  |                                  |
|--------------------------------|--|----------------------------------|
| pa-la-bra, <i>word</i> .       |  | ta-bla, <i>board</i> .           |
| si-glo, <i>century</i> .       |  | po-drá, <i>he will be able</i> . |
| sub-lu-nar, <i>sub-lunar</i> . |  |                                  |

51. Three or four consonants, of which *s* is the second, divide after the *s* : —

|                                |  |                                 |
|--------------------------------|--|---------------------------------|
| cons-tan-te, <i>constant</i> . |  | trans-cri-bir, <i>to copy</i> . |
|--------------------------------|--|---------------------------------|

*a.* Otherwise compound words are to be resolved into their elements : —

|                                      |  |                                   |
|--------------------------------------|--|-----------------------------------|
| cor-ta-plu-mas, <i>penknife</i> .    |  | ca-ri-lar-go, <i>long-faced</i> . |
| pre-po-si-cion, <i>preposition</i> . |  | ad-je-ti-vo, <i>adjective</i> .   |

52. True diphthongs and triphthongs are indivisible :

|                              |  |                                 |
|------------------------------|--|---------------------------------|
| vie-ne, <i>he comes</i> .    |  | bue-no, <i>good</i> .           |
| pre-cials, <i>ye prize</i> . |  | va-cieis, <i>ye may empty</i> . |

but

|                          |  |                              |
|--------------------------|--|------------------------------|
| lo-or, <i>praise</i> .   |  | le-er, <i>to read</i> .      |
| a-ta-ud, <i>coffin</i> . |  | gan-zú-a, <i>false key</i> . |

### Capital Letters.

53. These follow the same general laws as in English, with the following important exceptions : —

*a.* Adjectives derived from the names of nations,

provinces, towns, and men, are written with small initials : —

el idioma frances, *the French language*.  
 la sal andaluza, *Andalusian wit and humor*.  
 las tablas alfonsíes, *the Alfonsinian Tables*.  
 la escena madrileña, *the Madrid stage (theatre)*.

but

|  |  |                                     |
|--|--|-------------------------------------|
| el Andaluz, <i>the Andalusian</i> .    |  | el Frances, <i>the Frenchman</i> .  |
| el Madrileño, <i>the Madrilénian</i> . |  | el Catalan, <i>the Catalanian</i> . |

*b.* The pronoun **yo**, *I*, is written with a small initial, unless it begins a sentence after a period, or introduces a quotation : —

él y yo, *he and I*. | dijo : "Yo soy," *he said* : " *it is I*."

### Orthographic Signs.

**54.** The diæresis is used to dissolve a diphthong, and to render vocal a silent *u* after *g* : —

|                         |  |                             |
|-------------------------|--|-----------------------------|
| stiave, <i>mild</i> .   |  | riela, <i>it glimmers</i> . |
| cigüena, <i>stork</i> . |  | argüir, <i>to argue</i> .   |

**55.** The punctuation marks are identical in Spanish and English, except the signs of interrogation and exclamation, which in Spanish, beside the regular form at the end of the phrase, are inverted at the beginning : —

¿tiene usted un libro? *have you a book?*  
 ¡cuán presto se va el placer! *how quickly pleasure passes away!*

**56.** The following are the technical names of most of the terms relating to orthographical signs : —

|                                    |   |
|------------------------------------|---|
| <i>comma</i> (,) coma.             | <i>interrogation</i> (¿-?) interrogacion. |
| <i>semicolon</i> (;) punto y coma. | <i>exclamation</i> (¡-!) admiracion.      |
| <i>colon</i> (:) dos puntos.       | <i>dash</i> (—) rayita.                   |
| <i>period</i> (.) punto.           | " (....) puntos suspensivos.              |
| <i>full stop</i> , punto final.    | <i>double dash</i> (=) dos rayitas.       |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <i>hyphen</i> (-) guion.                          | <i>section</i> (§) párrafo.                  |
| <i>diaeresis</i> (¨) crema.                       | <i>paragraph</i> (¶) calderon.               |
| <i>parenthesis</i> ( ) paréntesis.                | <i>tilde</i> (~) tilde, as ñ.                |
| <i>brackets</i> ([ ]) corchetes.                  | <i>bar</i> (—) rasgo, as admon. for          |
| <i>brace</i> ( { } ) corchete.                    | administracion, <i>office</i> . <sup>1</sup> |
| <i>apostrophe</i> ( ' ) apóstrofo or virgullilla. | <i>cedilla</i> (ç) cedilla (obsolete).       |
| <i>quotation marks</i> ( " " ) comillas.          | <i>caret</i> ( ^ ) llamada.                  |
| <i>index</i> (☞) manecilla.                       | <i>capitals</i> (letras) mayúsculas.         |
| <i>star</i> ( * ) estrellita.                     | <i>small letters</i> , minúsculas.           |
| <i>asterisk</i> , asterisco.                      | <i>catch word</i> , reclamo.                 |
| <i>dagger</i> ( † ) cruz.                         | <i>reference</i> , cita, llamada.            |
|   | <i>italics</i> , cursiva, bastardilla.       |
|   | <i>to underscore</i> , subrayar.             |

## NOTE

ON CASTILIAN VULGARISMS AMONG THE LOWER CLASSES, FREQUENTLY QUOTED IN LITERATURE.

## Vowels.

57. The vowel *e* is occasionally employed for *i* : —

|                         |                        |
|-------------------------|------------------------|
| prencipal for prñcipal. | vesita for vñsita.     |
| prencipio “ prñcipio.   | enquolino “ ñnquilino. |
| vesitar “ vñsitar.      | endina “ ñndigna.      |
| denguno for ñnguno.     |                        |

58. Vowels are diphthongized irregularly, and *i* inserted : —

|                     |                           |
|---------------------|---------------------------|
| halga for haya.     | qulá for ca.              |
| cudíáo } “ cuidado. | nalde “ nadie.            |
| cuidíáo }           | Alfonso, a, “ Alfonso, a. |

59. The diphthong *ie* is reduced to its primitive *e*, and *vice versa* : —

|                             |                            |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------|
| pacencia for paciencia.     | concencia for concliencia. |
| diferiencia for diferencia. |                            |

<sup>1</sup> This sign of abbreviation which originated the tilde is taken from the Arabs. See Wright's Arabic Grammar, Vol. I., p. 23, d.

## Consonants.

60. *B* and *v* easily pass over into *g* by the aspirate *h* :—

|                              |       |           |     |            |
|------------------------------|-------|-----------|-----|------------|
| vuelve, <i>he returns</i> ,  | makes | huelve    | and | güelve.    |
| bueno, <i>good</i> ,         | "     | hueno     | "   | güeno.     |
| abuelo, <i>grandfather</i> , | "     | ahuelo    | "   | agüelo.    |
| buhardilla, <i>attic</i> ,   | "     | huardilla | "   | guardilla. |

*a*. On the other hand, *g* passes over into *b* through *h* :—

|                        |       |         |     |                    |
|------------------------|-------|---------|-----|--------------------|
| agur, <i>bye-bye</i> , | makes | ahur    | and | abur. <sup>1</sup> |
| aguja, <i>needle</i> , | "     | ahuja   | "   | abuja.             |
| agujero, <i>hole</i> , | "     | ahujero | "   | bujero.            |

Some of these forms, viz., *agüelo*, *guardilla*, *abur*, *avur*, and *ahur*, are included in the native dictionaries, while all are frequent in the national drama and *novela de costumbres*.<sup>2</sup>

61. *Cc*. *C* is rejected before *c* and *t*, as might be expected from the national repugnance to double letters :—

|                     |                     |
|---------------------|---------------------|
| acion for accion.   | efeto for efecto.   |
| aficion " afiecion. | direto " directo.   |
| facioso " faccioso. | conduta " conducta. |

Hence the literary forms *objeto*, *object*, and *sujeto*, *subject*, *aficion* (*affectio*), *fondness*, in obedience to this popular law.

62. *Ch*. Among the peasants of both Castiles, a very peculiar sound of the *ch* is frequently heard, approaching the Basque *ts* :—*muchacha*, *leche*, *chata*.

<sup>1</sup> *Agur* (French *heur* in *bonheur*, *malheur*) is a remnant of the Roman passing salutation "bonum augurium tibi sit," our "good luck to you," now used in Spain in turning from a person or on leaving a shop. The popular tradition is that it means the *devil*, and perhaps the original should read "prosit tibi Augur," the Augur (*i.e.* Apollo) be with thee. At all events, the celebrated statesman and scholar, Martinez de la Rosa, sought to exorcise the paganism by saying "*Abur adios*."

<sup>2</sup> See among many others the *sainetes* of Ramon de la Cruz, Madrid, 1843, 2 vols. 8°; the *Escenas Matritenses*, of the now venerable Mesonero Romanos, best edition, Madrid, 1862; the *Escenas Andaluzas*, by "El Solitario" (Serafin Estébanez Calderon), Madrid, 1847, 4°, and the *Españoles Pintados por sí mismos*, containing articles by the best talent of contemporary Spain.

63. *D*. This letter is constantly omitted between vowels and when final : —

|            |            |         |              |
|------------|------------|---------|--------------|
| Práo       | for Prado. | tóo     | for todo.    |
| casáo      | " casado.  | é       | " de.        |
| láo        | " lado.    | pué ser | " puede ser. |
| ocupáo     | " ocupado, | Madrí   | " Madrid.    |
| marío      | " marido.  | comé    | " comed.     |
| vía        | " vida.    | berdá   | " verdad.    |
| náa and ná | " nada.    | necesía | " necesidad. |

usté and osté for usted.

The contraction *do* for *ado* is common to all classes.

*a*. This system of suppression has produced the degeneration of Spanish words from the Latin : —

|                             |           |                    |        |              |
|-----------------------------|-----------|--------------------|--------|--------------|
| <i>sedēre, to sit,</i>      | Old Span. | seer, <sup>1</sup> | Modern | ser, to be.  |
| <i>vidēre, to see,</i>      | "         | veer,              | "      | ver, to see. |
| <i>legēre, to read,</i>     | "         | leer,              | "      | leer.        |
| <i>comedēre, to eat,</i>    | "         | comer,             | "      | comer.       |
| <i>delictum, crime,</i>     | "         | delicto            | "      | delito.      |
| <i>mente captus, silly,</i> | "         | mentecapto,        | "      | mentecato.   |
| <i>civitat-em, state,</i>   | "         | cibdad, town,      | "      | ciudad.      |

64. *H* before *ue* frequently passes over into *g* : —

|        |            |           |              |
|--------|------------|-----------|--------------|
| güevo  | for huevo. | güeso     | for hueso.   |
| güerta | " huerta.  | güéspedes | " huéspedes. |

These incorrect forms are met with in the old literature, especially in MSS. *Güete* for *Huete*, *Güesca* for *Huesca*. See also *B*, *V*.

65. *Ll* like *y* consonant : —

|      |            |      |            |
|------|------------|------|------------|
| yeno | for lleno. | yeba | for lleva. |
|------|------------|------|------------|

66. *S* is frequently dropped or barely aspirated, especially when final : —

|             |           |            |                 |
|-------------|-----------|------------|-----------------|
| pué or pue' | for pues. | lo' bueno' | for los buenos. |
|-------------|-----------|------------|-----------------|

<sup>1</sup> Gerund : *seyendo* ; part, past, *seydo*, *seido*, and *sido*, in Old Spanish, even in documents dated as late as 1502 to 1546, in my possession.

67. *Y* is often pronounced too emphatically, like the English *j*: —

|                      |  |                      |
|----------------------|--|----------------------|
| yégua, <i>mare</i> . |  | ya, <i>already</i> . |
| yeso, <i>lime</i> .  |  | yo, <i>I</i> .       |

68. Metathesis is very common: —

|                       |     |  |
|-----------------------|-----|--|
| Blivia and blibia     | for | Biblia, <i>Bible</i> .                         |
| probe                 | "   | pobre, <i>poor</i> .                           |
| pedricar              | "   | predicar, <i>to preach</i> .                   |
| presona               | "   | persona, <i>person</i> .                       |
| percurador            | "   | procurador, <i>attorney</i> .                  |
| perlado               | "   | prelado, <i>prelate</i> .                      |
| naide                 | "   | nadie, <i>nobody</i> .                         |
| "abernuncio" (Sancho) | "   | "abrenuncio" (D. Quijote), <i>I renounce</i> . |

69. Other vulgar forms are *conozgo* for *conozco*, *I know*; *dende* for *desde*; *denantes* for *antes*; *onde* for *donde*. Gipsy words abound in the vocabulary of the lower orders; as, *chavó* for *muchacho*; *parné* for *dinero*; *camelar* for *querer*; *diquelar* for *ver*,<sup>1</sup> etc. Of English the Peninsular war seems to have bequeathed only *el monís*, *the money*!

---

<sup>1</sup> The best work for these terms, which are scattered about the modern popular drama, is *El Gitanismo*, containing Grammar and Vocabulary, by F. S. Mayo, *aliàs* Quindalé, Madrid, 1870, 12°, pp. 152.

## SECTION SECOND.

---

### FORM AND INFLECTION.

#### *Preliminary Remarks.*

70. There are in Spanish the usual nine Parts of Speech ; namely, the noun, adjective, pronoun, verb, participle, adverb, preposition, conjunction, and interjection.

71. Of these Parts of Speech, the first five are capable of various degrees of *inflection* ; the rest are said to be *invariable*.<sup>1</sup>

72. The inflection of nouns, adjectives, and pronouns may also be called *declension* ; that of verbs, *conjugation*. Adjectives, adjective pronouns, and past participles are likewise said to be *varied*, with respect to gender and number.

73. Declinable or inflected words have number, gender, and, to a certain extent, case. Verbs have number and person, mode and tense.

74. The declinable parts of speech are inflected by the aid of prepositions, chiefly *de*, *of*, *from*, and *a*, *to*, *at*, which may for this reason be termed case-prepositions.

75. Although cases are, properly speaking, wanting in Spanish, except in the personal pronouns, their technical names are convenient for exact and concise statement. We shall, therefore, designate them as follows : —

---

<sup>1</sup> The inflection of a word signifies the various changes that take place in its structure or endings to express number, gender, case, person, mode, and tense.



|       | Case Name.             | Eng. Equivalent.        | Span. Signs. | Eng. Signs.       |
|-------|------------------------|-------------------------|--------------|-------------------|
| N.    | Nominative.            | Nomin. or Subject.      |              |                   |
| G.    | Genitive.              | Possessive.             | de           | 's, s', of, from. |
| D.    | Dative.                | Indirect Objective.     | á            | to, at.           |
| I. A. | Impersonal Accusative. | Direct Objective.       |              |                   |
| P. A. | Personal Accusative.   | Direct Objective.       | á            |                   |
| P.    | Prepositional.         | (With any preposition.) |              |                   |

76. The Accusative is usually like the Nominative when the direct object of an active transitive verb is the name of a thing, animal, or place (*Impersonal Accusative*), and like the Dative when the direct object represents a person, thing, or abstract quality personified (*Personal Accusative*):—

|  |                                   |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| este muchacho destroza <b>sus libros</b> , | this boy mutilates his books.     |
| un buen padre quiere <b>á sus hijos</b> ,  | a good father loves his children. |
| el vicio aborrece <b>á la virtud</b> ,     | vice abhors virtue.               |

77. The Prepositional case is like the Nominative, except in certain personal pronouns:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| el niño sale á paseo con <b>el vecino</b> , | the child goes out to walk with the neighbor. |
| no podrá hacer eso sin <b>mí</b> ,          | he cannot do that without me.                 |
| estaba fuera de <b>sí</b> de gozo,          | he was beside himself for joy.                |
| ¡Dios se apiade de <b>tí</b> !              | may God take pity on thee!                    |
| no quiero ir con <b>él</b> ,                | I do not care to go with him.                 |

78. Leading prepositions are:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| á, <i>to</i> (motion to); <i>at</i> (position).      | hacia, <i>towards, toward</i> .                  |
| ante, <i>before</i> (presence).                      | hasta, <i>till, until, to, up to</i> .           |
| con, <i>with</i> (means, accompaniment).             | para, <i>for</i> (destination); <i>to</i> (end). |
| contra, <i>against</i> .                             | para con, <i>toward</i> (moral direction).       |
| de, <i>of, from</i> (possession, origin).            | por, <i>by</i> (agent); <i>for</i> (motive).     |
| desde, <i>from, since</i> (time, place).             | sin, <i>without</i> .                            |
| en, <i>in, at</i> (state, place).                    | sobre, <i>on, upon</i> .                         |
| entre, <i>between</i> (two); <i>among</i> (several). | tras, <i>after, behind</i> (order).              |

a. The following govern the Genitive : —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| á casa de, <i>to one's house</i> (motion).   | cerca de, <i>near</i> .                |
| ánten de, <i>before</i> (time, order).       | en casa de, <i>in, at, one's house</i> |
| después de, <i>after</i> (time, order).      | (rest).                                |
| delante de, <i>before</i> (place, position). | léjos de, <i>far from</i> .            |
| detrás de, <i>behind</i> (place, position).  | encima de, <i>on, upon, over</i> .     |
|  | debajo de, <i>under, beneath</i> .     |

Examples.

|                                 |                                    |
|---------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| entrega el libro al hombre,     | he delivers the book to the man.   |
| vamos todos á Sevilla,          | let us all go to Seville.          |
| cartas á varios,                | letters to divers (persons).       |
| Pedro quiere á Juan,            | Peter likes John.                  |
| está á la puerta,               | he stands at the door.             |
| ante el rey, el alcalde,        | before the king, the mayor.        |
| se hirió con una lanza,         | he wounded himself with a lance    |
| salió con un amigo,             | he went out with a friend.         |
| se sublevaron contra la autori- | they revolted against the authori- |
| dad,                            | ties.                              |
| la madre del mozo,              | the lad's mother.                  |
| la fuerza de la sangre,         | the power of blood.                |
| vengo de Italia,                | I come from Italy.                 |
| construido de latón,            | made out of brass.                 |
| contento de álguien,            | satisfied with somebody.           |
| vive del viento,                | he lives on air.                   |
| bebe del vaso,                  | he drinks out of a glass.          |
| es amado de todos,              | he is beloved by all.              |
| desde aquel día,                | from (since) that day.             |
| desde el palacio,               | from the palace.                   |
| en Madrid; en casa,             | at Madrid; at home.                |
| en el campo; en la ciudad,      | in the country; in the city.       |
| esta carta es para mí,          | this letter is for me.             |
| lo hago para un amigo,          | I do it for a friend.              |
| se come para vivir,             | men eat to live.                   |
| justo para con los hombres,     | just toward men.                   |
| hecho por un artesano,          | made by a mechanic.                |
| creado por Dios,                | created by God.                    |
| por un buen motivo,             | for a good reason                  |

salió sin capa,  
 tras este sugeto vino otro,  
 á casa del cura,  
 ántes de éste entré yo,  
 ántes del tiempo,  
 usted está ántes de él,  
 despues de esto,  
 vino despues de mí,  
 delante del palacio,  
 detrás de la puerta,  
 cerca de la ciudad,  
 en casa de un amigo,  
 lójos de la poblacion,  
 encima de la mesa,  
 debajo de la mesa.

he went out without a cloak.  
 after this person came another.  
 to the curate's (house).  
 I came in before this (man).  
 before the time.  
 you are before him (rank).  
 after this.  
 he came after me.  
 before the palace.  
 behind the door.  
 near the city.  
 at a friend's (house).  
 far from the town.  
 on the table.  
 under the table.

REMARK. — In giving the various inflections of declinable words, the enumeration of cases will ordinarily be limited, for brevity's sake, to the Nominative, Genitive, Dative, and one of the two Accusatives.

### The Articles.<sup>1</sup>

79. The Articles are of two sorts: the Definite, **el**, *the*, and the Indefinite, **un**, *an* or *a*. They agree with the noun they limit in gender, number, and case, and are inflected as follows:—

| SINGULAR. |       |        |                             | PLURAL.    |        |                           |  |
|-----------|-------|--------|-----------------------------|------------|--------|---------------------------|--|
|           | Masc. | Fem.   |                             | Masc.      | Fem.   |                           |  |
| N.        | el    | la     | <i>the.</i>                 | los        | las    | <i>the.</i>               |  |
| G.        | del   | de la  | <i>'s, of, or from the.</i> | de los     | de las | <i>s', of or from the</i> |  |
| D.        | al    | á la   | <i>to or at the.</i>        | á los      | á las  | <i>to or at the.</i>      |  |
| A.        | el    | la     | <i>the.</i>                 | los        | las    | <i>the.</i>               |  |
| N.        | un    | una    | <i>an or a.</i>             | (Wanting.) |        |                           |  |
| G.        | de un | de una | <i>of or from an or a.</i>  |            |        |                           |  |
| D.        | á un  | á una  | <i>to or at an or a.</i>    |            |        |                           |  |
| A.        | un    | una    | <i>an or a.</i>             |            |        |                           |  |

<sup>1</sup> Although the Articles are properly determinative adjectives, they are given here because they serve to distinguish the gender and case of nouns.

**80.** **Del** and **al** are contractions of *de el* and *d el* respectively. At the present day the uncontracted forms are used only when the article **el** belongs to a quoted epithet, title, or heading :—

|                                     |                             |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| un suelto de 'El Imparcial,'        | an item in 'The Imparcial.' |
| una extraordinaria á 'El Porvenir,' | a 'Porvenir' extra.         |
| una carta de 'El Globo,'            | a letter in 'The Globe.'    |

but

|  |                                   |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| un artículo de fondo del Diario de la Corte, | a leader in the Court Journal.    |
| una carta al Diario oficial,                 | a letter to the official Gazette. |

**81.** The Masculine Definite Article **el** is at present regularly employed before a feminine noun in the singular number, when it begins with the syllable *a* or *ha* having the tonic accent :—

|   |                                     |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| el alma, <i>the soul</i> (in general).            | la alegría, <i>the joy</i> .        |
| el ánima, <i>the soul</i> (in purgatory).         | la animacion, <i>the stir</i> .     |
| el ama, <sup>1</sup> <i>the mistress, nurse</i> . | la aguja, <i>the needle</i> .       |
| el agua, <i>the water</i> .                       | la alhaja, <i>the jewel</i> .       |
| el águila, <i>the eagle</i> .                     | la avenida, <i>the inundation</i> . |
| el ave, <i>the bird</i> (generic).                | la armadura, <i>the mounting</i> .  |
| el arte, <i>the art</i> .                         | la hacienda, <i>the estate</i> .    |
| el habla, <i>the speech</i> .                     | la hazaña, <i>the exploit</i> .     |
| el hambre, <i>the famine</i> .                    | la Habana, <i>(the) Havana</i> .    |

but

|                         |                                 |
|-------------------------|---------------------------------|
| las almas, las águilas, | the souls, the eagles.          |
| el arte poética,        | the art of poetry (poetic art). |
| la alta casa,           | the lofty house.                |
| el agua está ya clara,  | the water is now clear.         |

<sup>1</sup> Una ama de llaves or de gobierno, *a housekeeper*; una ama de leche, *a wet-nurse*; una ama, in general, *a mistress, the lady of the house*, with reference to the servants, employees, etc.

a. The Indefinite Article is often found employed in the same way, whatever be the accent, but not by the best modern writers and speakers:—

un ave, for una ave,  
“con un alma toda fuego,”

a bird.  
with a soul all fire.

82. The Indefinite Article has properly no plural; the adjective **unos**, fem. **unas**, *some*, may, however, be used to express the partitive value of a substantive, especially when it has an attribute:—

tengo casas y heredades,  
el rey posee palacios,  
tengo unas casas muy bonitas,  
el rey posee unos palacios muy  
regalados,

I have houses and lands.  
the king possesses palaces.  
I have some very pretty houses.  
the king possesses some very  
sumptuous palaces.

a. When the noun has no attribute, *unos* is equivalent to *a few*, but with a weaker force than *algunos* or *unos cuantos*, in the signification of *some*, *any*, *a few*:—

una frutera con unas frutas,  
quiso dar unos pasos,  
¿tiene usted (algunos) libros?  
tengo algunos; no tengo más que  
unos cuantos,

a dish with fruit.  
he was about to take (a few) steps.  
have you (any) books?  
I have some; I have only a few.

REMARK.—It is evident, therefore, that there is no partitive article in Spanish as in French, although there is a partitive construction formed by the *genitive case*:—

son gentes de las más ricas que  
hay en la ciudad,  
su marido es elector y de los in-  
fluientes,

they are (some) of the wealthiest  
people in town.  
her husband is a voter, and (one)  
of the influential (ones).

The Determinative Lo.

83. The so-called neuter article *lo, the*, is employed with adjectives, adverbs, and pronouns (very seldom and always illogically with nouns), to express substantive ideas :—

|              |   |
|--------------|---|
| lo bueno,    | the good, that which is good, the good thing (τὸ ἀγαθόν). |
| lo malo,     | the evil, that which is bad, the evil thing (τὸ κακόν).   |
| lo ameno,    | what is lovely, the loveliness ( <i>i.e.</i> of nature).  |
| lo posible,  | what is possible, one's best, the possibility.            |
| lo infame,   | what is infamous, the infamy.                             |
| lo mejor,    | the best, that which is best, the best thing.             |
| lo olvidado, | that which is forgotten, the past and gone.               |
| lo que,      | that which, what; todo lo que, <i>all that</i> .          |
| lo cual,     | which thing, which; todo lo cual, <i>all of which</i> .   |
| lo mío,      | mine, that which or what is mine (τὸ ἐμόν).               |
| lo demás,    | the rest, that which or what remains.                     |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| lo justo no es siempre lo más<br>hacedero, | what is just is not always what<br>is most feasible. |
| lo ameno de este valle,                    | the loveliness of this vale.                         |
| haré lo posible para efectuarlo,           | I shall do my best to bring it<br>about.             |
| reconozco lo infame de su accion,          | I acknowledge the infamousness<br>of his act.        |
| no entiendo lo que dice,                   | I do not catch what he says.                         |
| todo lo que reluce no es oro,              | all is not gold that glitters.                       |
| dicho lo cual se retiró,                   | saying which he withdrew.                            |
| dió á cada uno lo suyo,                    | he gave to each his own.                             |

a. As a pronoun, as well as an article, *lo* has a variety of uses that need only be illustrated at this point :—

|                               |                                      |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| lo creo, lo aseguro,          | I think so, I assert it confidently. |
| yo soy ciego y él no lo es,   | I am blind and he is not (so).       |
| él es artista y yo no lo soy, | he is an artist and I am not (one).  |

es lo de siempre,  
lo del palacio, lo del rey,

versos á lo divino,<sup>1</sup>

it is the old story (that of alway).  
the (affair) of the palace, of the  
king.

verses (turned) into the sacred  
(style).

See further under The Adjective.

### The Noun.

#### GENDER.

**84.** Spanish nouns have two Genders only : the Masculine and Feminine. All substantives, even those designating inanimate things, substances, and abstract ideas, are of one of these two genders : —

el hombre, *the man.*

el caballo, *the horse.*

el libro, *the book.*

el azúcar, *(the) sugar.*

el vicio, *(the) vice, bad habit.*

la mujer, *the woman.*

la vaca, *the cow.*

la pluma, *the pen.*

la leche, *(the) milk.*

la virtud, *(the) virtue.*

Hence *libro*, *azúcar*, *vicio*, for example, are grammatically considered to be males, like *hombre*, *caballo*; and the corresponding pronouns *él*, *he*, *le*, *him*, apply equally in both cases. So *pluma*, *leche*, *virtud*, are considered as females, and the corresponding pronouns would be *ella*, *she*, *la*, *her*. *It*, then, is not a translation of *él*, *le*, *ella*, *la*, when reference is made to the name of a thing, substance, or an abstract idea, but an idiomatic adaptation to English usage. The Spanish translation of *it* could only be *ello* as subject, if expressed, and *lo* as object or predicate : —

<sup>1</sup> Such is court or secular poetry metamorphosed into religious verse by a sort of sacred travesty. Boscan and Garcilaso (1543) were so transmuted by one Sebastian de Córdoba (1575). For examples, see my edition of Boscan, Madrid, 1875, at pp. xxvii and 520.

veo al hombre, le veo,  
tengo el libro, le tengo,  
busco á la dama, la busco,  
busco la pluma, la busco,  
¿crees lo que dice? lo creo,  
(ello) consta, *it is evident.*

I see the man, I see him.  
I have the book, I have him (it)  
I seek the lady, I seek her.  
I seek the pen, I seek her (it).  
do you believe what he says? I  
believe it.

**85. General Rule.** — In the greatest number of Spanish nouns, the ending *o* indicates the masculine gender, and the ending *a* the feminine :—

el hermano, *the brother.*  
el gozo, *the joy.*

la tia, *the aunt.*  
la alegría, (*the*) *delight.*

**86.** The gender of a word may be determined in part by its signification and in part by its ending.

**87.** Masculines by signification are :—

*a.* All nouns of whatever ending that denote males, or the dignities, professions, and pursuits commonly assigned to males :—

el papa, *the pope.*  
el rey, *the king.*  
el juez, *the judge.*  
el cura, *the curate.*  
el periodista, *the journalist.*  
el tahir, *the gambler.*

el grabador, *the engraver.*  
el albañil, *the mason.*  
el ebanista, *the cabinet-maker.*  
el sastre, *the tailor.*  
el buey, *the ox.*  
el avestruz, *the ostrich.*

*b.* The names of countries, cities, and towns usually follow the gender indicated by the final vowels *o*, *a* ; if they end in a consonant they are mostly masculine :—

Valencia, Segovia, la Andalucía.  
Madrid, Vélez, Búrgos.

Logroño, Oviedo, Lugo, el Cárpio  
Jaén, Almodóvar, el Escorial.



REMARK. — Masculines in *o* may be poetically used in the feminine, the noun *la ciudad*, *the city*, being understood; and feminines in *a* are masculine when the inhabitants are intended: —

*la gran Toledo*, *great Toledo*. | *todo Málaga*, *all Malaga*.

Except in those proper names of places from which the article is inseparable: —

|                                    |                                    |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <i>la gran ciudad del Toboso</i> , | the great city of El Toboso.       |
| <i>Bernardo del Carpio</i> ,       | Bernard of El Carpio.              |
| <i>la Coruña entera</i> ,          | All Corunna (the "Groyne" entire). |

*c.* The names of most rivers, whatever be the ending: —

|  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| <i>el Guadiana (wâdî-Anas)</i> .       | <i>el Guadalaviar (wâd-âl-abiâd</i> , |
| <i>el Guadalquivir (wâd-âl-kebîr</i> , | <i>the white river)</i> .             |
| <i>the great river)</i> .              | <i>el Guadalajara (stony river)</i> . |

*d.* Indeclinable parts of speech and phrases used substantively: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <i>el porqué, the wherefore</i> .       | <i>el besamanos, the (royal) salutation</i> . |
| <i>el sí, the consent</i> .             |   |
| <i>el pagaré, the promissory note</i> . | <i>el pro y el contra, the pro and con</i> .  |
| <i>los afueras, the outskirts</i> .     |   |
| <i>el viva, the applause</i> .          | <i>el quién sabe, the query</i> .             |
| <i>el pésame, the condolence</i> .      | <i>el qué dirán, public gossip</i> .          |
| <i>el conquis, the wherewithal</i> .    | <i>el vayven or vaiven (va y viene)</i> ,     |
| <i>el creer, believing, belief</i> .    | <i>the oscillation</i> .                      |

*e.* The names of most fruit-trees or their wood are masculine, while those of their fruits are feminine: —

|  |                                   |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| <i>el manzano, the apple-tree</i> .    | <i>una manzana, an apple</i> .    |
| <i>el castaño, the chestnut-tree</i> . | <i>una castaña, a chestnut</i> .  |
| <i>el naranjo, the orange-tree</i> .   | <i>una naranja, an orange</i> .   |
| <i>el guindo, the cherry-tree</i> .    | <i>una guinda, a cherry</i> .     |
| <i>el avellano, the hazel-tree</i> .   | <i>una avellana, a hazelnut</i> . |

el olivo, *the olive-tree*.  
 el peral, *the pear-tree*.  
 el moral, *the mulberry-tree*.  
 el nogal or la noguera, *the walnut*.  
 el roble or la encina,<sup>1</sup> *the oak*.

una aceituna, *an olive*.  
 una pera, *a pear*.  
 una mora, *a mulberry*.  
 una nuez, *a walnut*.  
 una bellota, *an acorn*.

Exceptions.

la palmera, *the palm-tree*.

la higuera, *the fig-tree*.

el limonero, *the lemon-tree*.

el membrillero, *the quince*.

el albaricoquero, *the apricot*.

un dátíl, *a date*.

{ un higo, *a fig*.

{ una breva, *an early fig*.

un limon, *a lemon*.

un membrillo, *a quince*.

un albaricoque, *an apricot*.

REMARK. — *El fruto* (masc.) is the fruit on the tree, or in a figurative sense; *la fruta* (fem.) is the fruit gathered, exposed in the market, or served on the table. On the other hand, *la rama* is the bough or branch attached to the tree, and *el ramo*, when plucked, as also in a metaphorical sense.

88. Feminine by signification are :—

a. All nouns, of whatever ending, which denote females, or the dignities, offices, professions, and pursuits which may be ascribed in Spanish countries to women :—

la emperatriz, *the empress*.

la reina, *the queen*.

la infanta, *the princess royal*.

la vaca, *the cow*.

la gallina, *the hen*.

la costurera, *the seamstress*.

la estanquera, *the tobacconist*.

la patrona, *the landlady*.

la peinadora, *the lady's hair-dresser*.

la doncella, *the lady's maid*.

la oficiala, *the work-woman*.

Except: *el dueño*, *the owner*, *proprietor*, or *proprietress*; *un ángel*, *an angel*, which are applicable to persons of either sex.

<sup>1</sup> The Latin *quercus* exists only in the family name *Albuquerque*; that is, *arbor querci* (kerki), the ancestral arms being an oak on a white ground. See Madoz and Nuñez de Castro. *Encina* is from the diminutive of *illex*, — *ilicina*, *elcina*, *encina*. The ancient family name was written *Ensina*, *Ensinas*, and *Ençina*, etc. *Roble* is from *robur* (*róððre*, *roble*).

## b. All letters of the alphabet :—

la b (bé), *the letter b*.| una h (ache), *an h*.

## 89. Masculines by ending are :—

a. All nouns, of whatever signification, when they end in *o* :—el libro, *the book*.| el tintero, *the inkstand*.el reino, *the kingdom*.| el cerro, *the hill*.el suelo, *the ground, floor*.| el palacio, *the palace*.Except: la mano, *the hand*; la reo, *the (female) culprit*.b. Nouns in *a* designating males, or derived from Latin masculines :—el monarca, *the monarch*.| el planeta, *the planet*.el Carlista, *the Carlist*.| los albacéas, *executors* (Arabic).el cometa, *the comet*.| el día, *the day*.Also, el mapa, *the map*.Likewise foreign words in general ending in an accented *á*: el sofá, *the sofa*; el maná, *(the) manna*; el albalá, *the royal patent or certificate*.c. Nouns in *a* derived from Greek and Latin neuters in *a* (genitive *-aros, -atis*), or such as follow their analogy :—el clima, *the climate*.| el problema, *the problem*.el drama, *the drama*.| el poema, *the poem*.el enigma, *the enigma*.| el réuma, *the cold*.el idioma,<sup>1</sup> *the language*.| el sistema, *the system*.el lema, *the motto, legend* (λήμμα).| el telegrama, *the telegram*.el tema, *the theme, exercise*.| el programa, *the program*.<sup>1</sup> Never *idiom* as a peculiarity of speech, which is *idiotismo* in Spanish.

90. Feminines by *ending* are:—

*a.* All nouns, of whatever signification, when they end in *a*, derived from Latin feminines of the first declension, or from neuter plurals. The latter often have, besides the singular meaning, a collective one echoing their plural origin:—

|                                    |  |
|------------------------------------|--|
| la mesa, <i>the table.</i>         | la hoja, <sup>1</sup> <i>the leaf, leaves.</i> |
| la tabla, <i>the board, plank.</i> | la caza, <i>the shooting, game.</i>            |
| la regla, <i>the rule.</i>         | la leña, <i>the firewood.</i>                  |
| la casa, <i>the house.</i>         | la viña, <i>the vine, vineyard.</i>            |
| la silla, <i>the chair.</i>        | la boda, <i>the marriage, nuptials.</i>        |
| la puerta, <i>the door, gate.</i>  | la loza, <i>the crockery.</i>                  |

*From mensa, tabŭla, regŭla, casa, sella, porta; folia, capta, ligna, vinea, vota, lutea.*

*b.* Nouns terminated in *dad, tad, tud, ion, umbre, ie*, which are derived from Latin accusatives feminine in *tatem, tutem, ionem, inem, iem*:—

|                                    |   |
|------------------------------------|---|
| la verdad, <i>the truth.</i>       | la servidumbre, <i>the servants (collectively).</i> |
| la libertad, <i>(the) liberty.</i> | la esp cie, <i>the species.</i>                     |
| la virtud, <i>(the) virtue.</i>    | la s rie, <i>the series.</i>                        |
| la nacion, <i>the nation.</i>      | la superficie, <i>the surface.</i>                  |
| la muchedumbre, <i>the throng.</i> |   |

*From veritatem, libertatem, virtutem, nationem, multitudinem, speciem, etc.*

91. Nouns not denoting males or females, and those terminated or derived otherwise than above indicated, do not uniformly show the gender, in which case it is to

---

<sup>1</sup> The collective sense is illustrated in this sentence: *esta planta lleva mucha hoja, this plant bears much leaf, or has all gone to leaves*, a phraseology very common among Castilian farmers and peasants.

be learned by a habit of associating the noun with an article<sup>1</sup> :—

|  |  |  |
|--|--|--|
| el árbol ( <i>arborem</i> , f.), <i>the tree</i> . |  | la cárcel ( <i>carcerem</i> , m.), <i>the jail</i> , |
| el tallo ( <i>la taille</i> ), <i>the waist</i> .  |  | la calle, <i>the street</i> .                        |

92. Masculine nouns in *a* may assume the feminine article when they are applicable to women :—

|                 |  |                  |  |                       |
|-----------------|--|------------------|--|-----------------------|
| un Belga,       |  | una Belga,       |  | a Belgian.            |
| un Carlista,    |  | una Carlista,    |  | a Carlist.            |
| un artista,     |  | una artista,     |  | an artist.            |
| un compatriota, |  | una compatriota, |  | a compatriot.         |
| un atleta,      |  | una atleta,      |  | an athlete.           |
| un indígena,    |  | una indígena,    |  | a native, aboriginal. |

*a*. On the other hand, a few feminines in *a* now generally assume the masculine article when they denote male persons :—

|               |  |                    |  |                 |
|---------------|--|--------------------|--|-----------------|
| la centinela, |  | el centinela,      |  | the sentinel.   |
| la espía,     |  | el espía,          |  | the spy.        |
| la guardia,   |  | el guardia marina, |  | the midshipman. |
| la guía,      |  | el guía,           |  | the guide.      |

Except: *la recluta*, *the recruit*; *la escolta*, *the escort*.

*b*. Several nouns denoting persons, of other endings than *a*, have a common form for both genders :—

|                      |  |                                 |
|----------------------|--|---------------------------------|
| el or la cómplice,   |  | the accomplice.                 |
| el or la hereje,     |  | the heretic.                    |
| el or la intérprete, |  | the interpreter.                |
| el or la jóven,      |  | the youth (young man or woman). |
| el or la mártir,     |  | the martyr.                     |
| el or la reo,        |  | the criminal, defendant.        |
| el or la testigo,    |  | the witness.                    |
| el or la asistente,  |  | the sick-nurse.                 |

<sup>1</sup> Better with the indefinite article, since the definite does not always serve as a guide to gender. See 82.

93. Many feminine nouns in *a*, denoting things, assume personal significations, and then may belong to either gender, but are preferably masculine :—

|                                     |                              |  |
|-------------------------------------|------------------------------|--|
| la espada, <i>sword</i> .           | el espada,                   | the swordsman.                         |
| la atalaya, <i>watch-tower</i> .    | el atalaya,                  | the warden or keeper of a watch-tower. |
| la trompeta, <i>trumpet</i> .       | el trompeta,                 | the trumpeter.                         |
| la ayuda, <i>aid</i> .              | el ayuda,                    | the aid or aide.                       |
| la máscara, <i>mask</i> .           | el or la máscara,            | the masker.                            |
| la calavera, <i>skull</i> .         | el calavera,                 | the mad-cap, harum scarum fellow.      |
| una ordenanza, <i>ordinance</i> .   | un ordenanza,                | an orderly.                            |
| la cabeza, <i>head</i> .            | el cabeza ( <i>seldom</i> ), | the head, chief.                       |
| la guía, <i>guide, guide-book</i> . | el guía,                     | the guide (man).                       |
| la alhaja, <i>jewel</i> .           | el alhaja,                   | the "gem" (irony).                     |
| la guarda-ropa, <i>wardrobe</i> .   | el guarda-ropa,              | the master of the w. (office).         |

94. Many nouns were formerly feminine which are now masculine in ordinary plain prose ; preserving the archaic feminine, however, in the poetic, sublime, or affected style, and in certain traditional phrases :—

|                            |   |
|----------------------------|---|
| el mar, <i>the sea</i> .   | allende la mar, <i>beyond the sea</i> (archaic).      |
| el puente, <i>bridge</i> . | la puente Segoviana, <i>the aqueduct at Segovia</i> . |

*a. Márgen*, margin of a book, or edge of a stream, is either masculine or feminine, without difference of meaning :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| las márgenes de este libro han de ser muy anchas, | the margins of this book are to be very broad. |
| paséandome por el márgen del río,                 | walking along the margin of the river.         |

1 Generally in the phrase: *es buen alhaja*, *he's a "pretty" fellow*, a "*bright boy*," etc., meaning, he is a man of doubtful reputation, a "*lark*," a hypocrite, etc.

So *el* or *la* dote, *the dowry*; but *las* dotes, (intellectual or moral) *endowments*.

*b. Arte* is feminine in the plural in all senses. In the singular it is feminine with some adjectives and masculine with others, although the feminine greatly predominates:—

*las bellas artes, the fine arts.*

*el arte poética (81), poetic art,  
the art of poetry.*

*las artes mecánicas, the mechanical arts.*

*el arte dramático, the drama.*

95. Some nouns, denoting things, have a different meaning according as they are masculine or feminine:—

*el cometa, the comet.*

*el crisma, (the) holy oil.*

*el cólera, the cholera.*

*el corte, the cut, edge.*

*el canal, the canal (or for irrigation).*

*el capital, capital (money).*

*el moral, mulberry-tree.*

*el frente, front, head.*

*el órden, order (eccles., polit., archit.).*

*el parte, despatch, message, (telegram, etc.).*

*el pendiente, ear-ring.*

*el pez, fish (in the water).*

*la cometa, the kite (child's toy).*

*la crisma,<sup>1</sup> the head (vulgar).*

*la cólera, the rage.*

*la corte, the court, metropolis.*

*la canal, the channel (straits).*

*la capital, the capital (city).*

*la moral, morals, the moral.*

*la frente, the forehead.*

*la órden, order (command, order, e.g., of St. James, etc.).*

*la parte, the part, portion.*

*la pendiente, slope, declivity.*

*la pez, pitch.*

96. Compound nouns usually assume the gender of the second member when that is in the singular; but if it be in the plural the whole word is masculine, whichever be the gender of the second term:—

<sup>1</sup> Because the part christened. The people say: *te rompo la crisma* (or *el bautismo*), *I'll break your head (chrism, baptism)*.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| la guardaropa, <i>the wardrobe.</i>               | el cortaplumas, <i>the pen-knife.</i>   |
| el guarda-canton, <sup>1</sup> <i>guard-post.</i> | el portamonedas, <i>porte-monnaie.</i>  |
| el ferro-carril, <i>the railway.</i>              | el mondadientes, <i>the tooth-pick.</i> |

Except: el tranvía,<sup>2</sup> *the tramway* (horse railroad).

REMARK. — Of course if the word indicates a male person or his office it will be masculine: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| el guarda-aguja, <i>the switch-tender.</i> | el guarda-ropa, <i>the master of the wardrobe.</i> |
|--|--|

#### Formation of the Feminine of Personal Nouns.

97. Masculine nouns indicating persons, their employments, creeds, etc., may be made feminine at will by observing the following rules: —

a. By changing final *o* into *a*: —

|                                    |                                       |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| el abuelo, <i>grandfather.</i>     | la abuela, <i>grandmother.</i>        |
| el hermano, <i>brother.</i>        | la hermana, <i>sister.</i>            |
| el muchacho, <i>boy, lad.</i>      | la muchacha, <i>girl.</i>             |
| el niño, <i>child, little boy.</i> | la niña, <i>child, little girl.</i>   |
| el amigo, <i>friend.</i>           | la amiga, <sup>3</sup> <i>friend.</i> |
| el amo, <i>master.</i>             | el ama (81), <i>mistress.</i>         |
| el compañero, <i>companion.</i>    | la compañera, <i>companion.</i>       |

Except: el diablo, *the evil one*; el diácono, *the deacon*, which make in the feminine la diablesa, *the she-devil*; la diaconisa, *the deaconess*. Reo is unchangeable: el reo, la reo, *the defendant*, and el dueño means the *owner*, male or female, while la dueña signifies

<sup>1</sup> I am ignorant of the technical English equivalent of *guardacanton*. It is a stone post set at the corner or edges of a park and along the country highways to keep carriages in the road.

<sup>2</sup> First introduced into Madrid with the thing itself in 1871, and the gender was the object of considerable discussion in the journals. It is now universally given as masculine, and sometimes spelled *tramvia*.

<sup>3</sup> In good society, among *ladies* only. Gentlemen (unless intimate friends) use it with qualificatives, or prefer *conocida*, *acquaintance*. Es una conocida mia, *she is a friend of mine*, or es mi buena amiga; es muy amiga mia, *she is a good friend of mine*.



the *duenna* in all its associations. But *dueño*, fem. *dueña*, is regular in the sense of master, mistress of one's self; as, no fui dueña de mí misma, *I was not mistress of myself, I could not control myself.*

b. By adding *a* to the masculine endings *d, l, n, r, s*, and *z* : —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| el huésped, <i>guest, boarder.</i>          | la huésped, <i>the guest.</i>           |
| el Español, <i>Spaniard.</i>                | la Española, <i>Spanish woman.</i>      |
| un oficial, <i>officer, journeyman.</i>     | una oficial, <i>journeywoman.</i>       |
| el Alemán, <i>German.</i>                   | la Alemana, <i>German woman.</i>        |
| el chiquitín, <i>little one, wee thing.</i> | la chiquitina, <i>wee thing.</i>        |
| el señor, <i>the gentleman, Mr.</i>         | la señora, <i>the lady, Madam, Mrs.</i> |
| un aguador, <i>water-carrier.</i>           | una aguadora, <i>water girl.</i>        |
| el marqués, <i>marquis.</i>                 | la marquesa, <i>marchioness.</i>        |
| el Francés, <i>Frenchman.</i>               | la Francesa, <i>French woman.</i>       |
| un Andalúz, <i>Andalusian.</i>              | una Andaluza, <i>Andalusian.</i>        |

c. A few in *dor* and *tor* change those endings into *triz* : —

|                                   |                                    |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| el actor, <i>the actor.</i>       | la actriz, <i>the actress.</i>     |
| el emperador, <i>the emperor.</i> | la emperatriz, <i>the empress.</i> |

d. The following add *esa* to the stem of the masculine : —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| el abad, <i>the abbot.</i>                  | la abadesa, <i>the abbess.</i>          |
| el alcáide, <sup>1</sup> <i>the warden.</i> | la alcaidesa, <i>the warden's wife.</i> |
| el alcald-e, <i>the mayor.</i>              | la alcaldesa, <i>the mayor's wife.</i>  |
| el barón, <i>the baron.</i>                 | la baronesa, <i>the baroness.</i>       |
| el cond-e, <i>the earl.</i>                 | la condesa, <i>the countess.</i>        |
| el duque-e, <i>the duke.</i>                | la duquesa, <i>the duchess.</i>         |

e. The following add *isa* to the masculine stem : —

|                                   |                                       |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| el diácon-o, <i>the deacon.</i>   | la diaconisa, <i>the deaconess.</i>   |
| el poet-a, <i>the poet.</i>       | la poetisa, <i>the poetess.</i>       |
| el profet-a, <i>the prophet.</i>  | la profetisa, <i>the prophetess.</i>  |
| el sacerdot-e, <i>the priest.</i> | la sacerdotisa, <i>the priestess.</i> |

<sup>1</sup> Formerly an *alcáide* was the *commander* of a fortress; such a personage is now a *general* or *comandante*, while *alcáide* has descended to the chief of a state or city *prison*. The turnkey is *el llavero*; jailor, *carcelero*.

*f.* Nouns in *e* not derived from Latin present participles generally change that ending into *a* :—

|                                   |                                   |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| el sastre, <i>the tailor.</i>     | la sastra, <i>the tailoress.</i>  |
| el monje, <i>the monk.</i>        | la monja, <i>the nun.</i>         |
| el elefante, <i>the elephant.</i> | la elefanta, <i>the elephant.</i> |

REMARK. — Héroe, *hero*, makes heroína, *heroine*, and jabalí, *wild boar*, makes jabalina.

*g.* Nouns in *ante*, *ente*, *iente* (*yente*), formed from, or on the analogy of, the Latin present participle, should be invariable ; but popular usage tends more and more to give them the feminine in *a* :—

|                  |                          |                  |                     |
|------------------|--------------------------|------------------|---------------------|
| el comediante,   | la comediante, <i>or</i> | la comedianta,   | the actor, actress. |
| el farsante,     | la farsante,             | la farsanta,     | the "humbug."       |
| el pariente,     | la pariente,             | la parienta,     | the relative.       |
| el asistente,    | la asistente,            | la asistenta,    | the sick-nurse.     |
| el pretendiente, | la pretendiente,         | la pretendienta, | the claimant.       |
| el presidente,   | la presidente,           | la presidenta,   | the president.      |
| el protestante,  | la protestante,          | la protestanta,  | the protestant.     |

Exception : la infanta, *the princess royal*, never *la infante*.

98. Some nouns are irregular in the formation of the feminine :—

|                                       |   |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| don (with Christian name), <i>Mr.</i> | doña (with Christian name), <i>Mrs.</i> |
| el príncipe, <i>the prince.</i>       | la princesa, <i>the princess.</i>       |
| el rey, <i>the king.</i>              | la reina, <i>the queen.</i>             |
| el raton, <i>the rat.</i>             | la rata, <i>the mouse.</i>              |
| el gallo, <i>the cock.</i>            | la gallina, <i>the hen.</i>             |

*a.* Likewise the following proper names :—

|                         |                              |
|-------------------------|------------------------------|
| Cárlos, <i>Charles.</i> | Carlota, <i>Charlotte.</i>   |
| Enrique, <i>Henry.</i>  | Enriqueta, <i>Henrietta.</i> |
| Félix, <i>Felix.</i>    | Felisa, <i>Felicia.</i>      |
| José, <i>Joseph.</i>    | Josefa, <i>Joseph.</i>       |
| Miguel, <i>Michael.</i> | Micaéla, <i>Michaela.</i>    |
| Pablo, <i>Paul.</i>     | Paula, <i>Paula.</i>         |
| Pedro, <i>Peter.</i>    | Petra, <i>Petra.</i>         |

99. A few nouns have a distinct form for the feminine :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| el hombre, <i>the man</i> .                      | la mujer, <i>the woman</i> .                |
| el padre, <i>the father</i> .                    | la madre, <i>the mother</i> .               |
| el marido, <i>the husband</i> .                  | la esposa, <i>the wife</i> .                |
| el yerno, <i>the son-in-law</i> .                | la nuera, <i>the daughter-in-law</i> .      |
| el caballero, <i>the gentleman</i> .             | la dama, <i>the lady</i> .                  |
| el toro, el buey, <i>the bull, the ox</i> .      | la vaca, <i>the cow</i> .                   |
| el caballo, <i>the horse</i> .                   | la yégua ( <i>equa</i> ), <i>the mare</i> . |
| el varon, <sup>1</sup> <i>male</i> (of persons). | la hembra, <i>the female</i> (persons).     |
| el macho, <i>male</i> (of animals).              | la hembra, <i>the female</i> (animals).     |

100. The names of some animals are masculine in form, and include the female; others are feminine in form, and include the male. To distinguish such, the words *macho* (masculus) and *hembra* (foemina) are used when necessary :—

|                         |                         |
|-------------------------|-------------------------|
| el macho de la perdíz,  | the male pheasant.      |
| la hembra del ruiseñor, | the female nightingale. |

REMARK. — An intolerable construction is often heard among the uneducated; for example: *la perdiz macho, el ruiseñor hembra*. In the predicate, however, we would say: *esta perdiz es macho, this pheasant is a male; este ruiseñor será hembra, this nightingale must be a female*.

#### NUMBER.

101. Spanish nouns have two numbers, the singular and the plural :—

|                              |                                 |
|------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| el hombre, <i>the man</i> .  | los hombres, <i>the men</i> .   |
| la mujer, <i>the woman</i> . | las mujeres, <i>the women</i> . |

<sup>1</sup> The regular derivative form, *la varona*, *the woman*, in its proper sense, is only found once (in Genesis II.), to represent the Hebrew *isha*,—"called varona" (*isha*, woman), "because she was taken out of varon" (*ish*, man).

Formation of the Plural.

102. The following assume *s* :—

*a.* All unaccented vowel terminals, except *y* :—

|                                   |                                      |
|-----------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| la casa, <i>the house.</i>        | las casas, <i>the houses.</i>        |
| el billete, <i>the ticket.</i>    | los billetes, <i>the tickets.</i>    |
| la metrópoli, <i>the capital.</i> | las metrópolis, <i>the capitals.</i> |
| el amigo, <i>the friend.</i>      | los amigos, <i>the friends.</i>      |
| el espíritu, <i>the spirit.</i>   | los espíritus, <i>the spirits.</i>   |

*b.* The accented vowel terminal *é* :—

|                                   |                                      |
|-----------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| la fé, <i>(the) faith.</i>        | las fés, <i>the certificates.</i>    |
| el pié, <i>the foot.</i>          | los piés, <i>the feet.</i>           |
| el café, <i>the coffee-house.</i> | los cafés, <i>the coffee-houses.</i> |

Except the letter of the alphabet, *la é, las és.*

103. The following assume *es* :—

*a.* All consonant terminals, converting *z* into *c* (28 *a*) :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| el huésped, <i>the guest.</i>            | los huéspedes, <i>the boarders.</i>    |
| la verdad, <i>the truth.</i>             | las verdades, <i>the truths.</i>       |
| el reloj, <sup>1</sup> <i>the watch.</i> | los relojes, <i>the watches.</i>       |
| la piel, <i>the skin, hide.</i>          | las pieles, <i>the skins, hides.</i>   |
| el varón, <i>the man, male.</i>          | los varones, <i>the males.</i>         |
| la nación, <i>the nation.</i>            | las naciones, <i>the nations.</i>      |
| el dolor, <i>the pain, grief.</i>        | los dolores, <i>the pains, sorrow.</i> |
| el mes, <i>the month.</i>                | los meses, <i>the months.</i>          |
| el juez, <i>the judge.</i>               | los jueces, <i>the judges.</i>         |
| la vez, <i>the time (vices).</i>         | las veces, <i>the times (vices).</i>   |

REMARK. — *El lord*, an English *lord*, makes *los lores*; la Cámara de los lores, *the House of Lords.*

<sup>1</sup> From *horologium*, "time reckoner," is now often written *reloj* in the singular, and always pronounced so in *Spain*; in the plural it is pronounced and written *relojes*.

b. Terminals in *y*:—

|                           |                               |
|---------------------------|-------------------------------|
| el rey, <i>the king</i> . | los reyes, <i>the kings</i> . |
| la ley, <i>the law</i> .  | las leyes, <i>the laws</i> .  |
| el buey, <i>the ox</i> .  | los bueyes, <i>the oxen</i> . |

c. Accented vowel terminals, except *é*:—

|                                   |                                       |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| el bajá, <i>the pasha</i> .       | los bajáes, <i>the pashas</i> .       |
| el rubí, <i>the ruby</i> .        | los rubíes, <i>the rubies</i> .       |
| el jabalí, <i>the wild boar</i> . | los jabalíes, <i>the wild boars</i> . |
| el rondó, <i>the rondeau</i> .    | los rondóes, <i>the rondeaux</i> .    |
| el tisú, <i>the tissue</i> .      | los tisúes, <i>the tissues</i> .      |

Exceptions in *á*: el papá, *papa*,—los papás; la mamá, *mama*,—las mamás; el sofá, *the sofa*,—los sofás.

Except. in *í*: *Maravedí* (an imaginary coin, in which accounts were formerly kept,—thirty-four to a *real* of five cents), has the three plurals: *los maravedíes*, *maravedíses*, and *maravedís*, of which the first is now obsolete.

Except. in *ó*: el landó, *the landau*,—los landós; and many others.

Except. in *ú*: la tribú, *the tribe*,—las tribús; but this word is now pronounced *tribu*.

REMARK.—Letters of the alphabet and most monosyllables belong to this rule:—

|                      |                            |
|----------------------|----------------------------|
| la í, la ó, la ú;    | las íes, las óes, las úes. |
| los síes y los nóes, | the ayes and noes.         |

Better, however, los que dijeron sí, *those who said "aye,"* etc.

104. Invariable are: (a) the unaccented endings *is* and *es*, in words of more than one syllable; (b) patronymics in *s* and *x*; (c) most pure Latin technical or conventional terms:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| la crisis, <i>the crisis</i> .          | las crisis, <i>the crises</i> .          |
| el paréntesis, <i>the parenthesis</i> . | los paréntesis, <i>the parentheses</i> . |
| el juéves, <i>Thursday</i> .            | los juéves, <i>on Thursdays</i> .        |

|                                   |                                       |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| el martes, <i>Tuesday</i> .       | los martes, <i>on Tuesdays</i> .      |
| Flóres ( <i>proper name</i> ).    | los Flóres, <i>men like Flores</i> .  |
| Valdés ( <i>proper name</i> ).    | los Valdés, <i>men like Valdés</i> .  |
| Fernández ( <i>proper name</i> ). | los Fernández, <i>the Fernandes</i> . |
| el déficit, <i>the deficit</i> .  | los déficit, <i>the deficits</i> .    |

105. Compound words, when not already plural in form, usually attach the plural sign to the last member only, unless the first is an adjective or apparently such : —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| el padrenuestro, <i>the pater noster</i> . | los padrenuestros, <i>pater nosters</i> . |
| el tranvia, <i>the tramway</i> .           | los tranvias, <i>tramways</i> .           |
| el guardacanton, <i>the guard-post</i> .   | los guardacantones, <i>guard-posts</i> .  |
| el ferro-carril, <i>the railway</i> .      | los ferro-carriles, <i>railways</i> .     |
| el cortaplumas, <i>the pen-knife</i> .     | los cortaplumas, <i>pen-knives</i> .      |
| el mundadientes, <i>the tooth-pick</i> .   | los mundadientes, <i>tooth-picks</i> .    |

but

|  |                                     |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| gentilhombre, ( <i>court</i> ) <i>gentleman</i> .  | gentileshombres, <i>gentlemen</i> . |
| ricohombre, <sup>1</sup> <i>crown counsellor</i> . | ricoshombrs, <i>counsellors</i> .   |

REMARK. — Hidalgo, *a nobleman of the lowest grade, a gentleman*, makes, properly, in the plural, *los hidalgos*, and, by a mistaken tradition, *hijodalgo*, *hijosdalgo*.<sup>2</sup> Feligrés, *parishioner*, from *filius ecclesiae*, makes, regularly, *feligréses*.

<sup>1</sup> Originally *ricóme*; that is, *ric'ome, man of the realm*, not *rich man*, which is *hombre rico*. The term is in part adoption and in part a translation of the Gothic *rik-man*, *realm-man*, *Reichsmann* in modern German.

<sup>2</sup> As if from *fijo de algo, son of somebody*, or, rather, *son of something*, contracted to *fidalgo*. *Hidalgo* is the word *Italicus* (like *galgo* from *gallicus*, *sirgo* from *sericus*, etc.), one having the *jus italicum* or Roman citizenship, with an aspirate 'i, like *huevo* from *ovum*. This early aspiration of the initial seems to have suggested the popular make-shift *fio dalgo* of the middle age, to explain the forgotten *italico* or *ital'co*. This is proved by the derivatives: *hidalgo*, *a*, adjective, *noble*; as, *una accion hidalga, a noble act*; *hidalguta*, noun; as, *la hidalguta castellana, Spanish heroism*, or, rather, *all that is most noble in the Castilian character*.

106. Certain masculine plurals, indicative of rank and kindred, aside from their natural and obvious meaning, include the husband and wife, and the two sexes of other relatives :—

|  |                                    |
|--|------------------------------------|
| los reyes, <i>the kings, sovereigns</i> ;                      | the king and queen.                |
| los príncipes, <i>the princes</i> ;                            | the prince and princess.           |
| los infantes, <i>the princes royal</i> ;                       | the infante and infanta.           |
| los duques, <i>the dukes</i> ;                                 | the duke and duchess.              |
| los presidentes, <i>the presidents</i> ;                       | the president and his lady.        |
|  |                                    |
| los padres, <i>the fathers, parents</i> ;                      | the father and mother.             |
| los esposos, } <i>the married couple</i> ;                     | the husband and wife.              |
| los cónyuges, }  |                                    |
| los hermanos, <i>the brothers</i> ;                            | the brother and sister.            |
| los tios, <i>the uncles</i> ;                                  | the uncle and aunt.                |
| los hijos, <i>the sons, children</i> ;                         | the son and daughter (of any age). |
| los niños, <i>the children</i> ;                               | the boy and girl.                  |
| los abuelos, <i>the grandfathers,</i><br><i>grandparents</i> ; | the grandfather and grandmother.   |
| los amos, <i>the masters</i> ;                                 | the master and mistress.           |
| los señores, <i>the gentlemen</i> ;                            | the gentleman and lady.            |

#### Example.

Ayer salieron los reyes á paseo, *yesterday the king and queen drove out* ; los reyes católicos, *the Catholic king and queen*, or, *the Catholic sovereigns* (Ferdinand and Isabella, reigned A. D. 1474-1504, 1516).

REMARK.—Most of these may also include several of both sexes : the princes and princesses royal, the sons and daughters, the boys and girls, the brothers and sisters ; like the German *Gebrüder, Geschwister*, etc. On the other hand, *el matrimonio* means the *husband and wife* (das Ehepaar), *the man and his wife* ; una cama de matrimonio, *a double bed, a bed for two*. So, *la pareja* properly signifies *two policemen* (who usually go in pairs in Spain). Vaya usted á llamar una pareja, *go and call the police (a brace of policemen)*.

INFLECTION.

**107.** Spanish nouns have no other inflectional ending than the plural sign.<sup>1</sup> They may, however, be declined by the aid of the case-prepositions *de* and *á*, either without the article or with it : —

|                          |                        |
|--------------------------|------------------------|
| el amigo del rey,        | the king's friend.     |
| á la puerta del palacio, | at the palace door.    |
| las calles de Madrid,    | the streets of Madrid. |
| Maria busca á Inés,      | Mary seeks Agnes.      |
| aficionado á los libros, | fond of books.         |
| abismado en lectura,     | absorbed in reading.   |
| un amigo del juez,       | a friend of the judge. |

**108.** Inflection without the Article.

|    |                |                       |              |                  |
|----|----------------|-----------------------|--------------|------------------|
| N. | Cárlos,        | Charles.              | Inés,        | Agnes.           |
| G. | de Cárlos,     | of Charles, Charles'. | de Inés,     | of Agnes, Agnes' |
| D. | á Cárlos,      | to Charles.           | á Inés,      | to Agnes.        |
| A. | á Cárlos (76), | Charles.              | á Ines (76), | Agnes.           |
| N. | libro,         | book.                 | libros,      | books.           |
| G. | de libro,      | of book.              | de libros,   | of books.        |
| D. | á libro,       | to book.              | á libros,    | to books.        |
| A. | libro,         | book.                 | libros,      | books.           |

|                            |                                      |
|----------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| el libro de Cárlos,        | Charles's book, the book of Charles. |
| la pluma de Inés,          | Agnes's pen.                         |
| Juan ve á María,           | John sees Mary.                      |
| Luis quiere mucho á Pedro, | Lewis is very fond of Peter.         |
| da un libro á Antonio,     | give a book to Antonio.              |

<sup>1</sup> Save in a few meagre cases, like *Cárlos*, from *Carolus*; *Dios*, from *Deus*; *querque* in *Albuquerque*, from *arbor querci* (*quercus*); *duende*, *wisard*, *elf*, from *Deus Endi*, the Iberian god *Endo*; *Fernández*, from *Fredinandus*, etc.



|                                   |                                  |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| este juguete es propio de niños,  | this toy is for children.        |
| una hoja de libro,                | a book-leaf, the leaf of a book. |
| no habla de libros,               | he is not speaking of books.     |
| no quiero libro alguno,           | I do not want any book at all.   |
| la puerta tiene goznes,           | the door has hinges.             |
| la ciudad está circuida de muros, | the town is surrounded by walls. |

**109. Inflection with the Definite Article.**

| <b>Masculine.</b> |           |                 |               | <b>Feminine.</b> |               |
|-------------------|-----------|-----------------|---------------|------------------|---------------|
| <b>Singular.</b>  | <b>N.</b> | el hombre,      | the man.      | la mujer,        | the woman.    |
|                   | <b>G.</b> | del hombre,     | the man's.    | de la mujer,     | the woman's.  |
|                   | <b>D.</b> | al hombre,      | to the man.   | á la mujer,      | to the woman. |
|                   | <b>A.</b> | al hombre (76), | the man.      | á la mujer(76),  | the woman.    |
| <b>Plural.</b>    | <b>N.</b> | los hombres,    | the men.      | las mujeres,     | the women.    |
|                   | <b>G.</b> | de los hombres, | the men's.    | de las mujeres,  | the women's.  |
|                   | <b>D.</b> | á los hombres,  | to the men.   | á las mujeres,   | to the women. |
|                   | <b>A.</b> | á los hombres,  | the men.      | á las mujeres,   | the women.    |
| <b>Singular.</b>  | <b>N.</b> | el libro,       | the book.     | la pluma,        | the pen.      |
|                   | <b>G.</b> | del libro,      | of the book.  | de la pluma,     | of the pen.   |
|                   | <b>D.</b> | al libro,       | to the book.  | á la pluma,      | to the pen.   |
|                   | <b>A.</b> | el libro,       | the book.     | la pluma,        | the pen.      |
| <b>Plural.</b>    | <b>N.</b> | los libros,     | the books.    | las plumas,      | the pens.     |
|                   | <b>G.</b> | de los libros,  | of the books. | de las plumas,   | of the pens.  |
|                   | <b>D.</b> | á los libros,   | to the books. | á las plumas,    | to the pens.  |
|                   | <b>A.</b> | los libros.     | the books.    | las plumas,      | the pens.     |

|                              |  |
|------------------------------|--|
| el palacio de los reyes,     | the king's and queen's palace<br>(106).    |
| la prudencia de la mujer,    | the woman's prudence.                      |
| las habitaciones de la casa, | the rooms of (in) the house.               |
| las calles de la ciudad,     | the streets of the town.                   |
| sale de la habitacion,       | he goes out of the room.                   |
| da el regalo á los niños,    | he hands the present to the chil-<br>dren. |

**110. Inflection with the Indefinite Article.**

| Masculine. |               |            | Feminine.     |             |
|------------|---------------|------------|---------------|-------------|
| N.         | un hombre,    | a man.     | una mujer,    | a woman.    |
| G.         | de un hombre, | a man's.   | de una mujer, | a woman's.  |
| D.         | á un hombre,  | to a man.  | á una mujer,  | to a woman. |
| A.         | un hombre,    | a man.     | una mujer,    | a woman.    |
| N.         | un libro,     | a book.    | una pluma,    | a pen.      |
| G.         | de un libro,  | of a book. | de una pluma, | of a pen.   |
| D.         | á un libro,   | to a book. | á una pluma,  | to a pen.   |
| A.         | un libro,     | a book.    | una pluma,    | a pen.      |

**111. Inflection of Neuter *Lo* with Adjectives.**

| Positive. |              |              | Superlative. |              |
|-----------|--------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|
| N.        | lo bueno,    | the good.    | lo mejor,    | the best.    |
| G.        | de lo bueno, | of the good. | de lo mejor, | of the best. |
| D.        | á lo bueno,  | to the good. | á lo mejor,  | to the best. |
| A.        | lo bueno,    | the good.    | lo mejor,    | the best.    |

veo un hombre y una mujer,  
 busco al criado de un amigo,  
 el vestido de una señora,  
 un pañuelo de caballero,  
 aquí tiene usted un servidor,  
 lo peor es que no lo sabe,

nos saca de lo bueno, para caer  
 en lo malo,

I see a man and a woman.  
 I am seeking a friend's servant.  
 a lady's dress.  
 a gentleman's handkerchief.  
 a servant at your disposal.  
 the worst (of it) is he does not  
 know it.  
 he draws us away from good, to  
 bring us into evil.

*The Adjective.*

**112.** Adjectives have two numbers and two genders, besides the absolute form with *lo*:—

un libro nuevo, *a new book.*  
 los hombres sabios, *wise men.*  
 lo malo, *what is evil, the evil.*

leche fresca, *fresh milk.*  
 frutas ricas, *luscious fruit.*  
 lo ancho, *what is wide, the width.*

**113.** Adjectives, whether attributive or predicate, agree in gender and number with the noun they qualify :—

un hombre robusto,  
 una linda casa,  
 señoras caritativas,  
 estas niñas son guapas,

a stout, healthy man.  
 a pretty house.  
 benevolent ladies.  
 these young girls are pretty.

*a.* With *lo*, the adjective varies anomalously to suit the gender and number of the noun, when the adjective is followed by **que**, *that*, with the verb *to be*, or its equivalents. The adjective must then be rendered by a substantive :—

lo sabios que son estos consejos,  
 lo bonita que es la iglesia,

the wisdom of these counsels (the  
 wise that are these counsels).  
 the beauty of the church.

#### Formation of the Plural.

**114.** Adjectives form their plural in either gender by adding *s* to unaccented vowel-terminals, and *es* to consonant and accented vowel-endings, always changing *z* to *c* before *es* :—

| SINGULAR.                   |                      | PLURAL.                           |                        |   |
|-----------------------------|----------------------|-----------------------------------|------------------------|---|
| Masc.                       | Fem.                 | Masc.                             | Fem.                   |   |
| fresco,<br>español,         | fresca,<br>española, | frescos,<br>españoles,            | frescas,<br>españolas, | fresh, cool.<br>Spanish.<br>happy.<br>common.<br>of no account. |
| feliz,<br>comun,<br>baladí, |                      | felices,<br>comunes,<br>baladíes, |                        |   |

Formation of the Feminine.

115. The feminine of adjectives is, in general, formed by changing final *o* into *a*, or by adding *a* to certain consonant terminations. Many adjectives have but one ending for both genders.

The variation of adjectives (72) may be reduced to two general classes. The first class embraces common and proper adjectives of *two* terminations in each number, one for each gender; the second embraces common and proper adjectives of *one* termination for both genders.

REMARK. — Proper adjectives are those which are derived from the names of geographical divisions, countries, provinces, places, and persons.

116. First Class.—Two Terminations.

| End-ings. | SINGULAR. |            | PLURAL.     |             |              |
|-----------|-----------|------------|-------------|-------------|--------------|
|           | Masc.     | Fem.       | Masc.       | Fem.        |              |
| <b>o</b>  | blanco,   | blanca,    | blancos,    | blancas,    | white.       |
| <b>—</b>  | gaditano, | gaditana,  | gaditanos,  | gaditanas,  | of Cadiz.    |
| <b>an</b> | holgazan, | holgazana, | holgazanes, | holgazanas, | lazy.        |
| <b>—</b>  | aleman,   | alemana,   | alemanes,   | alemanas,   | German.      |
| <b>ol</b> | español,  | española,  | españoles,  | españolas,  | Spanish.     |
| <b>on</b> | burlon,   | burlona,   | burlones,   | burlonas,   | roguish.     |
| <b>or</b> | traidor,  | traidora,  | traidores,  | traidoras,  | treacherous. |
| <b>uz</b> | andaluz,  | andaluza,  | andaluces,  | andaluzas,  | Andalusian.  |

una rosa blanca, *a white rose.*  
 cerveza alemana, *German beer.*  
 ojos burlones, *roguish eyes.*  
 la sal andaluza, *Andalusian wit*  
*and humor.*

las señoras gaditanas, *ladies of*  
*Cadiz.*  
 una ley española, *a Spanish law.*  
 miradas traidoras, *treacherous*  
*glances.*

117. To this class belong also :—

*a.* Diminutives in *ete* and augmentatives in *ote*, which change the final *e* into *a* :—

|            |            |             |             |          |
|------------|------------|-------------|-------------|----------|
| regordete, | regordeta, | regordetes, | regordetas, | chubby.  |
| grandote,  | grandota,  | grandotes,  | grandotas,  | biggish. |

All others in *e* belong to the second class ; that is, they are unchangeable for gender.

*b.* Diminutives and proper adjectives in *in* :—

|             |              |               |               |            |
|-------------|--------------|---------------|---------------|------------|
| chiquitin,  | chiquitina,  | chiquitines,  | chiquitinas,  | wee.       |
| mallorquin, | mallorquina, | mallorquines, | mallorquinas, | of Majorca |

All others in *in* belong to the second class.

*c.* Proper adjectives in *és* :—

|           |            |             |             |                     |
|-----------|------------|-------------|-------------|---------------------|
| francés,  | francesa,  | franceses,  | francesas,  | French.             |
| inglés,   | inglesa,   | ingleses,   | inglesas,   | English.            |
| leonés,   | leonesa,   | leoneses,   | leonesas,   | of Leon (Spain)     |
| montañés, | montañesa, | montañeses, | montañesas, | highland, Asturian. |

Common adjectives in *es* belong to the second class.

118. A few adjectives in *tor* may also change that ending into *triz-trices* for the feminine :—

|                                    |                   |
|------------------------------------|-------------------|
| fuerza motora <i>or</i> motriz,    | motive power.     |
| causas motoras <i>or</i> motrices, | impelling causes. |

REMARK. — For comparatives in *or* and *ior* (*yor*), see 120, *b*.

---

<sup>1</sup> Montañés, *of or belonging to the hill country about Santander, Spain*, which district is called La Montaña (not *la montaña*), *the Mountain*; and hence the adjective has the variation of proper adjectives in *és*.

119. Second Class.—One Termination.

| End-ings. | SINGULAR.                 | PLURAL.               |                        |
|-----------|---------------------------|-----------------------|------------------------|
|           | Masc. and Fem.            | Masc. and Fem.        |                        |
| a         | agrícola, belga,          | agrícolas, belgas,    | agricultural, Belgian. |
| e         | grande, ateniense,        | grandes, atenienses,  | great, Athenian.       |
| í         | baladí, marroquí,         | baladíes, marroquíes, | vile, Morocco.         |
| al, el    | nacional, fiel,           | nacionales, fieles,   | national, faithful.    |
| il, ul    | fácil, azul,              | fáciles, azules,      | easy, blue.            |
| en, in    | jóven, ruin, <sup>1</sup> | jóvenes, ruines,      | young; low, mean.      |
| un, ar    | comun, familiar,          | comunes, familiares,  | common, familiar.      |
| az, ez    | capaz, soez,              | capaces, soeces,      | capable, low.          |
| iz, oz    | feliz, atroz,             | felices, atroces,     | happy, shocking.       |

un pueblo agrícola, *an agricultural people.*

la cultura ateniense, *Athenian culture.*

una cinta azul, *a blue ribbon.*

la vida comun, *common life.*

el gobierno persa, *the Persian government.*

una casa grande, *a large house.*

las fiestas nacionales, *the national holidays.*

las muchachas jóvenes, *young girls.*

una muerte feliz, *a happy death.*

los pueblos belgas, *the Belgian towns.*

120. To this class belong also :—

a. All common adjectives in *és* :—

cortés, *pl. cortesés, polite.*

montés, *pl. monteses, mountain-.*

una advertencia cortés,  
palabras cortesés,  
puercos monteses,<sup>2</sup>

a courteous remark.  
polite language.  
wild (or mountain) boars.

<sup>1</sup> Latin, *Latin*, is a noun; *latino, latina*, an adjective: saber el *Latin*, to know *Latin*; un libro *latino*, a *Latin book*; la literatura *latina*, *Latin literature*.

<sup>2</sup> *Jabali* also means *wild boar*. It is the Arabic adjective from *djebal*, *mountain*; therefore *puercos montés* is the Castilian synonym of *jabali*. So, Arab. *alfayate*, Cast. *sastre, tailor*; Arab. *alarife*, Cast. *arquitecto, architect*; Arab. *albéitar*, Cast. *veterinario, farrier*, etc., etc.

b. All comparatives in *or*, *ior* (*yor*):—

mejor, *pl.* mejores, *better*.  
peor, *pl.* peores, *worse*.

interior, *pl.* interiores, *interior*.  
superior, *pl.* superiores, *superior*

c. All adjectives in *ista*, indicating social, political, moral, and scientific affiliations:—

un principio socialista,  
una idea oscurantista,  
el partido carlista,  
los prohombres progresistas,

a socialistic principle.  
an old-fogy notion.  
the Carlist party.  
the advanced leaders

(leaders of the late Progresista or advance party, 1836–1871).

d. All adjectives in *e* (except 117, *a*):—

una almendra dulce,  
una herida grave,  
una tiple eminente,  
graves inconvenientes,

a sweet almond.  
a serious wound.  
a distinguished soprano-singer.  
serious objections.

*e.* The ending *-ense* is the learned or modern journalistic and literary form of proper adjectives, against the popular ones in *o* and *és* (*ensis*); thus, *matritense* and *madrileño*, of *Madrid*; *tudense* and *tudés*, of *Tuy*; *conquense* and *conqués*, of *Cuenca*; *abulense* and *avilés*, of *Ávila*; *escorialense* and *escorialeño*, of *the Escorial*. A few, however, possess no other form than the learned or classical one: as, *ateniense*, *Athenian*; *parisiense* (popular, *parisién*), of *Paris*, *Parisian*.

121. All proper adjectives, then, are variable in gender, except those in *a*, *e*, and *í*:—

catalan, *a*, *Catalonian*.  
castellano, *a*, *Castilian*.  
vallisoletano, *a*, of *Valladolid*.  
asturiano, *a*, *Asturian*.

valenciano, *a*, *Valencian*.  
extremeño, *a*, of *Extremadura*.  
européo, *a*, *European*.  
aragonés, *a*, *Aragonese*

inglés, a, *English*.  
 mahonés, a, of *Puerto Mahon*.  
 gallego, a, *Galician*.  
 manchego, a, of *La Mancha*.  
 griego, a, *Greek, Grecian*.  
 alicantino, a, of *Alicante*.  
 bilbaíno, a, of *Bilbao*.  
 indio, a, *Indian*.

judío, a, *Jewish*.  
 británico, a, *British*.  
 alcaíno, a, } of *Alcalá de He-*  
 complutense, } *nares*.  
 celta, *Celtic*.  
 árabe, *Arabian*.  
 marroquí, of *Morocco*.  
 berberí, of *Barbary*.

**122.** Any adjective may be employed as a substantive in either gender or number, assuming in that case all the laws that govern the noun :—

el Español, *the Spaniard*.  
 el sabio, *the wise man*.

los Españoles, *Spaniards*.  
 los fieles, *the faithful*.

a. On the other hand, nouns are occasionally associated as adjectives with other nouns, thus forming compound expressions as in the Teutonic languages :—

la tierra vírgen, *virgin soil*.  
 la madre patria, *mother country*.  
 la escuela-modelo, *model school*.  
 el cura párroco, *the parish priest*.

una carta-prólogo, *an epistolary preface*.  
 una carta-puebla, *local privilege (law)*.

#### Apocopation.

**123.** Eight adjectives lose their final *o* when they stand as attributes immediately before a noun in the masculine singular :—

bueno, *good*.  
 malo, *bad, poor (of things)*.  
 postrero, *latter, last*.  
 primero, *first*.

tercero,<sup>1</sup> *third*.  
 uno, *one*.  
 alguno, *some, any (neg. no)*.  
 ninguno (necunus),<sup>2</sup> *no, not any, none*.

<sup>1</sup> *Tercero* remains unabridged in the formula of the Creed, "el tercero día," and, in general, in the sacred style.

<sup>2</sup> The *n* is inserted, as in *cementerio, cemetery*.



|   |                                       |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| buen tiempo, <i>good weather</i> .        | el tercer día, <i>the third day</i> . |
| mal éxito, <i>ill-success</i> .           | un soldado, <i>one soldier</i> .      |
| el postrer duelo, <i>the last pang</i> .  | algún motivo, <i>some cause</i> .     |
| el primer tomo, <i>the first volume</i> . | ningún libro, <i>no book</i> .        |

but

|                                   |                                    |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| ¿tiene usted un buen vecino?      | have you a good neighbor?          |
| tengo uno muy bueno,              | I have a very good one.            |
| un hombre malo y perverso,        | a bad, vicious man.                |
| el año primero y último,          | the first and last year.           |
| el libro tercero del tomo quinto, | book third of volume fifth.        |
| uno y otro día,                   | both days (one and the other day). |
| no hay remedio alguno,            | there is no help for it at all.    |
| ninguno de los dos,               | neither of the two.                |
| el bueno de mi amigo,             | my good friend (idiom).            |
| alguno que otro día,              | one day or another (idiom).        |

*a.* In the language of common life this law is frequently extended to the feminine singular, especially before *a* and *ha*:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| buen alhaja, <i>fine jewel, pretty fellow</i> (in irony <sup>1</sup> ). | un alma, <i>one soul</i> .                  |
| algún ave, <i>some bird</i> .   | en mal hora, <i>inopportunately</i> .       |
|   | de primer agua, <i>first water (rate)</i> . |

*b.* The numeral adjective **uno**, *one*, when associated or combined with other numbers, is contracted before nouns of either number or gender which it serves to multiply:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| treinta y un días, <i>thirty-one days</i> . | veintiún casas, <i>twenty-one houses</i> . |
|---|--|

**124.** The adjective **grande**, *great*, in the sense of eminence, loses its final syllable *de* before a singular noun beginning with a consonant not *h*:—

<sup>1</sup> Of course, in this secondary sense, *alhaja* is masculine, according to 93.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| una gran casa, <i>a great family.</i>  | un gran día, <sup>1</sup> <i>a great occasion.</i>  |
| un gran peligro, <i>a great peril.</i> | el Gran Capitan, <sup>2</sup> <i>the Great Cap-</i> |
|  | <i>tain.</i>  |

but

|  |   |
|--|---|
| un grande amigo, <i>a great friend</i><br>( <i>intimate</i> ). | un grande hombre, <i>a great man</i><br>( <i>distinguished</i> ). |
| una grande iglesia, <i>a great (famous) church.</i>            |   |

*a.* The full form is, however, used, even before consonants, when *grande* has an intensive or emphatic signification. In this sense it was formerly much more common than at present:—

tan grande sancto, *so great a saint.* | el grande daño, *the great harm.*<sup>3</sup>

*b.* When *grande* refers to *dimensions*, or *order*, it regularly stands after the noun it qualifies:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| una casa grande, <i>a large house.</i>    | un hombre grande, <i>a large man.</i>    |
| el premio grande, <i>the first prize.</i> | un caballo grande, <i>a large horse.</i> |

REMARK.—In the sense of tallness, *grande* is now rather replaced by *alto*, *alto de cuerpo*, *alto de estatura*; or by *buen mozo* (fem. *buen moza*), applied to any age, to mean *a fine, tall person*, and *a fine-looking person*, with reference to form and size.

**125. Cualquiera, pl. cualesquiera, whatever, any—**  
*you please*, usually, but not uniformly, loses the final *a* before a noun of either gender or number:—

<sup>1</sup> When Isla wrote "Día grande de Navarra," he meant, it is true, a great civic occasion, but with the humorous idea of dimensions,—*a big day, a high day.*

<sup>2</sup> Gonzalo de Cordova, so called for his conquest of Naples and Sicily.

<sup>3</sup> From Fray Luis de Granada: *Sermon de las Caydas Publicas*, Lisbon, 1588; Madrid, 1589; and Antwerp, 1590; 8vo. The modern editions all have in these passages *gran* santo, *gran* daño; for no Spanish author has been so corrected and spoiled in text by the Inquisition as the Friar Lewis.

|   |                        |
|---|------------------------|
| cualquier <i>or</i> cualquiera libro,       | any book (whatever).   |
| cualquier <i>or</i> cualquiera cosa,        | any thing (whatever).  |
| cualesquier <i>or</i> cualesquiera motivos, | any causes (whatever). |

but always

|                                    |                                    |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| cualquiera de los libros,          | any of the books.                  |
| un libro cualquiera,               | any book you please.               |
| cualesquiera que sean los motivos, | whatever be the causes or motives. |

**126. Ciento, one hundred** (never *un* ciento), loses its final syllable *to* when it stands before the word it multiplies, whichever be the gender :—

|                                |                               |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| cien soldados, cien almas,     | one hundred soldiers, souls.  |
| cien mil pesos, cien millones, | 100,000 dollars, 100,000,000. |

but

|                    |                                 |
|--------------------|---------------------------------|
| ciento veinte,     | one hundred (and) twenty.       |
| ciento y diez,     | one hundred and ten.            |
| ciento contra uno, | one hundred against one.        |
| mil y ciento,      | one thousand (and) one hundred. |

**127. The word *santo, saint***, loses its final syllable *to* only before the names of the calendar saints, archangels, and Old-Testament worthies :—

|  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| San Pedro (S. Pedro), <i>St. Peter</i> .     | San Juan (S. Juan), <i>St. John</i> . |
| San Miguel (S. Miguel), <i>St. Michael</i> . | San Pablo, <i>St. Paul</i> .          |
|  | San Agustín, <i>St. Augustine</i> .   |
| San Daniel (S. Daniel), <i>St. Daniel</i> .  | San Gabriel, <i>St. Gabriel</i> .     |
|  | San Josué, <i>St. Joshua</i> .        |

Except : Santo Tomás *or* Tomé (S. Tomás), *St. Thomas*; Santo Domingo (S. Domingo), *St. Dominic*; Santo Toribio, *St. Toribius*; and Santo Job, *St. Job*. *St. Thomas*, as the name of one of the West-India islands, is now accented and written San Tomás and San Thómas, in conformity with foreign usage.

a. The fem. *santa* remains always unabridged :—

|                                     |   |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| Santa María, <i>St. Mary.</i>       | Santa Inés, <i>St. Agnes.</i>                 |
| Santa Isabel, <i>St. Elizabeth.</i> | Santa Águeda, <i>St. Agatha.</i>              |
| Santa Bárbara, <i>St. Barbara.</i>  | Santa Rita, <sup>1</sup> <i>St. Margaret.</i> |

b. The adjective **santo**, **a**, *holy*, is never contracted :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| el santo ángel, <i>the holy angel.</i>   | el santo varón, <i>that saintly man.</i> |
| una santa mujer, <i>a saintly woman.</i> |  |

REMARK. — In giving a series of two or more saints' names, it is in better taste to prefix the title to each singly :—

San Juan y San José, *St. John and St. Joseph*, not los Santos Juan y José (los SS. Juan y José), *Sts. John and Joseph.*

#### POSITION OF THE ADJECTIVE.

128. The attributive adjective, as a rule, stands after the noun qualified, in ordinary unemphatic language ; notwithstanding, all elegant writers, poets, and orators, place it according to their own views of taste, harmony, and effect :—

|                           |                             |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------|
| un cuento divertido,      | an entertaining story.      |
| un asunto grave,          | a serious matter.           |
| una noticia desgarradora, | heart-rending intelligence. |
| la lengua castellana,     | the Castilian language.     |
| el continente europeo,    | the European continent.     |
| el gobierno español,      | the Spanish government.     |
| una accion desalmada,     | a heartless action.         |

---

<sup>1</sup> This local saint is called in Spain, "la abogada de los imposibles," *the patroness of impossibilities*. St. Barbara is the advocate of Spanish gunpowder and coast defenses, while the *chulo*, the "*b'hoy*" (*puerum, plulo, chulo*), swears vengeance "por vía 'e San André" (63, 66), *by the life of St. Andrew*, as he rushes upon his adversary with the historic *navaja* (*navalia*) or "*Jack's*" *knife*.

**129.** The following, therefore, are more especially found after the substantive limited by them, unless the language is poetic or expansive :—

*a.* Participles and participial adjectives in *ado*, *ido*, and those in *ante*, *ente*, *iente* (*yente*), derived from Latin present participles :—

|                            |                                    |
|----------------------------|------------------------------------|
| un sacerdote consagrado,   | a consecrated priest.              |
| la oveja perdida,          | the lost sheep.                    |
| banderas desplegadas,      | banners unfurled (flying banners). |
| aguas abundantes,          | abundant water.                    |
| un espíritu paciente,      | a patient spirit. [sembly.         |
| las Córtes constituyentes, | the Constituent (National) As-     |
| los caballeros andantes,   | the knights-errant.                |

but, poetically or expansively :

|                         |                         |
|-------------------------|-------------------------|
| por dilatadas regiones, | over extensive regions. |
| las engañadas naciones, | the deceived nations.   |
| la naciente estrella,   | the rising star.        |
| la andante caballería,  | knight-errantry.        |

*b.* Proper adjectives, or those derived from geographical, personal, political, and scientific names :—

|                           |                                 |
|---------------------------|---------------------------------|
| las Escenas matritenses,  | pictures of Madrid life.        |
| los prados jerezanos,     | the grassy plains of Sherry.    |
| el idioma francés,        | the French language.            |
| un cabecilla carlista,    | a Carlist (guerilla) chieftain. |
| la filosofía positivista, | positive philosophy.            |
| el partido unionista,     | the union party.                |

but, poetically :

|                       |                          |
|-----------------------|--------------------------|
| los tartésios campos, | the plains of Tartessus. |
|-----------------------|--------------------------|

c. Common adjectives in *al, dor, tor*:—

|                                     |  |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| el despacho central,                | the Central office.                        |
| el puente internacional,            | the International Bridge.                  |
| un principio conservador,           | a conservative principle.                  |
| la sociedad protectora de animales, | the society for the protection of animals. |

but, in poetry :

|                     |                        |
|---------------------|------------------------|
| la vencedora gente, | the victorious people. |
|---------------------|------------------------|

d. All augmentatives and diminutives <sup>1</sup>:—

|                       |                           |
|-----------------------|---------------------------|
| el alcalde preguntón, | the impertinent busybody. |
| un niño chiquitín,    | a wee bit of a child.     |
| un hombre grandecito, | a tallish man.            |
| un aldeano ricote,    | a well-to-do villager.    |

e. In general, long adjectives, unless emphatic or intensive:—

|                      |                      |
|----------------------|----------------------|
| una cosa imposible,  | an impossible thing. |
| medidas preventivas, | preventive measures. |

but

|                       |                                  |
|-----------------------|----------------------------------|
| mi inolvidable amigo, | my never-to-be-forgotten friend. |
| con incansable afán,  | with untiring zeal.              |

f. When a plural substantive is limited by two or more adjectives in the singular, the latter must stand after the noun:—

|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| las lenguas griega y latina,         | the Greek and Latin languages.           |
| los tomos primero y cuarto,          | the first and fourth volumes.            |
| las filas tercera y vigésima,        | the third and twentieth rows.            |
| los siglos segundo, cuarto y quinto, | the second, fourth, and fifth centuries. |

---

<sup>1</sup> Of this difficult subject we shall treat in a chapter apart, because the foreigner cannot be taught out of Spain to use them correctly. They are a part of the national type. See p. 382.

**130** A few adjectives regularly precede the noun in ordinary language :—

mucho dinero, *much money*.

demasiado juicio, *too much prudence*.

buenos consejos, *good advice*.

poca gracia, *little attractiveness*.

tantas virtudes, *so many virtues*.

mayores fuerzas, *greater strength*.

malas plumas, *poor pens*.

**131** Some adjectives have distinct significations, according to their position with respect of the noun :—

un buen hombre, *a good man*.

una buena noche, *a good night*.

mal negocio, *bad business (unfortunate)*.

mala pluma, *poor pen*.

gran vicio, *great defect*.

nuevo libro, *new book (different)*.

negra accion, *dark deed*.

varios papeles, *various papers, or documents*.

pobre muchacho,<sup>2</sup> *poor boy*.

pobre autor, *sorry author*.

cierta época, *a certain period*.

santa Biblia, *sacred Bible*.

santa tierra, *sacred soil*.

santo padre, *father (of the church)*.

santo campo, *sacred field*.

un hombre bueno,<sup>1</sup> *a "best" man*.

noche buena, *Christmas Eve*.

un jóven malo, *a bad youth (wicked)*.

toro malo, *vicious bull*.

pera grande, *large pear*.

libro nuevo, *new book (recent)*.

vestido negro, *black coat*.

papeles varios, *miscellaneous papers*.

el muchacho pobre, *the poor boy*.

autor pobre, *indigent author*.

noticia cierta, *reliable news*.

semana santa, *holy week (Easter)*.

tierra santa, *Holy Land*.

el padre santo, *the pope*.

campo santo, *cemetery*.

*a.* Some adjectives precede or follow the noun with little or no difference of signification :—

<sup>1</sup> An early translation of the old Gothic "goodsman," *property man*, and hence *responsible*, a *voucher*. So the *omes* or *hombres buenos* of the mediæval Córtes were *select men*, from this property qualification. They represented the third estate in assembly with the prelates and nobles.

<sup>2</sup> In commiseration; more or less depreciative, and often resented by persons of spirit, from its side-meaning of *infeliz*, *stupid*; still, the natives say: "¡Pobre España! digna de mejor suerte," *poor Spain! worthy of a better fate*.

|                    |                    |                     |
|--------------------|--------------------|---------------------|
| un pequeño libro,  | un libro pequeño,  | a small book.       |
| una bonita casa,   | una casa bonita,   | a pretty house.     |
| un hermoso regalo. | un regalo hermoso, | a handsome present. |
| un breve discurso, | un discurso breve, | a short discourse.  |
| un triste día,     | un día triste,     | a sad day.          |

# COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES.

132. Adjectives in Spanish have the three usual degrees of comparison; namely, the Positive, Comparative, and Superlative, each of which is varied according to gender and number:—

| Positive.  | Comparative.   |
|--|--|
| <i>m.</i> blanco, blancos, } <i>white.</i><br><i>f.</i> blanca, blancas, }                                 | más blanco, más blancos, } <i>whiter.</i><br>más blanca, más blancas, }                        |
| Superlative Relative.  | Superlative Absolute.  |
| el or lo más blanco, }<br>la más blanca, } <i>the whitest.</i><br>los más blancos, }<br>las más blancas, } | blanquísimo (13), }<br>blanquísima, } <i>very white.</i><br>blanquísimos, }<br>blanquísimas, } |

So compare *fresc-o*, *fresh, cool*; *trist-e*, *sad*; *prudent-e*, *prudent*; *viej-o*, *old*; *aplicad-o*, *diligent*.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| el libro es más pesado que el periódico,     | the book is duller than the newspaper.             |
| la ventana es más alta que la puerta,        | the window is higher than the door.                |
| estos sombreros son más caros que los míos,  | these hats are dearer than mine.                   |
| aquellos son los más hermosos de la fábrica, | those yonder are the finest (ones) in the factory. |
| los de mi amigo son hermosísimos,            | those of my friend are very fine.                  |



133. Four adjectives have, besides their regular comparatives and superlatives, other preferred forms derived from the Latin, but popularly called irregular. They are:—

| Positive.   |   | Comparative.   |  |   |
|---|---|--|--|---|
| bueno, a,<br>malo, a,<br>grande, <sup>1</sup><br>pequeño, a,          | good.<br>bad, poor.<br>great, large.<br>small, little.                      | mejor (120, b),<br>peor, es,<br>mayor, es,<br>menor, es,   | ( <i>rarely</i> , más bueno),<br>( <i>seldom</i> , más malo),<br><i>or</i> , más grande,<br><i>or</i> , más pequeño, | better.<br>worse, poorer.<br>greater, larger, older.<br>smaller, less, younger. |
| Superlative Relative.   |   |  |  |   |
| el, la, lo<br>{ mejor;<br>{ peor;<br>log, las    { mayor;<br>{ menor; | mejores,<br>peores,<br>mayores,<br>menores,                                 | ( <i>rarely</i> , el, <i>etc.</i> , más bueno, a),<br>( <i>seldom</i> , el, <i>etc.</i> , más malo, a),<br><i>or</i> , el, la, lo más grande,<br>los, las más grandes,<br><i>or</i> , el, lo, la más pequeño, a,<br>los, las más pequeños, as, | the best.<br>the worst, poorest.<br>the greatest, largest, oldest.<br>the smallest, least, youngest.                 |   |
| Superlative Absolute.   |   |  |  |   |
| bonísimo, a,<br>malísimo, a,<br>grandísimo, a,<br>pequeñísimo, a,     | <i>or</i> , muy bueno, a,<br>muy malo, a,<br>muy grande,<br>muy pequeño, a, | ( <i>rarely</i> , óptimo, a),<br>( "    pésimo, a),<br>( <i>seldom</i> , máximo, a),<br>( "    mínimo, a),   | very good.<br>very bad, poor.<br>very large, great.<br>very small, little.*  |   |

<sup>1</sup> The positive *magno, a* (Lat. *magnus*), hitherto obsolete, save as an epithet of kings (Carlomagno, *Charlemagne*; Alfonso III. el Magno, *Alphonso III. the Great*, † A.D. 910, *etc.*), is of late considerably used in an intensive sense: as, una concurrencia magna, *a big turn-out*; una sensación magna, *a great sensation*; la cuestión magna, *the decisive question, the question*; una turba magna, *a big crowd*.

<sup>2</sup> *Máximo* and *mínimo* may be used as relative superlatives with a few words like *cosa, parte*: la máxima parte, *the greatest part*; la mínima cosa, *the slightest thing*. *Óptimo* and *pésimo* answer a question, thus: ¿Qué tal ha sido la pieza? — Pésima. *How was the play?* — *Very poor*.

digno de mejor suerte,  
sus mejores proyectos,  
los mejores libros,  
la peor pluma,  
peor está que estaba,  
la mayor parte,  
un peligro mayor,  
el premio mayor,  
buscaba mayor espacio á sus  
esperanzas,  
la menor imprudencia,  
los hermanos mayores,  
los hijos menores,

worthy of a better fate.  
his best-laid plans.  
the best books.  
the poorest pen.  
it is worse than it was.  
the greater part.  
a greater peril.  
the highest (first) prize.  
he sought a broader field for his  
expectations.  
the slightest imprudence.  
the older brothers.  
the younger children.

Comparative Formulae

✓ 134. Most parts of speech may be placed in relations of comparison by the use of certain adverbs and adjectives constituting correlative formulae. Such are :—

|                     |                              |                            |
|---------------------|------------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>Equality.</i>    | tan — como,                  | as (so) — as.              |
| “                   | tanto, a — como, <i>or</i> } | as (so) much — as, as (so) |
| “                   | tanto, a — cuanto, a, }      | many — as.                 |
| <i>Superiority.</i> | más — que (de),              | more — than.               |
| <i>Inferiority.</i> | ménos — que (de),            | less — than, fewer — than. |
|                     | cuanto más — tanto más,      | the more — the more.       |
|                     | cuanto ménos — tanto ménos,  | the less — the less.       |

tan blanco como la nieve,  
es tan buena como rica,  
tanto oro como plata,  
tanta prudencia como habilidad,  
tantos hombres como mujeres,  
tanto dinero cuanto usted diga,  
más alto que una casa,  
más rico que el que más,  
más libros que dinero,  
ménos sabio que él,

as white as snow.  
she is as good as (she is) rich.  
as much gold as silver.  
as much discretion as shrewdness.  
as many men as women.  
as much money as you say.  
higher than a house.  
richer than the richest.  
more books than money.  
less (not so) wise than (as) he.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| ménos honrado que ducho,                        | less upright than able.                         |
| ménos lápices que plumas,                       | fewer pencils than pens.                        |
| cuanto más habla tanto más di-<br>vaga,         | the more he talks the more he<br>rambles.       |
| cuanto ménos dinero gana tanto<br>ménos ahorra, | the less money he earns the less<br>he lays by. |

135. In the formula *tan—como*, the first member may be suppressed :—

|                        |                 |
|------------------------|-----------------|
| blanco como la nieve,  | white as snow.  |
| manso como un cordero. | meek as a lamb. |

a. In the poetic style, the second member of the same formula may be replaced by *cual*, but the noun following, in that case rejects the article :—

|   |                 |
|---|-----------------|
| blanco cual nieve, <i>or, better,</i> } | white as snow.  |
| cual nieve blanco,                      |                 |
| manso cual cordero, <i>or</i> }         | meek as a lamb. |
| cual cordero manso,                     |                 |

136. The correlative formulae may be expressed negatively by placing **no**, *not*; **sin**, *without*; **tampoco**, *nor*—*either*, etc., before the verb :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| no es ménos bella que rica,               | she is not less beautiful than rich.               |
| no somos <i>tan</i> buenos como ellos,    | we are not so good as they.                        |
| sin tener ellos tantos libros<br>como yo, | without their having so many<br>books as I. [thou. |
| tampoco exige él más que tú,              | neither does he require more than                  |
| no soy ménos cuerdo que él,               | I am not less prudent than he.                     |

137. The comparative adverb *que* is replaced, —

a. By *de lo que* (than what) when the second part of the comparison contains a verb :—

|                                |                                  |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| más discreto de lo que parece, | more prudent than he seems. [is. |
| parece más docta de lo que es, | she seems more learned than she  |
| es ménos rico de lo que dice,  | he is not so wealthy as he says. |

REMARK. — The original *que* may be resumed, however, if the comparative consists of one of the organic forms in *or* : —

|   |                          |
|---|--------------------------|
| peor está que estaba,   | it is worse than it was, |
| or, <i>Worse and Worse</i> , the title of one of Calderon's dramas. |                          |

*b.* By *de*, before numerals, provided the sentence be affirmative ; if it be negative, the resumption of *que* is quite general, but not universal : —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| tiene más de diez casas,                   | he has more than ten houses.                  |
| tendrá ménos de veinte años de edad,       | he must be less than twenty years old.        |
| no ha ido allá más que dos veces,          | he has not been there more than twice.        |
| tampoco tengo yo más que tres,             | I haven't more than three either.             |
| sin tener ménos que cuatro casas de campo, | without having fewer than four country-seats. |

138. *Más* and *ménos* may be strengthened by the adverbs **un poco**, *a little* ; **poco**, *scarcely* ; **mucho**, *much* ; **harto** or **bastante**, *considerably* ; **aun**, *even* ; **todavía**, *yet, still* ; and by the superlative **muchísimo** (never *muy mucho*, in the modern language), *very much* : —

|                        |                              |
|------------------------|------------------------------|
| poco más ancho,        | scarcely any wider.          |
| mucho más blanco,      | much whiter.                 |
| harto ménos doloroso,  | considerably less painful.   |
| aun más favorable,     | still (even) more favorable. |
| muchísimo ménos grave, | very much less serious.      |

139. From the above tables (132, 134) it appears : —

*a.* That the comparative degree of adjectives is formed by placing the adverbs **más**, *more* ; **ménos**, *less*,

before the positive, with **que** (de), *than*, to complete the comparison.

*b.* That four adjectives have, in general use, organic comparative forms derived from the Latin *melior*, *pejor*, *major*, *minor*.

*c.* That *mayor* and *menor*, applied to persons, signify also *older* and *younger*; and to things, *greater*, *less*.

REMARK. — In some phrases *mayor* signifies *greater*, with reference to some other undefined object, and then should be rendered simply by *great*, *grand*, or *chief*: —

|                   |                                   |
|-------------------|-----------------------------------|
| la iglesia mayor, | the principal church (cathedral). |
| la plaza mayor,   | the grand square.                 |
| la calle mayor,   | grand street (main street).       |

#### The Superlative Degree.

140. As already seen (132), the superlative of adjectives is of two kinds, — relative and absolute.

*a.* The relative superlative is translated by *most* or *-est*, and expresses not only superiority and inferiority to any other quality or object, but also to all other qualities or objects, declared or implied.

*b.* The absolute superlative, translated by *very*, and occasionally by *most*, *-est*, expresses quality or quantity in a very high degree, but without comparison.

#### The Relative Superlative.

141. The relative superlative is formed by associating the definite article (*el*, *la*, *lo*; *los*, *las*) or a possessive adjective (*my*, *thy*, *his*, *our*, etc.) with the comparative: —

|                              |                                 |
|------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| el más justo juicio,         | the justest judgment. [matter.  |
| lo más grave del asunto,     | the most serious (thing) in the |
| los libros ménos estimados,  | the least esteemed books.       |
| mi más querido amigo,        | my dearest friend.              |
| nuestro menor deseo,         | our least (or smallest) desire. |
| el mayor mónstruo los zelos, | jealousy the greatest monster.  |

**142.** When the noun is accompanied by the definite article or a possessive adjective, the superlative may follow it without an article. This is especially the case when the adjective preferably stands after the noun in the positive:—

|  |                             |
|--|-----------------------------|
| las casas más blancas,                   | the whitest houses.         |
| los nombres más conocidos,               | the best known names (146). |
| los dias más aciagos, <i>or</i> }        | the most ill-starred days.  |
| los más aciagos dias, }                  |                             |
| la necesidad más apremiante, <i>or</i> } | the most urgent necessity.  |
| la más apremiante necesidad, }           |                             |
| los hombres más leídos,                  | the best read men.          |

Except when the noun with which the adjective agrees is in *apposition* with some other term, or when the article is found with the noun in an indefinite sense; in the latter case it is customary to use a partitive genitive or the absolute superlative:—

|                                    |                                    |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| los Ingleses, gente la más despre- | the English, a most unprejudiced   |
| ocupada,                           | people.                            |
| un jóven de los más despejados,    | one of the brightest of young men, |
| <i>or,</i>                         | <i>or,</i>                         |
| un jóven despejadísimo,            | a very bright young man.           |

*a.* The relative superlative assumes the article when it stands in the predicate after the verb *to be* or its equivalents, and agrees with the subject of the verb:—

|                                    |                                    |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| la antigua provincia de Galicia es | the ancient province of Galicia is |
| la más remota de España,           | the most retired (one) in Spain.   |

**143.** The relative superlative is, from its very structure, a definite comparative as well. Thus, in the examples : —

|  |  |   |
|--|--|---|
| es el individuo más instruido de<br>la Academia, |  | he is the most learned member<br>in the Academy,                |
| fué la señora ménos amable de la<br>tertulia,    |  | she was the least amiable lady at<br>the <i>conversazione</i> , |

the logical interpretation would be : He is more learned than any other member of the Academy ; she was less amiable than any other lady at the *conversazione*. Hence, —

**144.** The relative superlative is often expressed in Spanish by the formal comparative : —

|  |  |  |
|--|--|--|
| esta es cosa que me da mayor<br>pena,                |  | this is a thing that gives me the<br>greatest concern, |
| (i.e., <i>greater</i> concern than any other thing.) |  |  |

|   |  |                         |
|---|--|-------------------------|
| lo que es más caro al hombre,               |  | what is dearest to man. |
| (what is <i>dearer</i> than anything else.) |  |                         |

**145.** When two objects, persons, or qualities are compared, the formal superlative is really a comparative, and must be so translated : —

|   |  |   |
|---|--|---|
| de estos dos albañiles, Pedro es<br>el más hábil,       |  | of these two masons, Peter is the<br>more skilful.        |
| de las dos señoras, la morena es<br>la ménos simpática, |  | of the two ladies, the brunette is<br>the less congenial. |

**146.** The comparative and the relative superlative, with *más*, are translated by *better* and *best*, instead of *more* and *most*, when participial adjectives, to which *well* may be joined in the positive, are compared in their proper sense as such : —

|               |                      |                  |                        |
|---------------|----------------------|------------------|------------------------|
| más conocido, | <i>better known.</i> | el más conocido, | <i>the best known.</i> |
| más leído,    | <i>better read.</i>  | el más leído,    | <i>the best read.</i>  |
| más amados,   | <i>better loved.</i> | los más amados,  | <i>the best loved.</i> |

*a.* If the past participle has also the signification of a mere adjective, its comparative and superlative are rendered as usual:—

querido, *dear.* | más querido, *dearer.* | el más querido, *dearest.*

*Instruido* may be translated by *instructed* or by *learned*, and its degrees of comparison would be rendered accordingly:—

|                |   |                   |   |
|----------------|---|-------------------|---|
| más instruido, | <i>better instructed,</i><br><i>more learned.</i> | el más instruido, | <i>the best in-</i><br><i>structed, the most learned.</i> |
|----------------|---|-------------------|---|

**147.** The prepositions *in*, *at*, *of*, after a relative superlative, are generally expressed in Spanish by *de*:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| el hombre más ruin de la ciudad,           | the vilest man in town.                  |
| el suelo más feráz de la comarca,          | the most fertile soil in the district.   |
| la conferencia más concurrida de la série, | the best attended lecture of the course. |

REMARK. — The use of *en* in this relation is very common,<sup>1</sup> but is, perhaps, to be classed with popular idioms or vulgarisms:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| es el niño más despejado (de) en la escuela, | he is the brightest lad in (the) school. |
|--|--|

**148.** The neuter article *lo* may be employed with any superlative to which in English the word *thing*, or some other word, may be supplied:—

---

<sup>1</sup> This construction with *en*, when used of persons, may generally be explained as an *ellipsis*: de los que hay en la e., *of those who are in the s.* Wiggers, *Grammatik*, p. 67, gives wrongly: *La casa más hermosa en la cuidad*; a sentence no *Spaniard* would write.



|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| lo más fácil no es siempre lo mejor, | the easiest (way) is not always the best.                                |
| lo más acertado será el negárselo,   | the most appropriate (thing) will be to refuse him ( <i>it to him</i> ). |

## The Absolute Superlative.

**149.** The absolute superlative is formed by affixing to the stem of the positive the variable ending *-ísimo* : —

|                               |                                     |
|-------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| es claro, clarísimo,          | it is clear, very clear.            |
| una cosa acertadísima,        | a very appropriate thing.           |
| un hombre prudentísimo,       | a very prudent man.                 |
| esta señora es feísima,       | this lady is very plain ("homely"). |
| tengo muchísimos libros,      | I have a great many books.          |
| una necesidad apremiantísima, | a most urgent necessity.            |

*a.* The absolute superlative is also formed by associating with the simple adjective adverbs like **muy**, **bien**, *very*; **harto**, **bastante**, *considerably*, *quite*; **sumamente**, *exceedingly*; **excesivamente**, *extremely*, etc.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| muy blanco, <i>very white</i> .                    | sumamente rico, <i>exceedingly rich</i> .   |
| harto sensible, <i>very much to be regretted</i> . | excesivamente raro, <i>extremely rare</i> . |

REMARK. — The superlative in *-ísimo* assumes the same position with respect of the noun that the simple adjective would have : —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| poco fruto, poquísimos frutos,                | little fruit, very little fruit.                 |
| un orador elocuente, un orador elocuentísimo, | an eloquent orator, a very eloquent orator.      |
| un joven rico, un joven riquísimo,            | { a wealthy young man, a very wealthy young man. |

**150.** The affix *-ísimo* is applied to the pure stem of the adjective agreeably to the following laws : —

a. By rejecting a final vowel, or a true diphthong (§ 21):—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| doct-o, doct-ísimo, <i>very learned.</i> | hermos-o, hermos-ísimo, <i>very</i>    |
| suav-e, suav-ísimo, <i>very mild.</i>    | <i>beautiful.</i>                      |
| grand-e, grand-ísimo, <i>very large.</i> | ampl-io, ampl-ísimo, <i>very full.</i> |

but (according to §§ 20, 22):

|   |                                     |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| impf-o, impi-ísimo, <i>very wicked.</i> | fri-o, fri-ísimo, <i>very cold.</i> |
|---|-------------------------------------|

b. By changing the final stem-consonants *c* into *qu*, *g* into *gu*, and *z* into *c* (§§ 13; 15; 28, a):—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| blanc-o, blanqu-ísimo, <i>very white.</i> | feliz, felic-ísimo, <i>very happy.</i>    |
| larg-o, largu-ísimo, <i>very long.</i>    | atroz, atroc-ísimo, <i>very shocking.</i> |

c. By changing the termination *-ble* into *-bil*:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| noble, nobil-ísimo, <i>very noble.</i> | amable, amabil-ísimo, <i>very kind.</i> |
|--|---|

d. By restoring the movable diphthongs *ie* and *ue* to their primitive simple vowels *e* and *o* (§ 19):—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| diestro, destrísimo, <i>very expert.</i>  | tierno, ternísimo, <i>very dear.</i>              |
| valiente, valentísimo, <i>very brave.</i> | lieto, letísimo, <i>very beaming.</i>             |
| ardiente, ardentísimo, <i>very zeal-</i>  | bueno, bonísimo, <i>very good.</i>                |
| <i>ous, very glowing.</i>                 | nuevo, novísimo, <i>very recent.</i> <sup>1</sup> |
| cierto, certísimo, <i>very sure.</i>      | fuerte, fortísimo, <i>very strong.</i>            |

REMARK. — This rule is fast yielding to the corrupting influences of the uneducated classes, and *ciertísimo*, *tierntísimo*, and *fuertísimo* are frequently heard and found in literature, although the Academy recognizes only the first. Viejo, *old*, always maintains the diphthong in the superlative (*viejísimo*); while the derivative vejez, *old age*, rejects it.

<sup>1</sup> Generally rendered and used as a *relative* superlative: La Novísima Recopilacion, *the latest compilation*; i.e., the *Revised Statutes* (of 1806), those of Philip II. (1567) being la Nueva Recopilacion, *the New Digest*.

e. By simply attaching *-ísimo* to the unchanged adjective when it ends in any consonant except *z*:—

útil, utilísimo, *very useful.* | liberal, liberalísimo, *very liberal.*

**151.** A few superlatives in *-ísimo* are constructed on Latin stems:—

|                      |                             |                   |                  |
|----------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------|------------------|
| amigo,* <sup>1</sup> | amicísimo,                  | very friendly,    | from amic-us.    |
| antiguo,             | antiquísimo,                | very ancient,     | antiqu-us.       |
| benéfico,            | beneficentísimo,            | very beneficent,  | beneficent(is).  |
| benévolo,            | benevolentísimo,            | very benevolent,  | benevolent(is).  |
| cruel,               | crudelísimo,                | very cruel,       | crudel-is.       |
| fiel,                | fidelísimo,                 | very faithful,    | fidel-is.        |
| frio,*               | } frigidísimo,              | very cold,        | frigid-us.       |
| frígido,             |                             |                   |                  |
| magnífico,           | magnificentísimo,           | very magnificent, | magnificent(is). |
| pio,*                | } pientísimo,* <sup>2</sup> | very devoted,     | pient(is).       |
| piadoso,*            |                             |                   |                  |
| sabio,               | sapientísimo,               | very wise,        | sapient(is).     |
| sacro,               | } sacratísimo,              | very sacred,      | sacrat-us.       |
| sagrado,             |                             |                   |                  |

**152.** Some few adjectives form their absolute superlatives by attaching *-rimo* to the Latin base in *er*:—

|          |              |                     |             |
|----------|--------------|---------------------|-------------|
| áspero,* | aspérrimo,   | very harsh,         | from asper. |
| célebre, | celebérrimo, | very famous,        | celeber.    |
| íntegro, | integérrimo, | very disinterested, | integer.    |
| libre,   | libérrimo,   | very free,          | liber.      |
| mísero,  | misérrimo,   | very wretched,      | miser.      |
| pobre,*  | paupérrimo,  | very indigent,      | pauper.     |
| salubre, | salubérrimo, | very healthful,     | saluber.    |

<sup>1</sup> Those distinguished by an asterisk have also the regular superlative; as, *amiguísimo, fríuísimo, piadosísimo, asperísimo, pobrísimo.*

<sup>2</sup> The form *pientísimo*, although unknown to the Academy's Dictionary and Grammars, is in common use. The earliest record of it that I remember is in the *Diferencias de libros q̄ ay en el uniuerso*, by Alexo Vanegas de Busto, Toledo, 1540, f. 240, where the author says: "de la piētissima (pientísima) virgē maria." Vanegas is an "authority" recognized by the Academy (*Dict.*, ed. 1726, p. lxxxvi, and *Catálogo de Autoridades*, Madrid, 1874, p. 100).

a. The superlative **ubérrimo**, *very productive*, wants the positive and comparative (Lat. *uber, uberior*), which, however, may be supplied by *feráz*.

153. The adjectives **fácil**, *easy, probable*; **difícil**, *difficult, not probable*, have the superlatives *facilísimo, facilimo*; *difícilísimo* and *difícilimo*.

154. The following comparatives and superlatives in form, derived from the Latin, have mostly lost their primitive force as such, and may be treated as adjectives, occasionally with special significations:—

anterior, *previous, prior.*

citerior, *hither.*

exterior, *external, outside.*

inferior, *inferior, lower.*

interior, *internal, inside.*

posterior, *posterior.*

(más cercano, *nearer.*)

superior, *superior, upper.*

ulterior, *ulterior, ultimate.*

(wanting.)

(wanting.)

extremo, *extreme.*

ínfimo, *lowest.*

íntimo, *intimate.*

postremo, *hindermost.*

próximo, *nearest, next.*

supremo, sumo, *highest, supreme.*

último, *last, final.*

la carta anterior, *the previous letter.*

los puntos extremos, *the extreme points.*

un cuarto interior, *an inside apartment.*

la ínfima plebe, *the lowest rabble.*

un amigo íntimo, *an intimate friend.*

un esfuerzo supremo, *a supreme effort.*

a. These forms often serve as simple adjectives to build true comparatives and superlatives:—

á precio tan ínfimo,

la casa más próxima,

las más superiores ciencias,<sup>1</sup>

mi más íntimo amigo,

at so low a price.

the nearest house.

the highest sciences.

my most intimate friend.

<sup>1</sup> *Dict. of the Acad.*, ed. 1726-39, vol. i. p. xlii. 3.

b. The same may be said of the superlative *mínimo* (§ 133, note 2) :—

|                     |  |                     |
|---------------------|--|---------------------|
| la cosa más mínima, |  | the smallest thing. |
|---------------------|--|---------------------|

155. The superlative absolute is often merely intensive :—

|                        |  |                         |
|------------------------|--|-------------------------|
| este mismísimo asunto, |  | this identical subject. |
| un caso singularísimo, |  | a signal case in point. |

156. Of the two forms comprised under the denomination of superlative absolute, that in *-ísimo* is the stronger :—

|                         |   |  |                           |
|-------------------------|---|--|---------------------------|
| es un hombre doctísimo, | } |  | he is a very learned man. |
| es un hombre muy docto, |   |  |                           |

157. The adverbs **más**, *more*; **ménos**, *less*; **muy**, *very*; are often applied to nouns in the sense of “more of a,” “less of a,” and “very much of a,” “a thorough” :—

|                                   |  |  |
|-----------------------------------|--|--|
| es más niño de lo que creía,      |  | he is more of a child than I supposed.             |
| es ménos político que esplotador, |  | he is less of a politician than a “carpet-bagger.” |
| es muy hombre de mundo,           |  | he is a thorough man of the world.                 |
| es muy caballero, es muy Español, |  | he is a thorough gentleman, a thorough Spaniard.   |
| es muy señorito,                  |  | he is quite a young gentleman. <sup>1</sup>        |
| muy señor mio.                    |  | my dear sir.                                       |

158. The formula **muy** — **para** signifies *too* — *to, too much of a* — *to*, with nouns, adjectives, and past participles :—

---

<sup>1</sup> He who replies to these observations, says, not *muy*, but *mucho*, *very*, literally *much*; *si tal*, *true*; or, *justo*, *of course*.

es muy grande para jugar tanto,  
es muy bobo para incomodarse  
de eso,  
estaba muy asustada para arries-  
gar preguntas,

he is too large to play so much  
he is too much of a simpleton to  
resent that.  
she was too much frightened to  
venture inquiries.

**159.** The intensive prefix **re** (Lat. *re* and [*p*] *rae*) was formerly much used to express a kind of absolute superlative, with or without *muy*, and was applied to adjectives, adverbs, and occasionally even to nouns. Its use is now popular or vulgar:—

*Ancient* (1537).

En las Cortes de los Príncipes  
son pocos, y muy pocos, y aun  
muy poquitos, y muy repo-  
quitos, los que se tienen entera  
amistad (*Guevara*).

In the Courts of Princes, those  
who cherish towards one an-  
other genuine friendship are  
few, very few, even exceeding-  
ly few, and scarcely any at all.

*Modern.*

|  |                                |
|--|--------------------------------|
| rebueno, <i>or</i> muy rebueno ( <i>usual</i> ),         | very good indeed.              |
| rebien, <i>or</i> muy rebien ( “ ),                      | very well indeed. [(do it) ;   |
| no me da la re-real gana ( <i>low</i> ),                 | it does not suit my majesty to |
| (literally, it does not give me the very royal mind to.) |                                |

<sup>1</sup> In the following tragic nursery rhyme, reproducing the legend of “Peter Peter, pumpkin eater,” and which may be heard any bright morning among the nurses on the *Recoletos* of Madrid, occurs the prefix *re* with a proper name:—

Pepe, *re*-Pepe  
mató á la mujer  
con siete cuchillos  
y un alfiler;  
la metió en un cesto,  
la llevó á vender,  
le sacó un doblon  
y lo metió en panchon.

Josy, my Joe,  
killed his wife  
with seven knives  
and one pin;  
put her in a panier,  
took her to be sold,  
got a doubloon for her,  
and laid it out in buns!

## NUMERALS.

160. The cardinal numbers are those which answer the question, *How many?*

| Cardinal Numbers. |  |           |   |
|-------------------|--|-----------|---|
| 1                 | uno, a, ( <i>contract un</i> ).  | 28        | veinte y ocho, <i>or</i> veinti-ocho.   |
| 2                 | dos.   | 29        | veinte y nueve, <i>etc.</i>             |
| 3                 | tres.  | 30        | treinta, ( <i>treinta y uno, etc.</i> ) |
| 4                 | cuatro.  | 40        | cuarenta.                               |
| 5                 | cinco.   | 50        | cincuenta.                              |
| 6                 | seis.  | 60        | sesenta.                                |
| 7                 | siete.   | 70        | setenta.                                |
| 8                 | ocho.  | 80        | ochenta.                                |
| 9                 | nueve.   | 90        | noventa.                                |
| 10                | diez.  | 100       | ciento, ( <i>contract cien</i> ).       |
| 11                | once.  | 101       | ciento y uno, a.                        |
| 12                | doce.  | 102       | ciento y dos.                           |
| 13                | trece.   | 103       | ciento y tres, <i>etc.</i>              |
| 14                | catorce.   | 200       | doscientos, as.                         |
| 15                | quince.  | 300       | trescientos, as.                        |
| 16                | diez y seis, <i>or</i> dieciseis.                                      | 400       | cuatrocientos, as.                      |
| 17                | diez y siete, <i>or</i> diecisiete.                                    | 500       | quinientos, as.                         |
| 18                | diez y ocho, <i>or</i> dieciocho.                                      | 600       | seiscientos, as.                        |
| 19                | diez y nueve, <i>or</i> diecinueve.                                    | 700       | setecientos, as.                        |
| 20                | veinte.  | 800       | ochocientos, as.                        |
| 21                | veinte y uno, a, <i>or</i> veintiuno, a, ( <i>contract veintiu</i> n). | 900       | novcientos, as.                         |
| 22                | veinte y dos, <i>or</i> veintidos.                                     | 1,000     | mil, ( <i>mil y uno, etc.</i> )         |
| 23                | veinte y tres, <i>or</i> veintitres.                                   | 10,000    | diez mil.                               |
| 24                | veinte y cuatro, <i>or</i> veinticuatro.                               | 100,000   | cien mil.                               |
| 25                | veinte y cinco, <i>or</i> veinticinco.                                 | 200,000   | doscientos, as, mil.                    |
| 26                | veinte y seis, <i>or</i> veintiseis.                                   | 500,000   | quinientos, as, mil.                    |
| 27                | veinte y siete, <i>or</i> veintisiete.                                 | 1,000,000 | un millon, <i>or</i> un cuento.         |
|                   |  | 2,000,000 | dos millones.                           |

Remarks on the Cardinals.

**161.** Archaic forms are **docientos** and **trecientos**. They are heard, however, at the present day in current language, but are not met with in approved modern literature. Incorrect conversational forms are **siete-cientos** and **nuevecientos**. See 150, *d*, Remark.

**162.** The cardinal numbers, although adjectives, are all invariable except *uno*, *a*, and *cientos*, *as*, when multiplied by two up to nine inclusive:—

dos libros, tres plumas,  
cuatro cuartos, cinco onzas,  
diez días, cuarenta almas,  
un amigo, una conocida,  
ciento y un soldados,  
veintiun casas, cien años,

cien mil duros,  
doscientos hombres, doscientas  
mujeres,  
quinientos bonos, quinientas car-  
petas,  
cuatrocientas mil personas,

two books, three pens. [ounces.  
four cuartos (coppers), five  
ten days, forty souls.  
one friend, one acquaintance.  
one hundred and one soldiers.  
twenty-one houses, one hundred  
years.  
one hundred thousand dollars.  
two hundred men, two hundred  
women.  
five hundred bonds, five hundred  
(government) securities.  
four hundred thousand persons.

For the contractions of *uno* and *ciento*, see 123, *a*, *b*; 126.

**163.** As numeral adjectives, **ciento** and **mil** cannot assume *un* like the substantives **millon** and **cuento**:—

cien vecinos,<sup>1</sup> *one hundred citi-  
zens.*  
mil duros, *one thousand dollars.*

un millon de gracias, *a thousand  
thanks* (literally, 'one million  
of thanks').

<sup>1</sup> *Vecino* means (1) a neighbor; (2) the head of a family; (3) a legal or officially inscribed resident, a householder; (4) a citizen. Native estimates of population are made in rural districts by *vecinos*, *heads of families*; in towns, by *almas*, *souls*; and by government, for foreign convenience, by *habitantes*, *inhabitants*. The traditional method is, however, by *vecinos*.



|                            |   |
|----------------------------|---|
| me dió más de mil onzas,   | he gave me more than one thousand ounces. [dred lashes. |
| recibió hasta cien azotes, | he received as many as one hun-                         |

*a. Ciento* used as a substantive assumes the form *centenar*, unless employed to express rate. *Mil*, as a substantive, may retain that form, or appear as *millar*; but to express rate, only the latter is usual:—

|                                    |                                 |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| centenares de hombres,             | hundreds of men.                |
| á doce reales el ciento,           | at twelve reals per hundred.    |
| millares <i>or</i> miles de vidas, | thousands of lives. [sand.      |
| á veinticinco pesetas el millar,   | at twenty-five francs per thou- |

REMARK. — In mercantile language, it is usual to omit the article with the number.<sup>1</sup>

|                       |                               |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------|
| á doce reales ciento. | á veinticinco pesetas millar. |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------|

164. Tens of hundreds cannot be used in Spanish for counting from one thousand upwards, but *mil* must always introduce the denomination:—

|                                  |                                  |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| mil y seis,                      | ten hundred and six.             |
| mil y ciento,                    | eleven hundred.                  |
| mil ciento y diez,               | eleven hundred and ten.          |
| mil cuatrocientos noventa y dos, | fourteen hundred and ninety-two. |
| dos mil trescientas personas,    | twenty-three hundred persons.    |

165. The conjunction *y*, and (archaic *é*), is now only used to connect the last of a series with the foregoing number:—

| <i>Fifteenth Century:</i>                     | <i>Nineteenth Century:</i>               |
|---|--|
| myll e quatroçientos e nouenta e nueue, 1499. | mil cuatrocientos noventa y nueve, 1499. |

<sup>1</sup> So the Madrid hawkers say, for example: á real, *or* á real uno, *one real* each.

166. The ordinal numbers, as their name indicates, show the *order* of a series; as, *first, second*, etc.:—

| Ordinal Numbers. |  |             |                                  |
|------------------|--|-------------|----------------------------------|
| 1st              | primero, a, ( <i>contract</i> primer). | 28th        | vigésimo octavo.                 |
| 2d               | segundo, a.                            | 29th        | vigésimo nono.                   |
| 3d               | tercero, a, ( <i>contract</i> tercer). | 30th        | trigésimo, a.                    |
| 4th              | cuarto, a.                             | 31st        | trigésimo primo, <i>etc.</i>     |
| 5th              | quinto, a.                             | 40th        | cuadragésimo, a.                 |
| 6th              | sexto, a, ( <i>and</i> sexto).         | 50th        | quincuagésimo, a.                |
| 7th              | séptimo, a, ( <i>and</i> sétimo).      | 60th        | sexagésimo, a.                   |
| 8th              | octavo, a.                             | 70th        | septuagésimo, a.                 |
| 9th              | nono, a, <i>or</i> noveno, a.          | 80th        | octogésimo, a.                   |
| 10th             | décimo, a.                             | 90th        | nonagésimo, a.                   |
| 11th             | undécimo, a.                           | 100th       | centésimo, a.                    |
| 12th             | duodécimo, a.                          | 101st       | centésimo primo.                 |
| 13th             | décimo tércio.                         | 200th       | ducentésimo, a.                  |
| 14th             | décimo cuarto.                         | 300th       | trecentésimo, a.                 |
| 15th             | décimo quinto.                         | 400th       | cuadragésimo, a. <sup>1</sup>    |
| 16th             | décimo sexto.                          | 500th       | quingentésimo, a.                |
| 17th             | décimo séptimo.                        | 600th       | sexcentésimo, a. <sup>1</sup>    |
| 18th             | décimo octavo.                         | 700th       | septingentésimo, a. <sup>1</sup> |
| 19th             | décimo nono.                           | 800th       | octogentésimo, a.                |
| 20th             | vigésimo, a.                           | 900th       | nonagésimo, a.                   |
| 21st             | vigésimo primo.                        | 1,000th     | milésimo, a.                     |
| 22d              | vigésimo segundo.                      | 2,000th     | dos milésimo, a.                 |
| 23d              | vigésimo tercio.                       | 10,000th    | diez milésimo, a.                |
| 24th             | vigésimo cuarto.                       | 100,000th   | cien milésimo, a.                |
| 25th             | vigésimo quinto.                       | 200,000th   | doscientos milésimo, a.          |
| 26th             | vigésimo sexto (sesto).                | 500,000th   | quinientos milésimo, a.          |
| 27th             | vigésimo séptimo (sétimo).             | 1,000,000th | millonésimo, a.                  |

<sup>1</sup> Some write *cuadringentésimo*, *sescentésimo*, *septingentésimo*, but as the Academy does not give these numerals in the Dictionary or Grammar, the decision of that body is not accessible.

## 167. Archaic forms are -

|      |               |         |                 |
|------|---------------|---------|-----------------|
| 8th  | ochavo, a.    | 30th    | treinteno, a.   |
| 9th  | noveno, a.    | 40th    | cuarenteno, a.  |
| 10th | deceno, a.    | 50th    | cincuenteno, a. |
| 11th | onceno, a.    | 60th    | sesenteno, a.   |
| 12th | doceno, a.    | 70th    | setenteno, a.   |
| 13th | treceno, a.   | 80th    | ochenteno, a.   |
| 14th | catorceno, a. | 90th    | noventeno, a.   |
| 15th | quinceno, a.  | 100th   | centeno, a.     |
| 20th | veinteno, a.  | 1,000th | mileno, a.      |

el ochavo día, | the eighth day. — *Crónica General*, A.D. 1260.  
 Alfonso onceno, | Alphonso XI. — Fourteenth century, and still used.  
 el doceno trabajo, | the twelfth labor. — Villena, Labors of Hercules.

But 21st, etc., would be *vigésimo primo*, not *veinteno primo*.

168. The ordinals, both simple and compound, vary regularly like all adjectives in *o*, agreeing in gender and number with their nouns:—

|                         |                       |
|-------------------------|-----------------------|
| la primera estacion,    | the first station.    |
| leccion décima nona,    | lesson nineteenth.    |
| la fila vigésima prima, | the twenty-first row. |

REMARK.—The Academy writes the compound forms in one word: as, *trigésimotercio* (*fem.* *trigésimatercia*), *thirty-third*; but this innovation is not generally adopted by Spanish printers, nor should it be, since each member varies in ending like independent adjectives.

For the contracts of *primero* and *tercero*, see 123.

169. Fractional numbers used in mathematical calculations, though substantives, belong here. They do not generally correspond with the ordinals, as in English;

but from ten upwards assume the ending *avo*, pl. *avos* : —

| Fractional Numbers. |                                    |                  |                                     |
|---------------------|------------------------------------|------------------|-------------------------------------|
| $\frac{1}{2}$       | la mitad (un medio).               | $\frac{1}{16}$   | un diez y seis avo (dieciseis avo). |
| $1\frac{1}{2}$      | uno y medio, una y media.          | $\frac{1}{17}$   | un diez y siete avo.                |
| $\frac{1}{3}$       | un tercio.                         | $\frac{1}{18}$   | un diez y ocho avo.                 |
| $\frac{2}{3}$       | dos tercios.                       | $\frac{1}{19}$   | un diez y nueve avo.                |
| $\frac{1}{4}$       | un cuarto.                         | $\frac{1}{20}$   | un veintavo (veinte avo).           |
| $\frac{3}{4}$       | tres cuartos.                      | $\frac{1}{21}$   | un veintiun avo, etc.               |
| $\frac{1}{5}$       | un quinto.                         | $\frac{2}{20}$   | tres veintavos.                     |
| $\frac{4}{5}$       | cuatro quintos.                    | $\frac{1}{30}$   | un treintavo.                       |
| $\frac{1}{6}$       | un sexto.                          | $\frac{1}{40}$   | un cuarentavo.                      |
| $\frac{5}{6}$       | cinco sextos.                      | $\frac{1}{50}$   | un cincuentavo.                     |
| $\frac{1}{7}$       | un séptimo.                        | $\frac{1}{60}$   | un sesentavo.                       |
| $\frac{1}{8}$       | un octavo <i>and</i> ochavo.       | $\frac{1}{70}$   | un setentavo.                       |
| $\frac{1}{9}$       | un noveno.                         | $\frac{1}{80}$   | un ochentavo.                       |
| $\frac{1}{10}$      | un décimo.                         | $\frac{1}{90}$   | un noventavo.                       |
| $\frac{1}{11}$      | un onzavo ( <i>or</i> , once avo). | $\frac{2}{90}$   | tres noventavos.                    |
| $\frac{1}{12}$      | un dozavo (doce avo).              | $\frac{1}{100}$  | un centavo <i>and</i> centésimo.    |
| $\frac{1}{13}$      | un trezavo (trece avo).            | $\frac{1}{1000}$ | un milésimo.                        |
| $\frac{1}{14}$      | un catorzavo (catorce avo).        | $\frac{2}{999}$  | trescientos veinticinco, novecien-  |
| $\frac{1}{15}$      | un quinzavo (quince avo).          |                  | tos setenta y dos avos.             |

170. Fractional numbers, from  $\frac{1}{8}$  to  $\frac{1}{10}$  inclusive, may also be expressed by the ordinals with the feminine noun **parte**, *part*, especially when a genitive follows or is understood. From  $\frac{1}{12}$  onward this construction is preferable, except in mathematical calculations : —

|                |  |
|----------------|--|
| one-third,     | un tercio, <i>or</i> la tercera parte.           |
| two-thirds,    | dos tercios, <i>or</i> las dos terceras partes.  |
| one-fourth,    | un cuarto, <i>or</i> la cuarta parte.            |
| three-fourths, | tres cuartos, <i>or</i> las tres cuartas partes. |
| one-twentieth, | un vigésimo, <i>or</i> la vigésima parte.        |
| one-hundredth, | un centésimo, <i>or</i> la centésima parte.      |

a. As substantives, **una tercia** (formerly *una tercia parte*) signifies *a third of a yard*; **una cuarta**, *a fourth or quarter of a yard*; **un cuarteron**, *a quarter of a pound*; **una arroba** (from the Arabic for one-quarter), *twenty-five pounds or a quarter of a hundred*, applied to liquid as well as dry measure in Spain. **Un diezmo**, meaning *a civil or ecclesiastic ten per cent tax*, is corrupted from *décimo*, as the English *tithe* is from *tenth*: as, **las alcavalas del diezmo**, in ancient law, *the ten per cent peculium regis on all purchases and sales*. **Un quinto**, is *a fifth*, and *a fifth man*, hence *a conscript soldier*; **la quinta**, *the military conscription*.

b. Fractionals are also employed in Spanish to specify the number of leaves in a signature or folded sheet (*cuadernillo*<sup>1</sup>), that is, the size (*tamaño*) of a volume:—

|  |                    |
|--|--------------------|
| un tomo en folio (f <sup>o</sup> ),              | a volume in folio. |
| un tomo en cuarto (4 <sup>o</sup> ),             | a volume in 4to.   |
| un tomo en octavo (8 <sup>o</sup> ),             | a volume in 8vo.   |
| un tomo en dozavo (12 <sup>o</sup> ),            | a volume in 12mo.  |
| un tomo en diez y seis avo (16 <sup>o</sup> ),   | a volume in 16mo.  |
| un t. en veinte y cuatro avo (24 <sup>o</sup> ), | a volume in 24mo.  |

REMARK.—In this connection, “large” is expressed by *mayor*, and “small” by *menor* or *pequeño*:—

|   |                                |
|---|--------------------------------|
| un tomo en f <sup>o</sup> mayor, or de marca mayor, | a volume in large folio.       |
| un tomo en cuarto menor,                            | a volume in small 4to.         |
| un libro de mano en octavo marquilla,               | a manuscript in medium octavo. |

<sup>1</sup> So named (from *quatro*) because in the origins of typography most books were issued in “fours,” whether the external form was quarto or folio.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| un libro de molde en octavo pequeño, <i>or</i> "español," | a printed book in small octavo, "Spanish size." <sup>1</sup> |
|---|--|

171. The arithmetical signs +, ×, −, ÷, =, are read respectively **más, por, ménos, dividido por, igual**:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| 5 + 3 = 8,<br>5 × 8 = 5,<br>5 times 8 are 40, | cinco más tres igual ocho; <i>or</i> , cinco y tres, ocho.<br>cinco octavos por ocho igual cinco.<br>cinco por ocho, cuarenta. |
|---|--|

172. Half (a half or one-half), as a noun, is expressed by **la mitad** (in calculations only, by **un medio**); as an adjective, by **medio, a**, without *an* or *a*:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| la mitad de mis bienes,<br>le di la mitad,<br>media hora, medio día,<br>una hora y media,<br>un día y medio, | one-half of my goods.<br>I gave him one-half.<br>half an hour, half a day.<br>an hour and a half.<br>a day and a half. |
|--|--|

173. **Multiplicatives** answer the question, *How many fold?* as,

**Adjectives.**

|                         |                        |                         |
|-------------------------|------------------------|-------------------------|
| simple, <i>simple</i> . | doble, <i>double</i> . | triple, <i>triple</i> . |
|-------------------------|------------------------|-------------------------|

**Substantives.**

|               |  |
|---------------|--|
| el duplo,     | <i>twofold, twice as much, many.</i>   |
| el triplo,    | <i>threefold, three times as much.</i> |
| el cuádruplo, | <i>fourfold, four times as much.</i>   |
| el quíntuplo, | <i>fifefold, five times as many.</i>   |
| el céntuplo,  | <i>an hundred fold, etc.</i>           |

---

<sup>1</sup> Technical book terms are: una foja, *a folio* (leaf numbered on the first side only, — *recto, verso* or *vuella*); una hoja, *a leaf* (without foliation or pagination); una página, *a numbered page*. Un "juego" de libros, means a "*set*" of volumes, whether of two, or three hundred; una biblioteca de tres mil tomos ó de mil novecientos juegos de libros, *a library consisting of three thousand volumes or of nineteen hundred sets*. Biblioteca is a *public* or *private library*; formerly, *librería* signified *private library*, but its use is now limited to the poets and old-fashioned people, while *librería* universally designates a *book-shop* or *the book trade*.

a. With the number of a street are used **duplicado**, "bis," repeated; **triplicado**, triple number; **cuadruplicado**, quadruple number, when it is not convenient or feasible to increase the cardinal number:—

|  |  |   |
|--|--|---|
| calle del Arenal, número veinte<br>duplicado, <i>Strand, No. 20 "bis."</i> |  | calle del Saúco, núm. 6 tripº.,<br><i>Alder Street, No. 6 triple.</i> |
|--|--|---|

REMARK.—The Latin bis, *twice*, appears in Spanish in the words bizco (bisojo, *double eye*), *cross-eyed*; bizcocho (bis-coctus), *biscuit*,<sup>1</sup> *cracker*, and *teacake*; bisabuelo, a, *great-grandfather*, *great-grandmother*; and biznieto, a, *great-grandson*, *great-granddaughter*. The Spaniards use also the Greek τέταρτος, *fourth*, corrupted into *tátara*, with a few words: as, tatarabuelo, a, *great-great-grandfather* or *mother*; tataranieto, a, *great-great-grandson* or *daughter*; tataradeudo, a, *a remote kindred*.

#### 174. Collectives or numeral substantives are:—

|                                |  |  |
|--------------------------------|--|--|
| un par, <i>a couple</i> .      |  | una treintena, <i>a score and a half</i> . |
| una docena, <i>a dozen</i> .   |  | una cuarentena, <i>two score</i> .         |
| una quincena, <i>fifteen</i> . |  | una centena, <i>five score</i> .           |
| una veintena, <i>a score</i> . |  | una gruesa, <i>a gross</i> .               |
| un par de dias, de huevos,     |  | a couple of days, — of eggs.               |
| una quincena (de dias),        |  | a fortnight.                               |
| una treintena de años,         |  | a score and a half of years.               |

a. The term "or so" after numerals is expressed by **poco más ó ménos**, or by **cosa de**, *a matter of*:—

una veintena de libras poco más ó ménos, *or cosa de una veintena de libras, twenty pounds or so, some twenty pounds*.

---

<sup>1</sup> That is, *English* biscuit, the American "cracker," also the teacake called "lady-fingers," and the like. Sea-biscuit in Spanish is *galleta*, "hard-tack," kneaded with rancid olive-oil, and used in the marine as well as the merchant service.

**175. Numeral Adverbs** answer the questions, *How many times? How often?* and are formed by the association of a cardinal number or adjective with the feminine noun **vez**, *a time* (Lat. *vice-m*):—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| una vez, <i>once</i> .                             | muchas veces, <i>often</i> .                     |
| dos veces, <i>twice</i> .                          | pocas veces, <i>few times, seldom</i> .          |
| tres veces, <i>three times</i> .                   | rara vez, <i>or</i> raras veces, <i>seldom</i> . |
| veinte veces, <i>twenty times</i> .                | otras veces, <i>other times</i> .                |
| cien veces, <i>one hundred times</i> .             | algunas veces, <i>sometimes</i> .                |
| alguna que otra vez, <i>one time and another</i> . |  |

**a. Distributives** which answer likewise the question, *How often?* are expressed by **todo** or **cada**:—

|                              |                             |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| todos los días, meses, años, | every day, month, year.     |
| todas las horas, veces,      | every hour, each time.      |
| cada día, mes y año,         | every day, month, and year. |
| cada hora, cada vez,         | every hour, each time.      |
| cada dos siglos,             | every two centuries.        |
| cada tres meses,             | every three months.         |

REMARK. — “Time” is expressed in Spanish in a variety of ways: by *vez*, as above, when it means an occasion, an instance; by *tiempo*, as a limited portion of duration; by *hora*, when it means “o’clock”; by *rato*, as to the quality of an occasion; by *plazo*, as a fixed period; German, *Frist*:—

|                                |                                  |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| esta vez te lo perdono,        | I'll forgive you this time.      |
| el tiempo es corto,            | time is short.                   |
| no tengo tiempo,               | I have no time.                  |
| ¿qué hora es?                  | what time is it?                 |
| á estas horas estará en Paris, | by this time he is at Paris.     |
| ha llevado mal rato,           | he had a poor time.              |
| ¿qué rato más delicioso!       | what a delightful time!          |
| el plazo convenido,            | the time agreed on. [the time.   |
| pagaré en el plazo señalado,   | I shall pay at the expiration of |
| á plazos cortos,               | in short instalments.            |



## The Pronoun.

## PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

176. The personal pronouns in the nominative are:—

| SINGULAR. |                                     |                                     |                   |
|-----------|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|-------------------|
| Person.   | Masculine.                          | Feminine.                           | Neuter.           |
| First.    | yo, <i>I</i> .                      | yo, <i>I</i> .                      |                   |
| Second.   | tú, <i>thou</i> .                   | tú, <i>thou</i> .                   |                   |
| “         | vos, <i>you</i> .                   | vos, <i>you</i> .                   |                   |
| Third.    | él, <i>he (it)</i> .                | ella, <i>she (it)</i> .             | ello, <i>it</i> . |
| “         | usted, <i>you (your grace)</i> .    | usted, <i>you (your grace)</i> .    |                   |
| PLURAL.   |                                     |                                     |                   |
| First.    | nosotros, <i>we</i> .               | nosotras, <i>we</i> .               |                   |
| Second.   | vosotros, <i>you</i> .              | vosotras, <i>you</i> .              |                   |
| Third.    | ellos, <i>they</i> .                | ellas, <i>they</i> .                |                   |
| “         | ustedes, <i>you (your graces)</i> . | ustedes, <i>you (your graces)</i> . |                   |

*a.* To these may be added *se* as the reflexive and reciprocal substitute of pronouns of the third person, in all cases except the nominative. As direct object, *se* means *one's self, himself, herself, itself, yourself; pl., themselves, yourselves, each other, one another*.

REMARK. — Names of things and abstract qualities (except those made so by the neuter article *lo*) are masculine or feminine in Spanish, whatever be the English gender. Hence, *el libro, the book* — *él, le, lo, it*; *los libros, the books* — *ellos, los, they, them*; *la pluma, the pen* — *ella, la, it*; *las plumas, the pens* — *ellas, las, they, them*. *Ello* relates only to a thought, or a phrase to which gender cannot be attributed: *ello, lo, it* — *lo creo, I believe it, I think so*. See § 84.

**177. Nosotros** and **vosotros** are compounds of *nos* and *vos* with the plural indefinite pronoun **otros, -as, others**; and hence the variation of gender, unknown to the other European languages, in the first and second persons. The appendix *otros* served originally to expand or amplify the force of *we* and *you*, but it added nothing to the signification, as the French *autres* in *vous autres* does. The compound first appeared in the latter half of the fifteenth century.<sup>1</sup>

**178. Nos** is still used officially in a representative sense by sovereigns, prelates, and magistrates. It is also met with in certain quaint devotional formulae:—

nos los Inquisidores,  
nos el cabildo de tal,  
venga á nos el tu reino,  
ruega por nos, Señora,

we the Inquisitors.  
we the Chapter of so and so.  
let thy kingdom come to us.  
intercede for us, Lady.

#### Pronouns of Address.

**179.** The pronouns regularly employed in popular address are *tú, vos, vosotros, -as, and usted*; besides titles such as *vueceléncia, señoría, usía*, etc.

REMARK.—At an early period of the vernacular Castilian, as fixed by King Alfonso X., called El Sabio, or *the Wise* (A.D. 1252-84), and till far down in the fifteenth century, the only pronouns of address, aside from titles, were *tú* and *vos*, the latter being then applicable to one or more persons. *Tú* was employed in sacred

<sup>1</sup> The compound forms do not appear in the early Castilian *Poem of the Cid*, written prior to the thirteenth century; nor in the *Chronicle of the Cid*, first printed in 1512, but older by several centuries; nor in the *Chronicle of Spain* (A.D. 1260), published in 1541; nor in the works of the Marquis of Santillana in the early part of the fifteenth century. They abound, however, in the Royal Edicts from 1476, and in the *Chronicle of Spain*, by Diego de Valera (Seville, 1482), though generally written throughout in two words, *nos otros, vos otros*.

invocation, in poetry, in the family, and to Moors (against the Arabic *ánta*, thou) ; while *vos* was the formal medium between man and man, like the English *you*. In the sixteenth century, under the expansive influences of the reigns of the Catholic sovereigns and the Emperor Charles V., *vuestra merced*, *your grace*, *pl.* *vuestras mercedes*, *your graces*, came to be the courtly address between gentlemen ; and *vos*, with its new plural *vosotros*, was reserved for a lofty formula appropriate to persons of superior and inferior rank, to the Deity, and to court poetry, while *tú* maintained its position in the family and in informal rhyme. The relative situation of such words at the present day is as follows : —

**180. Tú**, *thou* (nearly always translated *you*), is employed : (a) in the sacred and hortative styles and in poetry ; (b) between husband and wife, parents and children, relatives, and betrothed persons ; (c) between intimate friends ; (d) by the native master and mistress to their domestics ; (e) by everybody in speaking to brutes, pet animals, or even to inanimate objects.

**181. Vos**, *you*, is now always limited to one person, male or female, although joined to the second person plural of verbs. It is at present employed ; (a) interchangeably with *tú* for sacred invocation by Catholics, as more distant and formal than *tú* ; (b) in modern literature, representing ancient manners ; (c) in the family, when the younger members wish to show great respect to the elders ; (d) in anger and scorn, to inferiors or to those whom we wish to address harshly ; (e) in translations from the English and French, to represent the “*you*” and “*vous*” of those nations.

**182. Vosotros**, *-as, you*, is the plural of *tú* and of *vos*, and must be used when there are two or more persons or objects to whom singly *tú* or *vos* would apply.

Beyond this, it is also employed by public speakers before religious, literary, political, and other assemblies. It is, therefore, heard at public sessions of the Academies, at the Athenæum, the churches, and the theatre, by the accustomed or authorized speakers. But if, at the play, the manager come forth to make an announcement or offer an apology, he would use *ustedes*. *Vosotros* supposes the confidence and, to a certain degree, the sympathy of the audience.

**183. Usted** (pl., *ustedes*), *you*, is descended from the now obsolete *vuestra merced*, *your grace*; *vuestras mercedes*, *your graces* (abbreviated *Vmd.*, *Vmds.*), and represents the conventional "*you*" in all conditions of life; even in malice, anger, and satire. It is the universal address of society, and the only one the foreigner need ever employ. Being considered to be of the third person, it requires the verb, pronoun-object, and possessive adjective, to be likewise in that person, although translated into English by the second person.

At the present day in Spain it is either written out in full, or abbreviated into *V.* or *Vd.*, pl. *VV.* or *Vds.* These signs are always to be read *usted*, *ustedes*, precisely as *Mr.* in English is read *Mister*, and *M.* in French, *Monsieur*:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <i>usted</i> (or <i>V.</i> ) <i>tiene</i> ,     | you have, <i>i.e.</i> your grace has.   |
| <i>ustedes</i> (or <i>VV.</i> ) <i>tienen</i> , | you have, <i>i.e.</i> your graces have. |
| ¿trae <i>V.</i> su hijo consigo?                | do you bring your son with you?         |
| ¿no conoce <i>V.</i> á sus amigos?              | do you not know your friends?           |

**REMARK.**—Official titles of address at court or in government circles are likewise joined with the third person of the verb. The principal are: *vuestra* (or *su*) *majestad* (*V.M.*), *your majesty*; *vuestra* (or *su*) *alteza* (*V.A.*), *your highness*, to a prince or prince-

regent; *vucelencia* or *vucencia* (V.E.), *your excellency*, to a crown minister, an ambassador, or a *grande* of Spain; *usía* (V.S.), *your honor*, to a judge or an *alcalde*.<sup>1</sup> In the Chambers the mutual address of the members is *su señoría* (S.S.), *his lordship*. The Regents of the kingdom in royal minorities have the corporate title of *Majestad*, like the king whom they represent; and the municipal councils that of *señoría*, or lordship.

Title of address is *el tratamiento*; as, *el tratamiento de alteza*, *the address of highness*. To "thee and thou" any one is *tutearle*, or *llamarle de tú*; the latter may be applied to any pronoun of address, — *llamar á uno de vos, de usted*, to use *vos, usted*, to any one.

#### Inflection.

**184.** The personal pronoun admits of a fuller inflection than any other part of speech, save the verb. The dative and accusative cases have two forms: the first of which is called the *conjunctive*, because governed by the verb; and the second, *disjunctive*, because governed by a preposition, and thus disjoined from the verb:—

##### Conjunctive.

me da, *he gives (to) me.*  
te busca, *he seeks thee.*

##### Disjunctive.

acude á mí, *he applies to me.*  
á tí busco, *I seek thee.*

**185.** The association of both the conjunctive and disjunctive forms to the same verb constitutes the redundant or *pleonastic* construction, very common in Spanish:—

|  |                                  |
|--|----------------------------------|
| me da á mí, or á mí me da,             | he gives (to) me.                |
| te busca á tí, or á tí te busca,       | he seeks thee.                   |
| le digo á V., or á V. le digo,         | I say to you (to him to you).    |
| les estimo á VV., or á VV. les estimo, | I esteem you (them your graces). |

<sup>1</sup> Formerly also much used by the lower orders to any gentleman, but rather provincial now.

186. The personal pronouns are inflected as follows :—

| SINGULAR.                 |                |                             | PLURAL.              |                             |                               |
|---------------------------|----------------|-----------------------------|----------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| First Person.             |                |                             |                      |                             |                               |
| N.                        | yo,            | <i>I.</i>                   | nosotros-as,         | <i>we.</i>                  |                               |
| G.                        | de mí,         | <i>of me, of myself.</i>    | de nosotros-as,      | <i>of us, of ourselves.</i> |                               |
| D.                        | me — á mí,     | <i>to me, to myself.</i>    | nos — á nosotros-as, | <i>to us, to ourselves.</i> |                               |
| A.                        | me — á mí,     | <i>me, myself.</i>          | nos — á nosotros-as, | <i>us, ourselves.</i>       |                               |
| P.                        | mí,            | <i>me, myself.</i>          | nosotros-as,         | <i>us, ourselves.</i>       |                               |
| Second Person.            |                |                             |                      |                             |                               |
| N.                        | tú,            | <i>thou.</i>                | N.                   | vosotros-as,                | <i>you.</i>                   |
| G.                        | de tí,         | <i>of thee, of thyself.</i> | G.                   | de vosotros-as,             | <i>of you, of yourselves.</i> |
| D.                        | te — á tí,     | <i>to thee, to thyself.</i> | D.                   | os — á vosotros-as,         | <i>to you, to yourselves.</i> |
| A.                        | te — á tí,     | <i>thee, thyself.</i>       | A.                   | os — á vosotros-as,         | <i>you, yourselves.</i>       |
| P.                        | tí,            | <i>thee, thyself.</i>       | P.                   | vosotros-as,                | <i>you, yourselves.</i>       |
| N.                        | vos,           | <i>you.</i>                 |                      |                             |                               |
| G.                        | de vos,        | <i>of you, of yourself.</i> |                      |                             |                               |
| D.                        | os — á vos,    | <i>to you, to yourself.</i> |                      |                             |                               |
| A.                        | os — á vos,    | <i>you, yourself.</i>       |                      |                             |                               |
| P.                        | vos,           | <i>you, yourself.</i>       |                      |                             |                               |
| Third Person — Masculine. |                |                             |                      |                             |                               |
| N.                        | él,            | <i>he, it.</i>              | ellos,               | <i>they.</i>                |                               |
| G.                        | de él,         | <i>of him, of it.</i>       | de ellos,            | <i>of them.</i>             |                               |
| D.                        | le — á él,     | <i>to him, to it.</i>       | les — á ellos,       | <i>to them.</i>             |                               |
| A.                        | le, lo — á él, | <i>him, it.</i>             | los, les — á ellos,  | <i>them.</i>                |                               |
| P.                        | él,            | <i>him, it.</i>             | ellos,               | <i>them.</i>                |                               |
| Third Person — Feminine.  |                |                             |                      |                             |                               |
| N.                        | ella,          | <i>she, it.</i>             | ellas,               | <i>they.</i>                |                               |
| G.                        | de ella,       | <i>of her, of it.</i>       | de ellas,            | <i>of them.</i>             |                               |
| D.                        | le — á ella,   | <i>to her, to it.</i>       | les — á ellas,       | <i>to them.</i>             |                               |
| A.                        | la — á ella,   | <i>her, it.</i>             | las — á ellas,       | <i>them.</i>                |                               |
| P.                        | ella,          | <i>her, it.</i>             | ellas,               | <i>them.</i>                |                               |

| SINGULAR.                             |   |  | PLURAL.   |  |
|---------------------------------------|---|--|---|--|
| Third Person — Neuter.                |   |  |   |  |
| N.                                    | ello, lo, <i>it, that, so.</i>                          |  | (Wanting.)                                      |  |
| G.                                    | de ello, <i>of it.</i>                                  |  |   |  |
| D.                                    | á ello, <i>to it.</i>                                   |  |   |  |
| A.                                    | lo, <i>it, that, so.</i>                                |  |   |  |
| P.                                    | ello, <i>it.</i>  |  |   |  |
| Reflexive Substitute of Third Person. |   |  |   |  |
| G.                                    | de sí, <i>of himself, of herself, of itself.</i>        |  | de sí, <i>of themselves, of each other.</i>     |  |
| D.                                    | se — á sí, <i>to himself, to herself, to itself.</i>    |  | se — á sí, <i>to themselves, to each other.</i> |  |
| A.                                    | se — á sí, <i>himself, herself, itself, one's self.</i> |  | se — á sí, <i>themselves, each other.</i>       |  |
| P.                                    | sí, <i>himself, herself, it-self.</i>                   |  | sí, <i>themselves, each other.</i>              |  |

## REMARKS ON THE CASES.

## Nominative.

187. The subject nominative of the personal pronoun is usually suppressed, unless required on account of emphasis, contrast, ambiguity, or distinctness : —

voy á casa,  
 volverá pronto,  
 ¿qué escribes? están locos,  
 ¿qué he de hacer yo?  
 él se va, ella se queda,  
 no sabe lo que yo quisiera,

I am going home.  
 he will return soon. [crazy.  
 what are you writing? they are  
 what am I to do?  
 he goes, she stays.  
 he does not know what I want.

a. Sometimes its use is merely rhetorical : —

yo soy la luz verdadera,  
 yo he dicho en mis discursos,

I am the true light.  
 I have said in my speeches.

188. The subject of an impersonal verb is not expressed :—

|                       |                                 |
|-----------------------|---------------------------------|
| conviene ; me parece, | it is fitting ; it seems to me. |
| basta ; se sigue,     | it is enough ; it follows.      |
| llueve ; hay,         | it rains ; there is, there are. |

a. But when it points with emphasis to an idea or to a following *que*, the subject *ello* is employed :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| ¿qué es ello?  | what is it?  |
| ello es que hay animales muy científicos ( <i>Iriarte</i> ), | the fact is that there are some very scientific animals. |

REMARK. — In *es que*, the fact is that, there is an ellipse. The full form *es el caso que*, or *el caso es que*, is often met with.

189. When, in English, the pronoun-subject has a substantive in apposition with it that limits or defines it, in Spanish the substantive, accompanied by the definite article, replaces the pronoun as the subject of the verb, and the latter is put in the person and number appropriate to the suppressed pronoun :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| los Españoles estamos muy atrasados,  | we Spaniards are very backward.  |
| tenemos el gusto los liberales de ver el cambio,                                  | we liberals have the satisfaction of seeing the change.                                  |
| la mayor ofensa que los príncipes podeis hacer á Dios, es no osar nadie avisaros. | the greatest offence that ye princes can commit against God, is that none dare warn you. |
| ( <i>Guevara</i> , 1537.)   |  |

a. If the pronoun and apposition are both expressed, the latter must always retain the definite article :—

|                         |               |
|-------------------------|---------------|
| nosotros los Españoles, | we Spaniards. |
| vosotras las señoras,   | you ladies.   |



**190.** The position of the pronoun-subject is subversive to the general laws of taste ; but emphasis, enthusiasm, and often elegance, are exhibited by placing it after the verb, as in the interrogative state :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| no fue él en verdad el único intolerante de su siglo,            | indeed he was not the only intolerant man of his time.                               |
| hombre del cual pienso yo que no le hay superior en la historia, | a man who I think has no superior in history. ( <i>Cánovas del Castillo</i> , 1877.) |

#### Genitive.

**191.** The genitive has all the meanings of the preposition *de*, *of*, *from*, *by*, *with*, *at*, *to*, and often it is not translated at all :—

|                           |                                    |
|---------------------------|------------------------------------|
| habla de tí, de nosotros, | he speaks of thee, of us.          |
| se rie de mí, de ellos,   | he laughs at me, at them.          |
| esta casa es de ella,     | this house belongs to her (is of). |
| se olvida de sí, de ello, | he forgets (of) himself (of) it.   |

#### Dative.

**192.** The dative is not only translated by *to*, but also by *for*, *from* (with the idea of taking away), and very often it imparts to a following definite article the meaning of a possessive adjective :—

|                     |                                 |
|---------------------|---------------------------------|
| me habla, te da,    | he speaks to me, he gives thee. |
| nos procura,        | he gets for us.                 |
| le cortó el brazo,  | he cut his (another's) arm.     |
| se hirió la mano,   | he wounded his (own) hand.      |
| les quita el sueño, | he takes away their sleep.      |

*a.* In English, the signs of the dative (*to*, *for*, *from*) are often suppressed :—

|                       |                                |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------|
| me da, le dice,       | he gives me, he tells him.     |
| nos procura destinos, | he gets us places (positions). |

**193.** In Spanish, the dative, with another pronoun-object, is very frequently superfluous, and may be considered as an expletive:—

|                                     |                             |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| llévatelo ( <i>of a purchase</i> ), | take it (for thyself).      |
| se lo comió,                        | he ate it up (for himself). |
| quítatemelo ( <i>of removal</i> ),  | take it away from me.       |
| échatemela (la pluma),              | toss it to me (the pen).    |

**194.** Since the datives **le** and **les** are common to both genders, some writers improperly employ the accusatives **la** and **las** for these feminines:—

|                      |                              |
|----------------------|------------------------------|
| le digo, la digo,    | I say to him, I tell her.    |
| les presto el libro, | I lend them (men) the book.  |
| las presto la pluma, | I lend them (women) the pen. |

#### Accusative.

**195.** The accusative case is governed directly by the verb:—

|                                  |                                  |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| me ve, te llama,                 | he sees me, he calls thee.       |
| nos aman, os engañan,            | they love us, they deceive you.  |
| le conoce, la sigue,             | he knows him, he follows her.    |
| los odia, las recibe,            | he hates them, he receives them. |
| el libro — le <i>or</i> lo tomo, | the book — I take it (him).      |
| la pluma — la veo,               | the pen — I see it (her).        |
| los libros — los tomo,           | the books — I take them.         |
| las plumas — las veo,            | the pens — I see them.           |

REMARK. — Many modern writers use *lo* of persons as well as of things, but the student should follow the dominant practice which makes *le* refer to persons and masculine words, while *lo* is limited to things to which gender cannot be assigned.

**196.** The use of **les** for **los** is frequently met with, but is discouraged by the Academy. In the pleonastic construction with **ustedes**, however, it is admissible:—

les busqué á ustedes,  
los conocí en seguida,  
les mandó que no saliesen,

I looked for you, I sought you.  
I knew them at once.  
he ordered them not to go out.

REMARK. — In the ancient language, from which the last example is taken, many verbs seem to have governed the dative which are now usually found with the accusative.

197. The pronouns **le** or **lo**, **la**, **los**, **las**, have an indefinite signification of *one, some, any, such*, negative *none*, when they stand in the predicate with the impersonal verb **hay**, *there is, there are*, and relate to a substantive taken in an indeterminate sense:—

cree que no hay dia de juicio, y  
**le** (*or lo*) hay,  
trae una silla si **la** hay por ahí,

he believes that there is no judgment day, and there is one.  
bring a chair if there is one thereabouts. [any.

compraré billetes si **los** hay,  
si hubiese alguna sociedad patri-  
ótica como **las** hay políticas,

I shall buy tickets if there are  
if there were some patriotic society as there are political ones.

198. The same pronouns signify *some, one, ones*, when they are used with personal verbs relating to a substantive taken in a partitive sense:—

¿tiene V. pan? **le or lo** tengo,  
¿quién quiere agua? **la** quiero yo,  
¡felices pascuas tenga usted!—  
**las** tenga usted muy felices,  
¿tiene V. ganas de comer? **las**  
tengo y urgentes,

have you bread? I have (some).  
who wants water? I want some.  
a merry Christmas to you!—may  
you have very merry ones.  
have you an appetite? I have,  
and a pressing one.

199. **Lo**, accusative of **ello**, represents a phrase, an idea, to which gender cannot be assigned:—

¿cree usted lo que dice?  
no lo creo,  
¿conviene hacerlo ó no?

do you believe what he says?  
I do not believe it.  
is it worth while to do it or not?

**200.** **Lo** is equivalent to *one, such*, when it stands in the predicate with the verb *to be*, referring to a foregoing substantive : —

|                                   |                                   |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| ¿es ella huérfana? lo es,         | is she an orphan? she is (one).   |
| ¿son ellas huérfanas? lo son,     | are they orphans? they are.       |
| ¿es usted caballero? lo soy,      | are you a gentleman? I am.        |
| sea cristiano ó no lo sea,        | whether he be a Christian or not. |
| afirmaba el autor que lo era tam- | the author affirmed that he was   |
| bien de un Viaje,                 | one of some Travels too.          |
| ví que decía “carta”; éralo en    | I saw that it said “ Epistle”; in |
| efecto,                           | fact it was one.                  |

**201.** When **lo** stands in the predicate of the verb *to be*, and relates to an adjective, it is equivalent to *so* : —

|                                      |                                    |
|--------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| si él está contento, yo no lo estoy, | if he is satisfied, I am not (so). |
| ¿será ocioso emprenderlo?            | will it be vain to undertake it?   |
| sí que lo será,                      | yes, it will be.                   |
| los ladrones son muy honrados,       | robbers are very honest people,    |
| pero tambien lo son los ver-         | but so are hangmen likewise.       |
| dugos,                               |                                    |

**REMARK.** — The idiomatic formulae, Is it I? is it thou? it is I, it is thou, etc., are expressed in Spanish by the simple verb *to be* (I am, thou art; am I? art thou? etc.) : —

|                               |                            |
|-------------------------------|----------------------------|
| ¿quién es? yo soy,            | who is it? it is I.        |
| ¿son ustedes? nosotros somos, | is it you? it is we.       |
| ¿soy yo, Señor? tú eres,      | Lord, is it I? it is thou. |

### Prepositional.

**202.** The prepositional case is that form of the pronoun before which all prepositions must stand. It is the same as the nominative in form, save in **mí, tí,** and **si** : —

|                          |                        |
|--------------------------|------------------------|
| sin mí, para tí,         | without me, for thee.  |
| con él, por usted,       | with him, by you.      |
| á nosotros, de vosotros, | to us, of or from you. |

**203.** By exception, the preposition **con**, *with*, unites as one word to the forms **-migo, -tigo, -sigo** — the “*go*” being a forgotten remnant of the Latin *cum* in *mecum*, *tecum*, *secum* : —

|                         |                               |
|-------------------------|-------------------------------|
| conmigo, contigo,       | with me, with thee.           |
| consigo,                | with himself, herself, etc.   |
|                         | but                           |
| con él, con ella,       | with him (it), with her (it). |
| con ello, con nosotros, | with it, with us.             |

**204.** The adverb **allí**, *there, in it*, is often used instead of a pronoun in the prepositional case : —

|                                   |                                     |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| ¿está en la cajita? allí está,    | is it in the box? it is in it. [it. |
| la pintura — clava allí los ojos, | the painting — fix your eyes on     |

#### Position of the Object.

**205.** The conjunctive forms of the dative and accusative cases regularly stand before the finite verb ; but to infinitives, gerunds, and imperatives conjugated affirmatively, they are appended as one word : —

|                   |                               |
|-------------------|-------------------------------|
| me oye, oirme,    | he hears me, to hear me.      |
| oyéndome, óyeme   | hearing me, hear (thou) me.   |
| te digo, decirte, | I tell thee, to tell thee.    |
| diciéndote, díme, | telling thee, tell (thou) me. |
| no le escuches,   | do not listen to him.         |
| no me digas eso,  | do not tell me that.          |

**206.** Objective pronouns may, however, be appended to the finite verb when it begins a sentence, unless negative : —

|                                |                                 |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| réstanos decir (no nos resta), | it remains for us to say.       |
| nególes el cielo este gozo,    | heaven denied them this boon.   |
| séale la tierra leve,          | light be the dust above him !   |
| pláceme, dijo el cura,         | it pleases me, said the curate. |

**207.** If an infinitive depend on a verb or on another infinitive, the pronoun may stand before the verb or be attached to either infinitive :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| no quiso decirme, <i>or</i> no me<br>quiso decir, [buscar,   | he did not care to tell me.   |
| voy á buscarlos, <i>or</i> los voy á<br>sin volver á preguntarles, <i>or</i> sin<br>volverles á preguntar, | I am going to look for them.<br>without asking them again (re-<br>turning to ask them). |

*a.* If the verb or infinitive do not admit an object, the pronoun attaches to the word that governs it according to the primary rule :—

|                          |                               |
|--------------------------|-------------------------------|
| los vió venir,           | he saw them come.             |
| vino á verme,            | he came to see me.            |
| al oírnos discurrir así, | on hearing us discourse thus. |

**208.** When the gerund is in the progressive form of the verb with **estar**, *to be* ; **ir**, *to go* ; **venir**, *to come* ; **andar**, *to go*, the object-pronoun may attach to it, or stand before the verb ; but the latter disposition is preferable :—

|                                   |                                   |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| lo estamos viendo todos los días, | we are seeing it every day.       |
| los voy buscando,                 | I am looking for them.            |
| os vamos comprendiendo,           | we are getting to understand you. |
| nos iba siguiendo,                | he went on following us.          |

**209.** The first and second persons plural of the imperative mode lose the *s* and the *d* of the respective endings when the reflexives **nos** and **os** are attached to them :—

|                                   |                          |
|-----------------------------------|--------------------------|
| amémonos ( <i>for</i> amémosnos), | let us love one another. |
| vámonos ( <i>for</i> vayámosnos), | let us go.               |
| amáos ( <i>for</i> amados),       | love (ye) one another.   |
| detenéos ( <i>for</i> detenedos), | stop (yourselves).       |
| rendíos ( <i>for</i> rendidos),   | surrender (yourselves).  |

**REMARK.** — The above constitute the natural and regular laws for the position of the conjunctive pronouns. There are some deviations in practice from them which the student is advised not to imitate, since their application would be more or less quaint and inelegant, or dependent on a wide experience of the language at all epochs.

**Disjunctive Form.**

**210.** The disjunctive or prepositional form of the dative and accusative cases is used when the verb, from its intransitive nature or signification, does not (in Spanish) admit an object without a preposition:—

acudió á mí, á tí, á vos,  
viene á nosotros y nos dice,  
nos acercamos á vosotros,  
se dirigió á ellos, á ellas,

he applied to me, to thee, to you.  
he comes to us and says (to us).  
we draw near to you.  
he addressed (himself to) them.

**211.** It is likewise used with all kinds of verbs in emphatic, intensive, and antithetic utterances, in exclamations, and in answer to a question without the verb:—

¡a tí llamo, Señor!  
los lazos que á mí le unen,  
¿á él buscas ahora?  
nadie osa avisar á vosotros y re-  
prender á vuestros cortesanos,  
la candela alumbra á los otros y  
quema á sí misma,  
el príncipe nos puede avisar y  
nosotros á él,  
¿á quién busca fulano?  
á V., á mí, á ellos,  
¡á él eso!

Lord, to Thee I call!  
the bonds that unite him to me.  
are you looking for *him* now?  
no one ventures to warn *you* and  
rebuke your *courtiers*.  
the lamp gives light to others  
and consumes itself.  
the prince may warn us and we  
him.  
whom is such a one looking for?  
for you, for me, for them.  
(do you say) that *to him*!

**212.** When there are two verbs, the one of which is intransitive and the other transitive, directly or indirectly, each may have its appropriate regimen:—

llego á ellos y les digo,

I come up to them and say (to them).

**213.** Some verbs require the disjunctive with one signification and the conjunctive with another:—

|                      |                             |
|----------------------|-----------------------------|
| no vuelvas más á él, | do not return to him again. |
| me vuelve la cara,   | he turns his face to me.    |
| cedo á ella,         | I give way to her.          |
| le cedo el paso,     | I allow her to pass.        |

**Pleonastic Construction.**

**214.** The conjunctive and disjunctive pronouns may be associated to the same verb, not merely to give emphasis, but also to amplify the phrase. Either pronoun may come first, but greater intensity is often secured when precedence is given to the disjunctive:—

|                              |   |
|------------------------------|---|
| á tí te conviene eso,        | that is for your interest.                |
| á él le aprecian mucho,      | they regard him highly.                   |
| ¿á mí qué me importa?        | what do I care?                           |
| quiso engañarnos á nosotros, | he wanted to deceive us.                  |
| ¿á vosotros os gusta eso?    | do you like that? (does that please you?) |

**215.** Any substantive or appositive may replace the disjunctive pronoun, preserving the redundant construction with the conjunctive:—

|                                    |                                  |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| le aseguro al ministro, [bajar,    | I assure the minister. [work.    |
| á los Indios les obligaron á tra-  | they compelled the Indians to    |
| á los caballeros les pareció bien, | it seemed good to the gentlemen. |
| al hombre no le es permitido       | man is not allowed to act with   |
| obrar con libertad, [ficio,        | freedom.                         |
| á todos nos reportará un bene-     | it will bring us all a benefit.  |
| á los Españoles nos gusta char-    | we Spaniards like to gossip (it  |
| lar ( <i>or</i> hablar),           | pleases us S. to gossip).        |

**216.** A similar redundant construction obtains with the conjunctive pronoun and a substantive in the accusative:—



eso no lo hago,  
 es amigo de apuntarlo todo,  
 todo me lo enviaba mi dama,  
 casa no la tenían,  
 cosa que no le fué posible el cum-  
 plirla,  
 hombres como Cárlos quinto  
 nadie los volverá ya más á ver,

I'll not do that. [thing.  
 he is fond of jotting down every-  
 my lady sent me everything.  
 house they had none.  
 a thing that it was not possible  
 for him to fulfil.  
 no one will ever again see men  
 like Charles the Fifth.

#### Inflection of Usted.

**217.** *Usted* is inflected like any personal substantive; as, *hombre, mujer*. To avoid its unpleasant repetition, it has for pronominal substitutes the datives and accusatives of *él* and *ella*, together with the common reflexive and reciprocal substitute of the third person :—

|           | Singular.                          | Plural.                                |
|-----------|------------------------------------|--|
| <b>N.</b> | usted, <i>you.</i>                 | ustedes, <i>you.</i>                   |
| <b>G.</b> | de usted, <i>of you.</i>           | de ustedes, <i>of you.</i>             |
| <b>D.</b> | á usted, <i>subs. le, to you.</i>  | á ustedes, les, <i>to you.</i>         |
| <b>A.</b> | á usted, <i>subs. le, la, you.</i> | á ustedes, los, las (les), <i>you.</i> |
| <b>P.</b> | usted, <i>you.</i>                 | ustedes, <i>you.</i>                   |
| <b>G.</b> | de sí, <i>of yourself.</i>         | de sí, <i>of yourselves.</i>           |
| <b>D.</b> | se — á sí, <i>to yourself.</i>     | se — á sí, <i>to yourselves.</i>       |
| <b>A.</b> | se — á sí, <i>yourself.</i>        | se — á sí, <i>yourselves.</i>          |
| <b>P.</b> | sí, <i>yourself.</i>               | sí, <i>yourselves.</i>                 |

**218.** To avoid the disagreeable repetition of a formal address, *usted* as subject may be given once, and left understood afterward :—

usted no sabe lo que quiere, | you do not know what you want.

**219.** As object, *usted* may be represented by its pronominal substitutes :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| devuelvo á V. el libro y le pido<br>otro, | I return you the book and ask<br>you for another. [you. |
| vengo á ver á VV. y á decirles,           | I come to see you and to say to                         |
| oigo á V., mas no le veo,                 | I hear you, but I do not see you.                       |
| busqué á VV., mas no les en-<br>contré,   | I looked for you, but I did not<br>find you.            |

**220.** In short sentences, *usted*, as subject, may be suppressed; and, as object, may be replaced by one of its substitutes, provided no ambiguity would arise:—

|                               |                                 |
|-------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| me hace un gran favor,        | you do me a great favor.        |
| es cuanto le tengo que decir, | that is all I have to tell you. |
| les digo y lo repito,         | I tell you and I repeat it.     |

**221.** The oblique cases of *usted* may replace the possessive adjective:—

|                               |   |
|-------------------------------|---|
| á los piés de V., señora,     | at your feet, lady ( <i>at presenta-<br/>tion or exit</i> ). [salutation. |
| beso á V. la mano, caballero, | I kiss your hand, sir ( <i>formal</i>                                     |

**222.** *Usted*, as subject, may stand before or after the verb to which it is nominative. In the compound tenses it can never separate the auxiliary and participle, but takes its place before or after both:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| usted no sabe, <i>or</i> no sabe V.,                       | you do not know.   |
| lo hallarán ustedes,                                       | you will find it.  |
| espero que nos hará V. el favor<br>de quedar con nosotros, | I hope you will do us the favor<br>of remaining with us. |
| ¿ha recibido V. el libro?                                  | have you received the book?                              |

*a.* The substitutes of *usted* follow the general law of position laid down for conjunctive pronouns:—

|                               |                                      |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| le digo, les digo,            | I tell you ( <i>sing. and pl.</i> ). |
| diciéndole, diciéndoles,      | telling you.                         |
| decirle, buscarles,           | to tell you, to look for you.        |
| retírese V., no se retire V., | retire, do not retire.               |

**223.** *Usted* and its substitutes form the pleonastic construction when joined to the same verb:—

|                                     |                              |
|-------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| le diré á V.,                       | I shall tell you.            |
| le busco á V.,                      | I look for you.              |
| ¿qué le pasa á V. ( <i>sing.</i> )? | what is the matter with you? |
| ¿qué les pasa á VV. ( <i>pl.</i> )? | what is the matter with you? |

**224.** All adjectives, past participles, and variable words agree in gender and number with *usted* when they qualify or relate to it:—

|                               |   |
|-------------------------------|---|
| es usted huérfana,            | you are an orphan.                        |
| está V. engañado, señor,      | you are deceived, sir.                    |
| está V. engañada, señora,     | you are deceived, madam.                  |
| VV. mismos son los traidores, | you yourselves are the traitors.          |
| VV. mismas son las traidoras, | you yourselves are the traitor-<br>esses. |

#### The Reflexive Pronoun.

**225.** The pronouns of the first and second persons have, in the oblique cases, a reflexive meaning when they refer to the same person as the subject:—

|                   |                             |
|-------------------|-----------------------------|
| me hallo ocupado, | (I find myself,) I am busy. |
| te engañas,       | thou deceivest thyself.     |
| nos preguntamos,  | we ask ourselves.           |
| os arrojáis,      | you cast yourselves.        |

**226.** Pronouns of the third person, including *usted*, refer, in the oblique cases, to a *different* person or thing from the subject. Hence, each gender employs the common substitute *se* to express reflexive or reciprocal action on the *subject*:—

|                  |                           |
|------------------|---------------------------|
| se olvida de él, | he forgets him (another). |
| se olvida de sí, | he forgets himself.       |

le engaña,  
se engaña,  
lo abre; se abre,  
los hieren,  
se hieren,  
V. la engaña; V. se engaña,  
VV. las engañan; VV. se engañan,  
se toman alimento para ellos,  
se toman alimento para sí,

he deceives him.  
he deceives himself.  
he opens it; it opens (itself).  
they strike them.  
they strike themselves. [yourself.  
you deceive her; you deceive  
you deceive them; you deceive  
yourselves.  
they take along food for them.  
they take along food for themselves.

**227.** When *se* represents a neuter or an impersonal subject, it may be translated by *one, they, we, you, people*, taken in an indeterminate sense, or the verb with *se* may be rendered by the passive voice:—

se dice (*it says itself*),  
se avisa,  
nada se saca con eso,  
aquí se come bien,  
se ha mandado,  
se ve, se conoce,

they say, it is said.  
they give notice, notice is given.  
you'll gain nothing by that.  
here you dine well.  
orders have been issued.  
it is clear, it is evident.

**228.** A reflexive verb, as a rule, replaces the passive voice, which may often be translated by the indefinite *they*:—

aquí se habla Español,  
se equivocan mucho,  
se encuentra gente,  
se compran libros viejos,  
se entregan las armas,

Spanish is spoken here.  
they are much mistaken.  
you find people.  
old books are bought.  
they give up their arms (the arms  
surrender themselves or are  
surrendered).

**229.** The reflexive *se* is very generally omitted in translation as superfluous in English:

se digna protegerme,  
 se marchan en seguida,  
 se va haciendo cajista,  
 se queda con él,  
 se vuelve loco de gozo,  
 se niega á complacerme,

he deigns to aid me.  
 they depart at once. [poser.  
 he is getting to be a (type) com-  
 he keeps it (remains with it).  
 he is overcome with joy.  
 he refuses to accommodate me.

**230.** *Se* stands in the dative to replace a possessive adjective with a determinative object :—

se pone la levita,  
 se quita el abrigo,  
 se ha cortado la mano.

he puts on his coat.  
 he takes off his overcoat.  
 he has cut his hand.

**231.** The dative of interest is frequently met with in Spanish, and sometimes has the force of an expletive :—

se propone,  
 se lo comió,  
 cójetela — la moneda,  
 lléveselo V. — el libro,  
 súbetelo — el baul,  
 échatemelo, [fermos,  
 á mí se me mueren ménos en-

he proposes (to himself).  
 he ate it up (for himself).  
 pick it up — the coin.  
 take it — the book.  
 carry it up stairs — the trunk.  
 toss it to me. [die to me).  
 I lose fewer cases (fewer cases

**232.** *Se* has very often an adverbial force, or it receives the action of a transitive verb, leaving it practically intransitive :—

se va, se vuelve,  
 se cae, se lleva,  
 se sale, se muere,  
 se rompe, se dobla,  
 se abre, se cierra,

he goes away, he turns around.  
 he falls down, he carries off.  
 it leaks, he is dying.  
 it breaks, it folds.  
 it opens, it shuts.

#### Two Objective Pronouns.

**233.** When a verb governs two conjunctive pronouns, the dative precedes the accusative, except only the reflexive *se*, which always stands first, whichever be its case :—

me lo da, me la da,  
te los busca, te las busca.  
nos lo presta,  
os los ofrezco,  
te lo llevas,  
se me olvida,

he gives it to me.  
he seeks them for thee.  
he lends it to us.  
I offer them to you.  
thou takest it for thyself.  
(it forgets itself to me) I forget.

**234.** When the conjunctive datives *le*, *to him*, *to her*, *to it*, *to you*, and *les*, *to them*, *to you*, meet a pronoun-object beginning with *l*, they assume the common form *se*. This word was anciently written *ge*, and is not to be confounded with the reflexive of the third person<sup>1</sup>:—

se le doy — el libro,  
se lo presto — á ella,  
se lo digo — á usted,  
se les envia — á ellos,  
se los presta — á ellas,  
se lo digo — á ustedes,

I give it (the book) to him.  
I lend it to her.  
I say it to you (*sing.*). [them.  
he sends them (persons) to  
he lends them (books) to them.  
I say it to you (*plur.*).

*a.* The mutations of *le*, *les* into *se* appear, then, as follows:—

|        |     |         |        |         |          |         |
|--------|-----|---------|--------|---------|----------|---------|
| le le  | and | les le  | become | se le;  | ancient, | ge le.  |
| le la  |     | les la  |        | se la;  |          | ge la.  |
| le lo  |     | les lo  |        | se lo;  |          | ge lo.  |
| le les |     | les les |        | se les; |          | ge les. |
| le los |     | les los |        | se los; |          | ge los. |
| le las |     | les las |        | se las; |          | ge las. |

<sup>1</sup> *Se*, substitute for *le*, *les*, and *se*, reflexive, came to be identical in form by the early vitiated pronunciation of the primitive *ge*. The Latin *illi*, *illis*, first produced the Spanish datives *li* and *lis*, later *le*, *les*, which, before a pronoun-object in *l*, passed over into *ge*, like *muger* from *mulier*, and *ageno* from *alienus*. But *ge* and the reflexive *se* were anciently pronounced almost alike, — *shé* (Alsatian-French, *jé*), — and hence the graphic confusion of them near the close of the fifteenth century. Each should, therefore, be kept functionally distinct, although they are constantly interchanging with apparent identity:—

se lo procura (se = le),  
se lo procura (se = se),  
se los compran (se = les),  
se los compran (se = se),

he gets it for him.  
he gets it for himself.  
they buy them for them.  
they buy them for themselves.

**235.** The following table presents examples of two conjunctive pronouns, the first of which is in the dative case, and the second in the accusative. When these pronouns are *attached* to the verbal form, as represented in the second column, the verbal form must be accented; thus, **dígotelo**, *I tell thee so* : —

| FIRST PERSON WITH THIRD.—ORDER, DAT. AND ACC.               |   |   |   |
|---|---|---|---|
| Before the Verb.  | Attached to the Verb.                                       |   | Reflexive.                                |
| me le,<br>me la,<br>me lo,<br>me los (les),<br>me las,      | -mele,<br>-mela,<br>-melo,<br>-melos (les),<br>-melas,      | him,<br>her, it,<br>it,<br>them ( <i>m.</i> ),<br>them ( <i>f.</i> ), | him,<br>her, it,<br>it,<br>them,<br>them, |
|   |   | } to me.  | } to myself.                              |
| nos le,<br>nos la,<br>nos lo,<br>nos los (les),<br>nos las, | -nosle,<br>-nosla,<br>-noslo,<br>-noslos (les),<br>-noslas, | him,<br>her, it,<br>it,<br>them,<br>them,                             | him,<br>her, it,<br>it,<br>them,<br>them, |
|   |   | } to us.  | } to ourselves.                           |
| SECOND PERSON WITH THIRD.—ORDER, DAT. AND ACC.              |   |   |   |
| te le,<br>te la,<br>te lo,<br>te los (les),<br>te las,      | -tele,<br>-tela,<br>-telo,<br>-telos (les),<br>-telas,      | him,<br>her, it,<br>it,<br>them,<br>them,                             | him,<br>her, it,<br>it,<br>them,<br>them, |
|   |   | } to thee.  | } to thyself.                             |
| os le,<br>os la,<br>os lo,<br>os los (les),<br>os las,      | -osle,<br>-osla,<br>-oslo,<br>-oslos (les),<br>-oslas,      | him,<br>her, it,<br>it,<br>them,<br>them,                             | him,<br>her, it,<br>it,<br>them,<br>them, |
|   |   | } to you.   | } to yourself.<br>to yourselves.          |

| THIRD PERSON WITH THIRD.—ORDER, DAT. AND ACC.          |  |   |  |
|--|--|---|--|
| Before the Verb.                                       | Attached to the Verb.                                  |   | Reflexive.   |
| se le,<br>se la,<br>se lo,<br>se los (les),<br>se las, | -sele,<br>-sela,<br>-selo,<br>-selos (les),<br>-selas, | him,<br>her, it,<br>it,<br>them ( <i>m.</i> ),<br>them ( <i>f.</i> ), | to him.<br>to her.<br>to you.                            |
|  |  |   | him,<br>her, it,<br>it,<br>them,<br>them,                |
|  |  |   | to himself.<br>to herself.<br>to itself.<br>to yourself. |
| se le,<br>se la,<br>se lo,<br>se los (les),<br>se las, | -sele,<br>-sela,<br>-selo,<br>-selos (les),<br>-selas, | him,<br>her, it,<br>it,<br>them,<br>them,                             | to them.<br>to you.                                      |
|  |  |   | him,<br>her, it,<br>it,<br>them,<br>them,                |
|  |  |   | to themselves.<br>to yourselves.                         |

236. In the following table the first pronoun is the reflexive in the accusative case, and the second a conjunctive in the dative :—

| REFLEXIVE WITH ALL PERSONS.—ORDER, ACC. AND DAT. |   |  |  |
|--|---|--|--|
| se me,<br>se te,<br>se le,<br>se (le) á V.       | -seme,<br>-sete,<br>-sele,<br>-se(le) á V.      | himself,<br>herself,<br>itself,<br>themselves, | to me,<br>to thee,<br>to him, her, it.<br>to you (your grace). |
| se nos,<br>se os,<br>se les,<br>se (les) á VV.,  | -senos,<br>-seos,<br>-seles,<br>-se(les) á VV., | himself,<br>herself,<br>itself,<br>themselves, | to us.<br>to you.<br>to them.<br>to you (your graces).         |

237. The position of two objective pronouns, with respect of the governing verb, follows the same laws as that of the simple objective :—



|                          |   |
|--------------------------|---|
| me lo da,                | he gives it to me.                      |
| dámelo,                  | give it to me ( <i>imperative</i> ).    |
| no me lo dés,            | do not give it to me.                   |
| dárselo,                 | to give it to him ( <i>or</i> to them). |
| dándoselo,               | giving it to him ( <i>or</i> to them).  |
| quieren quitármelo, }    | they wish to take it from me.           |
| me lo quieren quitar, }  |   |
| entréguenseme las armas, | let the arms be delivered to me.        |
| habiéndotelo dicho,      | having told thee so.                    |
| se me figura,            | I imagine.                              |
| figúratelo,              | imagine <i>or</i> fancy it.             |
| no te lo figures,        | do not imagine it.                      |

**238.** The pleonastic construction is the same for two objectives as for one : —

|                                   |  |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| se lo doy á usted, á ustedes,     | I give it to you ( <i>sing. and plur.</i> ). |
| á ese caballero se lo he dicho,   | I have told it to that gentleman.            |
| á mí me lo han asegurado,         | they assured me so. [me.                     |
| nos hizo Dios merced á tí y á mí, | God was gracious to you and to               |

#### Mismo, Propio.

**239.** Every pronoun-subject may be intensified by adding to it, in the proper gender and number, the adjective **mismo**, *a, self*; **mismos**, *as, selves* : —

|                                  |                                   |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| yo mismo, yo misma,              | I myself ( <i>man or woman</i> ). |
| tú mismo, tú misma,              | thou thyself.                     |
| él mismo, ella misma, [mas,      | he himself, she herself.          |
| nosotros mismos, nosotras mis-   | we ourselves.                     |
| usted mismo, usted misma,        | you yourself.                     |
| ustedes mismos <i>or</i> mismas, | you yourselves.                   |

REMARK. — Note the effect of the graphic accent on the signification of *tu* and *el* :

|                                 |  |
|---------------------------------|--|
| él mismo, <i>he himself</i> .   | el mismo, <i>the same</i> .            |
| tú mismo, <i>thou thyself</i> . | tu mismo padre, <i>thy very father</i> |

**240.** In the oblique cases of the personal pronoun, *mismo* or *propio* may be used, but only with the disjunctive or prepositional forms :—

|                                   |                                   |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| me retráigo de mí mismo,          | I withdraw from myself.           |
| te engañas á tí propio,           | thou deceivest thyself.           |
| se condena á sí misma,            | she condemns herself.             |
| os quereis á vosotros mismos,     | you are fond of yourselves.       |
| VV. se vuelven contra sí propios, | you turn against your own selves. |

*a. Mismo* may be added to nouns with the reflexive meanings of the third person :—

|                      |                        |
|----------------------|------------------------|
| el hombre mismo,     | the man himself.       |
| la mujer misma,      | the woman herself.     |
| el libro mismo,      | the book itself.       |
| los derechos mismos, | the rights themselves. |
| las casas mismas,    | the houses themselves. |

REMARK. — The English word *self*, joined to nouns or adjectives without a pronoun, may be generally rendered by *propio*, *a*, by a circumlocution, or by a single word :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| el amor propio, <i>self-love</i> .          | el gobierno popular, <i>self-government</i> .                           |
| la abnegacion propia, <i>self-denial</i> .  | orgulloso, <i>self-conscious</i> .                                      |
| el orgullo, <i>self-consciousness</i> .     | egoísta, <i>selfish</i> . [ <i>press</i> .                              |
| el egoísmo, <i>selfishness</i> .            | pressa automática, <i>self-acting</i>                                   |
| automático, <i>a</i> , <i>self-acting</i> . | una máquina que se alimenta á sí misma, <i>a self-feeding machine</i> . |

**241.** After adverbs of time and place, *mismo* is invariable and signifies *this* or *that very*, or its force may be rendered by the tone of voice :—

|                          |                                   |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| mañana mismo, hoy mismo, | to-morrow, this very day.         |
| ahora mismo, ayer mismo, | this very moment, only yesterday. |
| aquí (allí) mismo,       | in this (that) very place.        |

**242.** *Mismo*, with the definite article, has the significations of *self*, *very*, *even*:—

el mismo cielo, *the sky itself, the very sky, even the sky.*

las mismas mujeres, *the women themselves, the very women, even the women.*

*a.* *Even*, in this sense, may also be expressed by **hasta**, with or without *mismo*:—

hasta las mujeres, *or hasta las mismas mujeres, even the women, or even the very women.*

*b.* **Mismo**, *a*, as a common adjective, with an article, signifies *the same*:—

|                    |                 |
|--------------------|-----------------|
| el mismo día,      | the same day.   |
| la misma noche,    | the same night. |
| los mismos libros, | the same books. |

### **Possessive Adjectives and Pronouns.**

**243.** Possessive adjectives and pronouns are varied and inflected like any adjective in **o**. Unlike the English usage, they agree in gender and number with the object possessed, and not with the person or thing possessing.

#### **POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.**

**244.** Possessive adjectives are conveniently classed as *conjunctive* and *absolute*, according as they stand *before* the noun or *after* it. The conjunctives lose their final syllable, and consequently their gender distinction, except in the first and second persons plural, in which both forms are identical. They are varied as follows:—

| SINGULAR.                           |                                   |                                   | PLURAL.                                  |                                      |                                      |  |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|--|--------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|--|
| Conjunctive.                        | Absolute.                         |                                   | Conjunctive.                             | Absolute.                            |                                      |  |
| Common.                             | Masc.                             | Fem.                              | Common.                                  | Masc.                                | Fem.                                 |  |
| mi,<br>tu,<br><br>su,               | mio,<br>tuyo,<br><br>suyo,        | mia,<br>tuya,<br><br>suya,        | mis,<br>tus,<br><br>sus,                 | mios,<br>tuyos,<br><br>suyos,        | mias,<br>tuyas,<br><br>suyas,        |  |
| nuestro-a,<br>vuestro-a,<br><br>su, | nuestro,<br>vuestro,<br><br>suyo, | nuestra,<br>vuestra,<br><br>suya, | nuestros-as,<br>vuestros-as,<br><br>sus, | nuestros,<br>vuestros,<br><br>suyos, | nuestras,<br>vuestras,<br><br>suyas, | my.<br>thy.<br>his,<br>her,<br>its,<br>your.<br><br>our.<br>your.<br>their,<br>your. |

245. The conjunctive forms of the possessive adjective regularly stand *before* the nouns they qualify when no particular emphasis is intended :—

mi padre, mis padres,  
mi casa, mis casas,  
tu dinero, tus dias,  
su tio, sus tios (§ 106),  
su trabajo, sus trabajos,  
nuestro libro, nuestra pluma,  
nuestros libros, nuestras plumas,

my father, my parents.  
my house, my houses.  
thy money, thy days.<sup>1</sup>  
his uncle, his uncle and aunt.  
their labor, their trials.  
our book, our pen.  
our books, our pens.

246. Since **SU**, **SUS**, signify *one's*, *his*, *her*, *its*, *their*, *your*, and are therefore often equivocal, the genitive case of the appropriate personal pronoun which they

<sup>1</sup> *Tus dias* also means "thy saint's day," the anniversary of one's christening or baptism; birthday is not celebrated in Spain. So they say, *hoy es su santo*, or *el dia de su santo*, or simply *hoy son sus dias*, *to-day is his saint* or *saint's day* or *to-day are "his days"* = his birthday, in English.

represent may be added to the noun, or the definite article may replace *su, sus*, when the context would be indecisive, or when emphasis requires :—

|                              |  |
|------------------------------|--|
| su libro de él, de ella,     | his, her book (his book of him, of her).                                   |
| su libro de ellos, de ellas, | their book (their book of them, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i> ). [him, of them). |
| los libros de él, de ellos,  | his, their books (the books of   |

**247.** *Your* is also expressed by *su, sus*, when the address is carried on by *usted*; otherwise *vuestro, a*, which corresponds to *vos, vosotros, as*. Instead of *su, de usted (de V.)* alone may be used, or both *su* and *de V.*, constituting the favorite pleonastic construction :—

|                                |      |   |
|--------------------------------|------|---|
| su libro, el libro de V.,      | or } | your book ( <i>to one person</i> ).       |
| su libro de V.,                | }    |   |
| su libro, el libro de VV.,     | or } | your book ( <i>to several persons</i> ).  |
| su libro de VV.,               | }    |   |
| sus libros, los libros de V.,  | or } | your books ( <i>to one person</i> ).      |
| sus libros de V.,              | }    |   |
| sus libros, los libros de VV., | or } | your books ( <i>to several persons</i> ). |
| sus libros de VV.,             | }    |   |
| ¿tenéis vuestros libros?       |      | have you your books?                      |

REMARK. — The conjunctive possessive adjective may be strengthened by adding to it the word **propio, a, own** :—

|                             |                                  |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------------|
| mi propio padre,            | my own father.                   |
| mi propia casa,             | my own home (house).             |
| sus propios asuntos,        | his own affairs.                 |
| tu propia fé te ha salvado, | thine own faith hath saved thee. |

**248.** The absolute or uncontracted forms of the possessive adjective regularly stand after an impersonal noun, accompanied by the definite article, and are preferred when greater intensity is required, as in

spirited language, in contrast, and for rhetorical effect :—

|                           |  |
|---------------------------|--|
| la fé tuya, el deseo mio, | thy faith, my desire.                    |
| los achaques suyos,       | his (physical) infirmities. <sup>1</sup> |
| la edad nuestra,          | our age, <i>or</i> our times.            |

REMARK. — Except in the vocative case, the absolute forms are not used of persons in common prose with the *definite* article. See § 250.

249. The absolute possessive adjectives of the first person are regularly employed in direct address (the vocative case), but without the definite article :—

|                          |  |
|--------------------------|--|
| amigo mio, amigos mios,  | my friend, my friends.                     |
| padre nuestro, Dios mio, | Our Father, Heavens! (My God!)             |
| hijo mio, muy señor mio, | my son, my dear sir ( <i>in letters</i> ). |
| muy señores nuestros,    | gentlemen (our dear sirs). <sup>2</sup>    |

a. But if an ordinary adjective, or past participle used as an adjective, accompany the direct address, either the conjunctive or the absolute forms may be used :—

|                              |                                  |
|------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| mi querido hijo, <i>or</i> } | my dear son. <sup>3</sup>        |
| querido hijo mio, }          |                                  |
| mi inolvidable amigo,        | my never-to-be-forgotten friend. |
| mis buenos señores,          | my good sirs.                    |
| mi pobre muchacho, <i>or</i> | my unfortunate boy, <i>or</i>    |
| pobre muchacho mio,          | my poor fellow.                  |

250. The definite article, with all absolute forms, is suppressed in certain phrases :—

<sup>1</sup> *Moral* infirmities would be *debilidades*.

<sup>2</sup> Used by one *firm* writing to another *firm* or *razon social*. We would say simply "gentlemen."

<sup>3</sup> The *father* would usually write to his son : *mi querido hijo* ; the *mother*, *querido hijo mio*, which will serve as an example of the intensity of postposition.

|                        |                                 |
|------------------------|---------------------------------|
| de parte tuya,         | on thy part, from thee.         |
| á casa nuestra,        | to our house.                   |
| á fé mia, suya,        | on my <i>or</i> his word.       |
| á instancias vuestras, | at your instance.               |
| á costa suya,          | at his <i>or</i> their expense. |

**251.** The absolute forms of the possessive adjective regularly stand after a personal or impersonal noun taken in an *indeterminate* sense (with *a*, *an*, *some*, expressed or implied). The adjective then assumes the idiomatic pronominal signification of *mine*, of *thine*, of *his*, etc. :—

|                                 |                                      |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| un amigo mio, nuestro,          | a friend of mine, of ours.           |
| un pariente tuyo, vuestro,      | a relative of thine, of yours.       |
| unos conocidos de V., de VV.,   | some acquaintances of yours.         |
| unos criados suyos,             | some servants of his (of theirs).    |
| le daré á V. uno viejo mio,     | I shall give you an old one of mine. |
| hablé con él de un asunto tuyo, | I spoke to him of a matter of yours. |

REMARK.—We may also say, uno de mis amigos, *one of my friends*, etc. ; but there is more definiteness in this style of phrase than in the other.

*a.* The same rule obtains when the noun is in the predicate after the verb *to be*, or its equivalent :—

|                         |                                |
|-------------------------|--------------------------------|
| es discípulo mio, suyo, | he is a pupil of mine, of his. |
| son paisanos nuestros,  | they are from our province.    |

*b.* A substantive grouped with one or more possessive adjectives, and denoting possession, is put in the genitive :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| “es íntimo amigo mio, tuyo, y<br>de toda nuestra casa,” | he is an intimate friend of mine,<br>of yours, and of all our family. |
|---|---|

**252.** The conjunctive possessive adjectives have the same pronominal signification as the absolute ones do

with indeterminate expressions, when the former stand between a demonstrative and a noun : —

|                        |                                   |
|------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| este mi amigo,         | this friend of mine. <sup>1</sup> |
| esa tu casa,           | that house of thine.              |
| aquel su jardín,       | yon garden of his, of theirs.     |
| estos nuestros amigos, | these friends of ours.            |

**253.** Instead of the possessive adjective, the dative of the personal pronoun, or of *usted*, must be used with the verb, and the definite article with the noun, when reference is made to parts of the body or articles of dress : —

|                                    |                                     |
|------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| le tomó la mano (á ella),          | he took her hand (the h. to her).   |
| beso á usted la mano, <sup>2</sup> | I kiss your hand (the h. to you).   |
| me conmueve el alma,               | it stirs my heart (to me the h.).   |
| se hería el pecho,                 | he smote his (own) breast.          |
| me duele la cabeza,                | my head aches (the h. a. to me).    |
| te pisa el vestido,                | he steps on thy dress.              |
| se quita los zapatos,              | he takes off his (own) shoes.       |
| les pone la ropa,                  | he puts on their clothes (to them). |
| me he cortado el dedo,             | I have cut my finger.               |

*a.* If there can be no possible doubt as to the person referred to, the article will suffice without the dative : —

|                               |                                |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| recibió un golpe en el brazo, | he received a blow in his arm. |
| ella levantó los ojos,        | she raised her eyes. [lent.    |
| bajó la cabeza y callóse,     | he bowed his head and was si-  |

**254.** Possessive pronouns are regularly accompanied by the definite article, both agreeing in gender and number with the object possessed, and not with the person or thing possessing : —

<sup>1</sup> In Biblical language, *este tu hermano*, *this thy brother*; *aquellos tus acusadores*, *those thine accusers*; but not in modern common English.

<sup>2</sup> The lady says this to the gentleman (adding *caballero*, *sir*), on a formal presentation, or when she or he leaves the room; his term is: *á los piés de V., señora*, *at your feet, lady*, on presentation or leave-taking.



su padre de V. y el mio,  
 su casa y la tuya,  
 mis amigos y los vuestros,  
 nuestros hermanos y los de V.,  
 enjugaron nuestras lágrimas, las  
 de mi hija y mías,

your father and mine.  
 his house and thine.  
 my friends and yours.  
 our brothers and yours.  
 they wiped away my daughter's  
 tears and mine.

**255.** The possessive pronouns are varied as follows :—

| SINGULAR.  |  |  | PLURAL.   |   |  |
|--|--|--|---|---|--|
| Masc.  | Fem.   | Neut.  | Masc.   | Fem.  |  |
| el mio,<br>el tuyo,  | la mia,<br>la tuya,  | lo mio,<br>lo tuyo,  | los mios,<br>los tuyos,   | las mias,<br>las tuyas,   | mine.<br>thine.                        |
| el suyo,   | la suya,   | lo suyo,   | los suyos,  | las suyas,  | { his.<br>hers.<br>its.                |
| el de V. or<br>el suyo,  | la de V. or<br>la suya,  | lo de V. or<br>lo suyo,  | los de V. or<br>los suyos,  | las de V. or<br>las suyas,  | } yours.                               |
| el nuestro,<br>el vuestro,<br>el suyo,<br>el de VV. or<br>el suyo, | la nuestra,<br>la vuestra,<br>la suya,<br>la de VV. or<br>la suya, | lo nuestro,<br>lo vuestro,<br>lo suyo,<br>lo de VV. or<br>lo suyo, | los nuestros,<br>los vuestros,<br>los suyos,<br>los de VV. or<br>los suyos, | las nuestras,<br>las vuestras,<br>las suyas,<br>las de VV. or<br>las suyas, | ours.<br>yours.<br>theirs.<br>} yours. |

**256.** Each one of these forms is inflected like any adjective with the definite article :—

|                 | SINGULAR. |            |            | PLURAL.      |              |          |
|-----------------|-----------|------------|------------|--------------|--------------|----------|
|                 | Masc.     | Fem.       | Neut.      | Masc.        | Fem.         |          |
| <b>N. A. P.</b> | el mio,   | la mia,    | lo mio,    | los mios,    | las mias,    | mine.    |
| <b>G.</b>       | del mio,  | de la mia, | de lo mio, | de los mios, | de las mias, | of mine. |
| <b>D.</b>       | al mio,   | á la mia,  | á lo mio,  | á los mios,  | á las mias,  | to mine. |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| su libro es semejante al mio,                    | his book is similar to mine.           |
| tus costumbres son distintas de<br>las nuestras, | thy habits are different from<br>ours. |
| mi heredad linda con la de usted,                | my property joins yours.               |

**257.** The possessive pronoun loses the article when it stands in the predicate with the verb *to be*, and is used in a general sense:—

|                                      |                       |
|--------------------------------------|-----------------------|
| el triunfo es nuestro,               | the triumph is ours.  |
| esta casa es mia,                    | this house is mine.   |
| este libro es suyo, <i>or</i> de él, | this book is his.     |
| los premios son vuestros,            | the prizes are yours. |
| tuya es la culpa,                    | thine is the fault.   |

REMARK. — But if the possessive in the predicate has a specific meaning, the article is regularly employed:—

|                          |   |
|--------------------------|---|
| este sombrero es el mio, | { <i>this</i> hat is mine ( <i>i.e.</i> , the one<br>that belongs to me). |
| esta casa es la mia,     | <i>this</i> house is mine.  |

*a.* In the predicate *suyo* may be replaced by the genitive of the personal pronoun when ambiguity requires it:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| este libro es de él, de ella,              | this book is his, hers.                                |
| esta pluma es de usted,                    | this pen is yours.                                     |
| los árboles son de ellos,                  | the trees are theirs.                                  |
| estos papeles son mios y no de<br>ustedes, | these papers are mine and not<br>yours ( <i>pl.</i> ). |

**258.** The possessive may be employed substantively; *lo* is always so used:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| los mios,  | my people, my party (mine).   |
| los nuestros,                                    | our friends, our adherents (ours).  |
| lo mio y lo suyo,                                | what is mine and his.   |
| á lo suyo vino, y los suyos no le<br>recibieron, | { he came to his own (estate),<br>and his own (people) re-<br>ceived him not. |

## DEMONSTRATIVES.

**259.** The demonstratives are determinative adjectives with substantive and pronominal functions. They agree in gender and number with the noun they limit, except the neuter forms which are substantives by nature. They are inflected by the aid of the case prepositions, and varied as follows :—

| SINGULAR. |          |          |                   | PLURAL.   |           |                    |
|-----------|----------|----------|-------------------|-----------|-----------|--------------------|
| Masc.     | Fem.     | Neut.    |                   | Masc.     | Fem.      |                    |
| este,     | esta,    | esto,    | this<br>(by me).  | estos,    | estas,    | these<br>(by me).  |
| ese,      | esa,     | eso,     | that<br>(by you). | esos,     | esas,     | those<br>(by you). |
| aquel,    | aquella, | aquello, | that<br>(yonder). | aquellos, | aquellas, | those<br>(yonder). |
| el,       | la,      | lo,      | that<br>(of).     | los,      | las,      | those<br>(of).     |

**260.** To these may be added : *estotro, a, — estotros, as, this other, these other ; esotro, a, — esotros, as, that other, those other ; aquel otro, aquella otra, etc., that other, those other*. Likewise the archaic forms *aqueste, aquese, for este, ese, this, that*.

**261.** The demonstratives *este, ese, and aquel* naturally stand before the noun which they limit :—

|                            |                                |       |
|----------------------------|--------------------------------|-------|
| este niño, esta casa,      | this child, this house.        | [day. |
| ese precio, aquel día,     | that price (you mention), that |       |
| estos libros, esas calles, | these books, those streets.    |       |

**262.** In lively or intensive language, the demonstratives *este, ese, aquel*, may follow a noun accompanied by the definite article :—

|                                      |                              |
|--------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| el hombre este, la casa esta,        | this man (here), this house. |
| las mujeres esas, los días aquellos, | those women, those days.     |

263. In general, *este* signifies that which is near the speaker, where he is, or of which he is speaking; *ese*, that which is near the person addressed, where he is, or of which he is speaking; *aquel*, that which is remote from both : —

este libro, esta pluma,  
ese libro, esa pluma,  
aquel libro, aquella pluma,

this book, this pen (near me).  
that book, that pen (near you).  
that book, that pen (yonder).

este pais, esta ciudad,  
ese pais, esa ciudad,  
aquel pais, aquella ciudad,

this country, city (where I am).  
that country, city (where you  
are). [both].  
that country, city (distant from

REMARK. — Observe that *ese* means *that*, where our correspondent is, no matter how many thousand miles away; if we are in New York, and he in Valparaiso, we write to him of his town, and he to us of ours, as *esa ciudad*; while Montevideo and Quebec would be *aquella ciudad* to both. To each, respectively, the United States and Chili would be *ese pais*, *that country* (where you are); while Canada or Buenos Ayres would be *aquel pais* to both.

a. In correspondence, the words **ciudad**, *city*, and **plaza**, *market*, are usually suppressed with *esta* and *esa* after the preposition **en**, *in*; **en esta** is therefore rendered *here*, and **en esa**, *there* or *with you* : —

en esta no hay novedad,  
¿cómo van los negocios en esa?

there is nothing new here.  
how is business with you?

b. When speaking of the same place, city, etc., relative distances therein are expressed by *este*, *ese*, and *aquel* : —

esta calle, este barrio,  
esa calle, ese barrio,  
aquellas calles, aquellos barrios,

this street, this district (where  
we are). [which you speak].  
that street (where you live, or of  
those (remote) streets).

**264.** With reference to time historically considered, *este* denotes the present day, or the time of which we are speaking represented as present; *ese*, a period or circumstance occurring within our personal memory; *aquel*, any period or circumstance occurring previous to our day:—

|                   |                                |
|-------------------|--------------------------------|
| esta época,       | these days (this epoch).       |
| ese suceso,       | that event (which I remember). |
| aquellos sucesos, | those events (before my time). |

This law is seldom violated by correct writers.

*a.* Within the limit of personal experience, relative distances or events are expressed the same way:—

|                        |                                    |
|------------------------|------------------------------------|
| esta semana, este año, | this week, this year.              |
| ese suceso, ese año,   | that event, that year (spoken of). |
| aquel día, aquel año,  | that day, that year (long ago).    |

**265.** *Ese* has often the contemptuous sense of the Latin *iste*:—

|                                     |   |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| los pillos esos,                    | those rascals.                          |
| esos explotadores,                  | those (political) harpies.              |
| esas tias, <i>or</i> las tias esas, | those women (in contempt). <sup>1</sup> |

REMARK.—*Ese* is also found with many popular idioms associated with *de Dios*, *of God*, in the sense of “blessed”; as, *por esos trigos, campos, barrios “de Dios,” in those blessed fields, districts, etc.*, to indicate vaguely, wittily, or satirically indefinite location:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| “vengase un par de horas por esas calles de Dios, y verá cómo todos piensan de ese modo” ( <i>Escenas Matritenses</i> ), | come along for an hour or two and take a stroll about the streets, and you’ll see if everybody is of your way of thinking. |
|--|--|

<sup>1</sup> Literally, “aunts”; popularly used of the supposed grasping *nobility*, as well as of lewd women.

El Carnaval es una licencia para que toda persona decente pueda correr como un loco *por esas calles de Dios*, con un rabo más largo que el de Luzbel, y un pedazo de carton en la cara, haciendo el oso delante de todo el mundo.

Carnival is a general privilege permitted to any respectable person to run madly about *the blessed streets* with a tail longer than Lucifer's, and a piece of pasteboard attached to his face, playing his pranks before everybody.

266. The neuter forms *esto, eso, aquello*, mean *this thing, that thing*; thus: **esto**, *what I say*; **eso**, *what you say*; **aquello**, *that* (remote thing), in narration:—

esto es cuanto tengo que decir,  
eso no es nada,  
eso es ya otra cosa,  
eso es; eso sí,  
aquello fué una lástima,

this is all I have to say.  
that is nothing.  
that makes a difference.  
that's a fact; that indeed.  
that was a pity (to see).

267. The definite article is used as a demonstrative pronoun, assuming the gender and number of the noun it replaces:—

mi libro y el de mi hermano,  
estos libros y los de mi hermano,  
su casa y la de su padre,  
sus casas y las de su padre,  
los relojes de oro y los de plata,

my book and that of my brother.  
these books and my brother's.  
his house and that of his father.  
his houses and those of his father.  
the gold and silver watches.

REMARK.—The genitive after the demonstrative pronoun may often be embraced in the English possessive case: My book and my brother's, his house and his father's, etc.

a. *Lo, aquello*, and *la, las*, are used elliptically in certain phrases:—

lo de Castro,  
lo de ayer,  
aquello del filósofo griego,

the (affair) of Castro.  
the affair of yesterday. [losopher.  
that (thought) of the Greek phi-

á la de Dios es Cristo,<sup>1</sup>  
tomar las de Villadiego,

like a good fellow.  
to take French leave.

268. As substantives, *éste* refers to the last mentioned of two persons or things, and *aquél* to the first:—

*éste, this,*  
*ésta, this,*  
*éstos, these,*  
*éstas, these,* } the latter.

*aquél, that,*  
*aquella, that,*  
*aquéllos, those,*  
*aquellas, those,* } the former.

divididos estaban caballeros y  
escuderos, *éstos* contándose  
sus vidas, y *aquéllos* sus  
amores,

parted sat knights and esquires;  
the latter reviewing their lives,  
and the former their gallantries.

Observe that the order in Spanish is regularly the reverse of the English, although Mesonero Romanos writes:—

Sacrificando aquéllas, y ponien-  
do éstas sobre las niñas de  
mis ojos,

reluctantly parting with the for-  
mer, and warmly cherishing  
the latter.

---

<sup>1</sup> *A la or d lo de Dios es Cristo*, seems to derive from, *after the* (fashion) of [him whose] *God is Christ*, and to suggest a reference by the Moors and Jews to the dominant Christian Spaniard, by whom it was handed down in the lower signification of a "gay fellow,"—in Spanish, a *valenton*. In the *Lazarillo de Tormes* (1552) we find: *puesto á lo de Dios es Cristo, dressed up like a dandy*; and in the *Guzman de Alfarache*, *gente de lo de Dios es Cristo, boon companions*. Phrases like these and such as *tomar las de Villadiego, averigüelo Vargas*, etc., come from local circumstances soon forgotten, while the term remained. *Tomar las calças de Villadiego, to catch up Villadiego's small clothes*, redolent of some whilom scandal from which Villadiego escaped without stopping to arrange his toilet, is first given in the *Celestina* (1499-1500), then in Blasco de Garay (1545), in Perez del Castillo (1560), in Cipriano de Valera (1588), in Percivale's *Spanish-English Dictionary* (London, 1592), in that of Minsheu (1599), in Cervantes (1605), Covarrubias (1611), Quevedo (1627), and the Spanish Academy's *Dictionary* (1729), with the ellipse *calzas* supplied. After that date, the "breeches" disappear, and few Spaniards to-day understand the original reference. *Averigüelo Vargas* means, literally, *let Vargas ferret it out*, or, more generally, *find it out if you can*,—a variation of Horace's *credat Iudæus Apella*.

**269.** *Este, ese, and aquel* are also used as substantives, in the signification of *this, this one, he; that, that one, he*, preserving their gender variation as adjectives, and assuming the graphic accent :—

|                                 |                                |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| este no es mi libro.            | this is not my book.           |
| ¿es este el tuyo?               | is this one thine?             |
| aquel que está sobre el armario | that one which is on the ward- |
| es mío,                         | robe is mine.                  |
| entonces dijo éste,             | then said he.                  |
| ¿qué es lo que hace aquél?      | what is that (fellow) doing?   |

## RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

**270.** The relative pronouns are :—

quien, quienes, *who*; que (invariable), *who, which, that*.  
 el cual, la cual; los cuales, las cuales, } *who, which*.  
 el que, la que; los que, las que, }  
lo cual, *which* (thing); lo que, *that which, what*.  
 cuyo, cuya; cuyos, cuyas, *whose, of which, which*.

aquel que, or el que, *he who*, } *the one who, the one which*  
 aquella que, or la que, *she who*, } or *that*.  
 aquellos que, or los que, } *those who, or those which, the ones*  
 aquellas que, or las que, } *who or which*.  
 quien, *he who, the one who*; quienes, *those who, the ones who*.  
 aquello que, *that* (thing, saying or matter) *which*.

## Quien.

**271.** **Quien** is now properly used of *persons* only. Its nominative is *que*, when the antecedent is a *word* of either gender or number, and *quien, el cual*, or *que* when it connects a compound sentence of which each member makes complete sense by itself :—



el hombre **que**, la mujer **que**,  
 ayer topé con un amigo, **quien**  
 (el cual *or* **que**) me contó  
 todo lo sucedido,  
 el duelo nos vino de los pueblos  
 del Norte, **quienes** (los cua-  
 les) decidían sus pleitos por  
 las armas,

the man who, the woman who.  
 yesterday I fell in with a friend,  
 who gave me an account of all  
 that has happened.  
 duelling came to us from the  
 Northern peoples, who were  
 accustomed to decide their  
 differences by arms.

REMARK. — Although we cannot use *quien* when the antecedent is a mere term without independence, yet we may say, for example, *hombre es quien viene*, *it is a man who comes*; *mujeres son quienes salen*, *they are women who are going out*; when the antecedent is used indefinitely and stands in the predicate with the verb *to be*.

272. In the oblique cases, *quien* was formerly employed for both numbers, and applied to things as well as persons, echoing its Latin origin (*quem*); but at present such use must be regarded as archaic:—

¡siglos dichosos aquellos á **quien**  
 los antiguos pusieron nombre  
 de dorados!  
 los Siete Sabios á **quien** tanto  
 veneraba la Grecia.

happy ages those to which the  
 ancients applied the epithet  
 golden!  
 the Seven Wise Men whom  
 Greece so much venerated.

REMARK. — *Quien* may, however, be used with proper names of cities, and applied to corporations and other collective terms denoting persons; such as, *pueblos*, *naciones*, *Academia*, *consejo*, etc.

273. The accusative of *quien* is either **á quien** or **que** (not **á que**), *whom*.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Hence the sentence, *este es el hombre á que V. debe la vida*, is incorrect. See Monsanto and Languellier's *Spanish Grammar*, p. 133. We could say: *esta es la circunstancia á que V. debe la vida*; not *el hombre á que*.

**274.** The inflection of *quien* is as follows :—

|           | Singular.                               | Plural.                                   |            |
|-----------|---|---|------------|
| <b>N.</b> | que ( <i>quien</i> ),                   | que ( <i>quienes</i> ),                   | who.       |
| <b>G.</b> | de <i>quien</i> ,                       | de <i>quienes</i> ,                       | of whom.   |
| <b>D.</b> | á <i>quien</i> ,                        | á <i>quienes</i> ,                        | to whom.   |
| <b>A.</b> | á <i>quien</i> , <i>or</i> <i>que</i> , | á <i>quienes</i> , <i>or</i> <i>que</i> , | whom.      |
| <b>P.</b> | con <i>quien</i> , <sup>1</sup>         | con <i>quienes</i> , <sup>1</sup>         | with whom. |

el hombre **que** escribe,  
 las muchachas **que** cosen,  
 el amigo **de quien** hablamos,  
 las personas **á quienes** acudo,  
 el vecino **que** (*or á quien*) busco,  
 las señoras **que** (**á quienes**)  
 visito,  
 los oficiales **con quienes** comí,

the man who writes.  
 the girls who sew.  
 the friend of whom we speak.  
 the persons to whom I apply.  
 the neighbor whom I seek.  
 the ladies whom I visit.  
 the officers with whom I dined.

### Que.

**275.** **Que** relates to persons or things in the nominative or accusative cases only; in the other cases its use is limited to things. Being invariable in number and gender, its inflection is indicated by prepositions, as follows :—

|           | Singular. | Plural.  |                    |
|-----------|-----------|----------|--------------------|
| <b>N.</b> | que,      | que,     | who, which, that.  |
| <b>G.</b> | de que,   | de que,  | of which.          |
| <b>D.</b> | á que,    | á que,   | to which.          |
| <b>A.</b> | que,      | que,     | whom, which, that. |
| <b>P.</b> | con que,  | con que, | with which.        |

<sup>1</sup> Any preposition may, of course, supplant *con* in the prepositional case; as, **por** *quien*, *by whom*; **para** *quien*, *for whom*, etc.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| el libro <b>que</b> está encima de la mesa, | the book which (that) is on the table. [mark.    |
| las plumas <b>que</b> no hacen señal,       | the pens which do not make a                     |
| la huelga <b>de que</b> se habla,           | the strike of which they speak.                  |
| el gobierno <b>á que</b> estamos sujetos,   | the government to which we are subject. [myself. |
| los estudios <b>á que</b> me aplico,        | the branches to which I apply                    |
| las manzanas <b>que</b> V. me dió,          | the apples which you gave me.                    |
| la facilidad <b>con que</b> se hace,        | the ease with which it is done.                  |
| la casa <b>en que</b> vivo,                 | the house in which I live.                       |

REMARK. — In Spanish, the preposition must always stand before the word it governs. Hence the vulgar English constructions, *the strike they speak of, the government we are subject to, the house I live in*, must first be restored to the literary form before rendering into Spanish.

276. The accusative case of the relatives *quien* and *que* must never be omitted in Spanish:—

|                              |                              |
|------------------------------|------------------------------|
| la persona <b>que</b> ví,    | the person (whom) I saw.     |
| las casas <b>que</b> compré, | the houses (which) I bought. |

REMARK. — The conjunction **que**, *that*, must not be confounded with the relative pronoun. The former is frequently left out in Spanish after certain verbs, although the Academy very properly censures the omission:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| te ruego encarecidamente (que)<br>no te marches hasta que yo<br>vuelva,                                  | I earnestly request you not to go<br>away until I come back.  |
| supliquemos al eterno Padre<br>(que) quiera reconocer las<br>palabras que le decimos ( <i>Granada</i> ), | let us implore the Eternal Father<br>to be pleased to acknowledge<br>the words that we address to<br>him. |

*Literally*: I request *that* you may not go, etc.; let us implore *that* the Father may be pleased, etc.

**El cual, el que.**

**277.** **El cual** and **el que** are the substitutes of *quien* and *que*, and therefore relate to persons or things. They are, in general, preferred when an inflected relative is desirable to avoid *ambiguity*, or the unpleasant recurrence of the word *que*, as *connectives* between compound sentences, and especially after short prepositions when the antecedent substantive is accompanied by the *indefinite* article, or is used *partitively*: —

los Moros se dejaron maniatar de  
los Cristianos, **los cuales** con  
mucha presteza lo hicieron,  
llamó á un mozo de cordel,<sup>1</sup> **al**  
**que** le entregó una carta,  
seguimos al ama del canónigo,  
**el cual** vivía en un cuarto  
bajo,  
se dedicó al cuidado de su hija,  
en **la cual** veía el retrato de su  
mujer,  
una real orden en **la cual** se  
decía que,  
un incidente con **el que** no se  
había contado,  
hay injurias de **las que** no se  
debe hacer caso,

the Moors suffered their hands  
to be tied by the Christians,  
who were not slow to do it.  
he summoned a messenger, to  
whom he delivered a letter.  
we followed the housekeeper of  
the canon, who lived on the  
ground floor.  
he devoted himself to the care  
of his daughter, in whom he  
beheld the image of his wife.  
a royal order in which it was said  
that, *etc.*  
an incident on which he had not  
counted.  
there are wrongs of which no  
notice should be taken.

**278.** The inflection of *el cual* is as follows (that of *el que* varies the article in the same manner, but *que* does not change): —

---

<sup>1</sup> A *mozo de cordel* is a public "porter," who carries a coil of rope (*cordel*) on his shoulder, and serves to transport heavy burdens, or to run of errands. Lately "errand-boys" have been introduced into Madrid, called *mandaderos*.

|             | SINGULAR.    |              | PLURAL.         |                 |                        |
|-------------|--------------|--------------|-----------------|-----------------|------------------------|
|             | Masc.        | Fem.         | Masc.           | Fem.            |                        |
| <b>N.</b>   | el cual,     | la cual,     | los cuales,     | las cuales,     | who, which.            |
| <b>G.</b>   | del cual,    | de la cual,  | de los cuales,  | de las cuales,  | of whom, of which.     |
| <b>D.</b>   | al cual,     | á la cual,   | á los cuales,   | á las cuales,   | to whom, to which.     |
| <b>P.A.</b> | al cual,     | á la cual,   | á los cuales,   | á las cuales,   | whom (persons).        |
| <b>I.A.</b> | el cual,     | la cual,     | los cuales,     | las cuales,     | which (things).        |
| <b>P.</b>   | con el cual, | con la cual, | con los cuales, | con las cuales, | with whom, with which. |

**279.** The substitutes must be used when the relative is governed by compound prepositions, or such as are not monosyllables :—

un médico **ante el que** huyen  
las dolencias,  
un velador **encima del cual** hay  
un juego de café,  
las noticias **segun las cuales**  
quiso obrar,  
la torre **desde la cual** se domina  
la vega entera,

a physician before whom aches  
and pains disappear.  
a stand on which there is a coffee  
set.  
the information according to  
which he saw fit to act.  
the tower from which you can  
take in the whole plain.

**280.** The adverb **donde**, *where*, is frequently used as a relative :—

la calle por **donde** ha ido,

| the street by which he went.

**281.** **Lo cual**, *which*, refers always to an idea, a thought, or a preceding sentence :—

le aconsejé que tomase un cria-  
do, **lo cual** no quiso hacer,  
dicho **lo cual**, salió,

I advised him to engage a ser-  
vant, which he would not do.  
saying which, he went out.

**282. Lo que, that which, what, todo lo que, all that,** likewise relate to an idea, and not to a word :—

|                                       |                                  |
|---------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| me dijo <b>lo que</b> había sucedido, | he told me what had passed.      |
| V. me dará <b>lo que</b> le parece,   | you may give me what you like.   |
| á <b>lo que</b> veo, no consta,       | by what I see, it is not proven. |
| <b>todo lo que</b> dice es verdad,    | all that he says is the truth.   |

*a. Lo que* occasionally signifies *how, how much*, especially in exclamations :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| ¡si él supiera <b>lo que</b> yo los deseaba! ( <i>Cervántes.</i> ) | if he only knew how much I longed for them! |
| ¡ <b>lo que</b> debe V. saber!                                     | how much you must know!                     |

REMARK. — In popular language one often hears **lo que** employed in the sense of *as for*, probably an ellipse for *por lo que toca á* :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>lo que</b> es este señor, no alcanzo comprenderle, | as for this gentleman, I do not succeed in understanding him. |
|---|---|

**283. Cuanto and todo cuanto, as much, as many, quite as much—many,** often replace the relative expression **todos los que, todo lo que, all who, all which, all that**, the *que* being absorbed :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| A la más dulce   | To the sweetest   |
| De <b>cuantas</b> niñas                                | Of <i>all</i> the maidens   |
| Del feliz Túría  | <i>That</i> tread the borders   |
| La márgen pisan.                                       | Of the pleasant Turia. <sup>1</sup>                                     |
| es el más divertido de <b>cuantos</b> libros he leído, | it is the most amusing of <i>all</i> the books <i>that</i> I ever read. |
| le ofreció <b>todo cuanto</b> poseía,                  | he offered him <i>all that</i> he possessed.                            |
| recibieron con gozo cuanto los Españoles les daban,    | they joyfully received all that the Spaniards gave them.                |

<sup>1</sup> The *Turia* is the ancient Roman, and modern poetical, name of the river *Guadalaviar*, that flows through the city of Valencia.

**284. Cuyo, a, whose, of which, which,** relates to persons and things, and agrees in gender and number with the object possessed : —

el jóven **cuyo** padre conozco,  
la hija **cuya** madre está enferma,  
un oficial **cuyos** méritos son  
imponderables,  
por **cuya** causa,  
la muerte, debajo de **cuyo** yugo  
hemos de pasar todos,  
en un lugar de La Mancha, de  
**cuyo** nombre no quiero acordarme,  
una música misteriosa, **cuyas**  
notas se perdían en el silencio,

the youth whose father I know.  
the daughter whose mother is ill.  
an officer whose merits cannot  
be exaggerated.  
for which cause.  
death, under whose yoke we  
must all pass.  
in a village of La Mancha, the  
name of which I do not care to  
call to mind.  
mysterious music, whose strains  
died away in silence.

*a. A quien* is often employed in the signification of *cuyo*, on the same principle that requires the dative of the personal pronoun with a definite substantive to render the possessive adjective (§ 253), usually combined with the redundant construction : —

como individuo, **á quien** em-  
piezan á faltarle las fuerzas,  
*or,*  
**cuyas** fuerzas empiezan á fal-  
tarle,  
un hombre, **á quien** su empleo  
(*or, cuyo* empleo) apenas le  
daba para comer,

like an individual whose powers  
begin to fail him.

a man whose occupation scarcely  
yielded him a subsistence.

**285. El que,** with its variations **la que, los que, las que,** is used in the sense of *he who, she who, the one or one who; they who, those who, the ones who* (gen. **el de quien**, etc.), when it relates to *persons*. Relating to *things*, it signifies *the one which or that, those which or that, the ones which or that* (gen. **el de que**, etc.) : —

|                                  |                                  |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| el que habla,                    | he who speaks.                   |
| V. es el que me ofende,          | you are the one who offends me.  |
| el aturdimiento del que no se da | the stupefaction of one who can- |
| cuenta de su movilidad,          | not account for his movements.   |
| los que salen son amigos míos,   | those who are going out are      |
|                                  | friends of mine. [for.           |
| no es la que buscaba,            | she is not the one I was looking |
| estos libros son los que más     | these books are the ones I prize |
| aprecio,                         | most.                            |
| aquel de quien hablo,            | he of whom I speak.              |
| al que se va, se le olvida,      | { him who goes away they forget, |
|                                  | or,                              |
|                                  | { out of sight, out of mind.     |

286. Each member of the relative may be inflected, —the antecedent like the definite article, and the relative proper like *quien* or *que*, according to whether persons or things are referred to. In the oblique cases, however, the antecedent *aquel* is more common than *el*, when reference is made to persons; otherwise, either is employed according to the demonstrative meaning:—

|                               |                                 |
|-------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| aquel de quien lo oí,         | he from whom I heard it.        |
| aquella á quien visito,       | she whom I visit.               |
| aquellos con quienes anda,    | those with whom he goes.        |
| echa de ménos aquella ruidosa | he misses that boisterous glee  |
| alegría que llenaba la casa,  | that used to pervade the house. |

REMARK. — *El*, as the antecedent of *que*, is the definite article with a demonstrative application, and hence it can never assume the accent (*él*), which is the characteristic of the personal pronoun.

287. Instead of *el que* and *aquel que*, **quien** is employed in the same senses, including in itself both the antecedent and the relative:—



|  |  |
|--|--|
| quien calla, otorga,   | he who is silent, consents.  |
| quien se hace de miel, se le comen<br>las moscas,                        | he who makes himself honey,<br>will be devoured by the flies.                        |
| él es quien lo dijo,   | he is the one who said so.   |
| á quien Dios quiere guardar<br>¿quien lo destruirá?                      | who can destroy him whom God<br>wishes to preserve?                                  |
| obró como quien es (es decir,<br>conforme á su condicion ó<br>carácter), | he acted like the one that he is<br>(i.e., like one of his station or<br>character). |
| como quien se dirige á . . .   | as you go towards . . .  |
| como quien dice (como si se<br>dijera),                                  | as one who says (as if one should<br>say).   |
| lo que es el aire, no hay quien lo<br>detenga,                           | as for the wind, there is none that<br>can detain it.                                |

## INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

**288.** The interrogative pronouns are chiefly distinguishable from the relatives by the use of the graphic *accent*, applied alike in direct and indirect questions. They are :—

|   |                 |   |
|---|-----------------|---|
| quién, pl. <b>quiénes</b> , <i>who?</i> | } <i>whose?</i> | qué (invariable), <i>what?</i>                |
| cuyo, a, pl. <b>cúyos</b> , <b>as</b> , |                 | cuál, pl. <b>cuáles</b> , <i>which? what?</i> |
| de quién, pl. <b>de quiénes</b> ,       |                 |   |

**289.** **Quién** is declined like any substantive :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| ¿quién es? ¿quiénes son?                       | who is it? who are they?                                      |
| ¿de quién habla V.?                            | of whom do you speak?   |
| ¿á quién visitamos?                            | whom do we visit?   |
| ¿para quién lo hizo?                           | for whom did he do it?  |
| ¿con quiénes comen hoy?                        | with whom do they dine to-day?                                |
| díme con quién andas, y te diré<br>quién eres, | tell me with whom you go, and I<br>will tell you who you are. |

**290.** *Whose*, used interrogatively, is expressed by **cuyo, a**, or by **de quién** :—

|   |   |   |
|---|---|---|
| ¿cúyo es este libro? cúyo libro<br>es este? <i>or</i> ,                 | } | whose book is this?   |
| ¿de quién es este libro?  |   |   |
| ¿cúyas ( <i>or</i> , de quién, de quién-<br>es) son las casas aquellas? | } | whose houses are those (262)?                                   |
| ¿de cúyos proyectos habláis?  |   |   |
| ¿en beneficio de quién lo hace V.?                                      |   | of whose plans do you speak?<br>for whose benefit do you do it? |

**291. Qué, *what*?** is used as a substantive and as an adjective in both numbers and genders:—

|                          |  |                                    |
|--------------------------|--|------------------------------------|
| ¿qué dice? ¿qué hora es? |  | what does he say? what time is it? |
| ¿de qué habla V.?        |  | of what are you speaking?          |
| ¿qué ruido es ese?       |  | what noise is that?                |

**a. Qué** is also employed in exclamations to signify *what! what a!* and before an adjective alone, *how!*—

|                           |  |                                |
|---------------------------|--|--------------------------------|
| ¿qué día! ¿qué desgracia! |  | what a day! what a misfortune! |
| ¿qué buena y hermosa es!  |  | how good and beautiful she is! |
| ¿á qué alturas ha subido! |  | to what heights has he risen!  |
| ¿con qué aplomo lo dice!  |  | with what coolness he says it! |

**REMARK.**—To add still greater emphasis, an adjective may be placed after the noun with *tan* or *más*:—

|                                 |  |                       |
|---------------------------------|--|-----------------------|
| ¿qué día <b>tan</b> hermoso!    |  | what a beautiful day! |
| ¿qué libros <b>más</b> pesados! |  | what dull books!      |

**292. Cuál, *which*?** is used when one or more objects of a certain number are specifically or vaguely referred to, and it also replaces **qué, *what*?** when it stands in the predicate with the verb *to be*:—

|   |  |  |
|---|--|--|
| ¿cuál de los libros quiere V.?          |  | which of the books do you want?              |
| ¿á cuál de mis amigos has visto<br>hoy? |  | which of my friends have you<br>seen to-day? |
| ¿cuál es la fecha de la carta?          |  | what is the date of the letter?              |
| ¿cuáles son los motivos?                |  | what are the grounds?                        |
| ¿ignoro cuáles sean,                    |  | I do not know what they are.                 |

## INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

**293. Ajeno, a** (Lat. *alienus*), *of others, another's, others', other people's*, is an adjective in Spanish; the neuter, **lo ajeno**, signifies *what belongs to another, or to others* :—

|   |                                   |
|---|-----------------------------------|
| el dinero <b>ajeno</b> , la casa <b>ajena</b> , | another's money, house.           |
| los bienes <b>ajenos</b> ,                      | property of others.               |
| no te metas en negocios <b>ajenos</b>           | do not meddle with other peo-     |
| ni en vidas <b>ajenas</b> ,                     | ple's affairs or lives. [other's. |
| busca lo tuyo y no lo <b>ajeno</b> ,            | seek thine own, and not an-       |

*a. Ajeno* is also an adjective with the regimen *de*, and signifies *foreign to, disconnected with* :—

|  |                                   |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| esto es <b>ajeno de</b> mi carácter,   | this is foreign to my character.  |
| <b>ajeno de</b> los negocios públicos, | disconnected with public affairs. |
| <b>ajeno de</b> la conversacion,       | a stranger to the conversation.   |

**294. Ál** (Lat. *alius, aliud*), *another person, another thing*, is now obsolete, or is occasionally used to give an antique flavor to modern discourse; it is replaced by *otro, de otro modo*, etc. :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| so el sayal ay <b>ál</b> ( <i>Proverbs</i> ,<br>1556),                                      | under the sackcloth there is an-<br>other.   |
| é los unos ni los otros non faga-<br>des nin fagan ende <b>ál</b> ( <i>Law of</i><br>1492), | and let none of you do or suffer<br>ought else to be done ( <i>inde</i><br><i>aliud</i> ). |
| en <b>ál</b> estuvo que en encantamen-<br>tos (Cervántes, <i>Don Quijote</i> ),             | he was for something else than<br>enchantments.  |

**295. Alguien** (Lat. *aliquem*), *somebody, some one, anybody, any one*, is an invariable substantive, used of persons only, and cannot be followed by a partitive genitive (*de*) :—

**álguien** ha estado aquí,  
¿ha venido **álguien**?  
si pregunta por mí **álguien**, díle  
que no estoy,

some one has been here.  
has any one come?  
if anybody asks for me, tell him  
that I am not in.

**296. Alguno, a** (Lat. *alic-unus*), is employed both as a substantive and an adjective, and relates to persons or things. As related to persons, it means *somebody, some one, anybody, any one; some, any, a few*. Unlike *álguien*, it may be followed by the partitive genitive, expressed or implied, in both genders and numbers:—

**alguno** de VV. me tocó,  
esto lo hizo **alguno** de mis  
enemigos,  
**algunos** no lo creen, otros sí,  
hay **algunos** que no lo sienten,  
**algun** hombre (§ 123), **alguna**  
mujer, [ras,  
**algunos** amigos, **algunas** seño-

some one of you touched me.  
some one of my enemies did  
this.  
some do not credit it, others do.  
there are some who do not regret  
it.  
some man, some woman.  
a few friends, a few ladies.

REMARK. — If it be said absolutely, "some one has touched me," *álguien* would be preferred; but if we mean some one of a specific number or group, *alguno* (fem. *alguna*) must be used. So, *álguien* toca á la puerta, *some one knocks at the door*; vaya á ver si es alguno de los que esperamos, *go and see if it is some one of those we are expecting*; ¿Ha llegado *álguien*? *has anybody come*? ¿Ha llegado alguno? *has any one come (that we looked for)*?

**297. Alguno**, as related to things, signifies *some, any, a few*:—

**algun** día, **alguna** época,  
**algunos** siglos, **algunas** veces,  
¿tiene V. **algun** remedio?  
posee **algunas** fincas,  
de estos libros, **algunos** no  
valen un ardite,  
**algunas** de estas pizarras no  
sirven ya,

some day, some period.  
some centuries, sometimes.  
have you any help (for it)?  
he owns some real estate.  
of these books, some are not  
worth a farthing.  
some of these slates will not  
answer any longer.

REMARK. — “Some,” in a vague sense, as *some or other, one or another*, is translated by the idiomatic adjective expression, **alguno que otro** (*fem. alguna que otra*):—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| él estaba al puesto hojeando<br><b>alguno que otro</b> libro, | he stood at the stall turning over<br>the pages of some book. |
|---|---|

298. “Some” or “any,” in partitive questions, are not generally expressed in Spanish, but their answers are given by an objective personal pronoun (*le, lo, los, las*), or by *alguno* with an adjective. **Algunos** and **unos cuantos** very exactly render the English *some* in the emphatic sense of *a few*:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| ¿tiene V. vino de Valdepeñas?<br>le tengo y de primera clase,<br>¿quién vende libros viejos?<br>los hay en aquella tienda,<br>yo poseo <b>unos cuantos</b> raros<br>en casa, | have you any Valdepeñas wine?<br>I have some, and first-class.<br>who sells old books?<br>there are some in yonder shop.<br>I have a few rare ones at home. |
|--|---|

299. **Algo** (Lat. *alicum* for *aliquod*) and **alguna cosa**, *something, anything*, are used interchangeably; the former, however, is invariable and absolute:—

|   |                                 |
|---|---------------------------------|
| halló { <b>algo</b><br><b>alguna cosa</b> } en el camino,     | he found something in the road. |
| ¿tiene V. { <b>algo</b> bueno?<br><b>alguna cosa</b> buena? } | have you anything good? [him.   |
| hay <b>algo</b> malicioso en él,                              | there is something malicious in |

a. **Algo** is often employed as an adverb in the signification of *somewhat, rather*:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| estoy <b>algo</b> malucho,<br>ella está <b>algo</b> interesada,<br>esta carne es <b>algo</b> cara, | I am somewhat ailing.<br>she is rather selfish.<br>this meat is somewhat dear. |
|--|--|

REMARK.— This “somewhat” is very often expressed by a diminutive termination, as *illo*, applied to the adjective; and when the remark is delicate, by *ico*, with or without *algo*:—

|                      |                          |
|----------------------|--------------------------|
| la carne es carilla, | the meat is rather dear. |
| ella es algo bonita, | she is somewhat pretty.  |

300. **Ambos**, *as*, *both*, is used either as a substantive or an adjective, and of persons or things. It may be replaced by *los dos* (fem. *las dos*):—

|                                   |                              |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------------|
| venían <b>ambos</b> á caballo,    | both came on horseback.      |
| tengo <b>ambas</b> manos heladas, | both of my hands are frozen. |

We could say with equal propriety: *venían los dos á caballo*, *tengo las dos manos heladas*.

a. Instead of *ambos*, *as*, **entrambos**, *as*, is met with in the same sense, although originally signifying *between two* (entre ambos). An idiomatic variation is also **ambos á dos**, **entrambos á dos**, *between the two*; as, le mataron **ambos á dos**, *they both slew him*, i.e., *between them both*.

b. “Both,” in the sense of *each*, is rendered by **uno y otro**, plur. **unos y otros**:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| personas de <b>uno y otro</b> sexo,                                      | persons of both sexes.   |
| estudió hombres y cosas, escribiendo despues sobre <b>unos y otras</b> , | he studied men and things, subsequently writing on each (or both). |

301. **Cada** (Gr. *κατά*), *each*, *every*, is an invariable adjective employed only in the singular, and always stands before the substantive:—

|   |                                 |
|---|---------------------------------|
| <b>cada</b> hombre; <b>cada</b> mujer,    | each man; each woman.           |
| <b>cada</b> año; <b>cada</b> semana,      | every year; every week.         |
| <b>cada</b> dia tiene su afán,            | each day has its cares.         |
| á <b>cada</b> paso; por <b>cada</b> tomo, | at every step; for each volume. |

*a. Cada* may stand with a plural substantive only when the latter is preceded by a numeral :—

|                           |                          |
|---------------------------|--------------------------|
| <b>cada</b> dos días,     | every two days.          |
| <b>cada</b> tres años,    | every three years.       |
| <b>cada</b> mil soldados, | every thousand soldiers. |

302. When *cada* is employed substantively or distributively, it associates itself with *uno* (fem. *una*) or *cual*, forming **cada uno**, **cada cual** :—

|                                       |                                   |
|---------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <b>cada uno</b> tiene sus quehacéres, | each has his occupations. [him.   |
| <b>cada cual</b> lleva lo suyo,       | every one takes what belongs to   |
| <b>cada uno</b> de los jueces,        | each (one) of the judges.         |
| <b>cada una</b> de las damas,         | each (one) of the ladies.         |
| <b>cada uno</b> segun sus obras,      | every one according to his deeds. |

303. *Every* may also be expressed by **todos los** (fem. **todas las**), agreeing with a plural noun including a period of time :—

|                                  |                         |
|----------------------------------|-------------------------|
| <b>todos los</b> años, días,     | every year, every day.  |
| <b>todas las</b> semanas, veces, | every week, every time. |

304. **Cierto**, *a, a certain* —, is an adjective which is always followed by a noun without the indefinite article :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>cierto</b> hombre ; <b>cierta</b> señora,  | <i>a</i> certain man ; <i>a</i> certain lady. |
| <b>ciertos</b> libros ; <b>ciertas</b> cosas, | certain books ; certain things.               |
| bajo <b>ciertas</b> condiciones,              | on certain conditions.                        |

REMARK. — If by *certain*, we wish to indicate authenticity, the above adjective ceases to be indefinite and always stands *after* the noun, or in the predicate alone :—

|                                     |                           |
|-------------------------------------|---------------------------|
| noticias <b>ciertas</b> ,           | sure, authentic news.     |
| la noticia es <b>cierta</b> ,       | the intelligence is true. |
| no es <b>cierto</b> lo que V. dice, | what you say is not so.   |

**305. Cosa, a thing** (fem.), is often used in the signification of *something, anything*; and with a negative, *nothing*:—

es **cosa** muy de ver,  
¿hay **cosa** más chocante?

camináron sin que les aconte-  
ciese **cosa** que de contar  
fuese,

no vale **cosa**,  
no es **cosa** (que valga),

no quiero otra **cosa**,

it is something well worth seeing.  
is there anything more extra-  
ordinary?

they journeyed on without any-  
thing occurring to them worthy  
of note.

that is not worth anything.

that is nothing (important).

{ I do not want anything else, *or*  
{ I care for nothing else.

**306. Fulano (fem. fulana)** (Span.-Arab. *fulân*), means *so and so, such a one*, or it expresses an evasion not easily rendered. It is used only of persons in the singular, to indicate any one whose name we do not know, or recall, or care to give. When used *alone*, it commonly assumes the form of **fulano de tal**<sup>1</sup>; if *two* different persons are referred to in the same vague manner, **fulano** and **mengano** are associated; and, if *three*, **fulano**, **mengano y zutano** represent the "Tom, Dick, and Harry," of vulgar English<sup>2</sup>:—

¿quién será **fulano**?

¿quién lo dijo? ¿qué sé yo?

**Fulano de tal.**

ayer me escribió **fulano de tal**,

who can so and so be?

who said so? I don't know;  
such a one.

yesterday so and so wrote me.

<sup>1</sup> "So and so of such a name," *fulano* representing the Christian name (*nombre*), and *tal* the surname (*apellido*); as, for example, *Juan de Valdés*.

<sup>2</sup> *Mengano* and *zutano* are undoubtedly alliterative merely, made up of invented stems with the common ending *ano*. *Zutano* is explained unsatisfactorily by Dietz and Mahn, each in his own way. Neither mentions *mengano*, which, in turn, may be connected with the obsolete *Mengo* or *Mingo*, familiar for Domingo, Dominic, or plain "Dick," although I incline to think them alliterations, corresponding in principle to *riff-raff*, *pell-mell*, etc.



no les va en ello más que el gusto  
de que los mande **fulano** ó  
**mengano**,

no conozco ni **fulano**, ni **men-**  
**gano**, ni **zutano**,

they have no other interest in  
it than the pleasure of being  
ordered about by this one and  
that.

I know neither this one, that  
one, nor the other.

**307. Mismo, a** (archaic, *mesmo, a*, still used in rural districts; low Lat. *metipsimus*; Ital. *medesimo*; old Fr. *mesme*), is an adjective with occasional substantive functions. The neuter is **lo mismo**, *the same (thing)*.

**308.** When **mismo** stands before a noun, it has the meaning of *the same*, if coupled with the definite article; of *same* and *very*, with the demonstrative adjective; of *very*, with a possessive adjective; and *the same (one and the same)*, with the indefinite article or its plural *unos, unas*: —

el **mismo** día; la **misma** noche,  
los **mismos** pensamientos,  
este **mismo** caso,  
esas **mismas** casas,  
**mis mismos** amigos, enemigos,  
una **misma** suerte, patria,  
unos **mismos** padres (§ 106),  
viene á ser **lo mismo**,

the same day; the same night.  
the same thoughts. [stance.  
this same (*or* this very) circum-  
those same houses.  
my very friends, enemies.  
the same fate, country.  
the same father and mother.  
it amounts to the same (thing).

*a.* Before or after the noun, **mismo** with the definite article means also *very* or *self*: —

el **mismo** día; el día **mismo**,  
las **mismas** mujeres,

the very day; the day itself.  
the very women; the women  
themselves.

See also §§ 239-242.

**309. Nada** (Lat. *res nata*, with a negative, *not a living thing*), *nothing* or *not anything*, stands before

the verb without a negative, or after the verb with **no**, *not*. Hence, in the latter case, and generally in Spanish, two negatives strengthen the negation : —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>nada</b> tengo, <i>or</i> <b>no</b> tengo <b>nada</b> ,        | I have nothing — not anything.                    |
| <b>nada</b> veo, <i>or</i> <b>no</b> veo <b>nada</b> ,            | I see nothing — I do not see a.                   |
| <b>nada</b> vale, <i>or</i> <b>no</b> vale <b>nada</b> ,          | it is worth nothing — not worth a.                |
| <b>nada</b> me dijo, <i>or</i> <b>no</b> me dijo<br><b>nada</b> , | he told me nothing — did not tell<br>me anything. |

**310.** Although etymologically feminine, *nada* is always associated with the absolute form of an adjective, and in that case regularly follows the negative verb : —

|   |                             |
|---|-----------------------------|
| no hizo <b>nada</b> <b>bueno</b> ni <b>malo</b> , | he did nothing good or bad. |
| no exijo <b>nada</b> <b>gravoso</b> ,             | I require nothing onerous.  |

**311.** Instead of *nada*, the forms *ninguna cosa* or *cosa alguna* are constantly met with in the same signification. The former may stand before the verb, or after it with the additional negation, while the latter can only follow a negative verb ; with an adjective only the first form, *ninguna cosa*, can be used, the adjective agreeing with the feminine *cosa* : —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>ninguna</b> cosa tengo,                                | } I have nothing, <i>or</i><br>I have not anything. |
| <b>no</b> tengo <b>ninguna</b> cosa, <i>or</i>            |   |
| <b>no</b> tengo cosa alguna,                              |   |
| no tengo <b>ninguna</b> cosa <b>buen</b> a, <i>or</i>     | } I have nothing good.                              |
| <b>no</b> tengo <b>nada</b> <b>bueno</b> ; <i>but not</i> |   |
| <b>no</b> tengo cosa alguna buena,                        |   |

**312.** **Nada**, **ninguna cosa**, or **cosa alguna**, may stand after a verb without *no*, in the signification of *anything* or *ought* : —

a. In exclamatory or interrogative sentences that involve a negative answer:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| ¿cómo negarle á él <b>nada</b> !                             | how can one refuse <i>him</i> anything!                 |
| ¿quién habrá visto ni oído <b>nada</b><br>que iguale á ello? | who can have seen or heard any-<br>thing to equal that? |

b. After verbs that contain in themselves a negative idea:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>guárdese</b> V. de decirle <b>nada</b> , | beware how you tell him any-<br>i.e., <i>see that you do not</i> tell him anything. [thing; |
|---|---|

c. After the prepositions **sin**, *without*; **antes de**, *before*; the conjunctions **sin que**, *without* (that); **antes que**, *before* (that):—

|  |                                  |
|--|----------------------------------|
| <b>sin</b> preguntarle <b>nada</b> ,                   | without asking him anything.     |
| <b>antes de</b> decirles <b>nada</b> ,                 | before telling them anything.    |
| <b>sin que</b> me dijese <b>nada</b> ,                 | without his telling me anything. |
| <b>antes que</b> contestase <b>nada</b> , <sup>1</sup> | before I answered anything.      |

d. After comparatives and superlatives:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <b>mejor que nada</b> de todo cuanto<br>le he oído, | better than anything that I ever<br>heard him say. |
|---|--|

313. **Nada** is often used elliptically as an exclamation designed to cut off farther remark or discussion, and may be variously rendered by *say no more*, *never mind*, *well*, *there*:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <b>nada, nada</b> , voy á verle en se-<br>guida ( <i>for</i> no digas más), | say no more; I'll go and see him<br>at once. |
| pues <b>nada</b> , or } hasta la vista,<br>con que,                         | well; until we meet again.                   |

<sup>1</sup> If *nunca* stands after the verb with *nada*, the verb is negative: no vale nunca nada, *he never amounts to anything*; nunca vale nada, *he is never worth anything*.

**314. Nada** may be followed by **de**, with substantives, to signify *nothing of*, *no* : —

|                                     |                                  |
|-------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| que <b>nada de</b> esto transluzca, | let nothing of this leak out.    |
| él no tiene <b>nada de</b> juego ni | he has no (propensity to) gaming |
| licores (no tiene vicios),          | or strong drink (no bad habits). |

**315. No** — **nada**, also means *not* — *at all* : —

|                           |   |
|---------------------------|---|
| no importa <b>nada</b> ,  | that does not matter at all.                  |
| no me gusta <b>nada</b> , | I don't like that at all ( <i>literally</i> , |
|                           | it does not please me at all).                |

*a. Nada* is likewise employed without other negatives, in the same sense of *not at all*, *in no respect* : —

|                                |                             |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| yo <b>nada</b> temo la muerte, | I do not at all fear death. |
| él es <b>nada</b> perezoso,    | he is not at all indolent.  |

**316. Nadie**,<sup>1</sup> *no one, nobody*, is the negative of *álguien*, and is subject to the same limitations (§ 295); that is, it is an invariable substantive, used of persons only, and cannot be followed by a partitive genitive. Like *nada*, it requires another negative only when it comes after the verb : —

|   |                                       |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| <b>nadie</b> pase, <i>or</i> no pase <b>nadie</b> ,   | let no one pass ( <i>or</i> go in).   |
| <b>nadie</b> ha venido todavía, <i>or</i>             | nobody has come yet.                  |
| <b>no</b> ha venido <b>nadie</b> todavía, }           |                                       |
| <b>á nadie</b> veo, <i>or</i> no veo <b>á nadie</b> , | I do not see any one. [time.          |
| <b>nadie</b> vió jamás á Dios,                        | no man hath seen God at any           |
| ¿quién ha llamado? — <b>nadie</b> ,                   | who called ( <i>or</i> knocked)? — No |
|   | one.                                  |
| <b>no</b> he visto <b>á nadie</b> ,                   | I have not seen anybody.              |

<sup>1</sup> *Nadie* (ancient, *nadi*) is from the Latin *natus* — with a negative, *not a living soul*; the form *nadie* seems to be an assimilation of *nadi* to the ending *e* in *este, ese*. In the sixteenth century, it is often replaced by the formula *no — hombre* = *no — nadie*: El **no** maravillarse **hombre** de nada, *for a man to wonder at nothing*. See my edition of the *Works of Mendoza*, Madrid, 1877, p. 106.

**317. Nadie** may stand after a verb without *no*, in the signification of *anybody*, under the same conditions that apply to *nada* (§ 312, *a-d*):—

¿quién habrá visto **nadie** que  
sea más comedido?

¿cómo negaré **nada** á **nadie**?

**guárdese** V. de descubrir el  
secreto á **nadie**,

**sin** ser oído de **nadie**,

salió **sin** que **nadie** le viese,

**nunca** quiso escuchar á **nadie**,

or, [ **nadie**,

**no** quiso escuchar **nunca** á ]

una de **las más nuevas** historias  
que **nadie** pudo pensar,

who can have seen anybody more  
civil. [thing?

how can I refuse any one any-  
beware how you disclose the  
secret to anybody.

without being heard by any one.  
he went out without anybody's  
seeing him.

he never would listen to any one.

one of the strangest pieces of  
fiction that any one could  
conceive.

**318. Ninguno**,<sup>1</sup> *a, nobody, no one, none, no*, the negative of *alguno* (§ 296), is employed both as a substantive and an adjective, and relates to persons or things. Unlike *nadie*, it may be followed by the partitive genitive, expressed or implied, in both genders and numbers:—

¿cuál de ellos salió?—**Nin-**  
**guno**,

**ninguno** de los enemigos,

**ninguna** de las casas,

**ningun** enemigo (§ 123),

**ninguna** casa,

**ninguno** consintió en ello,

**no** se fie V. en **nadie**,

which one of them went out?—

No one.

none (not one) of the enemies.

none (not one) of the houses.

no enemy.

no house.

nobody agreed to it. [body.

do not put confidence in any-

<sup>1</sup> *Ninguno* is from the Latin *nec-unus* for *nullus*, with the intercalation of *an* (*nencunus*) after the analogy of *renglon* for *reglon* (augmentative of *regla* [*regüla*]) and of *cementerio* for *cemeterio*.

|  |                    |   |        |
|--|--------------------|---|--------|
| no se ffe V. en <b>ninguno</b> (de ellos), | [ <b>ninguno</b> , | do not put confidence in any (of them). | [none. |
| ¿tiene V. libros?—no tengo                 |                    | have you any books?—I have              |        |

319. Like *nada* and *nadie*, **ninguno** requires an additional negative when it stands after the verb:—

|   |                                |
|---|--------------------------------|
| no quiere á <b>ninguno</b> de los dos,    | he likes neither of the two.   |
| no consta en <b>ninguna</b> ley,          | it does not appear by any law. |
| no tengo <b>ningun</b> libro; <b>nin-</b> | I have no book; no house.      |
| <b>guna</b> casa, [regalo,                | [present.                      |
| <b>nunca</b> quiso aceptar <b>ningun</b>  | he never would accept any      |

320. **Ninguno** is translated by *any one*, *any*, when it stands after a verb without *no*, under the same conditions that apply to *nada* and *nadie* (§§ 312, 317):—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>sin que ninguno</b> de ellos me lo diga,                            | without any of them telling me so.                               |
| admiráronse todos, y <b>más</b> los duques que <b>ninguno</b> (§ 106), | all were astonished, and the duke and duchess more than any one. |

321. After a negative verb, *alguno*, *a*, is more elegantly employed than *ninguno*, especially after *sin*; but it must be associated with a substantive expressed, and always stand after it:—

|  |                              |
|--|------------------------------|
| <b>no</b> siente remordimiento <b>alguno</b> , | he feels no compunction.     |
| <b>sin</b> trabajo ni fatiga <b>alguna</b> ,   | without any toil or fatigue. |
| <b>sin</b> duda <b>alguna</b> ,                | without any doubt.           |

*a*. If the noun be understood, *ninguno* alone can be used:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| estaba colgado de sus palabras sin hablar <b>ninguna</b> , | he hung on his words without uttering (himself) any. |
|--|--|

**322.** The English *no, not any*, as an adjective, when it is unemphatic, may be simply expressed by a verb made negative by **no**, followed by a noun without article:—

|                                  |                               |
|----------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <b>no</b> tengo tiempo,          | I have no time.               |
| <b>no</b> tiene casa,            | he has no house.              |
| <b>no</b> tenemos libros,        | we have no books.             |
| <b>no</b> tienen amigos,         | they have no friends.         |
| <b>no</b> hay necesidad de ello, | there is no necessity for it. |
| <b>no</b> hay contestacion,      | “no answer” (to a message).   |

*a.* To make this construction emphatic, we have only to put *ninguno, a*, before the noun, or better, *alguno, a*, after it:—

|  |                              |
|--|------------------------------|
| <b>no</b> tengo tiempo <b>alguno</b> ,                 | I have no time at all.       |
| <b>no</b> hay <b>ninguna</b> contestacion, <i>or</i> } | there is no answer whatever. |
| <b>no</b> hay contestacion <b>alguna</b> ,             |                              |

**323. Otro, a** (Lat. *altĕr, alt’ro*), *another, other* (pl. *others*), is used both as an adjective and a substantive, embracing persons or things. It does not admit the indefinite article as in English (*an-other*), but requires the definite article when a distinct person or thing is to be specified:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>otro</b> individuo; <b>el otro</b> i.,     | another individual; the other i.          |
| <b>otra</b> persona; <b>la otra</b> persona,  | another person; the other p.              |
| <b>otro</b> día; <b>el otro</b> día,          | another day; the other day.               |
| <b>otra</b> noche; <b>la otra</b> noche,      | another night; the other night.           |
| <b>otros</b> dicen; <b>los otros</b> creen,   | others say; the others believe.           |
| <b>otras</b> piensan de distinto modo,        | others ( <i>fem.</i> ) think differently. |
| venga <b>otro</b> ; trae <b>el otro</b> ,     | bring on another; bring the o.            |
| dáme <b>otra</b> ; dáme <b>la otra</b> ,      | give me another; give me the o.           |
| tengo <b>otros</b> ; tengo <b>los otros</b> , | I have others; I have the others.         |
| busco <b>otras</b> ,                          | I look for others.                        |
| <b>no</b> quiero <b>las otras</b> ,           | I don’t want the others.                  |

**324.** *The other part, the others*, when they mean *the rest*, are expressed respectively by **lo demás** and **los** or **las demás**:—

|  |                                   |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| <b>lo demás</b> me importa poco,       | I care little for the other part. |
| no he visto á <b>los demás</b> ,       | I have not seen the others.       |
| en cuanto á <b>las demás</b> me callo, | as for the rest, I say nothing.   |

REMARK. — **Al otro día** means *on the next day*. The genitive of possession is expressed by **ajeno** (§ 293); as, **los bienes ajenos**, *not los bienes de otros*, *other people's property or goods*.

**325. Propio, a** (formerly *proprio*), *self, own*, may stand after the personal pronouns like *mismo*, and after the possessive adjectives and pronouns to strengthen their meaning:—

|                                     |                        |
|-------------------------------------|------------------------|
| tú <b>propio</b> or <b>propia</b> , | thou thyself.          |
| tu <b>propio</b> amigo,             | thy own friend.        |
| por sí <b>propios</b> ,             | of themselves.         |
| este dinero es <b>suyo propio</b> , | this money is his own. |

REMARK. — **Propio de** signifies *adapted to, suitable for*:—  
un juego **propio de** niños, | a game suitable for children.

**326. Quiera, you wish, you please**, subjunctive of the verb *querer*, is joined to or associated with pronouns, to form various indefinite expressions.

**327. Quienquiera, whoever, any one whatever**, relates only to persons, and in an absolute sense:—

|                                     |                                   |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <b>quienquiera</b> que sea,         | whoever (that) it be.             |
| eso lo diría á <b>quienquiera</b> , | I would affirm that to any one.   |
| sería antipático, no tan solo en    | that would be repulsive, not only |
| él, sino en <b>quienquiera</b> que  | in him, but in anybody what-      |
| sea,                                | ever.                             |



a. **Quien** alone, followed by a verb in the indicative or subjunctive, often admits the signification of *any one who*, especially in the oblique cases :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| lo digo á <b>quien</b> <b>quiera</b> aceptar<br>la apuesta, | I say it to any one who may care<br>to accept the wager. |
|---|--|

328. **Cualquiera**, pl. **cualesquiera**, *any (whatever), any (you please)*, is both an adjective and a substantive, relating to persons or things :—

a. As an adjective, it may precede or follow the noun ; but in the latter case, only in the singular :—

|  |                            |
|--|----------------------------|
| <b>cualquier</b> día (§ 123) — noche,    | any day ; any night.       |
| <b>cualesquier</b> motivos — personas,   | any reasons ; any persons. |
| un libro — una pluma <b>cualquiera</b> , | any book ; any pen.        |

b. Followed by *de*, **cualquiera** signifies likewise *any*, and of two, *either* :—

|   |                      |
|---|----------------------|
| <b>cualquiera</b> <b>de</b> los bultos, | any of the packages. |
| <b>cualquiera</b> <b>de</b> los dos,    | either of the two.   |

REMARK. — **Un cualquiera** means “a nobody,” a person of no account, or of no pedigree.

329. **Cualquiera**, followed by **que** and a verb in the subjunctive, means *whichever, whatever* :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <b>cualquier</b> cosa <b>que</b> V. diga,   | whatever you say.                                |
| <b>cualquier</b> motivo <b>que</b> se pre-<br>sente, [pren,                         | whatever motive be alleged, or<br>assigned.      |
| <b>cualesquiera</b> cosas <b>que</b> com-<br><b>cualquiera</b> <b>que</b> V. guste, | whatever things they buy.<br>whichever you like. |

330. *Whatever* may also be expressed by **sea el que, la que**, pl. **sean los que, las que**, with a noun and a verb in the subjunctive :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>sea el que</b> quiera el motivo que<br>se presente,       | whatever reason be assigned.                     |
| <b>sea el que</b> quiera el trabajo que<br>nos cueste vivir, | whatever be the trouble that<br>living costs us. |

**331. Whatever**, as a neuter substantive, is rendered by **todo lo que** and **por más que**, with the subjunctive; *what*, in this relation, by **lo que**:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>todo lo que</b> V. me mandáre<br>eso haré,                      | whatever you order me, I will<br>do. [him.           |
| <b>por más que</b> diga, no lo creo,<br>diga <b>lo que</b> quiera, | whatever he say, I do not credit<br>say what he may. |

**332. Sendos**, as (corrupted from the Latin *singulos* -as), *one for each, each one*, is used distributively and only in the plural:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| tenían las cuatro ninfas <b>sendos</b><br>vasos hechos á la romana,<br>salieron de la nave seis enanos,<br>tañendo <b>sendas</b> harpas, | the four nymphs had each a vase<br>made in the Roman fashion.<br>six dwarfs came forth from the<br>vessel, each playing a harp. |
|--|---|

**333. Tal** (pl. **tales**), *such, such a* (pl. *such*), is used as a substantive and an adjective of persons and things.

*a.* Without an indefinite article, as an adjective:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>tal</b> hombre; <b>tal</b> mujer,       | such <i>a</i> man; such <i>a</i> woman. |
| <b>tal</b> día; <b>tal</b> casa,           | such <i>a</i> day; such <i>a</i> house. |
| <b>tales</b> hombres; <b>tales</b> días,   | such men; such days.                    |
| <b>tales</b> vidas; <b>tales</b> personas, | such lives; such persons.               |

REMARK. — The same use extends to all the cases:—

|                                    |                                      |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| no diga V. <b>tal</b> cosa,        | do not say such <i>a</i> thing.      |
| la historia <b>de tal</b> época,   | the history of such <i>a</i> period. |
| no me fío <b>en tales</b> hombres, | I do not trust such men.             |

*b.* Without an indefinite article, as a neuter substantive:—

no hay **tal** en este país,  
no creo **tal**,

there is no such (thing) here.  
I don't believe such a (thing).

**334.** **Tal** is preceded by the indefinite article *only* when used with names of persons, and in the sense of *one, a certain*. With common nouns, **cierto**, without the article, has the same meaning, *a certain*. Hence **un tal**, **una tal**, and **cierto**, **cierta**, are adjectives replacing **fulano** or **fulan o de tal**, which can only be employed as a substantive (§§ 304, 306):—

me lo dijo **fulano de tal**,  
se lo dió **un tal** Perez,  
**cierto** sargento, **un tal** García,  
se puso al frente de la suble-  
vacion,

such a one told me so.  
one Perez gave it to him.  
a certain sergeant, one Garcia,  
put himself at the head of the  
insurrection.

REMARK. — *Tal* often serves to strengthen an affirmation, denial, or interrogation:—

sí **tal**; no **tal**; ¿qué **tal**?

| yes; no; how are you?

**335.** Idioms with *tal* are: **tal cual**, *such as*, and *so so, pretty well*; **tal y tal**, *such and such* (*pl. tales y tales, etc.*).

**336.** **Todo**, *a* (Lat. *totus*), *all, whole, every, anything*. is employed as an adjective, a substantive, and an indefinite pronoun.

**337.** As an adjective, it is followed by the definite article, or other determinative word if the noun requires one:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>todo</b> el día ; <b>toda</b> la noche, | all day ; the whole night.             |
| <b>todos</b> los hombres,                  | all men.                               |
| <b>todas</b> las clases,                   | all classes.                           |
| esto fué <b>toda</b> su locura,            | his whole folly consisted in this.     |
| por <b>todo</b> aquel día,                 | throughout that whole day.             |
| hizo un viaje por <b>toda</b> España,      | he made a journey over all Spain.      |
| <b>todo</b> Madrid concurrió á la fiesta,  | all Madrid turned out at the festival. |

REMARK. — In poetical or intensive prose language, the adjective may follow the noun : —

|  |                                     |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| armóse de sus armas <b>todas</b> ( <i>Cervantes</i> ), | he armed himself with all his arms. |
|--|-------------------------------------|

338. Instead of *todo*, **entero**, *a*, *entire*, *whole*, *all*, may be used, placed always after the noun : —

|   |                         |
|---|-------------------------|
| el pueblo <b>entero</b> ,                       | the whole village.      |
| la noche <b>entera</b> ,                        | the whole night.        |
| días <b>enteros</b> ; la España <b>entera</b> , | whole days ; all Spain. |

339. An idiomatic use of *todo* is found especially with expressions of time, in which is meant some indefinite point within the general period mentioned : —

|                                     |                                |
|-------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| en <b>todo</b> el mes de setiembre, | some time in September. [year. |
| en <b>todo</b> el año que viene,    | some time during the coming    |

340. **Todo**, as an adjective, may be followed by the noun directly, in the sense of *every* in the singular, or *all* in the plural : —

|  |                                      |
|--|--------------------------------------|
| <b>todo</b> Español que se respeta á sí mismo, | every Spaniard who respects himself. |
| <b>todo</b> corazón sensible,                  | every heart that feels.              |
| <b>todo</b> remedio es ya vano,                | every appliance is now vain.         |
| en <b>todo</b> caso ; á <b>toda</b> hora,      | in every case ; at all hours.        |
| por <b>todos</b> modos,                        | in every way (in all ways).          |
| en <b>todas</b> partes,                        | everywhere (in all directions).      |

**REMARK.** — After *por*, *todo* frequently means the same as *único*, *a*, *sole*, *only*, with which it is freely exchanged: —

|                                  |  |                               |
|----------------------------------|--|-------------------------------|
| me dió por <b>toda</b> respuesta |  | he gave me as his only answer |
| que . . .                        |  | that . . .                    |

**341.** As a substantive, *todo* refers to persons and things, in all genders and in both numbers: —

*a.* In the singular, mostly as a neuter — *all*, *everything*: —

|  |  |                                    |
|--|--|------------------------------------|
| <b>todo</b> se concluyó,                 |  | all is over (is finished).         |
| <b>todo</b> era gritos y alboroto,       |  | all was shrieks and confusion.     |
| hombre pobre <b>todo</b> es trazas,      |  | a poor man is all projects.        |
| <b>todo</b> manifiesta su remordimiento, |  | everything proves his compunction. |
| en esta mesa hay de <b>todo</b> ,        |  | on this table there is everything. |

**REMARK.** — The neuter use of *todo* is frequently associated with a pleonastic *lo*: —

|  |  |                                    |
|--|--|------------------------------------|
| <b>lo</b> ha confesado <b>todo</b> ,       |  | he has confessed everything.       |
| <b>todo</b> <b>lo</b> gastas en vanidades, |  | you spend your all on frivolities. |

*b.* In the plural in both genders: —

|   |  |   |
|---|--|---|
| <b>todos</b> están ya presos,                 |  | all are now in prison.                                      |
| aprobaron la medida <b>todos</b> ,            |  | all favored the measure.                                    |
| no <b>todos</b> piensan del mismo modo,       |  | not all think the same way (have the same way of thinking). |
| las he visto á <b>todas</b> ( <i>women</i> ), |  | I have seen them all.                                       |
| <b>todos</b> están de venta ( <i>books</i> ), |  | all are for sale.   |

**342.** **Todo** is often synonymous with *cualquier cosa*, *anything* (*whatever*) in a good or bad sense: —

|                                      |  |                                  |
|--------------------------------------|--|----------------------------------|
| ese hombre es capaz de <b>todo</b> , |  | that man is capable of anything. |
| á <b>todo</b> me hallarás dispuesto, |  | you will find me ready for a.    |

**343.** Finally, **todo** qualifies relative pronouns, neuter adjectives (substantives) and adverbs, in the sense of *every one, all, quite, thoroughly*; as, *todo el que, todo aquel que, every one who*; *todos los que, all those who*; *todos cuantos, todo cuanto, all who or that*; *todo lo cual, all of which*; *todo lo que, all that*; *todo cansado, quite tired*; *todo lo demás, all the rest (omne cæterum)*, etc.

**344.** **Uno, a**, is an adjective, a substantive, and a pronoun, signifying in the singular *an or a, one, each other*; and in the plural, *some, each other, one another*:—

*a.* Singular:—

|   |                                 |
|---|---------------------------------|
| <b>un</b> hombre (§ 123); <b>una</b> ventana,   | a man; a window.                |
| <b>un</b> día; <b>una</b> semana,               | one day; one week.              |
| ¿tiene V. <b>un</b> libro? — tengo <b>uno</b> , | have you a book? — I have one.  |
| ¿puede <b>uno</b> ver qué es?                   | can one see what it is?         |
| los dos hermanos se quieren <b>uno</b>          | the brother and sister are fond |
| á <b>otra</b> (§ 106), [en <b>otro</b> ,        | of each other.                  |
| estos hombres se apoyan <b>uno</b>              | these men sustain one another.  |

*b.* Plural:—

|   |                                |
|---|--------------------------------|
| <b>unos</b> bollos; <b>unas</b> almendras,              | (some) cakes; almonds.         |
| son <b>unos</b> desconocidos,                           | they are unknown persons.      |
| <b>unos</b> van y <b>otros</b> vienen, [ <b>otros</b> , | some go and others come.       |
| los obreros se ayudan <b>unos</b> á                     | the laborers help one another. |
| estas planchas de metal se dan                          | these plates of metal strike   |
| <b>una</b> contra <b>otra</b> , or <b>unas</b>          | against each other, or one     |
| contra <b>otras</b> ,                                   | another.                       |

**345.** *Uno*, as an indefinite numeral, may stand in contrasted clauses, but usually at the present day without the article:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| de un momento á otro,                    | from one minute to another.                     |
| de una manera ú otra,                    | in one way or another.                          |
| uno fué justiciado y el otro<br>soltado, | the one was executed and the<br>other set free. |
| uno y otro; uno ú otro,                  | both; either.                                   |
| ni uno ni otro,                          | neither.  |

**346.** As an indefinite pronoun, *uno* may be followed by the partitive genitive : —

|                              |                               |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| abrió una de las ventanas,   | he opened one of the windows. |
| me regaló uno de sus libros, | he gave me one of his books.  |

*a.* The plural of *uno* in this construction is **algunos**, *as, some*, not *unos* : —

|                               |                      |
|-------------------------------|----------------------|
| <b>algunos</b> de sus amigos, | some of his friends. |
|-------------------------------|----------------------|

REMARK. — We may say **unos** amigos *suyos*, *some friends of his*, but not **unos de sus amigos**. The singular of **alguno** may be used thus distributively, but it is vaguer than **uno** — *some one or other of his friends*.

**347.** *Uno, a*, replaces a substantive with or without an adjective, to avoid the repetition of the former : —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| tengo un reloj de oro y uno de<br>plata, ambos preciosos,      | I have a gold watch and a silver<br>one, both very fine ones.      |
| unas veces gastaba levita negra,<br>y otras una de colores,    | sometimes he wore a black frock<br>coat, and others a colored one. |
| hablando de carabinas, él tiene<br>una á cañon liso muy buena, | speaking of rifles, he has a very<br>good smooth-bore (one).       |
| careciendo yo de abrigo, él me<br>prestó uno viejo suyo,       | I being without an overcoat, he<br>lent me an old one of his.      |

**348.** **Uno**, *one*; **se**, *they, you*; **gente**, *people*; are used in the vague signification of *some one, any one*; or the verb may be put in the third person plural : —

no sabe **uno** qué hacer, }  
 no **se** sabe qué hacer, }  
 llama **gente**, or llama álguien,  
 llaman á la puerta,  
 ¿quién es? — **gente** de paz.<sup>1</sup>

one does not know what to do.  
 somebody knocks.  
 there is a rap at the door.  
 who is it? — a friend (peace-folk).

**349. Varios, as, several, a good many,** is used as an adjective and a substantive: —

**varios** amigos vinieron,  
 de estos brillantes tengo **varios**,  
 he visto **varios** ejemplares de  
 esta obra,

several friends came. [ral.  
 of these diamonds, I have seve-  
 I have seen several copies of this  
 work.

REMARK. — Instead of *varios*, and parallel with it, the term **una porcion de**, a considerable number of, considerable, several, is popularly used followed by a noun in the singular or plural, or by a collective word: —

aboné **una porcion de** dinero,  
**una porcion de** gente,  
 he gastado **una porcion de**  
 duros en ello,  
**una porcion de** veces,  
 recibí **una porcion de** encargos,

I paid considerable money.  
 a considerable number of people.  
 I have expended several dollars  
 on that.  
 several times, a number of times.  
 I was entrusted with several  
 messages.

### The Verb.

**350.** Before proceeding to the conjugation of verbs, it is indispensable to give the simple tenses of the auxiliary verb **haber** . . . , *to have* . . . , by the aid of which the compound tenses of all other verbs are formed.

---

<sup>1</sup> In every Spanish apartment-door there is fixed a *ventanilla* or small opening, with a metal slide, which the servant slips back on answering a knock or ring, and inquires, ¿Quién? refusing to open till the caller exclaims, ¡Gente de paz! or simply, ¡Paz! *peace*; and among the old-fashioned, ¡Ave Maria!



REMARK. — *To have*, as an auxiliary, then, is expressed in Spanish by *haber*; but, as an independent verb, meaning *to possess*, by *tener*: —

|   |                             |
|---|-----------------------------|
| tengo un libro, <i>not</i> he un libro, | I have a book.              |
| he tenido un libro, <i>not</i> }        | I have had a book.          |
| tengo tenido un libro, }                |                             |
| tenerlo, <i>but</i> haberlo tenido,     | to have it, to have had it. |

Still *tener* may be occasionally employed as an auxiliary, as well as other verbs: —

la carta que *tengo* (*or llevo*) | the letter that I have written.  
escrita,

#### Conjugation of the Active Auxiliary Verb.

#### 351. *Haber*, *to have*; stems: *hab*, *hub*, *habr*.

| INFINITIVE.              |                    | GERUND.                          | PAST PARTICIPLE.          |
|--------------------------|--------------------|----------------------------------|---------------------------|
| hab-er, <i>to have</i> . |                    | hab-lendo, <i>having</i> .       | hab-ido, <i>had</i> .     |
| INDICATIVE MODE.         |                    | SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.                |                           |
| Present.                 |                    | Present.                         |                           |
| he,                      | <i>I have.</i>     | hay-a,                           | <i>I may have.</i>        |
| has,                     | <i>thou hast.</i>  | hay-as,                          | <i>thou mayst have.</i>   |
| ha,                      | <i>he has.</i>     | hay-a,                           | <i>he may have.</i>       |
| hemos,                   | <i>we have.</i>    | hay-amos,                        | <i>we may have.</i>       |
| hab-éis,                 | <i>ye have.</i>    | hay-áis,                         | <i>ye may have.</i>       |
| han,                     | <i>they have.</i>  | hay-an,                          | <i>they may have.</i>     |
| Imperfect.               |                    | Imperfect ( <i>first form</i> ). |                           |
| hab-ía,                  | <i>I had.</i>      | hub-iera,                        | <i>I might have.</i>      |
| hab-ías,                 | <i>thou hadst.</i> | hub-ieras,                       | <i>thou mightst have.</i> |
| hab-ía,                  | <i>he had.</i>     | hub-iera,                        | <i>he might have.</i>     |
| hab-íamos,               | <i>we had.</i>     | hub-iéramos,                     | <i>we might have.</i>     |
| hab-íais,                | <i>ye had.</i>     | hub-iérais,                      | <i>ye might have.</i>     |
| hab-ían,                 | <i>they had.</i>   | hub-ieran,                       | <i>they might have.</i>   |

| INDICATIVE MODE.  | SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.  |
|---|--|
| <p><b>Past Definite.</b></p> <p>hub-e, <i>I had.</i><br/> hub-iste, <i>thou hadst.</i><br/> hub-o, <i>he had.</i><br/> hub-imos, <i>we had.</i><br/> hub-isteis, <i>ye had.</i><br/> hub-ieron, <i>they had.</i></p>  | <p><b>Imperfect (second form).</b></p> <p>hub-iese, <i>I might have.</i><br/> hub-ieses, <i>thou mightst have.</i><br/> hub-iese, <i>he might have.</i><br/> hub-iésemos, <i>we might have.</i><br/> hub-iéséis, <i>ye might have.</i><br/> hub-iesen, <i>they might have.</i></p> |
| <p><b>Future.</b></p> <p>habr-é, <i>I shall have.</i><br/> habr-ás, <i>thou wilt have.</i><br/> habr-á, <i>he will have.</i><br/> habr-émos, <i>we shall have.</i><br/> habr-éis, <i>ye will have.</i><br/> habr-án, <i>they will have.</i></p>                               | <p><b>Future.</b></p> <p>hub-iere, <i>I should have.</i><br/> hub-ieres, <i>thou shouldst have.</i><br/> hub-iere, <i>he should have.</i><br/> hub-iéremos, <i>we should have.</i><br/> hub-iéreís, <i>ye should have.</i><br/> hub-ieren, <i>they should have.</i></p>            |
| <p><b>Conditional (apodasis).</b></p> <p>habr-ía, <i>I should have.</i><br/> habr-ías, <i>thou wouldst have.</i><br/> habr-ía, <i>he would have.</i><br/> habr-íamos, <i>we should have.</i><br/> habr-íais, <i>ye would have.</i><br/> habr-ían, <i>they would have.</i></p> | <p><b>Conditional (protasis).</b></p> <p>hubiera or hubiese,<br/> hubieras or hubieses,<br/> hubiera or hubiese,<br/> hubiéramos or hubiésemos,<br/> hubiérais or hubiéseis,<br/> hubieran or hubiesen,</p> <p style="text-align: right;">(if) <i>I had, etc.</i></p>              |

## Remarks on Haber.

352. In nearly all the persons of the indicative present, the original Latin stem and endings have shrunk, while the vowels *a* and *e* of the first person singular have been *attracted* and reduced to *ē* (*ai* = *e*), after the analogy of *sé* from *sapio* (*sai-po*), and *quepo* from *capió* (*caipo*). Hence:—

|                      |                                     |                        |                |
|----------------------|-------------------------------------|------------------------|----------------|
| Latin <i>habeo</i> , | by <i>kai-bo</i> ,                  | becomes modern Spanish | <b>he.</b>     |
| <i>habes</i> ,       | <i>habs</i>                         |                        | <b>has.</b>    |
| <i>habet</i> ,       | <i>ha-bt</i> ,                      |                        | <b>ha.</b>     |
| <i>habēmus</i> ,     | <i>habēmos</i> ( <i>archaic</i> ),  |                        | <b>hemos.</b>  |
| <i>habētis</i> ,     | <i>habēdes</i> ( <i>obsolete</i> ), |                        | <b>habēis.</b> |
| <i>habent</i> ,      | <i>hān-t</i> ,                      |                        | <b>han.</b>    |

a. The subjunctive present is from the Latin *habeam* = *hab-ya*[*m*], *haya*, so that the *y* here properly belongs to the ending.

b. The past definite *hube* is formed from *habui*, by the above law of vowel-attraction, yielding *haubi* (old Span. *hobe*). From this preterit-stem *hub*, are derived the imperfects and future subjunctive, by regular processes : Lat. *habueram* = *haubēra*, *hobiera* (§ 19), *hubiera*; *habuissem* = *haubēsse*, *hobiese*, *hubiese*; *habuerim* = *haubēri*, *hobiere*, *hubiere*.

c. The future and conditional indicative are properly compound tenses made up of the endings of the present and imperfect joined to the infinitive. In the case of *haber*, the *e* falls away, leaving the stem *habr* to receive the endings *e*, *as*, *a*; *ta*, *tas*, *ta*, etc.

353. Apart from its character as an auxiliary, *haber* is not at present employed as an independent verb, save in the following cases (§ 350, remark) :—

a. In certain special significations :—

el caco no pudo ser **habido**,  
**habido** consejo,  
se las **habrá** conmigo,  
cuya ánima Dios **haya**,

the thief could not be taken.  
a council having been held.  
he will have to do with me.  
may God have his soul.

b. In the simple tenses, when *haber* is followed by the preposition *de* and the infinitive of some other verb; it then has the meaning of *duty*, or refers to *future* action — *to be to*, *to have to*, *must* :—

¿que **había de** hacer yo? [casa,  
hoy **hemos de** comer fuera de  
mañana **has de** trabajar,  
**han de** tenerlo en casa á la una,

what was I to do?  
to-day we are to dine out.  
to-morrow you are to work.  
they must have it home by one.

c. In the simple and compound tenses, when followed by *que* and the infinitive of some other verb. **Haber** is

then used impersonally, and denotes *obligation* or *necessity*, and is translated by *to be necessary*:—

**hubo que** emplear dos días en ello,

¿qué **hay que** hacer?

**ha habido que** salir á escape,

**hay que** tener paciencia,

**hay, ántes, que** condenar esta política en los reyes Católicos,

no **hay que** dudarle,

no **hay que** censurarlo en él,

it was necessary to lay out a couple of days on it.

what is to be done? [haste.

it was necessary to get out in we must have patience.

this policy is rather to be condemned in the Catholic sovereigns.

there is no doubting it.

it is not right to blame him for it.

REMARK. — In the personal verb, the imperative singular **he** for *habe*, and popularly the plural **hed** for *habed*, still survive with the adverbs **aquí**, *here*; **ahí** and **allí**, *there*; and regularly attach to themselves the pronoun objects *me, te, le, la, lo, nos, os, los, las*. The radical meaning of **he** in those positions is not *have*, but *behold*:—

**he aquí** (*behold here*),<sup>1</sup>

**he ahí** (*behold there*),

**héme aquí**; **hélo ahí**,

**hélos**; **hélas**,

**hédnos aquí**, Señor, ante vuestra presencia,

this is (*pointing to what follows*). [*cedes*].

that is (*pointing to what pre-*  
*here I am*; *there it is*).

behold them, *or there they are*.

behold us here, Lord, in thy presence.

**354.** As an impersonal verb, **haber** regularly builds its own compound tenses:—

| SIMPLE TENSES.                         |                                       |   |
|--|---------------------------------------|---|
| Infinitive.                            | Gerund.                               | Absolute Past Participle.                 |
| <b>haber</b> , <i>there . . to be.</i> | <b>habiendo</b> , <i>there being.</i> | <b>habido</b> , <i>there having been.</i> |

<sup>1</sup> In Biblical language, simply *lo* or *behold*:—

¡**he aquí**, os lo he dicho ántes! | behold, I have told you before!

| Indicative Mode.   | Subjunctive Mode.  |
|--|--|
| <p>PRESENT.<br/><b>hay</b>, <i>there is, there are.</i></p> <p>IMPERFECT.<br/><b>había</b>, <i>there was, there were.</i></p> <p>PAST DEFINITE.<br/><b>hubo</b>, <i>there was, there were.</i></p> <p>FUTURE.<br/><b>habrá</b>, <i>there will be.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>apodasis</i>).<br/><b>habría</b>, <i>there would be.</i></p>  | <p>PRESENT.<br/><b>haya</b>, <i>there may be.</i></p> <p>IMPERFECT (<i>first form</i>).<br/><b>hubiera</b>, <i>there might be.</i></p> <p>IMPERFECT (<i>second form</i>).<br/><b>hubiese</b>, <i>there might be.</i></p> <p>FUTURE.<br/><b>hubiere</b>, <i>there should be.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>protasis</i>). [<i>were.</i>]<br/><b>hubiera or hubiese</b>, (<i>if</i>) <i>there</i></p>   |
| Imperative Mode:— <b>haya or que haya</b> , <i>let there be.</i>   |  |
| COMPOUND TENSES.   |  |
| Infinitive Past.   | Gerund Past.   |
| <b>haber habido</b> , <i>there . . to have been.</i>   | <b>habiendo habido</b> , <i>there having been.</i>   |
| Indicative Mode.   | Subjunctive Mode.  |
| <p>PAST INDEFINITE.<br/><b>ha habido</b>, <i>there has,— have, been.</i></p> <p>PLUPERFECT.<br/><b>había habido</b>, <i>there had been.</i></p> <p>PAST ANTERIOR.<br/><b>hubo habido</b>, <i>there had been.</i></p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT.<br/><b>habrá habido</b>, <i>there will have been.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>apodasis</i>).<br/><b>habría habido</b>, <i>there would have been.</i></p> | <p>PAST INDEFINITE.<br/><b>haya habido</b>, <i>there may have been.</i></p> <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>first form</i>). [<i>been.</i>]<br/><b>hubiera habido</b>, <i>there might have</i></p> <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>second form</i>). [<i>been.</i>]<br/><b>hubiese habido</b>, <i>there might have</i></p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT. [<i>been.</i>]<br/><b>hubiere habido</b>, <i>there should have</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>protasis</i>).<br/><b>hubiera or hubiese habido</b>, (<i>if</i>) <i>there had been.</i></p> |

## Remarks on Haber Impersonal.

355. The infinitives are dependent on other verbs in some finite form:—

puede haber — haber habido, | there may be — have been.

356. *Hay* is a contraction of *ha* with the now obsolete *y* (Lat. *ibi* = *i'i*, *y*), *there*; **ha-y**, *it has there, there is, there are* (Fr. *il y a*). The old Spanish original *ha*, negative *non ha* (still preserved in Portuguese), has been handed down in the legal phrase for denying a petition: **no ha lugar**, *there is no occasion*; or for dismissing a case — equivalent to *nolle prosequi*.

357. A vulgar, but very common, form of the imperative and desiderative *haya* among the illiterate classes, is **haiga**, as if from *faciat* (*faica, faiga, haiga*):—

|                              |  |                         |
|------------------------------|--|-------------------------|
| que <b>haiga</b> salud,      |  | let there be health.    |
| que no <b>haiga</b> novedad, |  | let nothing befall you. |

Both these phrases are heard among the lowly in taking leave of one another. Likewise in the *personal* verb, in the respectful formula employed in an undertone when a deceased person is referred to. Thus, Ramon de la Cruz, in the "Sainete" entitled *Las Castañeras Picadas*, says humorously:—

Felices, señora Paca  
 Javiera, con muchos gustos,  
 Y los aumentos de gracia  
 Que yo la deseo en vida  
 Del difunto (que Dios **haiga**).

## Active Conjugation of the Regular Verb.

358. The inflection of all regular verbs in the Active Voice proceeds after three models which are characterized by the ending of the infinitive, thus:—

Infinitives in **-ar** characterize the First Conj.: **hablar**, *to speak*.

Infinitives in **-er** characterize the Second Conj.: **comer**, *to eat*.

Infinitives in **-ir** characterize the Third Conj.: **vivir**, *to live*.

a. All verbs, whether regular, irregular, impersonal, or defective, belong to the conjugation indicated by their infinitive-ending, however much their inflection may differ in other respects from the models of regular verbs.

359. In the regular verb the terminations are applied directly to the unchanged stem, found by suppressing the infinitive-endings:—

|                   |                     |  |           |           |
|-------------------|---------------------|--|-----------|-----------|
| habl- <b>ar</b> ; | habl- <b>amos</b> , |  | to speak; | we speak. |
| com- <b>er</b> ;  | com- <b>emos</b> ,  |  | to eat;   | we eat.   |
| viv- <b>ir</b> ;  | viv- <b>imos</b> ,  |  | to live;  | we live.  |

a. The indicative future and conditional are originally compound forms, consisting of the infinitive joined to the endings of the indicative present and imperfect of the auxiliary verb **haber**:—

|                    |                    |  |                              |
|--------------------|--------------------|--|------------------------------|
| hablar- <b>é</b> ; | hablar- <b>é</b> , |  | I shall — I should speak.    |
| vivir- <b>án</b> ; | vivir- <b>án</b> , |  | they will — they would live. |

REMARK. — Hence the literal meaning of the Spanish future is “I have to speak,” expressed likewise by *he de hablar*; and the literal meaning of the conditional is “I had to speak,” or *había de hablar*. Anciently, the object-pronoun could stand between the infinitive and the auxiliary; as, *hablaros<sup>he</sup>*, *hablarles<sup>ha</sup>*, and *hablarle<sup>sta</sup>*; modern: *os hablaré*, *les hablaré*. Thus the proverb in its original form:—

|   |  |                                  |
|---|--|----------------------------------|
| díme con quien andas, <b>decirte<sup>he</sup></b> |  | tell me with whom you associate, |
| quién eres ( <i>for te diré</i> ),                |  | I will tell you what you are.    |

**360.** In the irregular verb throughout, the gerund, past participle, present and imperfect indicative, present subjunctive, and imperative, are derived from the stem of the infinitive (*present stem*); the imperfect (both forms) and future subjunctive are derived from the stem of the past definite (*preterit stem*); the future and conditional of the indicative always follow the *infinitive* by adding to it the endings of *haber* (§ 352, c):—

**I. Present Stem :—**

Infinitive,  
Gerund (*usually*),  
Past participle,  
Present indicative,  
Present subjunctive,  
Imperative,  
Imperfect indicative.

**II. Preterit Stem :—**

Past definite indicative,  
Imperfects subjunctive,  
Future subjunctive,  
Gerund (*occasionally*).

**III. From the Infinitive :—**

Future indicative,  
Conditional of the indicative.

**361.** Table of verb-endings :—

|    | INFINITIVE. |  | GERUND. | PAST PARTICIPLE. |  |  |
|----|-------------|--|---------|------------------|--|--|
| 1. | -ar,        |  | -ando,  | -ado.            |  |  |
| 2. | -er,        |  | -iendo, | -ido.            |  |  |
| 3. | -ir,        |  | -iendo, | -ido.            |  |  |

| INDICATIVE MODE. |        |        |  |  |  | SUBJUNCTIVE MODE. |        |        |  |  |  |
|------------------|--------|--------|--|--|--|-------------------|--------|--------|--|--|--|
| Present.         |        |        |  |  |  | Present.          |        |        |  |  |  |
| 1.               | 2.     | 3.     |  |  |  | 1.                | 2.     | 3.     |  |  |  |
| -o,              | -o,    | -o.    |  |  |  | -e,               | -a,    | -a.    |  |  |  |
| -as,             | -es,   | -es.   |  |  |  | -es,              | -as,   | -as.   |  |  |  |
| -a,              | -e,    | -e.    |  |  |  | -e,               | -a,    | -a.    |  |  |  |
| -amos,           | -emos, | -imos. |  |  |  | -emos,            | -amos, | -amos. |  |  |  |
| -áis,            | -éis,  | -ís.   |  |  |  | -éis,             | -áis,  | -áis.  |  |  |  |
| -an,             | -en,   | -en.   |  |  |  | -en,              | -an,   | -an.   |  |  |  |



| INDICATIVE MODE.      |          |          | SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.                      |            |            |
|-----------------------|----------|----------|--|------------|------------|
| <b>Imperfect.</b>     |          |          | <b>Imperfect (<i>first form</i>).</b>  |            |            |
| 1.                    | 2.       | 3.       | 1.                                     | 2.         | 3.         |
| -aba,                 | -ía,     | -ía.     | -ara,                                  | -iera,     | -iera.     |
| -abas,                | -ías,    | -ías.    | -aras,                                 | -ieras,    | -ieras.    |
| -aba,                 | -ía,     | -ía.     | -ara,                                  | -iera,     | -iera.     |
| -ábamós,              | -íamos,  | -íamos.  | -áramós,                               | -iéramós,  | -iéramós.  |
| -ábais,               | -íais,   | -íais.   | -árais,                                | -lérais,   | -lérais.   |
| -aban,                | -ían,    | -ían.    | -aran,                                 | -ieran,    | -ieran.    |
| <b>Past Definite.</b> |          |          | <b>Imperfect (<i>second form</i>).</b> |            |            |
| 1.                    | 2.       | 3.       | 1.                                     | 2.         | 3.         |
| -é,                   | -í,      | -í.      | -ase,                                  | -iese,     | -iese.     |
| -aste,                | -iste,   | -iste.   | -ases,                                 | -ieses,    | -ieses.    |
| -ó,                   | -ló,     | -ló.     | -ase,                                  | -iese,     | -iese.     |
| -amos,                | -imos,   | -imos.   | -ásemós,                               | -iésemós,  | -iésemós.  |
| -ísteis,              | -ísteis, | -ísteis. | -áseis,                                | -léseis,   | -léseis.   |
| -aron,                | -ieron,  | -ieron.  | -asen,                                 | -iesen,    | -iesen.    |
| <b>Future.</b>        |          |          | <b>Future.</b>                         |            |            |
| 1.                    | 2.       | 3.       | 1.                                     | 2.         | 3.         |
| -é,                   | -é,      | -é.      | -are,                                  | -iere,     | -iere.     |
| -ás,                  | -ás,     | -ás.     | -ares,                                 | -ieres,    | -ieres.    |
| -á,                   | -á,      | -á.      | -are,                                  | -iere,     | -iere.     |
| -émos,                | -émos,   | -émos.   | -áremos,                               | -léremos,  | -léremos.  |
| -éis,                 | -éis,    | -éis.    | -áreis,                                | -léreis,   | -léreis.   |
| -án,                  | -án,     | -án.     | -aren,                                 | -ieren,    | -ieren.    |
| <b>Conditional.</b>   |          |          | <b>IMPERATIVE MODE.</b>                |            |            |
| 1.                    | 2.       | 3.       | 1.                                     | 2.         | 3.         |
| -ía,                  | -ía,     | -ía.     | —                                      | —          | —          |
| -ías,                 | -ías,    | -ías.    | -a,                                    | -e,        | -e.        |
| -ía,                  | -ía,     | -ía.     | -e (V.),                               | -a (V.),   | -a (V.).   |
| -íamos,               | -íamos,  | -íamos.  | -emos,                                 | -amos,     | -amos.     |
| -íais,                | -íais,   | -íais.   | -ad,                                   | -ed,       | -id.       |
| -ían,                 | -ían,    | -ían.    | -en (VV.),                             | -an (VV.), | -an (VV.). |

FIRST CONJUGATION.

362. Model verb — *hablar, to speak.*

| SIMPLE TENSES.                  |                             |                                 |
|---------------------------------|-----------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Infinitive.                     | Gerund.                     | Past Participle.                |
| habl-ar, <i>to speak.</i>       | habl-ando, <i>speaking.</i> | habl-ado, <i>spoken.</i>        |
| Indicative Mode.                |                             | Subjunctive Mode.               |
| PRESENT.                        |                             | PRESENT.                        |
| habl-o, <i>I speak.</i>         |                             | habl-e, <i>I may</i>            |
| habl-as, <i>thou speakest.</i>  |                             | habl-es, <i>thou mayst</i>      |
| habl-a, <i>he speaks.</i>       |                             | habl-e, <i>he may</i>           |
| V. habla, <i>you speak.</i>     |                             | V. hablē, <i>you may</i>        |
| habl-amos, <i>we speak.</i>     |                             | habl-emos, <i>we may</i>        |
| habl-ais, <i>ye speak.</i>      |                             | habl-eis, <i>ye may</i>         |
| habl-an, <i>they speak.</i>     |                             | habl-en, <i>they may</i>        |
| VV. hablan, <i>you speak.</i>   |                             | VV. hablen, <i>you may</i>      |
| IMPERFECT.                      |                             | IMPERFECT (first form).         |
| habl-aba, <i>I was</i>          | speaking.                   | habl-ara, <i>I might</i>        |
| habl-abas, <i>thou wast</i>     |                             | habl-aras, <i>thou mightest</i> |
| habl-aba, <i>he was</i>         |                             | habl-ara, <i>he might</i>       |
| V. hablaba, <i>you were</i>     |                             | V. hablara, <i>you might</i>    |
| habl-ábamos, <i>we were</i>     |                             | habl-áramos, <i>we might</i>    |
| habl-ábais, <i>ye were</i>      |                             | habl-árais, <i>ye might</i>     |
| habl-aban, <i>they were</i>     |                             | habl-aran, <i>they might</i>    |
| VV. hablaban, <i>you were</i>   |                             | VV. hablaran, <i>you might</i>  |
| PAST DEFINITE.                  |                             | IMPERFECT (second form).        |
| habl-é, <i>I spoke.</i>         |                             | habl-ase, <i>I might</i>        |
| habl-aste, <i>thou spokest.</i> |                             | habl-ases, <i>thou mightest</i> |
| habl-ó, <i>he spoke.</i>        |                             | habl-ase, <i>he might</i>       |
| V. habló, <i>you spoke.</i>     |                             | V. hablase, <i>you might</i>    |
| habl-amos, <i>we spoke.</i>     |                             | habl-ásemos, <i>we might</i>    |
| habl-ásteis, <i>ye spoke.</i>   |                             | habl-áséis, <i>ye might</i>     |
| habl-arón, <i>they spoke.</i>   |                             | habl-asen, <i>they might</i>    |
| VV. hablaron, <i>you spoke.</i> |                             | VV. hablasen, <i>you might</i>  |

| Indicative Mode.                      |                                 | Subjunctive Mode.                       |                      |
|---------------------------------------|---------------------------------|---|----------------------|
| FUTURE.                               |                                 | FUTURE.                                 |                      |
| hablar-é, <i>I shall</i>              | } speak.                        | habl-are, <i>I should</i>               | } speak.             |
| hablar-ás, <i>thou wilt</i>           |                                 | habl-ares, <i>thou shouldst</i>         |                      |
| hablar-á, <i>he will</i>              |                                 | habl-are, <i>he should</i>              |                      |
| V. hablará, <i>you will</i>           |                                 | V. hablare, <i>you should</i>           |                      |
| hablar-émos, <i>we shall</i>          |                                 | habl-áremos, <i>we should</i>           |                      |
| hablar-éis, <i>ye will</i>            |                                 | habl-áreis, <i>ye should</i>            |                      |
| hablar-án, <i>they will</i>           |                                 | habl-aren, <i>they should</i>           |                      |
| VV. hablarán, <i>you will</i>         | VV. hablaren, <i>you should</i> |   |                      |
| CONDITIONAL ( <i>apodasis</i> ).      |                                 | CONDITIONAL ( <i>protasis</i> ).        |                      |
| hablar-ía, <i>I should</i>            | } speak.                        | hablara or hablase,                     | } (if) I spoke, etc. |
| hablar-ías, <i>thou wouldst</i>       |                                 | hablaras or hablases,                   |                      |
| hablar-ía, <i>he would</i>            |                                 | hablara or hablase,                     |                      |
| V. hablaría, <i>you would</i>         |                                 | V. hablara or hablase,                  |                      |
| hablar-íamos, <i>we should</i>        |                                 | habláramos or hablásemos,               |                      |
| hablar-íais, <i>ye would</i>          |                                 | hablárais or habláséis,                 |                      |
| hablar-ían, <i>they would</i>         |                                 | hablaran or hablasen,                   |                      |
| VV. hablarían, <i>you would</i>       | VV. hablaran or hablasen,       |   |                      |
| Imperative Mode.                      |                                 |   |                      |
| SINGULAR.                             |                                 | PLURAL.                                 |                      |
| —                                     | —                               | habl-emos, <i>let us speak.</i>         |                      |
| habl-a, <i>speak (thou).</i>          |                                 | habl-ad, <i>speak (ye).</i>             |                      |
| habl-e, <i>let him speak.</i>         |                                 | habl-en, <i>let them speak.</i>         |                      |
| hable V., <i>speak.</i>               |                                 | hablen VV., <i>speak.</i>               |                      |
| —                                     | —                               | no habl-emos, <i>let us not speak.</i>  |                      |
| no habl-es, <i>speak (thou) not.</i>  |                                 | no habl-eis, <i>speak (ye) not.</i>     |                      |
| no habl-e, <i>let him not speak.</i>  |                                 | no habl-en, <i>let them not speak.</i>  |                      |
| no hable V., <i>do not speak.</i>     |                                 | no hablen VV., <i>do not speak.</i>     |                      |
| COMPOUND TENSES.                      |                                 |   |                      |
| Infinitive Past.                      |                                 | Gerund Past.                            |                      |
| haber hablado, <i>to have spoken.</i> |                                 | hablando hablado, <i>having spoken.</i> |                      |

| Indicative Mode.      |             |                           | Subjunctive Mode.         |             |                            |
|-----------------------|-------------|---------------------------|---------------------------|-------------|----------------------------|
| PAST INDEFINITE.      |             |                           | PAST INDEFINITE.          |             |                            |
| he hablado,           | <i>I</i>    | } have spoken, etc.       | haya hablado,             | <i>I</i>    | } may have spoken, etc.    |
| has hablado,          | <i>thou</i> |                           | hayas hablado,            | <i>thou</i> |                            |
| ha hablado,           | <i>he</i>   |                           | haya hablado,             | <i>he</i>   |                            |
| V. ha hablado,        | <i>you</i>  |                           | V. haya hablado,          | <i>you</i>  |                            |
| hemos hablado,        | <i>we</i>   |                           | hayamos hablado,          | <i>we</i>   |                            |
| habéis hablado,       | <i>ye</i>   |                           | hayáis hablado,           | <i>ye</i>   |                            |
| han hablado,          | <i>they</i> |                           | hayan hablado,            | <i>they</i> |                            |
| VV. han hablado,      | <i>you</i>  |                           | VV. hayan hablado,        | <i>you</i>  |                            |
| PLUPERFECT.           |             |                           | PLUPERFECT (first form).  |             |                            |
| había hablado,        | <i>I</i>    | } had spoken, etc.        | hubiera hablado,          | <i>I</i>    | } might have spoken, etc.  |
| habías hablado,       | <i>thou</i> |                           | hubieras hablado,         | <i>thou</i> |                            |
| había hablado,        | <i>he</i>   |                           | hubiera hablado,          | <i>he</i>   |                            |
| V. había hablado,     | <i>you</i>  |                           | V. hubiera hablado,       | <i>you</i>  |                            |
| habíamos hablado,     | <i>we</i>   |                           | hubiéramos hablado,       | <i>we</i>   |                            |
| habíais hablado,      | <i>ye</i>   |                           | hubiérais hablado,        | <i>ye</i>   |                            |
| habían hablado,       | <i>they</i> |                           | hubieran hablado,         | <i>they</i> |                            |
| VV. habían hablado,   | <i>you</i>  |                           | VV. hubieran hablado,     | <i>you</i>  |                            |
| PAST ANTERIOR.        |             |                           | PLUPERFECT (second form). |             |                            |
| hube hablado, (when)  | <i>I</i>    | } had spoken, etc.        | hubiese hablado,          | <i>I</i>    | } might have spoken, etc.  |
| hubiste hablado,      | <i>thou</i> |                           | hubieses hablado,         | <i>thou</i> |                            |
| hubo hablado,         | <i>he</i>   |                           | hubiese hablado,          | <i>he</i>   |                            |
| V. hubo hablado,      | <i>you</i>  |                           | V. hubiese hablado,       | <i>you</i>  |                            |
| hubimos hablado,      | <i>we</i>   |                           | hubiésemos hablado,       | <i>we</i>   |                            |
| hubisteis hablado,    | <i>ye</i>   |                           | hubiéseis hablado,        | <i>ye</i>   |                            |
| hubieron hablado,     | <i>they</i> |                           | hubiesen hablado,         | <i>they</i> |                            |
| VV. hubieron hablado, | <i>you</i>  |                           | VV. hubiesen hablado,     | <i>you</i>  |                            |
| FUTURE PERFECT.       |             |                           | FUTURE PERFECT.           |             |                            |
| habré hablado,        | <i>I</i>    | } shall have spoken, etc. | hubiere hablado,          | <i>I</i>    | } should have spoken, etc. |
| habrás hablado,       | <i>thou</i> |                           | hubieres hablado,         | <i>thou</i> |                            |
| habrá hablado,        | <i>he</i>   |                           | hubiere hablado,          | <i>he</i>   |                            |
| V. habrá hablado,     | <i>you</i>  |                           | V. hubiere hablado,       | <i>you</i>  |                            |
| habrémos hablado,     | <i>we</i>   |                           | hubiéremos hablado,       | <i>we</i>   |                            |
| habréis hablado,      | <i>ye</i>   |                           | hubiéreis hablado,        | <i>ye</i>   |                            |
| habrán hablado,       | <i>they</i> |                           | hubieren hablado,         | <i>they</i> |                            |
| VV. habrán hablado,   | <i>you</i>  |                           | VV. hubieren hablado,     | <i>you</i>  |                            |

| Indicative Mode.   | Subjunctive Mode.  |
|--|--|
| <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>apodasis</i>).</p> <div> <div> habría hablado, <i>I</i><br/> habrías hablado, <i>thou</i><br/> habría hablado, <i>he</i><br/> V. habría hablado, <i>you</i><br/> habríamos hablado, <i>we</i><br/> habríais hablado, <i>ye</i><br/> habrían hablado, <i>they</i><br/> VV. habrían hablado, <i>you</i> </div> <div> <i>should have spoken, etc.</i> </div> </div> | <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>protasis</i>).</p> <div> <div> hubiera or hubiese<br/> hubieras or hubieses<br/> hubiera or hubiese<br/> V. hubiera or hubiese<br/> hubiéramos or hubiésemos<br/> hubiérais or hubiéseis<br/> hubieran or hubiesen<br/> VV. hubieran or hubiesen </div> <div> <i>(if) I had spoken, etc.</i> </div> </div> |

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

363. Model verb — **comer**, *to eat*.

| SIMPLE TENSES.   |   |                         |
|--|---|-------------------------|
| Infinitive.  | Gerund.   | Past Participle.        |
| com-er, <i>to eat</i> .  | com-iendo, <i>eating</i> .  | com-ido, <i>eaten</i> . |
| Indicative Mode.   | Subjunctive Mode.   |                         |
| <p>PRESENT.</p> <div> <div> cóm-o, <i>I eat</i>.<br/> com-es, <i>thou eatest</i>.<br/> com-e, <i>he eats</i>.<br/> V. come, <i>you eat</i>.<br/> com-emos, <i>we eat</i>.<br/> com-eis, <i>ye eat</i>.<br/> com-en, <i>they eat</i>.<br/> VV. comen, <i>you eat</i>. </div> </div> | <p>PRESENT.</p> <div> <div> com-a, <i>I may</i><br/> com-as, <i>thou mayst</i><br/> com-a, <i>he may</i><br/> V. coma, <i>you may</i><br/> com-amos, <i>we may</i><br/> com-ais, <i>ye may</i><br/> com-an, <i>they may</i><br/> VV. coman, <i>you may</i> </div> <div> <i>eat,</i> </div> </div> |                         |

| Indicative Mode.   | Subjunctive Mode.   |
|--|---|
| IMPERFECT.   | IMPERFECT ( <i>first form</i> ).  |
| com- <i>ía</i> , <i>I was</i><br>com- <i>ías</i> , <i>thou wast</i><br>com- <i>ía</i> , <i>he was</i><br>V. com- <i>ía</i> , <i>you were</i><br>com- <i>íamos</i> , <i>we were</i><br>com- <i>iais</i> , <i>ye were</i><br>com- <i>ían</i> , <i>they were</i><br>VV. com- <i>ían</i> , <i>you were</i>                               | com- <i>iera</i> , <i>I might</i><br>com- <i>ieras</i> , <i>thou mightest</i><br>com- <i>iera</i> , <i>he might</i><br>V. com- <i>iera</i> , <i>you might</i><br>com- <i>iéramos</i> , <i>we might</i><br>com- <i>iérais</i> , <i>ye might</i><br>com- <i>ieran</i> , <i>they might</i><br>VV. com- <i>ieran</i> , <i>you might</i>                                 |
| eating.  | eat.  |
| PAST DEFINITE.   | IMPERFECT ( <i>second form</i> ).   |
| com- <i>í</i> , <i>I ate.</i><br>com- <i>iste</i> , <i>thou atest.</i><br>com- <i>ió</i> , <i>he ate.</i><br>V. com- <i>ió</i> , <i>you ate.</i><br>com- <i>imos</i> , <i>we ate.</i><br>com- <i>istéis</i> , <i>ye ate.</i><br>com- <i>ieron</i> , <i>they ate.</i><br>VV. com- <i>ieron</i> , <i>you ate.</i>                      | com- <i>iese</i> , <i>I might</i><br>com- <i>ieses</i> , <i>thou mightest</i><br>com- <i>iese</i> , <i>he might</i><br>V. com- <i>iese</i> , <i>you might</i><br>com- <i>iésemos</i> , <i>we might</i><br>com- <i>iéseis</i> , <i>ye might</i><br>com- <i>iesen</i> , <i>they might</i><br>VV. com- <i>iesen</i> , <i>you might</i>                                 |
| eat.   | eat.  |
| FUTURE.  | FUTURE.   |
| comer- <i>é</i> , <i>I shall</i><br>comer- <i>ás</i> , <i>thou wilt</i><br>comer- <i>á</i> , <i>he will</i><br>V. comer- <i>á</i> , <i>you will</i><br>comer- <i>émos</i> , <i>we shall</i><br>comer- <i>éis</i> , <i>ye will</i><br>comer- <i>án</i> , <i>they will</i><br>VV. comer- <i>án</i> , <i>you will</i>                   | com- <i>iere</i> , <i>I should</i><br>com- <i>ieres</i> , <i>thou shouldst</i><br>com- <i>iere</i> , <i>he should</i><br>V. com- <i>iere</i> , <i>you should</i><br>com- <i>iéremos</i> , <i>we should</i><br>com- <i>iéreis</i> , <i>ye should</i><br>com- <i>ieren</i> , <i>they should</i><br>VV. com- <i>ieren</i> , <i>you should</i>                          |
| eat.   | (if) I ate, etc.  |
| CONDITIONAL ( <i>apodasis</i> ).   | CONDITIONAL ( <i>protasis</i> ).  |
| comer- <i>ía</i> , <i>I should</i><br>comer- <i>ías</i> , <i>thou wouldst</i><br>comer- <i>ía</i> , <i>he would</i><br>V. comer- <i>ía</i> , <i>you would</i><br>comer- <i>íamos</i> , <i>we should</i><br>comer- <i>iais</i> , <i>ye would</i><br>comer- <i>ían</i> , <i>they would</i><br>VV. comer- <i>ían</i> , <i>you would</i> | com- <i>iera</i> or com- <i>iese</i> ,<br>com- <i>ieras</i> or com- <i>ieses</i> ,<br>com- <i>iera</i> or com- <i>iese</i> ,<br>V. com- <i>iera</i> or com- <i>iese</i> ,<br>com- <i>iéramos</i> or com- <i>iésemos</i> ,<br>com- <i>iérais</i> or com- <i>iéseis</i> ,<br>com- <i>ieran</i> or com- <i>iesen</i> ,<br>VV. com- <i>ieran</i> or com- <i>iesen</i> , |
| eat.   | (if) I ate, etc.  |

| Imperative Mode.                    |                         |                                       |                          |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------|---------------------------------------|--------------------------|
| SINGULAR.                           |                         | PLURAL.                               |                          |
| com-e,                              | <i>eat (thou).</i>      | com-amos,                             | <i>let us eat.</i>       |
| com-a,                              | <i>let him eat.</i>     | com-ed,                               | <i>eat (ye).</i>         |
| coma V.,                            | <i>eat.</i>             | com-an,                               | <i>let them eat.</i>     |
|                                     |                         | coman VV.,                            | <i>eat.</i>              |
| no com-as,                          | <i>eat (thou) not.</i>  | no com-amos,                          | <i>let us not eat.</i>   |
| no com-a,                           | <i>let him not eat.</i> | no com-ais,                           | <i>eat (ye) not.</i>     |
| no coma V.,                         | <i>do not eat.</i>      | no com-an,                            | <i>let them not eat.</i> |
|                                     |                         | no coman VV.,                         | <i>do not eat.</i>       |
| COMPOUND TENSES.                    |                         |                                       |                          |
| Infinitive Past.                    |                         | Gerund Past.                          |                          |
| haber comido, <i>to have eaten.</i> |                         | habiendo comido, <i>having eaten.</i> |                          |
| Indicative Mode.                    |                         | Subjunctive Mode.                     |                          |
| PAST INDEFINITE.                    |                         | PAST INDEFINITE.                      |                          |
| he comido,                          | <i>I</i>                | haya comido,                          | <i>I</i>                 |
| has comido,                         | <i>thou</i>             | hayas comido,                         | <i>thou</i>              |
| ha comido,                          | <i>he</i>               | haya comido,                          | <i>he</i>                |
| V. ha comido,                       | <i>you</i>              | V. haya comido,                       | <i>you</i>               |
| hemos comido,                       | <i>we</i>               | hayámos comido,                       | <i>we</i>                |
| habels comido,                      | <i>ye</i>               | hayáis comido,                        | <i>ye</i>                |
| han comido,                         | <i>they</i>             | hayan comido,                         | <i>they</i>              |
| VV. han comido,                     | <i>you</i>              | VV. hayan comido,                     | <i>you</i>               |
|                                     |                         |                                       |                          |
| PLUPERFECT.                         |                         | PLUPERFECT ( <i>first form</i> ).     |                          |
| había comido,                       | <i>I</i>                | hubiera comido,                       | <i>I</i>                 |
| habías comido,                      | <i>thou</i>             | hubieras comido,                      | <i>thou</i>              |
| había comido,                       | <i>he</i>               | hubiera comido,                       | <i>he</i>                |
| V. había comido,                    | <i>you</i>              | V. hubiera comido,                    | <i>you</i>               |
| habíamos comido,                    | <i>we</i>               | hubiéramos comido,                    | <i>we</i>                |
| habíais comido,                     | <i>ye</i>               | hubiérais comido,                     | <i>ye</i>                |
| habían comido,                      | <i>they</i>             | hubieran comido,                      | <i>they</i>              |
| VV. habían comido,                  | <i>you</i>              | VV. hubieran comido,                  | <i>you</i>               |

| Indicative Mode.   | Subjunctive Mode.                |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
|--|----------------------------------|----------------------------------|-----------------------------|--------------------------|------------------------------|-----------------------------|-----------------------------|------------------------------|---------------------------------|--|--------------------------|----------------------------------|------------------------------|---------------------------|-------------------------------|------------------------------|-----------------------------|------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| <p>PAST ANTERIOR.</p> <table> <tr><td>hube comido, (when) <i>I</i></td><td rowspan="8">} <i>had eaten, etc.</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubiste comido, <i>thou</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubo comido, <i>he</i></td></tr> <tr><td>V. hubo comido, <i>you</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubimos comido, <i>we</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubisteis comido, <i>ye</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubieron comido, <i>they</i></td></tr> <tr><td>VV. hubieron comido, <i>you</i></td></tr> </table>                            | hube comido, (when) <i>I</i>     | } <i>had eaten, etc.</i>         | hubiste comido, <i>thou</i> | hubo comido, <i>he</i>   | V. hubo comido, <i>you</i>   | hubimos comido, <i>we</i>   | hubisteis comido, <i>ye</i> | hubieron comido, <i>they</i> | VV. hubieron comido, <i>you</i> | <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>second form</i>).</p> <table> <tr><td>hubiese comido, <i>I</i></td><td rowspan="8">} <i>might have eaten, etc.</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubieses comido, <i>thou</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubiese comido, <i>he</i></td></tr> <tr><td>V. hubiese comido, <i>you</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubiésemos comido, <i>we</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubiéséis comido, <i>ye</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubiesen comido, <i>they</i></td></tr> <tr><td>VV. hubiesen comido, <i>you</i></td></tr> </table> | hubiese comido, <i>I</i> | } <i>might have eaten, etc.</i>  | hubieses comido, <i>thou</i> | hubiese comido, <i>he</i> | V. hubiese comido, <i>you</i> | hubiésemos comido, <i>we</i> | hubiéséis comido, <i>ye</i> | hubiesen comido, <i>they</i> | VV. hubiesen comido, <i>you</i> |
| hube comido, (when) <i>I</i>   | } <i>had eaten, etc.</i>         |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiste comido, <i>thou</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubo comido, <i>he</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| V. hubo comido, <i>you</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubimos comido, <i>we</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubisteis comido, <i>ye</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubieron comido, <i>they</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| VV. hubieron comido, <i>you</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiese comido, <i>I</i>   | } <i>might have eaten, etc.</i>  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubieses comido, <i>thou</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiese comido, <i>he</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| V. hubiese comido, <i>you</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiésemos comido, <i>we</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiéséis comido, <i>ye</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiesen comido, <i>they</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| VV. hubiesen comido, <i>you</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <table> <tr><td>habré comido, <i>I</i></td><td rowspan="8">} <i>shall have eaten, etc.</i></td></tr> <tr><td>habrás comido, <i>thou</i></td></tr> <tr><td>habrá comido, <i>he</i></td></tr> <tr><td>V. habrá comido, <i>you</i></td></tr> <tr><td>habrémos comido, <i>we</i></td></tr> <tr><td>habréis comido, <i>ye</i></td></tr> <tr><td>habrán comido, <i>they</i></td></tr> <tr><td>VV. habrán comido, <i>you</i></td></tr> </table>                              | habré comido, <i>I</i>           | } <i>shall have eaten, etc.</i>  | habrás comido, <i>thou</i>  | habrá comido, <i>he</i>  | V. habrá comido, <i>you</i>  | habrémos comido, <i>we</i>  | habréis comido, <i>ye</i>   | habrán comido, <i>they</i>   | VV. habrán comido, <i>you</i>   | <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <table> <tr><td>hubiere comido, <i>I</i></td><td rowspan="8">} <i>should have eaten, etc.</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubieres comido, <i>thou</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubiere comido, <i>he</i></td></tr> <tr><td>V. hubiere comido, <i>you</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubiéremos comido, <i>we</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubiéreis comido, <i>ye</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubieren comido, <i>they</i></td></tr> <tr><td>VV. hubieren comido, <i>you</i></td></tr> </table>                 | hubiere comido, <i>I</i> | } <i>should have eaten, etc.</i> | hubieres comido, <i>thou</i> | hubiere comido, <i>he</i> | V. hubiere comido, <i>you</i> | hubiéremos comido, <i>we</i> | hubiéreis comido, <i>ye</i> | hubieren comido, <i>they</i> | VV. hubieren comido, <i>you</i> |
| habré comido, <i>I</i>   | } <i>shall have eaten, etc.</i>  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| habrás comido, <i>thou</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| habrá comido, <i>he</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| V. habrá comido, <i>you</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| habrémos comido, <i>we</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| habréis comido, <i>ye</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| habrán comido, <i>they</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| VV. habrán comido, <i>you</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiere comido, <i>I</i>   | } <i>should have eaten, etc.</i> |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubieres comido, <i>thou</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiere comido, <i>he</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| V. hubiere comido, <i>you</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiéremos comido, <i>we</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiéreis comido, <i>ye</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubieren comido, <i>they</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| VV. hubieren comido, <i>you</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>apodasis</i>).</p> <table> <tr><td>habría comido, <i>I</i></td><td rowspan="8">} <i>should have eaten, etc.</i></td></tr> <tr><td>habrías comido, <i>thou</i></td></tr> <tr><td>habría comido, <i>he</i></td></tr> <tr><td>V. habría comido, <i>you</i></td></tr> <tr><td>habríamos comido, <i>we</i></td></tr> <tr><td>habríais comido, <i>ye</i></td></tr> <tr><td>habrían comido, <i>they</i></td></tr> <tr><td>VV. habrían comido, <i>you</i></td></tr> </table> | habría comido, <i>I</i>          | } <i>should have eaten, etc.</i> | habrías comido, <i>thou</i> | habría comido, <i>he</i> | V. habría comido, <i>you</i> | habríamos comido, <i>we</i> | habríais comido, <i>ye</i>  | habrían comido, <i>they</i>  | VV. habrían comido, <i>you</i>  | <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>protasis</i>).</p> <table> <tr><td>hubiera or hubiese</td><td rowspan="8">} <i>(if) I had eaten, etc.</i></td></tr> <tr><td>hubieras or hubieses</td></tr> <tr><td>hubiera or hubiese</td></tr> <tr><td>V. hubiera or hubiese</td></tr> <tr><td>hubiéramos or hubiésemos</td></tr> <tr><td>hubiérais or hubiéséis</td></tr> <tr><td>hubieran or hubiesen</td></tr> <tr><td>VV. hubieran or hubiesen</td></tr> </table>   | hubiera or hubiese       | } <i>(if) I had eaten, etc.</i>  | hubieras or hubieses         | hubiera or hubiese        | V. hubiera or hubiese         | hubiéramos or hubiésemos     | hubiérais or hubiéséis      | hubieran or hubiesen         | VV. hubieran or hubiesen        |
| habría comido, <i>I</i>  | } <i>should have eaten, etc.</i> |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| habrías comido, <i>thou</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| habría comido, <i>he</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| V. habría comido, <i>you</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| habríamos comido, <i>we</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| habríais comido, <i>ye</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| habrían comido, <i>they</i>  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| VV. habrían comido, <i>you</i>   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiera or hubiese   | } <i>(if) I had eaten, etc.</i>  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubieras or hubieses   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiera or hubiese   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| V. hubiera or hubiese  |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiéramos or hubiésemos   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubiérais or hubiéséis   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| hubieran or hubiesen   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |
| VV. hubieran or hubiesen   |                                  |                                  |                             |                          |                              |                             |                             |                              |                                 |  |                          |                                  |                              |                           |                               |                              |                             |                              |                                 |

REMARK. — The first person singular present indicative is written *cómo*, *I eat*, to distinguish it from *como*, *as*. The graphic accent then here is merely *distinctive*.



## THIRD CONJUGATION.

364. Model verb — **vivir**, *to live*.

| SIMPLE TENSES.          |                           |                                   |                            |
|-------------------------|---------------------------|-----------------------------------|----------------------------|
| Infinitive.             | Gerund.                   | Past Participle.                  |                            |
| viv-ir, <i>to live.</i> | viv-iendo, <i>living.</i> | viv-ido, <i>lived.</i>            |                            |
| Indicative Mode.        |                           | Subjunctive Mode.                 |                            |
| PRESENT.                |                           | PRESENT.                          |                            |
| viv-o,                  | <i>I live.</i>            | viv-a,                            | <i>I may live.</i>         |
| viv-es,                 | <i>thou livest.</i>       | viv-as,                           | <i>thou mayst live.</i>    |
| viv-e,                  | <i>he lives.</i>          | viv-a,                            | <i>he may live.</i>        |
| V. vive,                | <i>you live.</i>          | V. viva,                          | <i>you may live.</i>       |
| viv-imos,               | <i>we live.</i>           | viv-amos,                         | <i>we may live.</i>        |
| viv-is,                 | <i>ye live.</i>           | viv-ais,                          | <i>ye may live.</i>        |
| viv-en,                 | <i>they live.</i>         | viv-an,                           | <i>they may live.</i>      |
| VV. viven,              | <i>you live.</i>          | VV. vivan,                        | <i>you may live.</i>       |
| IMPERFECT.              |                           | IMPERFECT ( <i>first form</i> ).  |                            |
| viv-ia,                 | <i>I was living.</i>      | viv-iera,                         | <i>I might live.</i>       |
| viv-ias,                | <i>thou wast living.</i>  | viv-ieras,                        | <i>thou mightest live.</i> |
| viv-ia,                 | <i>he was living.</i>     | viv-iera,                         | <i>he might live.</i>      |
| V. vivía,               | <i>you were living.</i>   | V. viviera,                       | <i>you might live.</i>     |
| viv-íamos,              | <i>we were living.</i>    | viv-iéramos,                      | <i>we might live.</i>      |
| viv-íais,               | <i>ye were living.</i>    | viv-iérais,                       | <i>ye might live.</i>      |
| viv-ían,                | <i>they were living.</i>  | viv-ieran,                        | <i>they might live.</i>    |
| VV. vivían,             | <i>you were living.</i>   | VV. vivieran,                     | <i>you might live.</i>     |
| PAST DEFINITE.          |                           | IMPERFECT ( <i>second form</i> ). |                            |
| viv-í,                  | <i>I lived.</i>           | viv-iese,                         | <i>I might live.</i>       |
| viv-iste,               | <i>thou livedst.</i>      | viv-ieses,                        | <i>thou mightest live.</i> |
| viv-ió,                 | <i>he lived.</i>          | viv-iese,                         | <i>he might live.</i>      |
| V. vivió,               | <i>you lived.</i>         | V. viviese,                       | <i>you might live.</i>     |
| viv-imos,               | <i>we lived.</i>          | viv-iésemos,                      | <i>we might live.</i>      |
| viv-istels,             | <i>ye lived.</i>          | viv-iésels,                       | <i>ye might live.</i>      |
| viv-ieron,              | <i>they lived.</i>        | viv-iesen,                        | <i>they might live.</i>    |
| VV. vivieron,           | <i>you lived.</i>         | VV. viviesen,                     | <i>you might live.</i>     |

| Indicative Mode.                    |                           | Subjunctive Mode.                     |                            |
|-------------------------------------|---------------------------|---------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| FUTURE.                             |                           | FUTURE.                               |                            |
| vivir-é,                            | <i>I shall live.</i>      | viv-lere,                             | <i>I should live.</i>      |
| vivir-ás,                           | <i>thou wilt live.</i>    | viv-leres,                            | <i>thou shouldst live.</i> |
| vivir-á,                            | <i>he will live.</i>      | viv-lere,                             | <i>he should live.</i>     |
| V. vivirá,                          | <i>you will live.</i>     | V. viviere,                           | <i>you should live.</i>    |
| vivir-émos,                         | <i>we shall live.</i>     | viv-léremos,                          | <i>we should live.</i>     |
| vivir-éis,                          | <i>ye will live.</i>      | viv-léreis,                           | <i>ye should live.</i>     |
| vivir-án,                           | <i>they will live.</i>    | viv-leren,                            | <i>they should live.</i>   |
| VV. vivirán,                        | <i>you will live.</i>     | VV. vivieren,                         | <i>you should live.</i>    |
| CONDITIONAL ( <i>apodasis</i> ).    |                           | CONDITIONAL ( <i>protasis</i> ).      |                            |
| vivir-ía,                           | <i>I should live.</i>     | viviera                               | or viviese,                |
| vivir-ías,                          | <i>thou wouldst live.</i> | vivieras                              | or vivieses,               |
| vivir-ía,                           | <i>he would live.</i>     | viviera                               | or viviese,                |
| V. viviría,                         | <i>you would live.</i>    | V. viviera                            | or viviese,                |
| vivir-íamos,                        | <i>we should live.</i>    | viviéramos                            | or viviésemos,             |
| vivir-íais,                         | <i>ye would live.</i>     | viviérais                             | or viviéséis,              |
| vivir-ían,                          | <i>they would live.</i>   | vivieran                              | or viviesen,               |
| VV. vivirían,                       | <i>you would live.</i>    | VV. vivieran                          | or viviesen,               |
|                                     |                           |                                       |                            |
| Imperative Mode.                    |                           |                                       |                            |
| SINGULAR.                           |                           | PLURAL.                               |                            |
| —                                   | —                         | viv-amos,                             | <i>let us live.</i>        |
| viv-e,                              | <i>live (thou).</i>       | viv-id,                               | <i>live (ye).</i>          |
| viv-a,                              | <i>let him live.</i>      | viv-an,                               | <i>let them live.</i>      |
| viva V.,                            | <i>live.</i>              | vivan VV.,                            | <i>live.</i>               |
| —                                   | —                         | no viv-amos,                          | <i>let us not live.</i>    |
| no viv-as,                          | <i>live (thou) not.</i>   | no viv-ais,                           | <i>live (ye) not.</i>      |
| no viv-a,                           | <i>let him not live.</i>  | no viv-an,                            | <i>let them not live.</i>  |
| no viva V.                          | <i>do not live.</i>       | no vivan VV.,                         | <i>do not live.</i>        |
|                                     |                           |                                       |                            |
| COMPOUND TENSES.                    |                           |                                       |                            |
| Infinitive Past.                    |                           | Gerund Past.                          |                            |
| haber vivido, <i>to have lived.</i> |                           | habiendo vivido, <i>having lived.</i> |                            |

| Indicative Mode.             |             |                                 | Subjunctive Mode.                  |             |                                  |
|------------------------------|-------------|---------------------------------|------------------------------------|-------------|----------------------------------|
| PAST INDEFINITE.             |             |                                 | PAST INDEFINITE.                   |             |                                  |
| he vivido,                   | <i>I</i>    | } <i>have lived, etc.</i>       | haya vivido,                       | <i>I</i>    | } <i>may have lived, etc.</i>    |
| has vivido,                  | <i>thou</i> |                                 | hayas vivido,                      | <i>thou</i> |                                  |
| ha vivido,                   | <i>he</i>   |                                 | haya vivido,                       | <i>he</i>   |                                  |
| V. ha vivido,                | <i>you</i>  |                                 | V. haya vivido,                    | <i>you</i>  |                                  |
| hemos vivido,                | <i>we</i>   |                                 | hayámos vivido,                    | <i>we</i>   |                                  |
| habéis vivido,               | <i>ye</i>   |                                 | hayáis vivido,                     | <i>ye</i>   |                                  |
| han vivido,                  | <i>they</i> |                                 | hayan vivido,                      | <i>they</i> |                                  |
| VV. han vivido,              | <i>you</i>  |                                 | VV. hayan vivido,                  | <i>you</i>  |                                  |
| PLUPERFECT.                  |             |                                 | PLUPERFECT ( <i>first form</i> ).  |             |                                  |
| había vivido,                | <i>I</i>    | } <i>had lived, etc.</i>        | hubiera vivido,                    | <i>I</i>    | } <i>might have lived, etc.</i>  |
| habías vivido,               | <i>thou</i> |                                 | hubieras vivido,                   | <i>thou</i> |                                  |
| había vivido,                | <i>he</i>   |                                 | hubiera vivido,                    | <i>he</i>   |                                  |
| V. había vivido,             | <i>you</i>  |                                 | V. hubiera vivido,                 | <i>you</i>  |                                  |
| habíamos vivido,             | <i>we</i>   |                                 | hubiéramos vivido,                 | <i>we</i>   |                                  |
| habíais vivido,              | <i>ye</i>   |                                 | hubiérais vivido,                  | <i>ye</i>   |                                  |
| habían vivido,               | <i>they</i> |                                 | hubieran vivido,                   | <i>they</i> |                                  |
| VV. habían vivido,           | <i>you</i>  |                                 | VV. hubieran vivido,               | <i>you</i>  |                                  |
| PAST ANTERIOR.               |             |                                 | PLUPERFECT ( <i>second form</i> ). |             |                                  |
| hube vivido, (when) <i>I</i> |             | } <i>had lived, etc.</i>        | hubiese vivido,                    | <i>I</i>    | } <i>might have lived, etc.</i>  |
| hubiste vivido,              | <i>thou</i> |                                 | hubieses vivido,                   | <i>thou</i> |                                  |
| hubo vivido,                 | <i>he</i>   |                                 | hubiese vivido,                    | <i>he</i>   |                                  |
| V. hubo vivido,              | <i>you</i>  |                                 | V. hubiese vivido,                 | <i>you</i>  |                                  |
| hubimos vivido,              | <i>we</i>   |                                 | hubiésemos vivido,                 | <i>we</i>   |                                  |
| hubísteis vivido,            | <i>ye</i>   |                                 | hubiéseis vivido,                  | <i>ye</i>   |                                  |
| hubieron vivido,             | <i>they</i> |                                 | hubiesen vivido,                   | <i>they</i> |                                  |
| VV. hubieron vivido,         | <i>you</i>  |                                 | VV. hubiesen vivido,               | <i>you</i>  |                                  |
| FUTURE PERFECT.              |             |                                 | FUTURE PERFECT.                    |             |                                  |
| habré vivido,                | <i>I</i>    | } <i>shall have lived, etc.</i> | hubiere vivido,                    | <i>I</i>    | } <i>should have lived, etc.</i> |
| habrás vivido,               | <i>thou</i> |                                 | hubieres vivido,                   | <i>thou</i> |                                  |
| habrá vivido,                | <i>he</i>   |                                 | hubiere vivido,                    | <i>he</i>   |                                  |
| V. habrá vivido,             | <i>you</i>  |                                 | V. hubiere vivido,                 | <i>you</i>  |                                  |
| habrémos vivido,             | <i>we</i>   |                                 | hubiéremos vivido,                 | <i>we</i>   |                                  |
| habréis vivido,              | <i>ye</i>   |                                 | hubiéreis vivido,                  | <i>ye</i>   |                                  |
| habrán vivido,               | <i>they</i> |                                 | hubieren vivido,                   | <i>they</i> |                                  |
| VV. habrán vivido,           | <i>you</i>  |                                 | VV. hubieren vivido,               | <i>you</i>  |                                  |

| Indicative Mode.                      | Subjunctive Mode.                     |
|---------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| CONDITIONAL PAST ( <i>apodasis</i> ). | CONDITIONAL PAST ( <i>protasis</i> ). |
| habría vivido, I                      | hubiera or hubiese                    |
| habrías vivido, thou                  | hubieras or hubieses                  |
| habría vivido, he                     | hubiera or hubiese                    |
| V. habría vivido, you                 | V. hubiera or hubiese                 |
| habríamos vivido, we                  | hubiéramos or hubiésemos              |
| habríais vivido, ye                   | hubiérais or hubiéseis                |
| habrían vivido, they                  | hubieran or hubiesen                  |
| VV. habrían vivido, you               | VV. hubieran or hubiesen              |
| } should have lived, etc.             | } (if) I had lived, etc.              |

Remarks on the Three Conjugations.

365. The subject-pronouns are to be expressed with the verb, only when they are *intensive*, *emphatic*, or *adversative*, and when (by the identical endings of the first and third persons of certain tenses) obscurity would result from the omission (see §§ 187-190) :—

REMARK. — Identical endings of the first and third persons are found in the present subjunctive, imperfect indicative and subjunctive, future subjunctive, and the conditionals :—

|        |           |          |          |         |                     |           |         |         |
|--------|-----------|----------|----------|---------|---------------------|-----------|---------|---------|
| yo, él | hable;    | coma;    | viva;    | I or he | may                 | speak;    | eat;    | live.   |
|        | hablaba;  | comía;   | vivía;   |         | was                 | speaking; | eating; | living. |
|        | hablara;  | comiera; | viviera; |         | might               | speak;    | eat;    | live.   |
|        | hablase;  | comiese; | viviese; |         | might               | speak;    | eat;    | live.   |
|        | hablare;  | comiere; | viviere; |         | should              | speak;    | eat;    | live.   |
|        | hablaría; | comería; | viviría; |         | should }<br>would } | speak;    | eat;    | live.   |

366. The graphic accent (in the present century always *acute*, ') distinguishes otherwise homonymous or identical forms in verbs of the first conjugation :—

|          |           |            |          |           |            |
|----------|-----------|------------|----------|-----------|------------|
| hablo,   | hable,    | hablare,   | habló,   | hablé,    | hablaré.   |
| hablara, | hablaras, | habláreis, | hablará, | hablarás, | hablaréis. |

Except the first persons plural of the present indicative and the past definite in the first and third conjugations, wherein no written accent is authorized:—

|                    |  |                     |
|--------------------|--|---------------------|
| hablamos; vivimos, |  | we speak; we live.  |
| hablamos; vivimos, |  | we spoke; we lived. |

REMARK. — Much confusion often arises in reading Spanish books printed before A.D. 1550 when the graphic accent (usually *grave* ') began to be employed by the best printers. Martin Nucio (or *Nuyts*) of Antwerp, from 1556 gave a new impulse to this branch of orthography; and in 1580 we find the use of accents generalized, especially to mark the future tense.<sup>1</sup>

367. Of the imperative mode, only the second person singular and plural are original persons. All the others are simply persons of the subjunctive present with an optative, desiderative, or a hortative meaning. For example:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| habla,  | spea <i>k</i> (original form), to one to whom <i>tú</i> is used.               |
| hable V.,                                       | spea <i>k</i> (polite), subjunctive, "may your grace speak."                   |
| hablad,   | spea <i>k</i> (original form), to two or more to whom <i>vosotros</i> is used. |
| hablen VV.,                                     | spea <i>k</i> (polite), subjunctive, "may your graces speak."                  |
| hable (subjunctive), let him<br>spea <i>k</i> . | hablen (subjunctive), let them<br>spea <i>k</i> .                              |
| hablemos (subjunctive), let us spea <i>k</i> .  |  |

a. Observe that **habla** and **hablad** (and so **come**, **comed**; **vive**, **vivid**, and all original imperatives) cannot be made *negative*. To render the imperative negative in Spanish, the corresponding *subjunctive* forms must always be used:—

|                              |  |                                   |
|------------------------------|--|-----------------------------------|
| habla, spea <i>k</i> (thou). |  | no hables, do not spea <i>k</i> . |
| hablad, spea <i>k</i> (ye).  |  | no habéis, do not spea <i>k</i> . |

<sup>1</sup> See *Obras de Iuan Boscan*, Antwerp, Nucio, 1556, Editor's *Prologue* (reprinted in my edition, Madrid, 1875, p. 511), and Herrera's edition of *Garcilasso*, Seville, 1580.

*b.* The other forms being already in the present subjunctive, merely assume the adverb *no* to render them negative:—

**hable**, *let him speak.*

**hable V.**, *speak (your grace).*

**hablen**, *let them speak.*

**hablen VV.**, *speak (your graces).*

**hablemos**, *let us speak.*

**no hable**, *let him not speak.*

**no hable V.**, *do not speak.*

**no hablen**, *let them not speak.*

**no hablen VV.**, *do not speak.*

**no hablemos**, *let us not speak.*

“no se muera vuestra merced,  
sino tome mi consejo, y viva  
muchos años,”

do not die, your grace, but take  
my advice, and live many  
years.

(*literally*, “let not your grace die; but let him take my advice, and let him live many years.”)

**368.** The terminations **-aste**, **-iste**, and **-ásteis**, **-isteis**, of the second person singular and plural of the past definite tense are now *popularly* assimilated into *astes*, *istes*:—

tú **hablastes**, for *hablaste*,

tú **vivistes**, for *viviste*,

**hablastes**, for *hablásteis*,

**comistes**, for *comísteis*,

thou didst speak.

thou didst live.

ye did speak.

ye did eat.

**369.** The *d* of the participial ending *ado* is very generally omitted in pronunciation at the present day, not only in Madrid, but throughout Spain, in familiar or social life, not in grave discourse:—

**habláo**, for *hablado*.

| **regaláo**, *given (for regalado).*

It is not convenient to call this a *vice*, since it is observed by nine-tenths of the Spanish people when speaking familiarly. Not so with *ido*, however, except among the admirers of the bull-baiting fraternity.

**370.** The compound tenses of all Spanish verbs, active and neuter, transitive and intransitive, are at the present day formed by means of the verb *haber* only:—

|                                       |                                     |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <b>ha</b> ido; <b>hemos</b> venido,   | he has gone; we have come.          |
| <b>se han</b> ido; <b>he</b> llegado, | they have gone off; I have arrived. |

*a.* Anciently they said: **es** ido, *is gone*; **son** venidos, *are come*; but not at present.

#### Regular Euphonic Changes.

**371.** All verbs in **-car**, **-gar**, and **-zar** (that is, those having the stem-ending **c**, **g**, or **z**) change those letters into **qu**, **gu**, and **c**, respectively, as often as, by inflection, they meet the weak vowel *e* (see §§ 13; 15; and 28, *a*). These mutations occur in the following places only: In the first person singular of the past definite, in the present subjunctive throughout, and consequently in all those persons of the imperative that are not original (§ 367):—

##### *a. tocar, to touch.*

PAST DEF. **toqué** (*but* **tocaste**, **tocó**, **tocamos**, *etc.*).

SUBJ. PRES. **toque**, **toques**, **toque**, **toquemos**, **toques**, **toquen**.

IMPERAT. — (**toca**), **toque**, **toquemos**, (**tocad**), **toquen**.

##### *b. llegar, to arrive.*

PAST DEF. **llegué** (*but* **llegaste**, **llegó**, **llegamos**, *etc.*).

SUBJ. PRES. **llegue**, **llegues**, **llegue**, **lleguemos**, **llegues**, **lleguen**.

IMPERAT. — (**llega**), **llegue**, **lleguemos**, (**llegad**), **lleguen**.

##### *c. alcanzar, to reach.*

PAST DEF. **alcancé** (*but* **alcanzaste**, **alcanzó**, **alcanzamos**, *etc.*).

SUBJ. PRES. **alcance**, **alcances**, **alcance**, **alcancemos**, **alcanceis**, **alcancen**.

IMPERAT. — (**alcanza**), **alcance**, **alcancemos**, (**alcanzad**), **alcancen**.

**372.** Verbs in **-guar** assume in like positions the *dieresis* before *e* (§§ 17; 21; 32, *a*):—

*a. averiguar, to investigate, to ascertain.*PAST DEF. **averigüé** (*but averiguaste, averiguó, averiguamos, etc.*).SUBJ. PRES. **averigüe, averigües, averigüe, averigüemos, averigüels, averigüen.**IMPERAT. — (averigua), **averigüe, averigüemos, (averiguad), averigüen.**

**373.** Verbs in **-cer** and **-cir**, preceded by a *consonant*, change the stem-ending *c* into *z* as often as, by inflection, it meets one of the strong vowels *a* or *o* (according to § 14; see also § 28; 28, *a*). This mutation occurs in the following places only: In the first person singular of the indicative present, in all the persons of the present subjunctive, and consequently in those persons of the imperative that are not original (§ 367):—

*a. vencer, to overcome.*INDIC. PRES. **venzo** (*but vences, vence, vencemos, etc.*).SUBJ. PRES. **venza, venzas, venza, venzamos, venzais, venzan.**IMPERAT. — (vence), **venza, venzamos, (venced), venzan.***b. esparcir, to scatter.*INDIC. PRES. **esparzo** (*but esparces, esparce, esparcimos, etc.*).SUBJ. PRES. **esparza, esparzas, esparza, esparzamos, esparzais, esparzan.**IMPERAT. — (esparce), **esparza, esparzamos, (esparcid), esparzan.**

**374.** Verbs in **-cer** and **-cir**, preceded by a *vowel*, strengthen the stem-ending by inserting before it a *z* as often as the stem meets an *a* or an *o*:—

*a. carecer, not to have, to be without.*INDIC. PRES. **carezco** (*but careces, carece, carecemos, etc.*).SUBJ. PRES. **carezca, carezcas, carezca, carezcamos, carezcais, carezcan.**IMPERAT. — (carece), **carezca, carezcamos, (careced), carezcan.**



*b. nacer, to be born.*INDIC. PRES. **nazco** (*but naces, nace, nacemos, etc.*).SUBJ. PRES. **nazca, nazcas, nazca, nazcamos, nazcais, nazcan.**IMPERAT. — (nace), **nazca, nazcamos, (naced), nazcan.***c. conocer, to know (persons).*INDIC. PRES. **conozco** (*but conoces, conoce, conocemos, etc.*).SUBJ. PRES. **conozca, conozcas, conozca, conozcamos, conozcais, conozcan.**IMPERAT. — (conoce), **conozca, conozcamos, (conoced), conozcan.***d. lucir, to shine, to display.*INDIC. PRES. **luzco** (*but luces, luce, lucimos, etc.*).SUBJ. PRES. **luzca, luzcas, luzca, luzcamos, luzcais, luzcan.**IMPERAT. — (luce), **luzca, luzcamos, (lucid), luzcan.**

Except **mecer, to shake, to rock**; **empecer, to injure**; **cocer, to boil** (**cuezo, cueza, etc.**); and **escocer, to smart** (**escuezo, escueza, etc.**), which, with their compounds, follow § 373 for the stem-ending. **Hacer, to do, to make**, and its compounds, change the radical *c* into *g* before a *strong* vowel (**hago, haces; haga, haga, etc.**).

REMARK. — The *s* of this class is properly an organic *s*, derived, in the case of verbs in *-ecer* (*-escer*), from Latin inceptives in *-escere*, and retained throughout in old Spanish. Verbs in *-acer* and *-ocer* come from Latin stems in *asc, osc*. With verbs in *-ucir* alone, the *s* is euphonic: —

| LATER LATIN.     | OLD SPANISH.    | MODERN SPANISH. |
|------------------|-----------------|-----------------|
| caresco;         | caresco;        | carezco.        |
| carescis, etc.;  | caresces, etc.; | careces, etc.   |
| nasco;           | nasco;          | nazco.          |
| nascis, etc.;    | nascas, etc.;   | naces, etc.     |
| cognosco;        | conosco;        | conozco.        |
| cognoscis, etc.; | conosces, etc.; | conoces, etc.   |
| luceo;           | lusco;          | luzco.          |
| luces, etc.      | luces, etc.;    | luces, etc.     |

375. Verbs in **-ger** and **-gir** change the radical *g* into *j*, before an *a* or *o* (§§ 16, 33): —

*a. coger, to gather.*INDIC. PRES. **cojo** (*but coges, coge, cogemos, etc.*).SUBJ. PRES. **coja, cojas, coja, cojamos, cojais, cojan.**IMPERAT. — (coge), **coja, cojamos, (coged), cojan.***b. dirigir, to guide.*INDIC. PRES. **dirijo** (*but diriges, dirige, dirigimos, etc.*).SUBJ. PRES. **dirija, dirijas, dirija, dirijamos, dirijais, dirijan.**IMPERAT. — (dirige), **dirija, dirijamos, (dirigid), dirijan.**

**376.** Verbs in **-guir**, and one in **-quir**, reject the orthographic **u**, returning to the simple radical **g** and **c** hard, when, by inflection, they would stand before an *a* or an *o*:—

*a. distinguir, to distinguish.*INDIC. PRES. **distingo** (*but distingues, distingue, distinguimos, etc.*).SUBJ. PRES. **distinga, distingas, distinga, distingamos, distingais, distingan.**IMPERAT. — (distingue), **distinga, distingamos, (distinguid), distingan.***b. seguir, to follow (irregular).*INDIC. PRES. **sigo** (*but sigues, sigue, seguimos, seguís, siguen, etc.*).SUBJ. PRES. **siga, sigas, siga, sigamos, sigais, sigan.**IMPERAT. — (sigue), **siga, sigamos, (seguid), sigan.***c. delinquir, to transgress (law).*INDIC. PRES. **delinco** (*but delinques, delinque, delinquimos, etc.*).SUBJ. PRES. **delinca, delincas, delinca, delincamos, delincáis, delincan.**IMPERAT. — (delinque), **delinca, delincamos, (delinquad), delincan.**

REMARK. — Verbs in **-guir** are somewhat irregular, and will be treated with such.

**377.** The necessity of all the foregoing consonant-mutations is obviously to maintain in the stem the same *sound* throughout the conjugation that it has in the infinitive, whatever be the *orthography*.

**378.** Verbs having the stem-ending in a double consonant (**ch**, **ll**, **ñ**), regularly absorb the vowel **i** of the diphthongs **ie**, **io**, whenever they occur in the course of inflection; that is, in the gerund, the third person singular and plural of the past definite, and in the imperfects and future of the subjunctive:—

*a. bullir, to boil.*

|               |   |
|---------------|---|
| GERUND.       | <b>bullendo.</b>  |
| PAST DEF.     | <i>third singular and plural, bulló; bulleron.</i>      |
| SUBJ. IMPERF. | <b>bullera, bulleras, etc.; bullese, bulleses, etc.</b> |
| SUBJ. FUTURE. | <b>bullere, bulleres, bullere, bulléremos, etc.</b>     |

*b. tañer, to play (of music, tangere).*

|               |   |
|---------------|---|
| GERUND.       | <b>tañendo.</b>                                     |
| PAST DEF.     | <b>tañó, tañeron.</b>                               |
| SUBJ. IMPERF. | <b>tañera, tañeras, etc.; tañese, tañeses, etc.</b> |
| SUBJ. FUTURE. | <b>tañere, tañeres, tañere, tañéremos, etc.</b>     |

*c. plañir, to lament.*

|               |   |
|---------------|---|
| GERUND.       | <b>plañendo.</b>  |
| PAST DEF.     | <b>plañó, plañeron.</b>                                 |
| SUBJ. IMPERF. | <b>plañera, plañeras, etc.; plañese, plañeses, etc.</b> |
| SUBJ. FUTURE. | <b>plañere, plañeres, plañere, plañéremos, etc.</b>     |

*d.* Those in final radical **ch** do not uniformly absorb the vowel **i**:—

*e. henchir, to fill (irregular).*

|               |   |
|---------------|---|
| GERUND.       | <b>hinchiendo and hinchendo.</b>  |
| PAST DEF.     | <b>hinchió and hinchó; hinchieron and hincheron.</b>  |
| SUBJ. IMPERF. | <b>hinchiera and hinchera, hinchieras and hincheras, etc.; hinchiese and hinchese, hinchieses and hincheses, etc.</b> |
| SUBJ. FUTURE. | <b>hinchiere and hinchere, hinchieres and hincheres, etc.</b>   |

**Progressive Form of the Active Verb.**

**379.** Spanish verbs may be translated into English in three different ways; namely:—

|                                 |          |   |                       |
|---------------------------------|----------|---|-----------------------|
| by the <i>absolute</i> form,    | } hablo, | { | <i>I speak.</i>       |
| by the <i>emphatic</i> form,    |          |   | <i>I do speak.</i>    |
| by the <i>progressive</i> form, |          |   | <i>I am speaking.</i> |

380. The progressive form may also be expressed in Spanish by associating with the gerund of the principal verb the auxiliary verb **estar**, *to be*, or one of its substitutes **hallarse** or **encontrarse**, *to find one's self, to be*; **quedar**, *to remain*; **ir** or **andar**, *to go*; **seguir**, *to go on*; **verse**, *to see one's self*:—

|              |                                       |          |                                   |
|--------------|---------------------------------------|----------|-----------------------------------|
| estoy or voy | { hablando,<br>comiendo,<br>viviendo, | I am     | { speaking.<br>eating.<br>living. |
| estás or vas | { hablando,<br>comiendo,<br>viviendo, | thou art | { speaking.<br>eating.<br>living. |
| está or va   | { hablando,<br>comiendo,<br>viviendo, | he is    | { speaking.<br>eating.<br>living. |

|                         |                                 |
|-------------------------|---------------------------------|
| me hallé escribiendo,   | I found myself (I was) writing. |
| te encontraste jugando, | you found yourself playing.     |
| quedó durmiendo,        | he remained (was) sleeping.     |
| quedamos mirando,       | we stood gazing.                |
| siguió hablando,        | he went on talking.             |

381. Of the two verbs in Spanish for “to be,” — *ser* and *estar*, — the latter is alone employed with the gerund to make up the *progressive* form of an active verb; while *ser* is the only one that serves to build the *passive* voice.

REMARK. — *Estar* is from the Latin *sto*, *stare*, *to stand*, with the prothetic *e*, as in *escuela* (*schola*), *estudio* (*studium*), etc. (§ 41, remark). The second stem *estuv* is derived from a Latin basis *stabui* = *staubi*, *estove*, *estuve*, after the analogy of *habui* = *haubi*, *hobe*, *hube*.

382. Conjugation of **estar**, *to be*:—

| INFINITIVE.  | GERUND.                | PAST PARTICIPLE.   |
|--|------------------------|--|
| <i>estar, to be.</i>   | <i>estando, being.</i> | <i>estado, been.</i>   |
| INDICATIVE MODE.   |                        | SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.  |
| <b>Present.</b><br><i>estoy, (sto), I am.</i><br><i>estás, thou art.</i><br><i>está, he is.</i><br><i>V. está, you are.</i><br><i>estamos, we are.</i><br><i>estais, ye are.</i><br><i>están, they are.</i><br><i>VV. están, you are.</i>                                  |                        | <b>Present.</b><br><i>esté, (stem), I may be.</i><br><i>estés, thou mayst be. *</i><br><i>esté, he may be.</i><br><i>V. esté, you may be.</i><br><i>estemos, we may be.</i><br><i>esteis, ye may be.</i><br><i>estén, they may be.</i><br><i>VV. estén, you may be.</i>  |
| <b>Imperfect.</b><br><i>estaba, I was (being).</i><br><i>estabas, thou wast.</i><br><i>estaba, he was.</i><br><i>V. estaba, you were.</i><br><i>estábamos, we were.</i><br><i>estábais, ye were.</i><br><i>estaban, they were.</i><br><i>VV. estaban, you were.</i>        |                        | <b>Imperfect (first form).</b><br><i>estuviera, I might be.</i><br><i>estuvieras, thou mightest be.</i><br><i>estuviera, he might be.</i><br><i>V. estuviera, you might be.</i><br><i>estuviéramos, we might be.</i><br><i>estuviérais, ye might be.</i><br><i>estuvieran, they might be.</i><br><i>VV. estuvieran, you might be.</i>  |
| <b>Past Definite.</b><br><i>estuve, I was.</i><br><i>estuviste, thou wast.</i><br><i>estuvo, he was.</i><br><i>V. estuvo, you were.</i><br><i>estuvimos, we were.</i><br><i>estuvísteis, ye were.</i><br><i>estuvieron, they were.</i><br><i>VV. estuvieron, you were.</i> |                        | <b>Imperfect (second form).</b><br><i>estuviese, I might be.</i><br><i>estuvieses, thou mightest be.</i><br><i>estuviese, he might be.</i><br><i>V. estuviese, you might be.</i><br><i>estuviésemos, we might be.</i><br><i>estuviéscis, ye might be.</i><br><i>estuviesen, they might be.</i><br><i>VV. estuviesen, you might be.</i> |

| INDICATIVE MODE.  | SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.   |
|---|---|
| <p style="text-align: center;"><b>Future.</b></p> <p>estaré, <i>I shall be.</i><br/> estarás, <i>thou shalt be.</i><br/> estará, <i>he will be.</i><br/> V. estará, <i>you will be.</i><br/> estaremos, <i>we shall be.</i><br/> estaréis, <i>ye will be.</i><br/> estarán, <i>they will be.</i><br/> VV. estarán, <i>you will be.</i></p>                                  | <p style="text-align: center;"><b>Future.</b></p> <p>estuviere, <i>I should be.</i><br/> estuvieres, <i>thou shouldst be.</i><br/> estuviere, <i>he should be.</i><br/> V. estuviere, <i>you should be.</i><br/> estuviéremos, <i>we should be.</i><br/> estuviéreis, <i>ye should be.</i><br/> estuvieren, <i>they should be.</i><br/> VV. estuvieren, <i>you should be.</i></p>     |
| <p style="text-align: center;"><b>Conditional (apodaxis).</b></p> <p>estaría, <i>I should be.</i><br/> estarías, <i>thou wouldst be.</i><br/> estaría, <i>he would be.</i><br/> V. estaría, <i>you would be.</i><br/> estaríamos, <i>we should be.</i><br/> estaríais, <i>ye would be.</i><br/> estarían, <i>they would be.</i><br/> VV. estarían, <i>you would be.</i></p> | <p style="text-align: center;"><b>Conditional (protasis).</b></p> <p>estuviera or estuviese,<br/> estuvieras or estuvieses,<br/> estuviera or estuviese,<br/> V. estuviera or estuviese,<br/> estuviéramos or estuviésemos,<br/> estuviérais or estuviéseis,<br/> estuvieran or estuviesen,<br/> VV. estuvieran or estuviesen,</p> <p style="text-align: right;">(if) I had been.</p> |
| IMPERATIVE MODE.  |   |
| <p style="text-align: center;">— —</p> <p>está, <i>be (thou).</i><br/> esté, <i>let him be.</i><br/> esté V., <i>be.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;">— —</p> <p>no estés, <i>be (thou) not.</i><br/> no esté, <i>let him not be.</i><br/> no esté V., <i>do not be.</i></p>  | <p>estemos, <i>let us be.</i><br/> estad, <i>be (ye).</i><br/> estén, <i>let them be.</i><br/> estén VV., <i>be.</i></p> <p>no estemos, <i>let us not be.</i><br/> no estéis, <i>be (ye) not.</i><br/> no estén, <i>let them not be.</i><br/> no estén VV., <i>do not be.</i></p>   |

383. The compound tenses of *estar* are regularly formed by means of the verb *haber* and the past participle *estado* (*status*), so that a synopsis will suffice to suggest the full inflection : —

| Infinitive Past.  | Gerund Past.   |
|---|--|
| haber estado, <i>to have been.</i>                                | habiendo estado, <i>having been.</i>   |
| Indicative Mode.  | Subjunctive Mode.  |
| PAST INDEFINITE.<br>he estado, <i>I have been.</i>                | PAST INDEFINITE.<br>haya estado, <i>I may have been.</i>                                   |
| PLUPERFECT.<br>había estado, <i>I had been.</i>                   | PLUPERFECT ( <i>first form</i> ).<br>hubiera estado, <i>I might have been.</i>             |
| PAST ANTERIOR.<br>hube estado, ( <i>when</i> ) <i>I had been.</i> | PLUPERFECT ( <i>second form</i> ).<br>hubiese estado, <i>I might have been.</i>            |
| FUTURE PERFECT.<br>habré estado, <i>I shall have been.</i>        | FUTURE PERFECT.<br>hubiere estado, <i>I should have been.</i>                              |
| CONDITIONAL PAST.<br>habría estado, <i>I should have been.</i>    | CONDITIONAL PAST. [ <i>been</i> .<br>hub-iera, hub-iese estado, ( <i>if</i> ) <i>I had</i> |

## Passive Voice.

384. The proper passive voice in Spanish is formed by the auxiliary **ser**; *to be*, joined to the past participle of the verb to be conjugated.

REMARK. — *Ser* is a contraction of the old Spanish *seer*, from the Latin verb *sedēre*, *to sit*. This stem forms the gerund *siendo* (old Span. *seyendo*), the past participle *sido* (old Span. *seydo*, from *seditus* for *sessus*), and the present subjunctive *sea* (old Span. *seya*, from *sedeam*, like *haya* from *habeam*, and *vaya* from a form *vadeam*). The future and conditional of the indicative regularly follow the infinitive *ser-é*, *ser-la*. The present indicative follows *sum*, *est*, *sumus*, *sunt*; but in the second person singular, it adopts the future *eris* (*eres*), and in the plural, a regularized *sutis* (old Span. *sodes*, modern *sois*). The imperfect indicative derives from *eram*, *eras*, etc. The preterit stem *fu* builds the past definite indicative, the imperfects and future subjunctive. Therefore, the Latin *esse* does not reappear in Spanish, except in the present and imperfect indicative.

## CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE AUXILIARY VERB.

## 385. Ser, to be.

| SIMPLE TENSES.          |                   |                                  |
|-------------------------|-------------------|----------------------------------|
| Infinitive.             | Gerund.           | Past Participle.                 |
| ser, to be.             | siendo, being.    | sido, been.                      |
| Indicative Mode.        |                   | Subjunctive Mode.                |
| PRESENT.                |                   | PRESENT.                         |
| soy (sum),              | <i>I am.</i>      | sea (sedeam), <i>I may be.</i>   |
| eres (eris for es),     | <i>thou art.</i>  | seas, <i>thou mayst be.</i>      |
| es (est),               | <i>he is.</i>     | sea, <i>he may be.</i>           |
| V. es,                  | <i>you are.</i>   | V. sea, <i>you may be.</i>       |
| somos (sumus),          | <i>we are.</i>    | seamos, <i>we may be.</i>        |
| sois (sutis for estis), | <i>ye are.</i>    | seals, <i>ye may be.</i>         |
| son (sunt),             | <i>they are.</i>  | sean, <i>they may be.</i>        |
| VV. son,                | <i>you are.</i>   | VV. sean, <i>you may be.</i>     |
| IMPERFECT.              |                   | IMPERFECT (first form).          |
| era,                    | <i>I was.</i>     | fuera, <i>I might be.</i>        |
| eras,                   | <i>thou wast.</i> | fueras, <i>thou mightest be.</i> |
| era,                    | <i>he was.</i>    | fuera, <i>he might be.</i>       |
| V. era,                 | <i>you were.</i>  | V. fuera, <i>you might be.</i>   |
| éramos,                 | <i>we were.</i>   | fuéramos, <i>we might be.</i>    |
| érais,                  | <i>ye were.</i>   | fuérais, <i>ye might be.</i>     |
| eran,                   | <i>they were.</i> | fueran, <i>they might be.</i>    |
| VV. eran,               | <i>you were.</i>  | VV. fueran, <i>you might be.</i> |
| PAST DEFINITE.          |                   | IMPERFECT (second form).         |
| fuí,                    | <i>I was.</i>     | fuese, <i>I might be.</i>        |
| fuiste,                 | <i>thou wast.</i> | fueses, <i>thou mightest be.</i> |
| fué,                    | <i>he was.</i>    | fuese, <i>he might be.</i>       |
| V. fué,                 | <i>you were.</i>  | V. fuese, <i>you might be.</i>   |
| fuimos,                 | <i>we were.</i>   | fuésemos, <i>we might be.</i>    |
| fuísteis,               | <i>ye were.</i>   | fuéseis, <i>ye might be.</i>     |
| fueron,                 | <i>they were.</i> | fuesen, <i>they might be.</i>    |
| VV. fueron,             | <i>you were.</i>  | VV. fuesen, <i>you might be.</i> |



| Indicative Mode.                 |                         | Subjunctive Mode.                  |                          |
|----------------------------------|-------------------------|------------------------------------|--------------------------|
| FUTURE.                          |                         | FUTURE.                            |                          |
| seré,                            | <i>I shall be.</i>      | fuere,                             | <i>I should be.</i>      |
| serás,                           | <i>thou wilt be.</i>    | fueres,                            | <i>thou shouldst be.</i> |
| será,                            | <i>he will be.</i>      | fuere,                             | <i>he should be.</i>     |
| V. será,                         | <i>you will be.</i>     | V. fuere,                          | <i>you should be.</i>    |
| serémos,                         | <i>we shall be.</i>     | fuéremos,                          | <i>we should be.</i>     |
| seréis,                          | <i>ye will be.</i>      | fuérais,                           | <i>ye should be.</i>     |
| serán,                           | <i>they will be.</i>    | fueren,                            | <i>they should be.</i>   |
| VV. serán,                       | <i>you will be.</i>     | VV. fueren,                        | <i>you should be.</i>    |
| CONDITIONAL ( <i>apodasis</i> ). |                         | CONDITIONAL ( <i>protasis</i> ).   |                          |
| sería,                           | <i>I should be.</i>     | fuera or fuese,                    | (If) <i>I were, etc.</i> |
| serías,                          | <i>thou wouldst be.</i> | fueras or fueses,                  |                          |
| sería,                           | <i>he would be.</i>     | fuera or fuese,                    |                          |
| V. sería,                        | <i>you would be.</i>    | V. fuera or fuese,                 |                          |
| seríamos,                        | <i>we should be.</i>    | fuéramos or fuésemos,              |                          |
| seríais,                         | <i>ye would be.</i>     | fuérais or fuéseis,                |                          |
| serían,                          | <i>they would be.</i>   | fueran or fuesen,                  |                          |
| VV. serían,                      | <i>you would be.</i>    | VV. fueran or fuesen,              |                          |
| Imperative Mode.                 |                         |                                    |                          |
| SINGULAR.                        |                         | PLURAL.                            |                          |
| —                                | —                       | seamos,                            | <i>let us be.</i>        |
| sé,                              | <i>be (thou).</i>       | sed,                               | <i>be (ye).</i>          |
| sea,                             | <i>let him be.</i>      | sean,                              | <i>let them be.</i>      |
| sea V.,                          | <i>be.</i>              | sean VV.,                          | <i>be.</i>               |
| —                                | —                       | no seamos,                         | <i>let us not be.</i>    |
| no seas,                         | <i>be (thou) not.</i>   | no seáis,                          | <i>be (ye) not.</i>      |
| no sea,                          | <i>let him not be.</i>  | no sean,                           | <i>let them not be.</i>  |
| no sea V.,                       | <i>do not be.</i>       | no sean VV.,                       | <i>do not be.</i>        |
| COMPOUND TENSES.                 |                         |                                    |                          |
| Infinitive Past.                 |                         | Gerund Past.                       |                          |
| haber sido, <i>to have been.</i> |                         | habiendo sido, <i>having been.</i> |                          |

| Indicative Mode.  | Subjunctive Mode.  |
|---|--|
| <p>PAST INDEFINITE.</p> <p>he sido, <i>I have been.</i><br/> has sido, <i>thou hast been.</i><br/> ha sido, <i>he has been.</i><br/> V. ha sido, <i>you have been.</i><br/> hemos sido, <i>we have been.</i><br/> habéis sido, <i>ye have been.</i><br/> han sido, <i>they have been.</i><br/> VV. han sido, <i>you have been.</i></p>                          | <p>PAST INDEFINITE.</p> <p>haya sido, <i>I</i><br/> hayas sido, <i>thou</i><br/> haya sido, <i>he</i><br/> V. haya sido, <i>you</i><br/> hayámos sido, <i>we</i><br/> hayáis sido, <i>ye</i><br/> hayan sido, <i>they</i><br/> VV. hayan sido, <i>you</i></p> <p><i>may have been, etc.</i></p>                                    |
| <p>PLUPERFECT.</p> <p>había sido, <i>I had been.</i><br/> habías sido, <i>thou hadst been.</i><br/> había sido, <i>he had been.</i><br/> V. había sido, <i>you had been.</i><br/> habíamos sido, <i>we had been.</i><br/> habíais sido, <i>ye had been.</i><br/> habían sido, <i>they had been.</i><br/> VV. habían sido, <i>you had been.</i></p>              | <p>PLUPERFECT (first form).</p> <p>hubiera sido, <i>I</i><br/> hubieras sido, <i>thou</i><br/> hubiera sido, <i>he</i><br/> V. hubiera sido, <i>you</i><br/> hubiéramos sido, <i>we</i><br/> hubiérais sido, <i>ye</i><br/> hubieran sido, <i>they</i><br/> VV. hubieran sido, <i>you</i></p> <p><i>might have been, etc.</i></p>  |
| <p>PAST ANTERIOR.</p> <p>hube sido, (when) <i>I had been.</i><br/> hubiste sido, <i>thou hadst been.</i><br/> hubo sido, <i>he had been.</i><br/> V. hubo sido, <i>you had been.</i><br/> hubimos sido, <i>we had been.</i><br/> hubisteis sido, <i>ye had been.</i><br/> hubieron sido, <i>they had been.</i><br/> VV. hubieron sido, <i>you had been.</i></p> | <p>PLUPERFECT (second form).</p> <p>hubiese sido, <i>I</i><br/> hubieses sido, <i>thou</i><br/> hubiese sido, <i>he</i><br/> V. hubiese sido, <i>you</i><br/> hubiésemos sido, <i>we</i><br/> hubiéseis sido, <i>ye</i><br/> hubiesen sido, <i>they</i><br/> VV. hubiesen sido, <i>you</i></p> <p><i>might have been, etc.</i></p> |
| <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p>habré sido, <i>I shall</i><br/> habrás sido, <i>thou wilt</i><br/> habrá sido, <i>he will</i><br/> V. habrá sido, <i>you will</i><br/> habrémos sido, <i>we shall</i><br/> habréis sido, <i>ye will</i><br/> habrán sido, <i>they will</i><br/> VV. habrán sido, <i>you will</i></p> <p><i>have been.</i></p>                         | <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p>hubiere sido, <i>I</i><br/> hubieres sido, <i>thou</i><br/> hubiere sido, <i>he</i><br/> V. hubiere sido, <i>you</i><br/> hubiéremos sido, <i>we</i><br/> hubiéreis sido, <i>ye</i><br/> hubieren sido, <i>they</i><br/> VV. hubieren sido, <i>you</i></p> <p><i>should have been, etc.</i></p>          |

| Indicative Mode.   | Subjunctive Mode.  |
|--|--|
| <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>apodasis</i>).</p> <div> <div> habría sido, <i>I should</i><br/> habrías sido, <i>thou wouldst</i><br/> habría sido, <i>he would</i><br/> V. habría sido, <i>you would</i><br/> habríamos sido, <i>we should</i><br/> habríais sido, <i>ye would</i><br/> habrían sido, <i>they would</i><br/> VV. habrían sido, <i>you would</i> </div> <div> } <i>have been.</i> </div> </div> | <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>protasis</i>).</p> <div> <div> hubiera <i>or</i> hubiese<br/> hubieras <i>or</i> hubieses<br/> hubiera <i>or</i> hubiese<br/> V. hubiera <i>or</i> hubiese<br/> hubiéramos <i>or</i> hubiésemos<br/> hubiérais <i>or</i> hubiéseis<br/> hubieran <i>or</i> hubiesen<br/> VV. hubieran <i>or</i> hubiesen </div> <div> } <i>sido,</i><br/> <i>(if) I had been, etc.</i> </div> </div> |

## CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE VERB.

396. Ser llamado, *to be called.*

| SIMPLE TENSES.  |   |
|---|---|
| Infinitive Mode.  | Gerund.   |
| ser { llamado, a, } <i>to be called.</i><br>{ llamados, as, }   | siendo { llamado, a, } <i>being called.</i><br>{ llamados, as, }  |
| Absolute Past Participle.   |   |
| llamado, a; llamados, as, <i>having been called.</i>  |   |
| Indicative Mode.  | Subjunctive Mode.   |
| <p>PRESENT.</p> <p>"I am called," etc.,</p> soy llamado, a.<br>eres llamado, a.<br>es llamado, a.<br>somos llamados, as.<br>sois llamados, as.<br>son llamados, as. | <p>PRESENT.</p> <p>"I may be called," etc.,</p> sea llamado, a.<br>seas llamado, a.<br>sea llamado, a.<br>seámos llamados, as.<br>seáis llamados, as.<br>sean llamados, as. |

| Indicative Mode.  | Subjunctive Mode.  |
|---|--|
| <p>IMPERFECT.<br/> <i>"I was called,"</i> etc.,<br/> era llamado, a.<br/> éramos llamados, as.</p> <p>PAST DEFINITE.<br/> <i>"I was called,"</i> etc.,<br/> fui llamado, a.<br/> fuimos llamados, as.</p> <p>FUTURE.<br/> <i>"I shall be called,"</i><br/> seré llamado, a.<br/> seremos llamados, as.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>apodasis</i>).<br/> <i>"I should be called,"</i><br/> sería llamado, a.<br/> seríamos llamados, as.</p> | <p>IMPERFECT (<i>first form</i>).<br/> <i>"I might be called,"</i> etc.,<br/> fuera llamado, a.<br/> fuéramos llamados, as.</p> <p>IMPERFECT (<i>second form</i>).<br/> <i>"I might be called,"</i> etc.,<br/> fuese llamado, a.<br/> fuésemos llamados, as.</p> <p>FUTURE.<br/> <i>"I should be called,"</i> etc.,<br/> fuere llamado, a.<br/> fuéremos llamados, as.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>protasis</i>).<br/> (If) <i>"I were called,"</i><br/> fuera or fuese llamado, a.<br/> fuéramos or fuésemos llamados, as.</p> |
| Imperative Mode.  |  |
| <p>— — — — —<br/> sé llamado, a, <i>be called.</i><br/> sea llamado, a, <i>let him be called.</i></p>   | <p>seamos llamados, as, <i>let us be</i><br/> sed llamados, as, <i>be</i><br/> sean llamados, as, <i>let them be</i> } <i>called.</i></p>  |
| COMPOUND TENSES.  |  |
| <p>Infinitive Past:—haber sido { llamado, a, } <i>to have been called.</i><br/> { llamados, as, }</p> <p>Gerund Past:—habiendo sido { llamado, a, } <i>having been called.</i><br/> { llamados, as, }</p>   |  |
| Indicative Mode.  | Subjunctive Mode.  |
| <p>PAST INDEFINITE.<br/> <i>"I have been called,"</i><br/> he sido llamado, a.<br/> hemos sido llamados, as.</p>  | <p>PAST INDEFINITE.<br/> <i>"I may have been called,"</i><br/> haya sido llamado, a.<br/> hayamos sido llamados, as.</p>   |

| Indicative Mode.   | Subjunctive Mode.   |
|--|---|
| <p>PLUPERFECT.</p> <p><i>"I had been called,"</i><br/> había sido llamado, a.<br/> habíamos sido llamados, as.</p> <p>PAST ANTERIOR.</p> <p>(When) <i>"I had been called,"</i><br/> hube sido llamado, a.<br/> hubimos sido llamados, as.</p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p><i>"I shall have been called,"</i><br/> habré sido llamado, a.<br/> habrémos sido llamados, as.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>apodasis</i>).</p> <p><i>"I should have been called,"</i><br/> habría sido llamado, a.<br/> habríamos sido llamados, as.</p> | <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>first form</i>).</p> <p><i>"I might have been called,"</i><br/> hubiera sido llamado, a.<br/> hubiéramos sido llamados, as.</p> <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>second form</i>).</p> <p><i>"I might have been called,"</i><br/> hubiese sido llamado, a.<br/> hubiésemos sido llamados, as.</p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p><i>"I should have been called,"</i><br/> hubiere sido llamado, a.<br/> hubiéremos sido llamados, as.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>protasis</i>).</p> <p>(If) <i>"I had been called,"</i><br/> hubiera or hubiese sido llama-<br/> do, a. [llamados, as.<br/> hubiéramos or hubiésemos sido.</p> |

## Remarks on the Passive.

387. The passive participle is varied like any adjective in *o*, and agrees in gender and number with the subject of the verb :—

el niño es amado de todos,  
la niña es mimada del ama,  
estos hombres han sido siempre  
muy estimados,  
las señoras habrían sido más  
consideradas, si no hubiesen  
tenido tanto orgullo y vanidad,

the boy is loved by all.  
the babe is petted by the nurse.  
these men have always been very  
much esteemed.  
the ladies would have been more  
highly respected, if they had  
not had such pride and vanity.

REMARK. — The past participle with *haber* is not variable ; hence *sido* and *estado* — which are never conjugated with *ser* — are incapable of any change for gender and number. The same is the case with

*hab* do as an auxiliary ; but when it has the meaning of an independent verb and may be inflected in the passive with *ser*, or when it is used absolutely, it assumes the regular variations of gender and number : —

no pudieron ser habidos, habidas,  
habido consejo,  
habida consulta,  
habidas las mujeres,

they (men or women) could not be apprehended.  
counsel having been taken.  
a consultation having been held.  
the women having been taken.

388. *By*, after passive verbs and participles, is rendered by **por** when agency is denoted, and by **de** when the verb expresses feeling or emotion : —

este árbol ha sido plantado por mi padre,  
fulano como escritor es estimado de muchos,  
comencé á pasearme conde, honrado de mis amigos, temido de mis enemigos, y acariciado de todos,

this tree was set out by my father.  
so and so, as a writer, is esteemed by many.  
began to parade about like an earl, honored by my friends, dreaded by my foes, and fawned upon by all.

389. When the verb *to be*, with a past participle, expresses accidental state or situation, it must be translated by **estar** or one of its substitutes. The past participle is then considered to be employed as an adjective : —

divididos estaban caballeros y escuderos,  
la obra está ya concluida,

knight and esquires were grouped apart.  
the work is already finished.

*a.* Substitutes of *estar* are, **ir** and **andar**, *to go*; **quedar** and **quedarse**, *to remain*; **encontrarse** and **hallarse**, *to find one's self*; **verse**, *to see one's self*; etc., all of which, thus employed, have the signification of *to be*, taken in a transitory or accidental sense : —

las calles **andaban** revueltas,  
**quedó** satisfecho de mi con-  
 ducta,  
**me ví** aislado de todos,

the streets were in an uproar.  
 he was satisfied with my beha-  
 vior.  
 I was isolated from everybody.

**390.** In general, *ser* is the only verb that serves to form the true passive voice in Spanish, and *estar* the only one of the two that unites with the gerund to make up the progressive form of the active voice. Aside from these constructions, the use of *ser* and *estar* is to be carefully distinguished :—

esta obra **ha sido traducida** del  
 Ingles,  
 dicha obra **está** mal **traducida**,  
 este libro **ha sido impreso** en  
 el siglo pasado,  
 me parece que **anda impresa**  
 una traduccion de dicho libro.

this work has been translated  
 from the English.  
 the said work is badly translated.  
 this book was printed in the last  
 century.  
 it appears that a version of  
 the book is in print.

**REMARK.** — *Estar* is, however, frequently found employed in the absolute sense of “to be,” reflecting the force of its Latin origin *stare, to stand* :—

**está** visto, *it is (stands) evident.* | **está** claro, *it is clear.*

**391.** With other words than participles, the radical distinction in the use of *ser* and *estar* may be summed up as follows :—

*a. Ser* expresses what is essential and inherent, hence permanent and absolute :—

él **es** Ingles, Español,  
 la casa **es** de piedra,  
**somos** amigos suyos,  
 yo **soy** cojo, tú **eres** ciego,  
 V. **es** rico, yo **soy** pobre,  
 no **son** felices, si bien **están**  
 contentos por ahora,

he is an Englishman, a Spaniard.  
 the house is of stone.  
 we are friends of his.  
 I am lame, thou art blind.  
 you are rich, I am poor.  
 they are not happy, although  
 pleased for the moment.

*b. Estar*, on the contrary, denotes an accidental, a transitory, situation or state:—

el Inglés **está** en España,  
la puerta **estaba** cerrada,  
el río **estaba** helado,  
la copa **está** llena,  
**estarán** aquí mañana,  
**estuvo** de buen humor,

the Englishman is in Spain.  
the door was shut.  
the river was frozen.  
the goblet is full.  
they will be here to-morrow.  
he was in good spirits.

**son** buenos; **están** buenos,  
**es** malo; **está** malo,  
**es** alto; **está** alto,  
**es** triste; **está** triste,  
**es** cansado; **está** cansado,  
**es** callado; **está** callado,  
el cuarto **es** cómodo — **está**  
limpio,  
la mujer **es** loca — **está** loca,  
el mar **es** inmenso; la mar **está**  
picada (94), [caliente,  
el yelo **es** frío; el agua **está**

they are good; they are well.  
he is bad; he is ill.  
he is tall; he is high.  
he is dull; he is sad.  
he is wearisome; he is tired.  
he is close-mouthed — silent.  
the room is convenient — is  
clean.  
the woman is crazy — is frantic.  
the sea is immense; the sea is  
rough.  
ice is cold; the water is hot.

REMARK. — **Estar** in its accidental sense may often be translated by its original meaning of *to stand*. “To stand” or “stand up,” referring to posture, is expressed by *ponerse de or en pié* (action), and *estar de or en pié* (state):—

**estuvo** á la puerta,  
**al** entrar la dama, **se puso de**  
**pié**,  
**estuvo en pié** largo rato pensando,

he stood at the door.  
as the lady came in, he stood up  
(arose).  
he stood up a long time thinking.

#### The Reflexive Conjugation.

392. A reflexive verb is one that is conjugated with a pronoun-object relating to the same person or thing as the subject:—

[self.  
yo **me** lisonjéo; él **se** engaña, | I flatter myself; he deceives him-



**393.** Any transitive verb may assume the reflexive form :—

*a.* With the pronominal object in the *accusative*, provided the verb naturally takes an accusative of the person :—

|                                |                                    |
|--------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| le alabo ; <b>se alaba</b> ,   | I praise him ; he praises himself. |
| me engaña ; <b>me engaño</b> , | he deceives me ; I deceive myself. |

*b.* With the pronominal object in the *dative*, provided the verb naturally takes the dative of the person and accusative of the thing :—

|                                |   |
|--------------------------------|---|
| te atribuyes <b>el poder</b> , | [power.<br>thou assumest (to thyself) the |
|--------------------------------|---|

REMARK.— Under this rule belongs also a kind of *ethical* dative, which adds energy to the phrase, and may be omitted :—

|                                       |  |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| me tomo <b>la libertad</b> de . . . , | I take (for myself) the liberty to . . . |
| se compra <b>una prenda</b> ,         | he buys (for himself) a garment.         |

**394.** Many transitive verbs are made intransitive by assuming the reflexive form :—

|                                       |                                     |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| abrió la puerta ; la puerta <b>se</b> | he opened the door ; the door       |
| abrió, [rompió,                       | opened. [broke.                     |
| rompió el vaso ; el vaso <b>se</b>    | he broke the glass ; the glass      |
| vende los libros ; los buenos         | he sells the books ; good books     |
| libros <b>se venden</b> caro,         | sell dear.                          |
| ahogó su dolor ; <b>me ahogo</b> ,    | he drowned his grief ; I suffocate. |
| hace alguna cosa ; no sabe lo         | he makes something ; he does        |
| que <b>se hace</b> ,                  | not know what he does.              |

**395.** Intransitive verbs often become reflexive with modified significations, the pronominal object frequently assuming an adverbial force :—

|                                 |                               |
|---------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| dormir ; dormir <b>se</b> ,     | to sleep ; to go to sleep.    |
| sale ; el cubo <b>se sale</b> , | he goes out ; the pail leaks. |
| muere ; <b>se muere</b> ,       | he dies ; he is dying.        |
| voy, <i>or</i> march <b>o</b> , | I go, I march.                |

**me voy** *or* **me marchó**,  
**ven**; **vén**te,  
**cae**; **se cae**,

I go off *or* away.  
 come; come along.  
 he falls; it falls down.

**396.** Many verbs have in Spanish the reflexive form only:—

**alegrarse**; **arrepentirse**.  
**burlarse**; **dignarse**,  
**figurarse**; **quejarse**,

to rejoice; to repent.  
 to laugh at; to disdain.  
 to imagine; to complain.

**397.** Many verbs that are reflexive in Spanish are expressed in English by the formal passive, and some by both the reflexive and the passive:—

**disgustarse**; **equivocarse**,  
**llamarse**,  
**engañarse**,

to be displeased; to be mistaken.  
 to call one's self *or* to be called.  
 to deceive one's self, to be deceived.

**398.** Model verb — **alabarse**, *to praise one's self.*

| SIMPLE TENSES.   |  |
|--|--|
| Infinitive.  | Gerund.  |
| alabarse, <i>to praise one's self.</i>   | alabándose, <i>praising one's self.</i>  |
| Indicative Mode.   | Subjunctive Mode.  |
| <p>PRESENT.</p> <p><i>"I praise myself," etc.,</i></p> <p><b>me</b> alabo.<br/> <b>te</b> alabas.<br/> <b>se</b> alaba.<br/> <b>V. se</b> alaba.<br/> <b>nos</b> alabamos.<br/> <b>os</b> alabais.<br/> <b>se</b> alaban.<br/> <b>VV. se</b> alaban.</p> | <p>PRESENT.</p> <p><i>"I may praise myself," etc.,</i></p> <p><b>me</b> alabe.<br/> <b>te</b> alabes.<br/> <b>se</b> alabe.<br/> <b>V. se</b> alabe.<br/> <b>nos</b> alabemos.<br/> <b>os</b> alabeis.<br/> <b>se</b> alaben.<br/> <b>VV. se</b> alaben.</p> |

| Indicative Mode.   | Subjunctive Mode.   |
|--|---|
| <p>IMPERFECT.<br/> <i>"I was praising myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> me alababa.<br/> te alababas.<br/> se alababa.<br/> V. se alababa, etc.</p> <p>PAST DEFINITE.<br/> <i>"I praised myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> me alabé.<br/> te alabaste.<br/> se alabó.<br/> V. se alabó, etc.</p> <p>FUTURE.<br/> <i>"I shall praise myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> me alabaré.<br/> te alabarás.<br/> se alabará.<br/> V. se alabará, etc.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>apodasis</i>).<br/> <i>"I should praise myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> me alabaría.<br/> te alabarías.<br/> se alabaría.<br/> V. se alabaría, etc.</p> | <p>IMPERFECT (<i>first form</i>).<br/> <i>"I might praise myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> me alabara.<br/> te alabaras.<br/> se alabara.<br/> V. se alabara, etc.</p> <p>IMPERFECT (<i>second form</i>).<br/> <i>"I might praise myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> me alabase.<br/> te alabases.<br/> se alabase.<br/> V. se alabase, etc.</p> <p>FUTURE.<br/> <i>"I should praise myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> me alabare.<br/> te alabares.<br/> se alabare.<br/> V. se alabare, etc.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>protasis</i>).<br/> (If) <i>"I praised myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> me alab-ara, -ase.<br/> te alab-aras, -ases.<br/> se alab-ara, -ase.<br/> V. se alab-ara, -ase, etc.</p> |
| Imperative Mode.   |   |
| <p>SINGULAR.</p> <p>— —<br/> alábate, praise thyself.<br/> alábese, let him praise himself.<br/> alábese V., praise yourself.</p> <p>— —<br/> no te alabes, do not praise thyself.<br/> no se alabe, let him not p. himself.<br/> no se alabe V., do not p. yourself.</p>  | <p>PLURAL.</p> <p>alabémonos, let us praise ourselves.<br/> alabáos, praise yourselves.<br/> alábense, let them praise themselves.<br/> alábense VV., praise yourselves.</p> <p>no nos alabemos, let us not p. o. s.<br/> no os alabeis, do not praise y. s.<br/> no se alaben, let them not p. th. s.<br/> no se alaben VV., do not p. y. s.</p>   |

## COMPOUND TENSES.

| Infinitive Past.  | Gerund Past.   |
|---|--|
| haberse alabado, <i>to have praised one's self.</i>   | habiéndose alabado, <i>having praised one's self.</i>  |
| Indicative Mode.  | Subjunctive Mode.  |
| <p>PAST INDEFINITE.</p> <p><i>"I have praised myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> <b>me</b> he alabado.<br/> <b>te</b> has alabado.<br/> <b>se</b> ha alabado.<br/> V. <b>se</b> ha alabado.<br/> <b>nos</b> hemos alabado.<br/> <b>os</b> habeis alabado.<br/> <b>se</b> han alabado.<br/> VV. <b>se</b> han alabado.</p> <p>PLUPERFECT.</p> <p><i>"I had praised myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> <b>me</b> había alabado.<br/> <b>te</b> habías alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>PAST ANTERIOR.</p> <p>(When) <i>"I had praised myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> <b>me</b> hube alabado.<br/> <b>te</b> hubiste alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p><i>"I shall have praised myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> <b>me</b> habré alabado.<br/> <b>te</b> habrás alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>protasis</i>).<br/> <i>"I should have praised myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> <b>me</b> habría alabado.<br/> <b>te</b> habrías alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> | <p>PAST INDEFINITE.</p> <p><i>"I may have praised myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> <b>me</b> haya alabado.<br/> <b>te</b> hayas alabado.<br/> <b>se</b> haya alabado.<br/> V. <b>se</b> haya alabado.<br/> <b>nos</b> hayámos alabado.<br/> <b>os</b> hayáis alabado.<br/> <b>se</b> hayan alabado.<br/> VV. <b>se</b> hayan alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>first form</i>).<br/> <i>"I might have praised myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> <b>me</b> hubiera alabado.<br/> <b>te</b> hubieras alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>second form</i>).<br/> <i>"I might have praised myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> <b>me</b> hubiese alabado.<br/> <b>te</b> hubieses alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p><i>"I should have praised myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> <b>me</b> hubiere alabado.<br/> <b>te</b> hubieres alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>apodasis</i>).<br/> (If) <i>"I had praised myself,"</i> etc.,<br/> <b>me</b> hubiera <i>or</i> hubieses alabado.<br/> <b>te</b> hubieras <i>or</i> hubieses alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> |

399. Model verb — **figurarse**, to fancy (to one's self), to imagine.

| SIMPLE TENSES.  |  |
|---|--|
| Infinitive Mode.  | Gerund.  |
| figurarse, to imagine.  | figurándose, imagining.  |
| Indicative Mode.  | Subjunctive Mode.  |
| <p>PRESENT.</p> <p>me figuro, <i>I imagine.</i><br/> te figuras, <i>thou imaginest.</i><br/> se figura, <i>he imagines.</i><br/> V. se figura, <i>you imagine.</i><br/> nos figuramos, <i>we imagine.</i><br/> os figurais, <i>ye imagine.</i><br/> se figuran, <i>they imagine.</i><br/> VV. se figuran, <i>you imagine.</i></p> <p>IMPERFECT.</p> <p>me figuraba, <i>I was imagining.</i></p> <p>PAST DEFINITE.</p> <p>me figuré, <i>I imagined.</i></p> <p>FUTURE.</p> <p>me figuraré, <i>I shall imagine.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>apodasis</i>).</p> <p>me figuraría, <i>I should imagine.</i></p> | <p>PRESENT.</p> <p>me figure, <i>I may imagine.</i><br/> te figures, <i>thou mayst imagine.</i><br/> se figure, <i>he may imagine.</i><br/> V. se figure, <i>you may imagine.</i><br/> nos figuremos, <i>we may imagine.</i><br/> os figureis, <i>ye may imagine.</i><br/> se figuren, <i>they may imagine.</i><br/> VV. se figuren, <i>you may imagine.</i></p> <p>IMPERFECT (<i>first form</i>).</p> <p>me figurara, <i>I might imagine.</i></p> <p>IMPERFECT (<i>second form</i>).</p> <p>me figurase, <i>I might imagine.</i></p> <p>FUTURE.</p> <p>me figurare, <i>I should imagine.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>protasis</i>).</p> <p>me figur-ara, -ase, (if) <i>I imagined.</i></p> |
| Imperative Mode.  |  |
| <p>SINGULAR.</p> <p>— — — — —</p> <p>figúrate, <i>imagine (thou).</i><br/> figúrese, <i>let him imagine.</i><br/> figúrese V., <i>imagine.</i></p>  | <p>PLURAL.</p> <p>figurémonos, <i>let us imagine.</i><br/> figuráos, <i>imagine (ye).</i><br/> figúrense, <i>let them imagine.</i><br/> figúrense VV., <i>imagine.</i></p>   |

| Imperative Mode.  |  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
|---|--|-----------------------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|-------------|------------------------|-----------|---------------------------|------------|----------------------------|-----------|----------------------------|-----------|-------------------------|-------------|-----------------------------|------------|--|--------------------------|----------|-----------------------------|---------------------------|-------------|--------------------------|-----------|-----------------------------|------------|------------------------------|-----------|----------------------------|-----------|---------------------------|-------------|-------------------------------|------------|
| SINGULAR.   | PLURAL.  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| no <b>te</b> figures, <i>imagine (thou) not.</i><br>no <b>se</b> figure, <i>let him not imagine.</i><br>no <b>se</b> figure V., <i>do not imagine.</i>  | no <b>nos</b> figuremos, <i>let us not imagine.</i><br>no <b>os</b> figureis, <i>imagine (ye) not.</i><br>no <b>se</b> figuren, <i>let them not imagine.</i><br>no <b>se</b> figuren VV., <i>do not imagine.</i> |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| COMPOUND TENSES.  |  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| Infinitive Past.  | Gerund Past.   |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| haberse figurado, <i>to have imagined.</i>  | habiéndose figurado, <i>having imagined.</i>   |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| Indicative Mode.  | Subjunctive Mode.  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| <p>PAST INDEFINITE.</p> <table><tr><td><b>me</b> he figurado,</td><td><i>I</i></td><td rowspan="7">} <i>have imagined.</i></td></tr><tr><td><b>te</b> has figurado,</td><td><i>thou</i></td></tr><tr><td><b>se</b> ha figurado,</td><td><i>he</i></td></tr><tr><td>V. <b>se</b> ha figurado,</td><td><i>you</i></td></tr><tr><td><b>nos</b> hemos figurado,</td><td><i>we</i></td></tr><tr><td><b>os</b> habeis figurado,</td><td><i>ye</i></td></tr><tr><td><b>se</b> han figurado,</td><td><i>they</i></td></tr><tr><td>VV. <b>se</b> han figurado,</td><td><i>you</i></td></tr></table> <p>PLUPERFECT.</p> <p><b>me</b> había figurado, <i>I had imagined.</i></p> <p>PAST ANTERIOR.</p> <p><b>me</b> hube figurado, (when) <i>I had imagined.</i></p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p><b>me</b> habré figurado, <i>I shall have imagined.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>apodasis</i>).</p> <p><b>me</b> habría figurado, <i>I should have imagined.</i></p> | <b>me</b> he figurado,   | <i>I</i>                    | } <i>have imagined.</i> | <b>te</b> has figurado, | <i>thou</i> | <b>se</b> ha figurado, | <i>he</i> | V. <b>se</b> ha figurado, | <i>you</i> | <b>nos</b> hemos figurado, | <i>we</i> | <b>os</b> habeis figurado, | <i>ye</i> | <b>se</b> han figurado, | <i>they</i> | VV. <b>se</b> han figurado, | <i>you</i> | <p>PAST INDEFINITE.</p> <table><tr><td><b>me</b> haya figurado,</td><td><i>I</i></td><td rowspan="7">} <i>may have imagined.</i></td></tr><tr><td><b>te</b> hayas figurado,</td><td><i>thou</i></td></tr><tr><td><b>se</b> haya figurado,</td><td><i>he</i></td></tr><tr><td>V. <b>se</b> haya figurado,</td><td><i>you</i></td></tr><tr><td><b>nos</b> hayámos figurado,</td><td><i>we</i></td></tr><tr><td><b>os</b> hayáis figurado,</td><td><i>ye</i></td></tr><tr><td><b>se</b> hayan figurado,</td><td><i>they</i></td></tr><tr><td>VV. <b>se</b> hayan figurado,</td><td><i>you</i></td></tr></table> <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>first form</i>).</p> <p><b>me</b> hubiera figurado, <i>I might have imagined.</i></p> <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>second form</i>).</p> <p><b>me</b> hubiese figurado, <i>I might have imagined.</i></p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p><b>me</b> hubiere figurado, <i>I should have imagined.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>protasis</i>).</p> <p><b>me</b> hub-iera, -iese figurado, (if) <i>I had imagined.</i></p> | <b>me</b> haya figurado, | <i>I</i> | } <i>may have imagined.</i> | <b>te</b> hayas figurado, | <i>thou</i> | <b>se</b> haya figurado, | <i>he</i> | V. <b>se</b> haya figurado, | <i>you</i> | <b>nos</b> hayámos figurado, | <i>we</i> | <b>os</b> hayáis figurado, | <i>ye</i> | <b>se</b> hayan figurado, | <i>they</i> | VV. <b>se</b> hayan figurado, | <i>you</i> |
| <b>me</b> he figurado,  | <i>I</i>   | } <i>have imagined.</i>     |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| <b>te</b> has figurado,   | <i>thou</i>  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| <b>se</b> ha figurado,  | <i>he</i>  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| V. <b>se</b> ha figurado,   | <i>you</i>   |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| <b>nos</b> hemos figurado,  | <i>we</i>  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| <b>os</b> habeis figurado,  | <i>ye</i>  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| <b>se</b> han figurado,   | <i>they</i>  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| VV. <b>se</b> han figurado,   | <i>you</i>   |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| <b>me</b> haya figurado,  | <i>I</i>   | } <i>may have imagined.</i> |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| <b>te</b> hayas figurado,   | <i>thou</i>  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| <b>se</b> haya figurado,  | <i>he</i>  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| V. <b>se</b> haya figurado,   | <i>you</i>   |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| <b>nos</b> hayámos figurado,  | <i>we</i>  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| <b>os</b> hayáis figurado,  | <i>ye</i>  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| <b>se</b> hayan figurado,   | <i>they</i>  |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |
| VV. <b>se</b> hayan figurado,   | <i>you</i>   |                             |                         |                         |             |                        |           |                           |            |                            |           |                            |           |                         |             |                             |            |  |                          |          |                             |                           |             |                          |           |                             |            |                              |           |                            |           |                           |             |                               |            |

## Remarks on the Reflexive Verb.

**400.** The pronoun-subject of the reflexive verb should be expressed when emphasis or contrast require it ; but in the interrogative conjugation it must never intervene between the *compound* forms of the verb. Its ordinary position may be best gathered from a few examples :—

| WITHOUT A NEGATION.   |   |
|---|---|
| Affirmative.  | Interrogative.  |
| PRESENT.  |   |
| <p><i>"I imagine,"</i> etc.,</p> <p>yo me figuro.</p> <p>tú te figuras.</p> <p>vos os figurais (§ 181).</p> <p>él se figura.</p> <p>ella se figura.</p> <p>uno se figura, or se figura uno.</p> <p>V. se figura, or se figura V.</p> <p>nosotros } nos figuramos.</p> <p>nosotras }</p> <p>vosotros } os figurais.</p> <p>vosotras }</p> <p>ellos } se figuran.</p> <p>ellas }</p> <p>VV. se figuran, or se figuran VV.</p> | <p><i>"Do I imagine?"</i> etc.,</p> <p>¿me figuro yo ?</p> <p>¿te figuras tú ?</p> <p>¿os figurais vos ?</p> <p>¿se figura él ?</p> <p>¿se figura ella ?</p> <p>¿se figura uno ?</p> <p>¿se figura V.? or ¿V. se figura?</p> <p>¿nos figuramos { nosotros ?</p> <p>                              { nosotras ?</p> <p>¿os figurais { vosotros ?</p> <p>                              { vosotras ?</p> <p>¿se figuran { ellos ?</p> <p>                              { ellas ? [figuran?</p> <p>¿se figuran VV.? or ¿VV. se</p> |
| PAST INDEFINITE.  |   |
| <p><i>"I have imagined,"</i> etc.,</p> <p>yo me he figurado.</p> <p>tú te has figurado.</p> <p>vos os habeis figurado.</p> <p>él se ha figurado.</p> <p>ella se ha figurado.</p> <p>uno se ha figurado. [rado V.</p> <p>V. se ha figurado, or se ha figu-</p>   | <p><i>"Have I imagined?"</i> etc.,</p> <p>¿me he figurado yo ?</p> <p>¿te has figurado tú ?</p> <p>¿os habeis figurado vos ?</p> <p>¿se ha figurado él ?</p> <p>¿se ha figurado ella ?</p> <p>¿se ha figurado uno ?</p> <p>¿se ha figurado V.? etc.</p>   |

| Affirmative.   | Interrogative.   |
|--|--|
| <p style="text-align: center;"><b>PAST INDEFINITE (continued).</b></p> <p><i>"We have imagined," etc.,</i><br/> <b>nosotros</b> } nos hemos figurado.<br/> <b>nosotras</b> }<br/> <b>vosotros</b> } os habeis figurado.<br/> <b>vosotras</b> }<br/> <b>ellos</b> } se han figurado.<br/> <b>ellas</b> }<br/> <b>VV.</b> se han figurado, <i>or</i> se han figurado <b>VV.</b></p>  |  |
| <p style="text-align: center;"><b>Imperative Mode.</b></p>   |  |
| <p style="text-align: center;"><b>SINGULAR.</b></p> <p style="text-align: center;">—</p> <p>figúrate <b>tú.</b><br/>     figuráos <b>vos.</b><br/>     figúrese <b>él, ella, uno.</b><br/>     figúrese <b>V.</b></p>  | <p style="text-align: center;"><b>PLURAL.</b></p> <p>figurémonos <b>nosotros, -as.</b><br/>     figuráos <b>vosotros.</b><br/>     figuráos <b>vosotras.</b><br/>     figúrense <b>ellos, -as.</b><br/>     figúrense <b>VV.</b></p> |
| <p style="text-align: center;"><b>WITH A NEGATIVE.</b></p>   |  |
| Affirmative.   | Interrogative.   |
| <p style="text-align: center;"><b>PRESENT.</b></p> <p><i>"I do not imagine," etc.,</i><br/> <b>yo no</b> me figuro.<br/> <b>tú no</b> te figuras.<br/> <b>él no</b> se figura.<br/> <b>V. no</b> se figura, <i>or</i> <b>no</b> se figura <b>V.</b><br/> <b>nosotros no</b> nos figuramos.<br/> <b>vosotros no</b> os figurais.<br/> <b>ellos no</b> se figuran. [ran <b>VV.</b><br/> <b>VV. no</b> se figuran, <i>or</i> <b>no</b> se figu-</p> |  |
| <p><i>"Do I not imagine?" etc.,</i><br/>     ¿no me figuro <b>yo?</b><br/>     ¿no te figuras <b>tú?</b><br/>     ¿no se figura <b>él?</b><br/>     ¿no se figura <b>V.?</b><br/>     ¿no nos figuramos <b>nosotros?</b><br/>     ¿no os figurais <b>vosotros?</b><br/>     ¿no se figuran <b>ellos?</b><br/>     ¿no se figuran <b>VV.?</b></p>   |  |



| Affirmative.   | Interrogative.   |
|--|--|
| <p style="text-align: center;">PAST INDEFINITE.</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between;"> <div style="width: 48%;"> <p><i>"I have not imagined,"</i> etc.,</p> <p><b>yo no</b> me he figurado.</p> <p><b>tú no</b> te has figurado.</p> <p><b>él no</b> se ha figurado.</p> <p><b>V. no</b> se ha figurado. [rado.</p> <p><b>nosotros no</b> nos hemos figu-</p> <p><b>vosotros no</b> os habeis figurado.</p> <p><b>ellos no</b> se han figurado.</p> <p><b>VV. no</b> se han figurado.</p> </div> <div style="width: 48%;"> <p><i>"Have I not imagined?"</i> etc.,</p> <p>¿<b>no</b> me he figurado <b>yo</b>?</p> <p>¿<b>no</b> te has figurado <b>tú</b>?</p> <p>¿<b>no</b> se ha figurado <b>él</b>?</p> <p>¿<b>no</b> se ha figurado <b>V.</b>?</p> <p>¿<b>no</b> nos hemos figurado <b>nosotros</b>?</p> <p>¿<b>no</b> os habeis figurado <b>vosotros</b>?</p> <p>¿<b>no</b> se han figurado <b>ellos</b>?</p> <p>¿<b>no</b> se han figurado <b>VV.</b>?</p> </div> </div> |  |
| <p style="text-align: center;">Imperative Mode.</p>  |  |
| <p style="text-align: center;">SINGULAR.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">—</p> <p><b>no</b> te figures <b>tú</b>.</p> <p><b>no</b> se figure <b>él</b>.</p> <p><b>no</b> se figure <b>V.</b></p>  | <p style="text-align: center;">PLURAL.</p> <p><b>no</b> no figuremos <b>nosotros</b>.</p> <p><b>no</b> os figureis <b>vosotros</b>.</p> <p><b>no</b> se figuren <b>ellos</b>.</p> <p><b>no</b> se figuren <b>VV.</b></p> |

**401.** The pronoun-object regularly stands before the finite verb in all conditions of a sentence. In the literary style, however, it may be attached to the verb in the simple tenses, and to the auxiliary in the compound tenses, when the verb begins a phrase ; but in such position of the object, the subject must take its place after the verb or participle :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| equivoquéme (yo),<br>equivocóse (él),<br>héme equivocado (yo),<br>háse equivocado (él), | I made a mistake.<br>he made a mistake.<br>I have made a mistake.<br>he has made a mistake. |
|---|---|

REMARK. — In quaint, archaic language, the auxiliary and participle often change places, and the reflexive pronoun is attached to the participle :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <p><b>“alegrádome he</b> con la buena<br/>nueva que me ha venido ; á la<br/>casa del Señor iremos,”</p> | <p>I rejoice at the glad tidings that<br/>have reached me ; we will go<br/>to the house of the Lord.</p> |
|---|--|

*The last words of Fray Luis de Granada, 1588.*

**402.** The reflexive object is regularly attached to the infinitive and gerund, whether the phrase is affirmative or negative ; the pronoun-subject, however, is more often placed after these forms :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <p><b>verme yo</b>, for me to see myself.<br/><b>verse él</b>, for him to see himself.<br/><b>haberme visto yo</b>, for me to have<br/>seen myself.<br/><b>haberse visto él</b>, for him to have<br/>seen himself.</p> | <p><b>viéndome yo</b>, I seeing myself.<br/><b>viéndose él</b>, he seeing himself.<br/><b>habiéndome visto yo</b>, I having<br/>seen myself.<br/><b>habiéndose visto él</b>, he having<br/>seen himself.</p> |
| <p><b>no verse él</b>, for him not to see<br/>himself.<br/><b>no haberse visto él</b>, for him not<br/>to have seen himself.</p>   | <p><b>no viéndose él</b>, he not seeing him-<br/>self.<br/><b>no habiéndose visto él</b>, he not<br/>having seen himself.</p>  |

**403.** The first person plural of the imperative suppresses the *s* of the verb-ending when the pronominal object is attached to it :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <p>1. <b>figurémonos</b> for <b>figurémosnos</b>,<br/>2. <b>entendámonos</b> for <b>entendámosnos</b>,<br/>3. <b>arrepintámonos</b> for <b>arrepintámosnos</b>,</p> | <p>let us imagine. [selves.<br/>let us understand our-<br/>let us repent.</p> |
|---|---|

*but no nos figuremos, entendamos, arrepintamos.*

**404.** The second person plural of the imperative loses its *d* before the attached pronoun-object :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <p>1. <b>figuráos</b> for <b>figurados</b>,<br/>2. <b>entendéos</b> for <b>entendedos</b>,<br/>3. <b>arrepentíos</b> for <b>arrepentidos</b>,</p> | <p>imagine ye.<br/>understand yourselves.<br/>repent ye.</p> |
|---|--|

Except the imperative of *irse*, — *ídos*, go away.

**405.** The reflexive verb may be strengthened by the repetition of the pronoun-object in the prepositional case joined to the adjective **mismo**, **a**, or **propio**, **a**, *self*:—

yo me alabo á **mí mismo**,  
 ella se jacta **de sí misma**,  
 VV. se burlan **de sí mismos**,  
 vosotros os burlais **de vosotros**  
**misimos**, [**nosotros mismos**,  
 nosotros nos hemos perdido á  
 tú te engañas á **tí propio**,

I praise myself.  
 she boasts of herself.  
 you laugh at yourselves.  
 ye laugh at yourselves.  
  
 we have ruined ourselves.  
 thou deceivest thyself.

#### Special Uses of the Reflexive.

**406.** Verbs that in Spanish are permanently reflexive, with an active or neuter signification in English, may, besides the personal inflection, be conjugated impersonally with **se**, *itself*, the dative pronoun serving to distinguish the person:—

|  |                            |  |                                 |  |
|--|----------------------------|--|---------------------------------|--|
| me figúro,<br>te figuras,<br>se figura,<br>V. se figura,<br>nos figuramos,<br>os figurais,<br>se figuran,<br>VV. se figuran,   | (I figure to myself, etc.) | or <b>se me</b> figúra,<br>or <b>se te</b> figura,<br>or <b>se le</b> figura,<br>or <b>se le</b> figura á V.,<br>or <b>se nos</b> figura,<br>or <b>se os</b> figura,<br>or <b>se les</b> figura,<br>or <b>se les</b> figura á VV.,   | (it figures itself to me, etc.) | <i>I imagine.</i><br><i>thou imaginest.</i><br><i>he imagines.</i><br><i>you imagine.</i><br><i>we imagine.</i><br><i>ye imagine.</i><br><i>they imagine.</i><br><i>you imagine.</i>   |
| me he figurado,<br>te has figurado,<br>se ha figurado,<br>V. se ha figurado,<br>nos hemos figurado,<br>os habeis figurado,<br>se han figurado,<br>VV. se han figurado, |                            | or <b>se me</b> ha figurado,<br>or <b>se te</b> ha figurado,<br>or <b>se le</b> ha figurado,<br>or <b>se le</b> ha figurado á V.,<br>or <b>se nos</b> ha figurado,<br>or <b>se os</b> ha figurado,<br>or <b>se les</b> ha figurado,<br>or <b>se les</b> ha figurado á VV., |                                 | <i>I have imagined.</i><br><i>thou hast imagined.</i><br><i>he has imagined.</i><br><i>you have imagined.</i><br><i>we have imagined.</i><br><i>ye have imagined.</i><br><i>they have imagined.</i><br><i>you have imagined.</i> |

|                          |                                |                               |
|--------------------------|--------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| me olvidé,               | or se me olvidó,               | <i>I forgot.</i>              |
| te olvidaste,            | or se te olvidó,               | <i>thou didst forget.</i>     |
| se olvidó, etc.,         | or se le olvidó, etc.,         | <i>he forgot, etc.</i>        |
| me había olvidado,       | or se me había olvidado,       | <i>I had forgotten.</i>       |
| te habías olvidado,      | or se te había olvidado,       | <i>thou hadst forgotten.</i>  |
| se había olvidado, etc., | or se le había olvidado, etc., | <i>he had forgotten, etc.</i> |

407. In Spanish, the formal passive is comparatively little used at the present day, other less cumbersome constructions being better adapted to the genius of that language. Hence :—

408. The passive voice may be replaced by the reflexive verb used personally :—

|                                       |                              |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| el libro <b>se publicó</b> ,          | the book was issued.         |
| la voz <b>se repitió</b> ,            | the voice was repeated.      |
| su gloria <b>se verá</b> ,            | his glory will be seen.      |
| el dinero <b>se ganó, se perdió</b> , | the money was won, was lost. |
| ellos <b>se engañan</b> mucho,        | they are greatly deceived.   |
| las casas <b>se han vendido</b> ,     | the houses have been sold.   |
| eso no <b>se puede decir</b> , or }   | that cannot be said, or      |
| eso no puede <b>decirse</b> , }       | you cannot say that.         |

a. In public announcements, the verb *to be* of the passive is usually omitted in English, while, in Spanish, the reflexive, which always replaces it in such cases, is given in full :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| aquí <b>se habla</b> Español,                          | Spanish (is) spoken here.                  |
| <b>se cambia</b> toda clase de moneda,                 | all kinds of coin (are) exchanged.         |
| <b>se compran</b> valores de la deuda pública,         | government securities (are) bought.        |
| <b>se hacen</b> cobros y pagos,                        | collections and payments made.             |
| <b>se confeccionan</b> tarjetas y facturas en el acto, | cards and billheads made up without delay. |

|                                   |                                 |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| <b>se garantiza</b> el trabajo,   | work warranted.                 |
| <b>se cierra</b> los Domingos,    | closed on Sundays.              |
| <b>se prohíbe</b> fijar carteles, | "post no bills."                |
| <b>no se admiten</b> imposiciones | no deposits received after five |
| despues de las cuatro,            | o'clock.                        |

409. The passive voice may also be replaced by the reflexive verb used impersonally : —

|  |                                 |
|--|---------------------------------|
| <b>se dice</b> ; <b>se ha dicho</b> ,          | it is said ; it has been said.  |
| <b>se me engaña</b> ,                          | I am deceived.                  |
| <b>se me ha engañado</b> ,                     | I have been deceived.           |
| <b>se le permite</b> ; <b>se le permitió</b> , | he is allowed ; he was allowed. |
| <b>se nos había engañado</b> ,                 | we had been deceived.           |
| <b>se les habrá permitido</b> ,                | they will have been allowed.    |

*Literally* : it says itself, it has said itself, it deceives itself to me, it has deceived itself to me, *etc.*

410. The reflexive used impersonally is a substitute of the third person plural active, and is preferred when a vague or indirect reference to persons is desirable. This favorite construction has grown out of the national propensity to equivocation : —

|                                  |   |
|----------------------------------|---|
| <b>no se me entiende</b>         | I am not understood                     |
| ( <i>or no me entienden</i> ),   | (Fr. <i>on ne me comprend pas</i> ).    |
| <b>se le mandó</b> salir         | he was ordered to go out                |
| ( <i>or le mandaron salir</i> ), | (Fr. <i>on lui ordonna de sortir</i> ). |
| <b>se me dice</b>                | I am told                               |
| ( <i>or me dicen</i> ),          | (Fr. <i>on me dit</i> ).                |
| <b>se me ha dicho</b>            | I have been told                        |
| ( <i>or me han dicho</i> ),      | (Fr. <i>on m'a dit</i> ).               |

REMARK. — It is customary to regard this *se* as an indefinite subject—*they, you, one*—like the French *on* (*homme*) and Germanic *man* ; but an accusative cannot be a nominative, and the only true explanation is to regard the verb, as it is, impersonal, representing such Latin constructions as *itur, ventum est, invidetur mihi*, *etc.*

411. So also in the redundant construction :—

á **él** se le mató á pedradas,  
 (le *mataron* á pedradas),  
 á **tales hombres** se les engaña  
 fácilmente, [fácilmente),  
 (á tales hombres *engañan*  
 á los buenos príncipes no se  
 les ha de perder la vergüenza,  
 á **nadie** se le puede imputar esta  
 fealdad,

he was stoned to death,  
 (they stoned him to death).  
 such men are easily deceived,  
 [easily).  
 (they deceive such men  
 we are not to lose our respect for  
 good princes.  
 such a vile action can be imputed  
 to no man.

412. The following examples of passive constructions will serve to illustrate and fix the foregoing rules :—

|   |                                   |   |  |
|---|-----------------------------------|---|--|
| <p>1. { soy engañado,<br/>me engaño,<br/>se me engaña,<br/>eres engañado,<br/>2. { te engañas,<br/>se te engaña,<br/>es engañado,<br/>3. { se engaña,<br/>se le engaña,<br/>V. es engañado,<br/>3. { V. se engaña,<br/>se le engaña á V.,<br/>somos engañados,<br/>1. { nos engañamos,<br/>se nos engaña,<br/>sois engañados,<br/>2. { os engañais,<br/>se os engaña,<br/>son engañados,<br/>3. { se engañan,<br/>se les engaña,<br/>VV. son engañados,<br/>3. { VV. se engañan,<br/>se les engaña á VV., }</p> | <p><i>I am deceived, etc.</i></p> | <p>1. { he sido engañado,<br/>me he engañado,<br/>se me ha engañado,<br/>has sido engañado,<br/>2. { te has engañado,<br/>se te ha engañado,<br/>ha sido engañado,<br/>3. { se ha engañado,<br/>se le ha engañado,<br/>V. ha sido engañado,<br/>3. { V. se ha engañado,<br/>se le ha engañado á V.,<br/>hemos sido engañados,<br/>1. { nos hemos engañado,<br/>se nos ha engañado,<br/>habeis sido engañados,<br/>2. { os habeis engañado,<br/>se os ha engañado,<br/>han sido engañados,<br/>3. { se han engañado,<br/>se les ha engañado,<br/>VV. han sido engañados,<br/>3. { VV. se han engañado,<br/>se les ha engañado á VV., }</p> | <p><i>I have been deceived, etc.</i></p> |
|   |                                   |   |  |

## Reciprocal Verbs.

**413.** When reflexive verbs in the plural refer to two or more persons distributively, they are called reciprocal verbs, and the object-pronoun is rendered *each other* when two are indicated, and *one another* if reference is made to several :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| nos alabamos,  | we praise each other, <i>or</i> one another.   |
| os alabais,  | ye praise each other, <i>or</i> one another.   |
| se aman,   | they love each other, <i>or</i> one another.   |
| alabémonos,  | let us praise one another.   |
| amáos el uno al otro,  | love each other.   |
| amáos los unos á los otros,                                      | love one another.  |
| ámense, <i>or</i> que se amen,                                   | let them love each other, <i>etc.</i>  |
| estos dos hermanos se abrazan cariñosamente,                     | these two brothers ( <i>or</i> this brother and sister [§ 106]) embrace each other affectionately. |
| todos los individuos de esta familia se quieren entrañablemente. | all the members of this family are passionately fond of one another.                               |

**414.** The reciprocal use of the reflexive verb may be strengthened by the term **el uno — el otro**, *fem. la una — la otra*; **los unos — los otros**, *fem. las unas — las otras*; *or uno — otro*, *etc.* :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| consoláos <b>los unos á los otros</b> en estas palabras,  | comfort ye one another with these words.            |
| no os burleis <b>los unos de los otros</b> , [con la otra,  | do not laugh at (make fun of) one another.          |
| hijas, no os impacientéis <b>la una</b> veo que las dos hemos nacido <b>la una para la otra</b> , | children, don't tease each other.                   |
| sentémonos <b>uno junto á otro</b> ,  | I perceive that we two were born for each other.    |
| nos felicitaremos <b>unos á otros</b> con ese motivo,   | let us sit near each other.                         |
|   | we shall congratulate one another on account of it. |

The Impersonal Verb.

415. Impersonal verbs are properly such as are employed in the third person singular only. Their subject, which in English is *it*, cannot be expressed in Spanish when an operation of nature is described; but otherwise, the neuter **ello**, *it*, *that*, is occasionally admissible if intensity or emphasis require:—

|                               |  |
|-------------------------------|--|
| nieva; truena; graniza,       | it snows; it thunders; it hails.           |
| lueve; amanece; anochece,     | it rains; it dawns; it grows dark.         |
| consta; <b>ello</b> consta,   | it is proven, <i>or</i> it is known.       |
| importa; <b>ello</b> importa, | it is important, <i>or</i> it matters.     |
| ello es que . . . ,           | the fact is that . . . (it is that . . .). |

416. Impersonal verbs are inflected according to the conjugation indicated by their infinitive, to wit:—

417. **Negar**, nevando, nevado, *to snow*.

| Indicative Mode.   |                        | Subjunctive Mode. |                        |
|--|------------------------|-------------------|------------------------|
| nieva,   | <i>it snows.</i>       | nieve,            | <i>it may snow.</i>    |
| nevaba,  | <i>it was snowing.</i> | nevara,           | <i>it might snow.</i>  |
| nevó,  | <i>it snowed.</i>      | nevase,           | <i>it might snow.</i>  |
| nevará,  | <i>it will snow.</i>   | nevare,           | <i>it should snow.</i> |
| nevaría,   | <i>it would snow.</i>  | nevara, etc.,     | <i>(if) it snowed.</i> |
| Imperative Mode:— <i>nieve, or que nieve, let it snow.</i> |                        |                   |                        |
| Indicative Mode.   |                        | Subjunctive Mode. |                        |
| ha nevado,   | <i>it has</i>          | haya nevado,      | <i>it may</i>          |
| había nevado,  | <i>it had</i>          | hubiera nevado,   | <i>it might</i>        |
| hubo nevado,   | <i>(when) it had</i>   | hubiese nevado,   | <i>it might</i>        |
| habrá nevado,  | <i>it will have</i>    | hubiere nevado,   | <i>it should</i>       |
| habría nevado,   | <i>it would have</i>   | hubiera nevado,   | <i>(if) it had s.</i>  |



418. **Llover**, lloviendo, llovido, *to rain*.

| Indicative Mode.  | Subjunctive Mode.  |
|---|--|
| <b>llueve</b> , <i>it rains.</i><br><b>llovía</b> , <i>it was raining.</i><br><b>llovió</b> , <i>it rained.</i><br><b>lloverá</b> , <i>it will rain.</i><br><b>llovería</b> , <i>it would rain.</i>                   | <b>llueva</b> , <i>it may rain.</i><br><b>lloviera</b> , <i>it might rain.</i><br><b>lloviese</b> , <i>it might rain.</i><br><b>lloviere</b> , <i>it should rain.</i><br><b>lloviera</b> , (if) <i>it rained.</i>          |
| <b>Imperative Mode:— llueva</b> , or <b>que llueva</b> , <i>let it rain.</i>  |  |
| Indicative Mode.  | Subjunctive Mode.  |
| <b>ha llovido</b> , <i>it has</i><br><b>había llovido</b> , <i>it had</i><br><b>hubo llovido</b> , (when) <i>it had</i><br><b>habrá llovido</b> , <i>it will have</i><br><b>habría llovido</b> , <i>it would have</i> | <b>haya llovido</b> , <i>it may</i><br><b>hubiera llovido</b> , <i>it might</i><br><b>hubiese llovido</b> , <i>it might</i><br><b>hubiere llovido</b> , <i>it should</i><br><b>hubiera llovido</b> , (if) <i>it had r.</i> |

419. **Amanecer**, amaneciendo, amanecido, *to dawn*.

| Indicative Mode.   | Subjunctive Mode.  |
|--|--|
| <b>amanece</b> , <i>it dawns.</i><br><b>amanecía</b> , <i>it was dawning.</i><br><b>amaneció</b> , <i>it dawned.</i><br><b>amanecerá</b> , <i>it will dawn.</i><br><b>amanecería</b> , <i>it would dawn.</i> | <b>amanezca</b> (374), <i>it may</i><br><b>amaneciera</b> , <i>it might</i><br><b>amaneciese</b> , <i>it might</i><br><b>amaneciére</b> , <i>it should</i><br><b>amaneciera</b> , (if) <i>it dawned.</i> |
| <b>Imperative Mode:— que amanezca</b> , <i>let it dawn.</i>  |  |

420. Verbs that are naturally impersonal may assume a personal signification and inflection:—

**amanecí** en Cádiz,

*it was morning* when I reached Cadiz.

**anochecimos** en Madrid,

*night had set in* when we reached Madrid, or we reached Madrid at night.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>llovían</b> palos sobre nosotros,                       | blows came down upon us <i>in quick succession</i> .                                |
| antes eran amigos ; pero hace un año que <b>tronaron</b> , | they were formerly good friends ; but they fell out <i>boisterously</i> a year ago. |

**421.** Many personal verbs are temporarily employed in impersonal senses : —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>bastar</b> , <i>to be sufficient</i> .    | <b>basta</b> , <i>it suffices</i> .           |
| <b>parecer</b> , <i>to appear</i> .          | <b>parece</b> , <i>it seems</i> .             |
| <b>convenir</b> , <i>to agree, to suit</i> . | <b>conviene</b> , <i>it suits, behooves</i> . |
| <b>baste</b> decir,                          | let it suffice to say.                        |
| <b>no convenía</b> ,                         | it was not expedient.                         |

*a.* Such verbs may also be used in the third person plural as personal verbs : —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>no bastan</b> explicaciones,          | explanations are not sufficient.            |
| las condiciones me <b>parecen</b> duras, | the conditions appear to me (to be) severe. |
| <b>no me convendrán</b> tales medidas,   | such measures will not suit me.             |

**422.** A number of verbs are used only in the third persons singular and plural. Such properly belong to defective verbs : —

|                                      |                     |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------|
| <b>acaece</b> — <b>acaecen</b> ,     | } happens — happen. |
| <b>acontece</b> — <b>acontecen</b> , |                     |

**423.** The English impersonal expression "*it is*" is variously rendered in Spanish : —

**424.** By *es* : —

*a.* With adjectives, nouns, and adverbs.

|   |                            |
|---|----------------------------|
| <b>es</b> cierto ; <b>es</b> tarde,     | it is sure ; it is late.   |
| <b>es</b> preciso ; <b>es</b> menester, | it is necessary.           |
| <b>es</b> verdad ; <b>es</b> mentira,   | it is true ; it is false.  |
| <b>es</b> de día ; así <b>es</b> ,      | it is daylight ; so it is. |

*b.* To denote the hour, only when that is *one* or any of its divisions. With all other hours, "it is" must be expressed by *son*:—

|                                    |                            |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| <b>es</b> la una — la una y media, | it is one — half past one. |
| <b>son</b> las dos — las diez,     | it is two — ten (o'clock). |

**425.** By *está*, to denote accidental state:—

|  |                            |
|--|----------------------------|
| <b>está</b> oscuro; <b>está</b> lloviendo, | it is dark; it is raining. |
|--|----------------------------|

**426.** By *hace*:—

*a.* When reference is made to the weather or temperature:—

|                                      |                             |
|--------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| ¿qué tal tiempo <b>hace</b> ?        | what sort of weather is it? |
| <b>hace</b> buen tiempo,             | it is fine weather.         |
| <b>hace</b> sol; <b>hace</b> aire,   | it is sunny; it is windy.   |
| <b>hace</b> frío; <b>hace</b> calor, | it is cold; it is warm.     |

*b.* Idiomatically, with reference to time:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <b>hace</b> ocho días que no le veo,            | it is a week since I have seen him; <i>i.e.</i> , I have not seen him in a week.                   |
| ¿cuánto tiempo <b>hace</b> que trabaja V. aquí? | how long is it that you have been working here? <i>i.e.</i> , how long have you been working here? |

**427.** By *hay*, with reference to distance:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| ¿cuánto <b>hay</b> de aquí al palacio? | how far is it from here to the palace? |
|--|--|

**428.** The English expressions "*it is I*," "*it is thou*," "*it is he*," etc., are given in Spanish by the regular inflection of the verb "to be" with the subject-pronoun:—

|  |                                |
|--|--------------------------------|
| <b>yo</b> soy; <b>tú</b> eres; <b>él</b> es, | it is I; it is thou; it is he. |
| ¿es <b>ella</b> ? <b>somos</b> nosotros,     | is it she? it is we.           |
| ¿son <b>ellos</b> ? <b>ellos</b> son,        | is it they? it is they.        |

a. The same construction obtains when a relative follows:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| yo soy <b>quien</b> , <i>or</i> <b>el que</b> , | it is I who, <i>or</i> I am the one who.             |
| no somos nosotros <b>los que</b> ,              | it is not we who, <i>or</i> we are not the ones who. |

429. "It is better" is translated by **más vale**, *it is worth more*:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>más vale</b> esquivarlo,                                       | it is better to evade it.                       |
| <b>más vale</b> tarde que nunca,                                  | (it is) better late than never.                 |
| <b>más vale</b> pájaro en mano que<br>buitre volando,             | a bird in the hand is worth two<br>in the bush. |
| (literally, a bird in hand is better than a vulture on the wing.) |   |

#### IRREGULAR VERBS.

430. An irregular verb is properly one that deviates in any respect from the inflection of the regular models, *hablar*, *comer*, and *vivir*.

REMARK.—There are a large number of irregular verbs in Spanish,—about 850, including compounds,—the most of which, however, are mere variations involving uniform laws of orthography and accent, to subserve the purposes of harmony, and to satisfy the national instinct for vowel-expansion. They may be easily reduced to a few classes with appropriate representatives, to which the general alphabetic Index of irregular verbs refers. Hence the following definitions of technical terms, embracing principles of wide application, will greatly assist the learner to master quickly the whole subject.

431. Irregular verbs are to be inflected, according to class and conjugation, on the three stems—present, preterit, and future—as bases. See § 360.

432. The original stem of a verb is found by suppressing the characteristic infinitive-ending. That of the future and conditional of the indicative (**future stem**), is the full infinitive itself (§§ 359; 359, a):—

**buso-ar**, *to look for.*  
**buso-ó**, *he looked for.*

**buscar-é**, *I shall look for.*  
**buscar-ía**, *I should look for.*

**433.** In the regular verb the original stem is the same throughout; but in the irregular verb each group of tenses may have a distinct form of the original stem, or three distinct stems:—

**podér**, *to be able.*

original stem, *pod*;  
 present stem, *pod*, *pued*;  
 preterit stem, *pud*;  
 future stem, *podr*.

**ir**, *to go.*

original stem, *i* and *va*;  
 present stem, *i* and *v*;  
 preterit stem, *fu* (verb *to be*);  
 future stem, *ir*.

**434. Tonic stems** are such as have the primary stress or tonic accent upon them in any given form:—

**tēng-ó**, *I have.*  
**tīēn-ēs**, *thou hast.*  
**tīēn-ě**, *he has.*  
**tīēn-ēn**, *they have.*  
**tūv-ě**, *I had.*

**vēng-ó**, *I come.*  
**vīēn-ēs**, *thou comest.*  
**vīēn-ě**, *he comes.*  
**vīēn-ēn**, *they come.*  
**vīn-ě**, *I came.*

**435. Atonic stems** are such as have but a secondary accent, the primary stress being laid on the personal ending:—

**tēn-ēmos**, *we have.*  
**tēn-ēis**, *ye have.*  
**tūv-iste**, *thou hadst.*

**vēn-imos**, *we come.*  
**vēn-ís**, *ye come.*  
**vīn-imos**, *we came.*

**436. A stem-vowel** is the characteristic vowel in any radical, and always stands nearest to the infinitive ending:—

**acert-ar**, **adquir-ir**. | **sonre-ir**. | **recost-ar**, **redargü-ir**.

**437. Strong stems** are those which are followed by endings beginning with, or consisting of, one of the strong vowels *a* or *o*:—

|            |                      |          |                         |
|------------|----------------------|----------|-------------------------|
| teng-o,    | <i>I have.</i>       | veng-o,  | <i>I come.</i>          |
| teng-a,    | <i>I (may) have.</i> | veng-as, | <i>thou mayst come.</i> |
| teng-amos, | <i>let us have.</i>  | veng-an, | <i>they may come.</i>   |
| tuv-o,     | <i>he had.</i>       | vin-o,   | <i>he came.</i>         |

438. **Weak stems** are those which are followed by endings beginning with, or consisting of, one of the weak vowels *e* or *i*:—

|            |                               |              |                         |
|------------|-------------------------------|--------------|-------------------------|
| dec-ir,    | <i>to say, to tell.</i>       | ¿ri-este?    | <i>dost thou laugh?</i> |
| dec-imos,  | <i>we say — tell.</i>         | se ri-en,    | <i>they laugh.</i>      |
| dic-es,    | <i>thou sayest — tellest.</i> | nos re-imos, | <i>we laugh.</i>        |
| dic-lendo, | <i>saying, telling.</i>       | sab-lendo,   | <i>knowing.</i>         |

439. The following orthographic changes are to be noted:—

|  |   |   |           |   |   |   |            |
|--|---|---|-----------|---|---|---|------------|
| Strong stems ending in <b>z</b> become weak stems ending in <b>c</b> . |   |   |           |   |   |   |            |
| "  | " | " | <b>c</b>  | " | " | " | <b>qu.</b> |
| "  | " | " | <b>g</b>  | " | " | " | <b>gu.</b> |
| "  | " | " | <b>gu</b> | " | " | " | <b>gü.</b> |
| Weak stems ending in <b>c</b> become strong stems ending in <b>z</b> . |   |   |           |   |   |   |            |
| "  | " | " | <b>qu</b> | " | " | " | <b>c.</b>  |
| "  | " | " | <b>g</b>  | " | " | " | <b>j.</b>  |
| "  | " | " | <b>gu</b> | " | " | " | <b>g.</b>  |

440. The expansion of a vowel into a diphthong may be called *diphthongization*. In verbs, the diphthong of the vowel *a* is *ai*; that of *e*, *ie*; and of *o*, *ue*.

441. The diphthongs *ie* and *io* are said to be *consonantized* when the first vowel composing them is changed into *y* consonant, pronounced as in *year*.

442. The diphthong *ie* is consonantized:—

a. When it is initial in a tonic stem:—

- err-ar — *ierro*, written **yerro**, but **err-amos** because atonic.
- ergu-ir — *iergo*, written **yergo**, but **ergu-imos** because atonic.
- ir — (*iendo*), **yendo**, *going*.

*b.* When it is initial in a verbal ending after a stem-vowel; likewise *ió* when final in the same case:—

cre-er — (*cre-iendo*), **creyendo**.

— (*cre-ío*), **creyó**.

tra-er — (*tra-iendo*), **trayendo**.

inclu-ir — (*inclu-iendo*), **includiendo**.

ca-er — (*ca-iendo*), **cayendo**.

— (*ca-ío*), **cayó**.

le-er — (*le-iendo*), **leyendo**.

argü-ir — (*argü-iendo*), **arguyendo**.

**443.** The *i* of the diphthongs *ie* and *ió* is absorbed by foregoing double consonants—*ll*, *ñ*, (*ch* usually), and *j* when it represents the archaic *x*, formerly pronounced *sh*:—

ceñ-ir — **ciñiendo**, **ciñó**.

**dijera**, anciently *dixera*.

tañ-er — **tañiendo**, **tañó**.

**trajese**, anciently *traxese*.

**444.** The diphthong *ue* is said to be *aspirated* when it assumes an *h*, which regularly occurs if the diphthong is initial and has the tonic accent:—

ol-er — *uelo*, written **huelo**; but *ol-ēmos*, because atonic.

#### Remarks on the Present Stem.

**445.** Tonic stems, whether weak or strong, are often strengthened in the present indicative and subjunctive, and in the imperative:—

*a.* By the expansion of the radical vowel *e* into *ie*, and of *o* into *ue*:—

pens-ar — **pienso**, *I think*.

ten-er — **tiene**, *he has*.

volv-er — **vuelvo**, *I return*.

mov-er — **mueve**, *he moves*.

*b.* By the mutation of the original stem-vowel *e* to *i*:—

serv-ir — **sirvo**, *I serve*.

— **sirve**, *he serves*.

but **servimos**, *we serve*.

seg-uir — **sigo**, *I follow*.

— **sigue**, *he follows*.

but **seguimos**, *we follow*.

**446.** Strong stems, whether tonic or atonic, are likewise frequently strengthened in the present indicative and subjunctive, and in the imperative :—

*a.* By changing the original stem-vowel *e* to *i* :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| serv — <b>sirva</b> , <i>I or he may serve.</i> | seg — <b>siga</b> , <i>I or he may follow.</i> |
| — <b>sirvāmos</b> , <i>we may serve.</i>        | — <b>sigāmos</b> , <i>let us follow.</i>       |

*b.* By adding a *g* to the original stem ending in a consonant, in the following verbs :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| as-ir — <b>asg-o</b> , <b>asg-a</b> , <i>I seize.</i>     | ten-er — <b>teng-o</b> , <b>teng-a</b> , <i>I have.</i>     |
| pon-er — <b>pong-o</b> , <b>pong-a</b> , <i>I place.</i>  | val-er — <b>valg-o</b> , <b>valg-a</b> , <i>I am worth.</i> |
| sal-ir — <b>salg-o</b> , <b>salg-a</b> , <i>I go out.</i> | ven-ir — <b>veng-o</b> , <b>veng-a</b> , <i>I come.</i>     |

REMARK. — This *g* is the expression of the Latin *e* and *i* enounced with a consonant power. Thus :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| valeo — <b>valyo</b> , Span. <i>valgo</i> .              | venio — <b>venyo</b> , Span. <i>vengo</i> .              |
| valeam — <b>valya</b> [ <i>m</i> ], Span. <i>valga</i> . | veniam — <b>venya</b> [ <i>m</i> ], Span. <i>venga</i> . |

So *asgo*, Lat. *adscio*; *pongo*, Lat. *ponio* for *pono*; *salgo*, Lat. *salio*; *tengo*, Lat. *teneo*. The Portuguese still preserves the Latin *y* sound, graphically represented by *lh* and *nh*: *valho*, *valha*; *venho*, *venha*; etc.

*c.* By adding a *g* to the diphthongized stem ending in a vowel, in the following verbs :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| ca-er — <b>cāig-o</b> , <b>cāig-a</b> , <i>I fall.</i> | tra-er — <b>trāig-o</b> , <b>trāig-a</b> , <i>I bring.</i> |
| o-ir — <b>ōig-o</b> , <b>ōig-a</b> , <i>I hear.</i>    |  |

*d.* By diphthongizing the medial stem-vowel *a* into *ai*, and reducing it graphically to its corresponding simple vowel (*ai* = *e*), in the following verbs :—

|   |
|---|
| cab-er — ( <i>caip</i> ) <b>quep-o</b> (§ 13), <b>quep-a</b> (Lat. <i>capio</i> , <i>capiam</i> ), <i>I hold.</i> |
| sab-er — ( <i>saip</i> ) <b>sep-o</b> , <b>sep-a</b> (Lat. <i>sapio</i> , <i>sapiam</i> ), <i>I know.</i>         |
| hab-er — ( <i>haib</i> ) <b>hep-o</b> , but <b>hay-a</b> (Lat. <i>habeo</i> , <i>habeam</i> ), <i>I have.</i>     |

The Portuguese preserves the diphthong in *caib-o*, *caib-a*; *saib-a*.



e. By changing the final stem-consonant *c* into *g*, in  
 hac-er — hag-o, hag-a (Latin, | dec-ir — dig-o, dig-a (Latin,  
*facio, faciam*). | *dico, dicam*).

For the letter *s*, as a mode of *euphonising* certain strong stems, see § 374.

447. The verbs **ver**, *to see*, and **ser**, *to be*, find their strong stem in the archaic infinitives *veer* and *seer*:—

ve-er — ve-o, ve-a, *I see*. | se-er — se-a, *I may be*.

448. Atonic stems usually contain the original radical before *weak* vowels, and the strengthened radical or modified vowel before *strong* vowels:—

|                            |                                 |
|----------------------------|---------------------------------|
| sab-ēis, <i>ye know</i> .  | sep-āis, <i>ye may know</i> .   |
| ten-ēmos, <i>we have</i> . | teng-āmos, <i>let us have</i> . |
| mor-īmos, <i>we live</i> . | mur-āmos, <i>we may die</i> .   |

449. Four verbs are expanded in the first person singular of the present indicative by assuming a final *y*:—

|                                     |               |        |                              |
|-------------------------------------|---------------|--------|------------------------------|
| <b>ser</b> , <i>to be</i> , ancient | <i>so</i> ;   | modern | <b>soy</b> , <i>I am</i> .   |
| <b>estar</b> , <i>to be</i> ,       | <i>estó</i> ; |        | <b>estoy</b> , <i>I am</i> . |
| <b>dar</b> , <i>to give</i> ,       | <i>do</i> ;   |        | <b>doy</b> , <i>I give</i> . |
| <b>ir</b> , <i>to go</i> .          | <i>vo</i> ;   |        | <b>voy</b> , <i>I go</i> .   |

450. Eight verbs make their imperative second person singular in abbreviated forms:—

|   |   |                    |
|---|---|--------------------|
| <b>valer</b> , <i>to be worth</i> ;     | <b>val</b> and <b>vale</b> , <i>be worth</i> ;    | <b>no valgas</b> . |
| <b>salir</b> , <i>to go out</i> ;       | <b>sal</b> ( <i>for sale</i> ), <i>go out</i> ;   | <b>no salgas</b> . |
| <b>venir</b> , <i>to come</i> ;         | <b>ven</b> ( <i>for viene</i> ), <i>come</i> ;    | <b>no vengas</b> . |
| <b>tener</b> , <i>to have</i> ;         | <b>ten</b> ( <i>for tiene</i> ), <i>have</i> ;    | <b>no tengas</b> . |
| <b>poner</b> , <i>to put, place</i> ;   | <b>pon</b> ( <i>for pone</i> ), <i>place</i> ;    | <b>no pongas</b> . |
| <b>hacer</b> , <i>to make, to do</i> ;  | <b>haz</b> ( <i>for hace</i> ), <i>make, do</i> ; | <b>no hagas</b> .  |
| <b>decir</b> , <i>to say, to tell</i> ; | <b>di</b> ( <i>for dice</i> ), <i>say, tell</i> ; | <b>no digas</b> .  |
| <b>ir</b> , <i>to go</i> ;              | <b>ve</b> ( <i>for va</i> ), <i>go</i> ;          | <b>no vayas</b> .  |

**451.** The imperfect indicative is always regularly formed from the original stem, except in the following verbs :—

*ir*—*iba*, *I was going* (first conj.). | *ver*—*veía* (*anc. via*), *I was seeing*—*era*, *I was (being)*. [*ing.*]

#### Tonic Preterit Stems.

**452.** Fifteen verbs have preterit stems, which are tonic in the past definite first and third persons singular, with the respective endings *e* and *o* instead of *é*—*ó*, or *í*—*ió*. In the other persons and tenses of this stem, the tonic accent is, as usual, on the endings, which are regular. Thus :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <i>vine</i> , <i>I came.</i>           | <i>puse</i> , <i>I placed.</i>          |
| <i>viniste</i> , <i>thou camest.</i>   | <i>pusiste</i> , <i>thou placedst.</i>  |
| <i>vino</i> , <i>he came.</i>          | <i>puso</i> , <i>he placed.</i>         |
| <i>vinimos</i> , <i>we came.</i>       | <i>pusimos</i> , <i>we placed.</i>      |
| <i>vinisteis</i> , <i>ye came.</i>     | <i>pusisteis</i> , <i>ye placed.</i>    |
| <i>vinieron</i> , <i>they came.</i>    | <i>pusieron</i> , <i>they placed.</i>   |
| <i>viniera</i> , <i>I might come.</i>  | <i>pusiera</i> , <i>I might place.</i>  |
| <i>viniese</i> , <i>I might come.</i>  | <i>pusiese</i> , <i>I might place.</i>  |
| <i>viniere</i> , <i>I should come.</i> | <i>pusiere</i> , <i>I should place.</i> |

REMARK.—These tonic preterit stems have retained more or less distinctly the form of the Latin irregular perfects as they must have been popularly employed in the Iberian peninsula. Therefore the vowels of the stem and termination were attracted or exchanged, and the diphthongs arising therefrom were reduced to simple vowels, according to the custom of the language. For example: *sapui* was attracted to *sáupi* and the diphthong changed to *o*,—*sope*,—precisely as *aurum* makes *oro*, *gold*. The modern speech, since the close of the fourteenth century, has preferred the stem-vowel *u* to *o*—*supe*, *tuve*, *puse*, etc. The Portuguese retains the ancient *o*, lengthened according to its phonological system into *ou* (*ó-ü*), in *houve*, *soube*, *coube*, and *trouxu* (*trów-shě*), which correspond to the Castilian *hube*, *supe*, *cupe*, *truje*.

453. List of tonic preterit stems, as found in the first and third persons singular of the past definite indicative, together with their origin and formation :—

|  | Infinitive.  | Preterit.<br><i>First and third sing.</i>                       | Old Spanish.                     | Modern Spanish.                    |
|--|--|---|----------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | habēre<br><b>habēr</b>                                 | habui, habuit<br><i>hāubi, hāubu</i>                            | hobe, hobo                       | <b>hūbe, hūbo.</b>                 |
| AND FOUR BY ANALOGY WITH <i>haber</i> :— |  |   |                                  |                                    |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | tenēre<br><b>tenēr</b>                                 | (tabui, tabuit)<br><i>tāubi, tāubu</i>                          | tove, tovo                       | <b>tūve, tūvo.</b>                 |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | stare<br><b>estar</b>                                  | (stabui, stabuit)<br><i>stāubi, stāubu</i>                      | estove, -ovo                     | <b>estūve, estūvo.</b>             |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | ambūlare<br><b>andar</b>                               | (andabui, -buit)<br><i>anddubi, -bu</i>                         | andove, -ovo                     | <b>andūve, andūvo.</b>             |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | capēre<br><b>cabēr</b>                                 | (capui, capuit)<br><i>cdupi, cdupu</i>                          | cope, copo                       | <b>cūpe, cūpo.</b>                 |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | sapēre<br><b>sabēr</b>                                 | sapui, sapuit<br><i>sdupi, sdupu</i>                            | sope, sopo                       | <b>sūpe, sūpo.</b>                 |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | ponēre<br><b>ponēr</b>                                 | posui, posuit<br><i>pōusi, pōusu</i>                            | pose, poso                       | <b>pūse, pūso.</b>                 |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | (potēre)<br><b>podēr</b>                               | potui, potuit<br><i>pōuti, pōutu</i>                            | pode, podó                       | <b>pūde, pūdo.</b>                 |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | facēre<br><b>hacēr</b>                                 | feci, fecit<br><i>fice, fisu</i>                                | ficie, fiço                      | <b>hice, hizo.</b>                 |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | venire<br><b>venir</b>                                 | veni, venit<br><i>vine, vinu</i>                                | vine, vino                       | <b>vīne, vīno.</b>                 |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | quaerēre<br><b>querēr</b>                              | (quaesi), quaesivit<br><i>quise, quisu</i>                      | quise, quiso                     | <b>quise, quiso.</b>               |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | vidēre<br><b>ver</b> ( <i>veer</i> )                   | vidi, vidit<br><i>vidi, vidu</i>                                | vide, vido                       | <b>ví, vío (regular).</b>          |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | dicēre<br><b>decir</b>                                 | dixi, dixit<br><i>dixi, dixu</i>                                | dixe, dixo                       | <b>dīje, dījo.</b>                 |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | ducēre<br><b>con-ducir</b>                             | duxi, duxit<br><i>duxi, duxu</i>                                | -duxe, -duxo                     | <b>-dūje, -dūjo.</b>               |
| LAT.<br>SP.                              | trahēre<br><b>traer</b><br>(anal. with <i>ducere</i> ) | traxi, traxit<br><i>traxi, traxu</i> }<br><i>truxi, truxu</i> } | traxe, traxo }<br>truxe, truxo } | trāje, trājo. }<br>trūje, trūjo. } |

## Future Stems.

**454.** Ten verbs form their future stem by rejecting the vowel of the infinitive-ending, five of which replace it by a phonetic *d* (§ 39):—

|                             |                            |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------|
| caber — cabr-é, cabr-ía.    | salir — saldr-é, saldr-ía. |
| haber — habr-é, habr-ía.    | valer — valdr-é, valdr-ía. |
| poder — podr-é, podr-ía.    | poner — pondr-é, pondr-ía. |
| querer — querr-é, querr-ía. | tener — tendr-é, tendr-ía. |
| saber — sabr-é, sabr-ía.    | venir — vendr-é, vendr-ía. |

REMARK.—The three last stems were anciently euphonized by metathesis of the *nr*, instead of by intercalating the orthographic *d*:—

poner — ponr — porn-é, porn-ía. } tener — tenr — tern-é, tern-ía.  
venir — venr — vern-é, vern-ía.

**455.** Two verbs form their future stem from primitive infinitives that no longer exist:—

decir — dir — ðir-é, ðir-ía. | hacer — far — har-é, har-ía.

The latter verb is from Lat. *facere*, Ital. *fare*, and Fr. *faire*.

In the following inflections, only deviations from the three model conjugations, *hablar*, *comer*, *vivir*, are printed in **heavy type**.

To show where the stress falls in forms of the verb that do not admit the graphic accent, a long mark is placed over the vowel of the tonic syllable.

## First Class.

**456.** The characteristic of this class is the expansion of the stem-vowels *e* and *o* into their corresponding diphthongs *ie*, *ue*, when the accent falls on the *radical*, or, in other words, when it is *tonic* (§§ 19; 19, *a*). This

**459. Alentar**, alentando, alentado, *to encourage*.

**460. Cerrar, cerrando, cerrado, to shut.**

|             |               |   |               |                 |                |                 |
|-------------|---------------|---|---------------|-----------------|----------------|-----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>cierro</b> | <b>cierras</b>  | <b>cierra</b> | <b>cerramos</b> | <b>cerrais</b> | <b>cierran.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>cierre</b> | <b>cierres</b>  | <b>cierre</b> | <b>cerremos</b> | <b>cerreis</b> | <b>cierren.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —             | <b>cierra</b>   | <b>cierre</b> | <b>cerremos</b> | <b>cerrad</b>  | <b>cierren.</b> |
|             |               | cerraba; cerré, cerrara, cerrase, cerrare; cerrar-é, -ía. |               |                 |                |                 |

**461. Apretar, apretando, apretado, to grasp tightly.**

|             |                |   |                |                  |                 |                  |
|-------------|----------------|---|----------------|------------------|-----------------|------------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>aprieto</b> | <b>aprietas</b>   | <b>aprieta</b> | <b>apretamos</b> | <b>apretais</b> | <b>aprietan.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>apriete</b> | <b>aprietes</b>   | <b>apriete</b> | <b>apretemos</b> | <b>apreteis</b> | <b>aprieten.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —              | <b>aprieta</b>  | <b>apriete</b> | <b>apretemos</b> | <b>apretad</b>  | <b>aprieten.</b> |
|             |                | apretaba; apreté, apretara, apretase, apretare; apretar-é, -ía. |                |                  |                 |                  |

**462. Atestar, atestando, atestado, to cram.**

|             |                |   |                |                  |                 |                  |
|-------------|----------------|---|----------------|------------------|-----------------|------------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>atiesto</b> | <b>atiestas</b>   | <b>atiesta</b> | <b>atestamos</b> | <b>atestais</b> | <b>atiestan.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>atieste</b> | <b>atiestes</b>   | <b>atieste</b> | <b>atestemos</b> | <b>atesteis</b> | <b>atiesten.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —              | <b>atiesta</b>  | <b>atieste</b> | <b>atestemos</b> | <b>atestad</b>  | <b>atiesten.</b> |
|             |                | atestaba; atesté, atestara, atestase, atestare; atestar-é, -ía. |                |                  |                 |                  |

**463. Sembrar, sembrando, sembrado, to sow.**

|             |                |   |                |                  |                 |                  |
|-------------|----------------|---|----------------|------------------|-----------------|------------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>siembro</b> | <b>siembras</b>   | <b>siembra</b> | <b>sembramos</b> | <b>sembrais</b> | <b>siembran.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>siembre</b> | <b>siembres</b>   | <b>siembre</b> | <b>sembremos</b> | <b>sembreis</b> | <b>siembren.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —              | <b>siembra</b>  | <b>siembre</b> | <b>sembremos</b> | <b>sembrad</b>  | <b>siembren.</b> |
|             |                | sembraba; sembré, sembrara, sembrase, sembrare; sembrar-é, -ía. |                |                  |                 |                  |

**464. Helar, helando, helado, to freeze.**

|             |              |   |              |                |               |                |
|-------------|--------------|---|--------------|----------------|---------------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>hielo</b> | <b>hielas</b>   | <b>hiela</b> | <b>helamos</b> | <b>helais</b> | <b>hielan.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>hiele</b> | <b>hiele</b>  | <b>hiele</b> | <b>helemos</b> | <b>heleis</b> | <b>hielen.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —            | <b>hiela</b>  | <b>hiele</b> | <b>helemos</b> | <b>helad</b>  | <b>hielen.</b> |
|             |              | helaba; helé, helara, helase, helare; helar-é, helaría. |              |                |               |                |

*Euphonic Changes.*

**465.** In the verb *errar*, the stem-vowel being initial, the vowel *i* of the diphthong is consonantized, that is, written and pronounced *y* consonant (§ 442, a):—

**466. Errar, errando, errado, to miss.**

|             |       |        |       |         |        |         |
|-------------|-------|--------|-------|---------|--------|---------|
| PRES. IND.  | yerro | yerras | yerra | errāmos | errāis | yerran. |
| PRES. SUBJ. | yerre | yerres | yerre | errēmos | errēis | yerren. |
| IMPERAT.    | —     | yerra  | yerre | errēmos | errād  | yerren. |

errāba; erré, errāra, errāse, errāre; erraré, erraría.

**467.** Verbs of this class in *-gar* and *-zar*, besides diphthongizing the stem-vowel *e*, observe the regular orthographic changes explained in § 371:—

**468. Negar, negando, negado, to deny.**

|             |        |         |        |          |         |          |
|-------------|--------|---------|--------|----------|---------|----------|
| PRES. IND.  | niego  | niegas  | niega  | negāmos  | negāis  | niegan.  |
| PRES. SUBJ. | niegue | niegues | niegue | neguēmos | neguēis | nieguen. |
| IMPERAT.    | —      | niega   | niegue | neguēmos | negād   | nieguen. |

negāba; negué, negāste, *etc.*; negāra, negāse, negāre; *etc.*

**469. Empezar, empezando, empezado, to begin.**

|         |         |          |         |           |          |           |
|---------|---------|----------|---------|-----------|----------|-----------|
| PR. IN. | empiezo | empiezas | empieza | empezāmos | empezāis | empezan.  |
| PR. SJ. | empiece | empieces | empiece | empecēmos | empecēis | empiecen. |
| IMPER.  | —       | empieza  | empiece | empecēmos | empezād  | empiecen. |

empezāba; empecé, empezāste, *etc.*; empezāra, empezāse; *etc.*

**E STEMS. — SECOND CONJUGATION.****470. Perder, perdiendo, perdido, to lose.****PRESENT STEMS. — pierd (tonic), perd (atonic).**

|             |         |          |         |           |          |           |
|-------------|---------|----------|---------|-----------|----------|-----------|
| PRES. IND.  | pierd-o | pierd-es | pierd-e | perd-ēmos | perd-ēis | pierd-en. |
| PRES. SUBJ. | pierd-a | pierd-as | pierd-a | perd-āmos | perd-āis | pierd-an. |
| IMPERAT.    | —       | pierd-e  | pierd-a | perd-āmos | perd-ēd  | pierd-an. |
| IMPERF.     | perd-ía | -ías     | -ía     | -íamos    | -íais    | -ían.     |

**PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.**

|              |           |        |       |          |         |         |
|--------------|-----------|--------|-------|----------|---------|---------|
| PAST DEF.    | perd-í    | -iste  | -ió   | -imos    | -ísteis | -ieron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | perd-iēra | -iēras | -iēra | -iēramos | -iērais | -iēran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | perd-iēse | -iēses | -iēse | -iēsemos | -iēseis | -iēsen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | perd-iēre | -iēres | -iēre | -iēremos | -iēreis | -iēren. |

**FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.**

|         |           |      |     |        |       |       |
|---------|-----------|------|-----|--------|-------|-------|
| FUTURE. | perder-é  | -ás  | -á  | -ēmos  | -éis  | -án.  |
| CONDIT. | perder-ía | -ías | -ía | -íamos | -íais | -ían. |

**471. Entender, entendiendo, entendido, to understand.**PR. IN. **entiendo entiendes entiende** entendēmos entendēis **entienden.**PR. SJ. **entienda entiendas entienda** entendāmos entendāis **entiendan.**IMPER. — **entiende entienda** entendāmos entendēd **entiendan.**  
entendá; entendí, entendiēra, entendiēse, entendiēre; entender-é, -la.**O STEMS. — FIRST CONJUGATION.****472. Sonar, sonando, sonado, to sound.****PRESENT STEMS. — *suen* (tonic), *son* (atonic).**

|             |               |                |               |          |         |                 |
|-------------|---------------|----------------|---------------|----------|---------|-----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>suen-o</b> | <b>suen-as</b> | <b>suen-a</b> | son-āmos | son-āis | <b>suen-an.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>suen-e</b> | <b>suen-es</b> | <b>suen-e</b> | son-ēmos | son-ēis | <b>suen-en.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —             | <b>suen-a</b>  | <b>suen-e</b> | son-ēmos | son-ād  | <b>suen-en.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | son-āba       | -abas          | -aba          | -ābamos  | -ābais  | -aban.          |

**PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.**

|              |              |       |      |         |         |        |
|--------------|--------------|-------|------|---------|---------|--------|
| PAST DEF.    | <b>son-é</b> | -aste | -ó   | -āmos   | -ásteis | -āron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | son-āra      | -āras | -āra | -āramos | -ārais  | -āran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | son-āse      | -āses | -āse | -āsemos | -āseis  | -āsen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | son-āre      | -āres | -āre | -āremos | -āreis  | -āren. |

**FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.**

|         |          |      |     |        |       |       |
|---------|----------|------|-----|--------|-------|-------|
| FUTURE. | sonar-é  | -ás  | -á  | -émos  | -éis  | -án.  |
| CONDIT. | sonar-fa | -fas | -fa | -famos | -fais | -fan. |

**473. Costar, costando, costado, to cost.**PRES. IND. **cuesto cuestas cuesta** costāmos costāis **cuestan.**PRES. SUBJ. **cueste cuestes cueste** costēmos costēis **cuesten.**IMPERAT. — **cuesta cueste** costēmos costād **cuesten.**  
costāba; costé, costāra, costāse, costāre; costar-é, -la.**474. Acordar, acordando, acordado, to agree.**PRES. IND. **acuerdo acuerdas acuerda** acordamos acordais **acuerdan.**PRES. SUBJ. **acuerde acuerdes acuerde** acordemos acordeis **acuerden.**IMPERAT. — **acuerda acuerde** acordemos acordad **acuerden.**  
acordaba; acordé, acordara, acordase, acordare; acordar-é, -la.



475. **Hollar**, hollando, hollado, *to trample*.

|             |        |   |        |          |         |          |
|-------------|--------|---|--------|----------|---------|----------|
| PRES. IND.  | huello | huellas   | huella | hollamos | hollais | huellan. |
| PRES. SUBJ. | huelle | huelles   | huelle | hollemos | holleis | huellen. |
| IMPERAT.    | —      | huella  | huelle | hollemos | hollad  | huellen. |
|             |        | hollaba; hollé, hollara, hollase, hollare; hollaré, hollaría. |        |          |         |          |

476. **Volar**, volando, volado, *to fly*.

|             |       |  |       |         |        |          |
|-------------|-------|--|-------|---------|--------|----------|
| PRES. IND.  | vuelo | vuelas   | vuela | volamos | volais | vuellan. |
| PRES. SUBJ. | vuele | vuelles  | vuele | volemos | voleis | vuellen. |
| IMPERAT.    | —     | vuela  | vuele | volemos | volad  | vuellen. |
|             |       | volaba; volé, volara, volase, volare; volaré, volaría. |       |         |        |          |

477. **Contar**, contando, contado, *to count*.

|             |        |   |        |          |         |          |
|-------------|--------|---|--------|----------|---------|----------|
| PRES. IND.  | cuento | cuentas   | cuenta | contamos | contais | cuentan. |
| PRES. SUBJ. | cuenta | cuentes   | cuenta | contemos | conteis | cuenten. |
| IMPERAT.    | —      | cuenta  | cuenta | contemos | contad  | cuenten. |
|             |        | contaba; conté, contara, contase, contare; contaré, contaría. |        |          |         |          |

478. **Probar**, probando, probado, *to prove*.

|             |        |   |        |          |         |          |
|-------------|--------|---|--------|----------|---------|----------|
| PRES. IND.  | pruebo | pruebas   | prueba | probamos | probais | prueban. |
| PRES. SUBJ. | pruebe | pruebes   | pruebe | probemos | probeis | prueben. |
| IMPERAT.    | —      | prueba  | pruebe | probemos | probad  | prueben. |
|             |        | probaba; probé, probara, probase, probare; probaré, probaría. |        |          |         |          |

*Orthographic and Euphonic Changes.*

479. The verbs **desosar**, *to separate the bones from the meat*, and **desovar**, *to spawn* (from **hueso**, *bone*, and **huevo**, *egg*), introduce an *h* before the diphthong of the present stem:—

480. **Desosar**, desosando, desosado.

|         |          |   |          |           |          |            |
|---------|----------|---|----------|-----------|----------|------------|
| PR. IN. | deshueso | deshueas  | deshuesa | desosāmos | desosāis | deshuesan. |
| PR. SJ. | deshuese | deshueses   | deshuese | desosēmos | desosēis | deshuesen. |
| IMPER.  | —        | deshuesa  | deshuese | desosēmos | desosād  | deshuesen. |
|         |          | desosāba; desosé, desosāra, desosāse, desosāre; desosar-é, -ía. |          |           |          |            |

**481.** Verbs of this class in *-car*, *-gar*, and *-zar*, besides diphthongizing the stem-vowel *o*, observe the regular orthographic changes laid down in § 371.

**482. Trocar**, *trocando*, *trocado*, *to barter*.

|         |                |   |                |                  |                 |                  |
|---------|----------------|---|----------------|------------------|-----------------|------------------|
| PR. IN. | <b>trueco</b>  | <b>truecas</b>  | <b>trueca</b>  | <b>trocāmos</b>  | <b>trocāis</b>  | <b>truecan.</b>  |
| PR. SJ. | <b>trueque</b> | <b>trueques</b>   | <b>trueque</b> | <b>troquēmos</b> | <b>troquēis</b> | <b>truequen.</b> |
| IMPER.  | —              | <b>trueca</b>   | <b>trueque</b> | <b>troquēmos</b> | <b>trocād</b>   | <b>truequen.</b> |
|         |                | trocāba; <b>troqué</b> , <i>trocāste, etc.</i> ; <i>trocāra, trocāse, trocāre; etc.</i> |                |                  |                 |                  |

**483. Rogar**, *rogando*, *rogado*, *to request*.

|             |               |   |               |                 |                |                 |
|-------------|---------------|---|---------------|-----------------|----------------|-----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>ruego</b>  | <b>ruegas</b>   | <b>ruega</b>  | <b>rogāmos</b>  | <b>rogāis</b>  | <b>ruegan.</b>  |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>ruegue</b> | <b>ruegues</b>  | <b>ruegue</b> | <b>roguēmos</b> | <b>roguēis</b> | <b>rueguen.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —             | <b>ruega</b>  | <b>ruegue</b> | <b>roguēmos</b> | <b>rogād</b>   | <b>rueguen.</b> |
|             |               | rogāba; <b>rogué</b> , <i>rogāste, etc.</i> ; <i>rogāra, rogāse, rogāre; rogaré, etc.</i> |               |                 |                |                 |

**484.** Here belongs the verb **jugar** (Lat. *jocari*), which follows the analogy of this class, with the stem-vowel *u*, anciently *o* :—

**485. Jugar**, *jugando*, *jugado*, *to play, to gamble*.

|             |               |   |               |                 |                |                 |
|-------------|---------------|---|---------------|-----------------|----------------|-----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>juego</b>  | <b>juegas</b>   | <b>juega</b>  | <b>jugāmos</b>  | <b>jugāis</b>  | <b>juegan.</b>  |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>juegue</b> | <b>juegues</b>  | <b>juegue</b> | <b>juguēmos</b> | <b>juguēis</b> | <b>jueguen.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —             | <b>juega</b>  | <b>juegue</b> | <b>juguēmos</b> | <b>jugād</b>   | <b>jueguen.</b> |
|             |               | jugāba; <b>jugué</b> , <i>jugāste, etc.</i> ; <i>jugāra, jugāse, jugāre; jugaré, etc.</i> |               |                 |                |                 |

**486. Forzar**, *forzando*, *forzado*, *to force*.

|             |               |  |               |                 |                |                 |
|-------------|---------------|--|---------------|-----------------|----------------|-----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>fuerzo</b> | <b>fuerzas</b>   | <b>fuerza</b> | <b>forzāmos</b> | <b>forzāis</b> | <b>fuerzan.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>fuerce</b> | <b>fuerces</b>   | <b>fuerce</b> | <b>forcēmos</b> | <b>forcēis</b> | <b>fuercen.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —             | <b>fuerza</b>  | <b>fuérce</b> | <b>forcēmos</b> | <b>forzād</b>  | <b>fuercen.</b> |
|             |               | forzāba; <b>forcé</b> , <i>forzāste, etc.</i> ; <i>forzāra, forzāse, forzāre; etc.</i> |               |                 |                |                 |

**487.** In verbs of this class whose stem-vowel *o* stands after a *g*, the diphthong assumes the diæresis (*üe*), according to §§ 17 and 32, *a* :—

**488. Agorar, agorando, agorado, to divine (augurare).**

|             |               |                  |               |                 |                 |  |
|-------------|---------------|------------------|---------------|-----------------|-----------------|--|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>agüero</b> | <b>agüeras</b>   | <b>agüera</b> | <b>agorāmos</b> | <b>agorāis</b>  | <b>agüeran.</b>                        |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>agüere</b> | <b>agüeres</b>   | <b>agüere</b> | <b>agorēmos</b> | <b>agorēis</b>  | <b>agüeren.</b>                        |
| IMPERAT.    | —             | <b>agüera</b>    | <b>agüere</b> | <b>agorēmos</b> | <b>agorād</b>   | <b>agüeren.</b>                        |
|             |               | <b>agorāba</b> ; | <b>agoré,</b> | <b>agorāra,</b> | <b>agorāse,</b> | <b>agorāre</b> ; <b>agorar-é, -la.</b> |

## O STEMS. — SECOND CONJUGATION.

**489. Mover, moviendo, movido, to move.**PRESENT STEMS. — *muev* (tonic), *mov* (atonic).

|             |               |                |               |                 |                |                 |
|-------------|---------------|----------------|---------------|-----------------|----------------|-----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>muev-o</b> | <b>muev-es</b> | <b>muev-e</b> | <b>mov-ēmos</b> | <b>mov-ēis</b> | <b>muev-en.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>muev-a</b> | <b>muev-as</b> | <b>muev-a</b> | <b>mov-āmos</b> | <b>mov-āis</b> | <b>muev-an.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —             | <b>muev-e</b>  | <b>muev-a</b> | <b>mov-āmos</b> | <b>mov-ēd</b>  | <b>muev-an.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | <b>mov-ía</b> | <b>-ías</b>    | <b>-ía</b>    | <b>-íamos</b>   | <b>-íais</b>   | <b>-ían.</b>    |

## PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

|              |                 |               |              |                 |                |                |
|--------------|-----------------|---------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PAST DEF.    | <b>mov-í</b>    | <b>-iste</b>  | <b>-ió</b>   | <b>-imos</b>    | <b>-ísteis</b> | <b>-ieron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>mov-iēra</b> | <b>-iēras</b> | <b>-iēra</b> | <b>-iēramos</b> | <b>-iērais</b> | <b>-iēran.</b> |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>mov-iēse</b> | <b>-iēses</b> | <b>-iēse</b> | <b>-iēsemos</b> | <b>-iēseis</b> | <b>-iēsen.</b> |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>mov-iēre</b> | <b>-iēres</b> | <b>-iēre</b> | <b>-iēremos</b> | <b>-iēreis</b> | <b>-iēren.</b> |

## FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

|         |                 |             |            |               |              |              |
|---------|-----------------|-------------|------------|---------------|--------------|--------------|
| FUTURE. | <b>mover-é</b>  | <b>-ás</b>  | <b>-á</b>  | <b>-ēmos</b>  | <b>-éis</b>  | <b>-án.</b>  |
| CONDIT. | <b>mover-ía</b> | <b>-ías</b> | <b>-ía</b> | <b>-íamos</b> | <b>-íais</b> | <b>-ían.</b> |

**490. Morder, mordiendo, mordido, to bite.**

|             |               |                 |               |                  |                  |   |
|-------------|---------------|-----------------|---------------|------------------|------------------|---|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>muerdo</b> | <b>muerdes</b>  | <b>muerde</b> | <b>mordēmos</b>  | <b>mordēis</b>   | <b>muerden.</b>                         |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>muerda</b> | <b>muerdas</b>  | <b>muerda</b> | <b>mordāmos</b>  | <b>mordāis</b>   | <b>muerdan.</b>                         |
| IMPERAT.    | —             | <b>muerde</b>   | <b>muerda</b> | <b>mordāmos</b>  | <b>mordēd</b>    | <b>muerdan.</b>                         |
|             |               | <b>mordía</b> ; | <b>mordí,</b> | <b>mordiēra,</b> | <b>mordiēse,</b> | <b>mordiēre</b> ; <b>morder-é, -la.</b> |

**491. Volver, volviendo, vuelto, to return.**

|             |               |                 |               |                  |                  |                  |
|-------------|---------------|-----------------|---------------|------------------|------------------|------------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>vuelvo</b> | <b>vuelves</b>  | <b>vuelve</b> | <b>volvemos</b>  | <b>olveis</b>    | <b>vuelven.</b>  |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>vuelva</b> | <b>vuelvas</b>  | <b>vuelva</b> | <b>volvamos</b>  | <b>olvais</b>    | <b>vuelvan.</b>  |
| IMPERAT.    | —             | <b>vuelve</b>   | <b>vuelva</b> | <b>volvamos</b>  | <b>olved</b>     | <b>vuelvan.</b>  |
|             |               | <b>volvía</b> ; | <b>volví,</b> | <b>volviera,</b> | <b>volviese,</b> | <b>volviese,</b> |

**492. Moler, moliendo, molido, to grind.**

|             |              |               |              |                |               |                |
|-------------|--------------|---------------|--------------|----------------|---------------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>muelo</b> | <b>mueles</b> | <b>muele</b> | <b>molemos</b> | <b>moleis</b> | <b>muelen.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>muela</b> | <b>muelas</b> | <b>muela</b> | <b>molamos</b> | <b>molais</b> | <b>muelan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —            | <b>muele</b>  | <b>muela</b> | <b>molamos</b> | <b>moled</b>  | <b>muelan.</b> |

molía; molí, moliera, moliese, moliere; moleré, molería.

*Orthographic and Euphonic Changes.*

**493.** The verb **oler** assumes an *h* before the diphthong of the tonic stem:—

**494. Oler, oliendo, olido, to scent, to smell.**

|             |              |               |              |               |              |                |
|-------------|--------------|---------------|--------------|---------------|--------------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>huelo</b> | <b>huelas</b> | <b>huele</b> | <b>olēmos</b> | <b>olēis</b> | <b>huelen.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>huela</b> | <b>huelas</b> | <b>huela</b> | <b>olāmos</b> | <b>olāis</b> | <b>huelan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —            | <b>huele</b>  | <b>huela</b> | <b>olāmos</b> | <b>olēd</b>  | <b>huelan.</b> |

olía; olí, oliēra, oliēse, oliēre, ~~oleré~~ oleré, olería.

**495.** Verbs of this class in *-cer* preceded by a consonant, and a few in *-ocer*, besides diphthongizing the stem-vowel *o*, observe the regular orthographical changes indicated in § 373. See § 374, exception:—

**496. Torcer, torciendo, torcido, to twist.**

|             |               |                |               |                 |                |                 |
|-------------|---------------|----------------|---------------|-----------------|----------------|-----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>tuerzo</b> | <b>tuerces</b> | <b>tuerce</b> | <b>torcemos</b> | <b>torceis</b> | <b>tuercen.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>tuerza</b> | <b>tuerzas</b> | <b>tuerza</b> | <b>torzamos</b> | <b>torzais</b> | <b>tuerzan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —             | <b>tuerce</b>  | <b>tuerza</b> | <b>torzamos</b> | <b>torced</b>  | <b>tuerzan.</b> |

torcía; torcí, torciera, torciese, torciere; torceré, torcería.

**497. Cocer, cociendo, cocido, to boil, to bake.<sup>1</sup>**

|             |              |               |              |                |               |                |
|-------------|--------------|---------------|--------------|----------------|---------------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>cuezo</b> | <b>cueces</b> | <b>cuece</b> | <b>cocēmos</b> | <b>cocēis</b> | <b>cuecen.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>cueza</b> | <b>cuezas</b> | <b>cueza</b> | <b>cozāmos</b> | <b>cozāis</b> | <b>cuezan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —            | <b>cuece</b>  | <b>cueza</b> | <b>cozāmos</b> | <b>cocēd</b>  | <b>cuezan.</b> |

cocía; cocí, cociēra, cociēse, cociēre; coceré, cocería.

<sup>1</sup> **Cocer** means *to boil, to cook*, meats, vegetables, tea, etc., and *to bake* bread, pottery, brick. Of *water*, it is preferable to use **hervir** (*servire*). The mistress, for example, would say, *el agua hierve*; and the servant, *el agua está cociendo*. "Boiled meat" is *carne cocida*; "boiling water," or "very hot water," *agua hirviente*. "To boil an egg" is *pasar un huevo por agua*; "boiled eggs," *huevos pasados por agua*; "baked clay," *barro cocido*; etc.

## Second Class.

**498.** This class embraces verbs of the third conjugation only, with the radical vowels *e* and *o*. The gerund uniformly belongs to the preterit system.

In the present stem, besides the usual diphthongization of the vowels *e* and *o* when tonic, these vowels subside into *i* and *u* respectively before a *strong* termination, whenever the stem is *atonic*; that is, in the first and second persons plural of the subjunctive, and in the first person plural of the imperative.

Again, in the preterit stem, including the gerund, the radical vowels *e* and *o* become respectively *i* and *u*, as often as the ending that follows contains the diphthong *ié* or *ió*.

## E STEMS.

**499. Sentir, (sintiendo), sentido, to feel, to perceive.**

PRESENT STEM. — *sient* (tonic), *sent* (atonic, weak), *sint* (atonic, strong).

|             |                |                 |                |                  |                 |                  |
|-------------|----------------|-----------------|----------------|------------------|-----------------|------------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>sient-o</b> | <b>sient-es</b> | <b>sient-e</b> | sent-ímos        | sent-ís         | <b>sient-en.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>sient-a</b> | <b>sient-as</b> | <b>sient-a</b> | <b>sint-āmos</b> | <b>sint-áis</b> | <b>sient-an.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —              | <b>sient-e</b>  | <b>sient-a</b> | <b>sint-āmos</b> | sent-id         | <b>sient-an.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | sent-ía        | -ías            | -ía            | -íamos           | -íais           | -ían.            |

PRETERIT STEM. — *sint* (before a diphthong).

|              |                  |        |               |           |         |                   |
|--------------|------------------|--------|---------------|-----------|---------|-------------------|
| GERUND.      | <b>sintiēdo.</b> |        |               |           |         |                   |
| PAST DEF.    | sent-í           | -iste  | <b>sintió</b> | sent-ímos | -ísteis | <b>sintiēron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>sint-iēra</b> | -iēras | -iēra         | -iéramos  | -iérais | -iēran.           |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>sint-iēse</b> | -iēses | -iēse         | -iésemos  | -iéseis | -iēsen.           |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>sint-iēre</b> | -iēres | -iēre         | -iéremos  | -iéreis | -iēren.           |

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

|         |           |      |     |        |       |       |
|---------|-----------|------|-----|--------|-------|-------|
| FUTURE. | sentir-é  | -ás  | -á  | -émos  | -éis  | -án.  |
| CONDIT. | sentir-ía | -ías | -ía | -íamos | -íais | -ían. |

**500. Herir, (hiriendo), herido, to strike (with a weapon).**

|              |                  |               |              |                |               |                  |
|--------------|------------------|---------------|--------------|----------------|---------------|------------------|
| PRES. IND.   | <b>hiero</b>     | <b>hieres</b> | <b>hiere</b> | herimos        | herís         | <b>hieren.</b>   |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | <b>hiera</b>     | <b>hieras</b> | <b>hiera</b> | <b>hirāmos</b> | <b>hiráis</b> | <b>hieran.</b>   |
| IMPERAT.     | —                | <b>hiere</b>  | <b>hiera</b> | <b>hirāmos</b> | herid         | <b>hieran.</b>   |
| IMPERF.      | her-ía           | -ías          | -ía          | -íamos         | -íais         | -ían.            |
| GERUND.      | <b>hiriendo.</b> |               |              |                |               |                  |
| PAST DEF.    | her-í            | -iste         | <b>hirió</b> | her-imos       | -ísteis       | <b>hirieron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>hir-iera</b>  | -ieras        | -iera        | -iéramos       | -iérais       | -ieran.          |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>hir-iese</b>  | -ieses        | -iese        | -iésemos       | -iéseis       | -iesen.          |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>hir-iere</b>  | -ieres        | -iere        | -iéremos       | -iéreis       | -ieren.          |
| FUTURE.      | herir-é          | -ás           | -á           | -émos          | -éis          | -án.             |
| CONDIT.      | herir-ía         | -ías          | -ía          | -íamos         | -íais         | -ían.            |

*a.* So the compounds of *herir* (from Lat. *haerere*), or of *ferir* (from Lat. *ferire*), and of *-gerir*, *-jerir* (Lat. *-gerere*, *-serere*).

**501. Herir** means *to strike with a weapon*, with intent to wound or to put to death. Otherwise, *to strike* is expressed by **dar un golpe — dar golpes — á alguien**, *to inflict a blow — blows — on any one* : —

*Ruben.* Conserve yo mi vida,  
y Raquel muera (**hiérela**).

*Raquel.* ¡Ay de mí!

*Reuben.* Let me preserve my  
life, and let Rachel die (*he strikes*).

*Rachel.* Alas for me!

— Tragedy of *Rachel*, by D. Vicente García de la Huerta, 1778.

**502. Advertir, (advirtiendo), advertido, to observe.**

|              |                     |                |               |                 |                |                   |
|--------------|---------------------|----------------|---------------|-----------------|----------------|-------------------|
|              | <i>ad-</i>          |                | <i>ad-</i>    |                 |                |                   |
| PRES. IND.   | <b>vierto</b>       | <b>viertes</b> | <b>vierte</b> | vertimos        | vertís         | <b>vierten.</b>   |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | <b>vierta</b>       | <b>viertas</b> | <b>vierta</b> | <b>virtamos</b> | <b>virtáis</b> | <b>viertan.</b>   |
| IMPERAT.     | —                   | <b>vierte</b>  | <b>vierta</b> | <b>virtamos</b> | vertid         | <b>viertan.</b>   |
| IMPERF.      | vert-ía             | -ías           | -ía           | -íamos          | -íais          | -ían.             |
| GERUND.      | <b>advirtiendo.</b> |                |               |                 |                |                   |
| PAST DEF.    | vert-í              | -iste          | <b>virtió</b> | vert-imos       | -ísteis        | <b>virtieron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>virt-iera</b>    | -ieras         | -iera         | -iéramos        | -iérais        | -ieran.           |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>virt-iese</b>    | -ieses         | -iese         | -iésemos        | -iéseis        | -iesen.           |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>virt-iere</b>    | -ieres         | -iere         | -iéremos        | -iéreis        | -ieren.           |
| FUTURE.      | vertir-é            | -ás            | -á            | -émos           | -éis           | -án.              |
| CONDIT.      | vertir-ía           | -ías           | -ía           | -íamos          | -íais          | -ían.             |

**503. Hervir** (hirviendo), hervido, *to boil*.

|              |                   |                |               |                  |                |                   |
|--------------|-------------------|----------------|---------------|------------------|----------------|-------------------|
| PRES. IND.   | <b>hiervo</b>     | <b>hieres</b>  | <b>hierva</b> | <b>hervimos</b>  | <b>hervís</b>  | <b>hierven.</b>   |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | <b>hierva</b>     | <b>hiervas</b> | <b>hierva</b> | <b>hervamos</b>  | <b>hirvais</b> | <b>hiervan.</b>   |
| IMPERAT.     | —                 | <b>hierve</b>  | <b>hierva</b> | <b>hervamos</b>  | <b>hervid</b>  | <b>hiervan.</b>   |
| IMPERF.      | <b>herv-ía</b>    | <b>-ías</b>    | <b>-ía</b>    | <b>-íamos</b>    | <b>-íais</b>   | <b>-ían.</b>      |
| GERUND.      | <b>hirviendo.</b> |                |               |                  |                |                   |
| PAST DEF.    | <b>herv-í</b>     | <b>-iste</b>   | <b>hirvió</b> | <b>herv-imos</b> | <b>-ísteis</b> | <b>hirvieron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>hírv-iera</b>  | <b>-ieras</b>  | <b>-iera</b>  | <b>-iéramos</b>  | <b>-iérais</b> | <b>-ieran.</b>    |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>hírv-iese</b>  | <b>-ieses</b>  | <b>-iese</b>  | <b>-iésemos</b>  | <b>-iéseis</b> | <b>-iesen.</b>    |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>hírv-iere</b>  | <b>-ieres</b>  | <b>-iere</b>  | <b>-iéremos</b>  | <b>-iéreis</b> | <b>-ieren.</b>    |
| FUTURE.      | <b>hervir-é</b>   | <b>-ás</b>     | <b>-á</b>     | <b>-émos</b>     | <b>-éis</b>    | <b>-án.</b>       |
| CONDIT.      | <b>hervir-ía</b>  | <b>-ías</b>    | <b>-ía</b>    | <b>-íamos</b>    | <b>-íais</b>   | <b>-ían.</b>      |

**504.** In the verb **erguir**, *to throw back* (the head) *haughtily*, the stem being initial, the vowel *i* may be either consonantized, or it may replace the diphthong altogether, in the present tenses. The other changes are the same as in the model verb *sentir*:—

**505. Erguir** (irguiendo), erguido.

|            |                   |                 |               |                   |                   |                                     |
|------------|-------------------|-----------------|---------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------------------------|
| PR. IND.   | <b>vergo</b>      | <b>yergues</b>  | <b>yergue</b> | } <b>erguimos</b> | <b>erguís</b>     | { <b>yerguen.</b><br><b>irguen.</b> |
|            | <b>irgo</b>       | <b>irgues</b>   | <b>irgue</b>  |                   |                   |                                     |
| PR. Sj.    | <b>yerga</b>      | <b>yergas</b>   | <b>yerga</b>  | } <b>irgamos</b>  | <b>irgais</b>     | { <b>yergan.</b><br><b>irgan.</b>   |
|            | <b>irga</b>       | <b>irgas</b>    | <b>irga</b>   |                   |                   |                                     |
| IMPERAT.   | —                 | <b>yergue</b>   | <b>yerga</b>  | } <b>irgamos</b>  | <b>erguid</b>     | { <b>yergan.</b><br><b>irgan.</b>   |
|            | —                 | <b>irgue</b>    | <b>irga</b>   |                   |                   |                                     |
| IMPERF.    | <b>erguía</b>     | <b>-ías</b>     | <b>-ía</b>    | <b>-íamos</b>     | <b>-íais</b>      | <b>-ían.</b>                        |
| GERUND.    | <b>irguiendo.</b> |                 |               |                   |                   |                                     |
| PAST D.    | <b>erguí</b>      | <b>erguiste</b> | <b>irguíó</b> | <b>erguimos</b>   | <b>erguísteis</b> | <b>irguleron.</b>                   |
| 1 IMP. Sj. | <b>irgulera</b>   | <b>-ieras</b>   | <b>-iera</b>  | <b>-iéramos</b>   | <b>-iérais</b>    | <b>-ieran.</b>                      |
| 2 IMP. Sj. | <b>irgulese</b>   | <b>-ieses</b>   | <b>-iese</b>  | <b>-iésemos</b>   | <b>-iéseis</b>    | <b>-iesen.</b>                      |
| FUT. Sj.   | <b>irguliere</b>  | <b>-ieres</b>   | <b>-iere</b>  | <b>-iéremos</b>   | <b>-iéreis</b>    | <b>-ieren.</b>                      |
| FUTURE.    | <b>erguir-é</b>   | <b>-ás</b>      | <b>-á</b>     | <b>-émos</b>      | <b>-éis</b>       | <b>-án.</b>                         |
| CONDIT.    | <b>erguir-ía</b>  | <b>-ías</b>     | <b>-ía</b>    | <b>-íamos</b>     | <b>-íais</b>      | <b>-ían.</b>                        |

**506.** Verbs in *-quirir* which are derived from a primitive radical *quer* (Lat. *quaerere*), have the usual diphthong *ie* in the present stem when tonic; but otherwise they preserve the characteristic *i* throughout.

**507. Adquirir** (adquiriendo), adquirido, *to get, to obtain.*

PR. IN. **adquiere** **adquieres** **adquiere** adquirimos adquirís **adquieren.**

PR. SJ. **adquiera** **adquieras** **adquiera** adquiramos adquirais **adquieran.**

IMPER. — **adquiere** **adquiera** adquiramos adquirid **adquieran.**  
adquiría; adquiriendo, adquirí, adquiriera, adquiriese; *etc.*

O STEMS.

**508. Dormir** (durmiendo), dormido, *to sleep.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **duerm** (tonic), *dorm* (atonic weak), **durm** (atonic strong).

PR. IN. **duerm-o** **duerm-es** **duerm-e** dorm-imos dorm-ís **duerm-en.**

PR. SJ. **duerm-a** **duerm-as** **duerm-a** **durm-āmos** **durm-āis** **duerm-an.**

IMPER. — **duerm-e** **duerm-a** **durm-āmos** dorm-id , **duerm-an.**

IMPF. dorm-ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **durm** (before a diphthong).

GER. **durmiendo.**

PA. D. dorm-í -iste **durmió** dorm-imos -ísteis **durmieron.**

1 I. SJ. **durm-iēra** -iēras -iēra -iéramos -iéráis -iēran.

2 I. SJ. **durm-iēse** -iēses -iēse -iésemos -iéseis -iēsen.

FU. SJ. **durm-iēre** -iēres -iēre -iéremos -iéreis -iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUT. dormir-é -ás -á -émos -éis -án.

COND. dormir-ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían.

**509. Morir** (muriendo), muerto, *to die.*

PRES. IND. **muero** **mueres** **muere** morimos morís **mueren.**

PRES. SUBJ. **muera** **mueras** **muera** **muramos** **murais** **mueran.**

IMPERAT. — **muere** **muera** **muramos** morid **mueran.**

IMPERF. mor-ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían.

GERUND. **muriendo.**

PAST DEF. mor-í -iste **murió** mor-imos -ísteis **murieron.**

1 IMP. SUBJ. **mur-iera** -ieras -iera -iéramos -iéráis -ieran.

2 IMP. SUBJ. **mur-iese** -ieses -iese -iésemos -iéseis -iesen.

FUT. SUBJ. **mur-iere** -ieres -iere -iéremos -iéreis -ieren.

FUTURE. morir-é -ás -á -émos -éis -án.

CONDIT. morir-ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían.



**510 Podrir and pudrir (pudriendo), podrido, to decay.**

This verb, which usually made the stem-vowels interchangeable in certain tenses and persons, has now become nearly regular with *u*, by the authority of the Spanish Academy. The latest recommendation of that body<sup>1</sup> fixes the inflection as follows (we insert the old variations between parentheses) :—

|          |                      |                     |          |                                   |                                       |              |
|----------|----------------------|---------------------|----------|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|--------------|
| PR. IN.  | podro                | podres              | podre    | { pudrimos<br>( <i>podrimos</i> ) | { pudrís<br>( <i>podrís</i> )         | podren.      |
| PR. SJ.  | podra                | podras              | podra    | podramos                          | podrais                               | podran.      |
| IMPER.   | —                    | podre               | podra    | podramos                          | { pudrid<br>( <i>podrid</i> )         | podran.      |
| IMPF.    | podr-ía              | -ías                | -ía      | -íamos                            | -íais                                 | -ían.        |
|          | ( <i>podr-ía</i> )   | (-ías)              | (-ía)    | (-íamos)                          | (-íais)                               | (-ían).      |
| GER.     | pudriendo.           |                     |          |                                   |                                       |              |
| PA. D.   | podrí                | podriste            | } pudrió | { pudrimos<br>( <i>podrimos</i> ) | { pudristeis<br>( <i>podristeis</i> ) | } pudrieron. |
|          | ( <i>podrí</i> )     | ( <i>podriste</i> ) |          |                                   |                                       |              |
| 1 I. SJ. | podri-era            | -ieras              | -iera    | -iéramos                          | -iérais                               | -ieran.      |
| 2 I. SJ. | podri-ese            | -ieses              | -iese    | -iésemos                          | -iéseis                               | -iesen.      |
| FU. SJ.  | podri-ere            | -ieres              | -iere    | -iéremos                          | -iéreis                               | -ieren.      |
| FUT.     | podrir-é             | -ás                 | -á       | -émos                             | -éis                                  | -án.         |
|          | ( <i>podrir-é</i> )  | (-ás)               | (-á)     | (-émos)                           | (-éis)                                | (-án).       |
| COND.    | podrir-ía            | -ías                | -ía      | -íamos                            | -íais                                 | -ían.        |
|          | ( <i>podrir-ía</i> ) | (-ías)              | (-ía)    | (-íamos)                          | (-íais)                               | (-ían).      |

**Third Class.**

**511.** This class embraces only verbs of the third conjugation, with the radical vowel *e*. The gerund uniformly belongs to the preterit system.

In the present stem, the vowel *e* becomes *i* when the radical syllable is tonic, or atonic strong; that is, throughout the present indicative, subjunctive, and the imperative, save only the first and second persons plural

<sup>1</sup> *Gramática de la Lengua Castellana, por la Real Academia Española.* Madrid, 1880 (published January, 1881), p. 132.

of the indicative, and the second person plural imperative.

In the preterit system, the vowel *e*, as in *e* stems of the preceding class, uniformly becomes *i*, when the personal ending contains a diphthong; that is, in the gerund, in the third persons singular and plural of the past definite, and throughout the derivative tenses.

### 512. *Pedir*, (pidiendo), pedido, *to ask*.

PRESENT STEMS. — *pid* (tonic, atonic strong), *pid* (atonic weak).

|             |              |               |              |                 |                |                |
|-------------|--------------|---------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>pid-o</b> | <b>pid-es</b> | <b>pid-e</b> | ped-imos        | ped-ís         | <b>pid-en.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>pid-a</b> | <b>pid-as</b> | <b>pid-a</b> | <b>pid-āmos</b> | <b>pid-áis</b> | <b>pid-an.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —            | <b>pid-e</b>  | <b>pid-a</b> | <b>pid-āmos</b> | ped-id         | <b>pid-an.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | ped-ía       | -ías          | -ía          | -íamos          | -íais          | -ían.          |

PRETERIT STEM. — *pid* (before a diphthong).

|              |                 |        |              |          |         |                  |
|--------------|-----------------|--------|--------------|----------|---------|------------------|
| GERUND.      | <b>pidiēdo.</b> |        |              |          |         |                  |
| PAST DEF.    | ped-í           | -iste  | <b>pidió</b> | ped-imos | -ísteis | <b>pidiēron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>pid-iēra</b> | -iēras | -iēra        | -iéramos | -iérais | -iēran.          |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>pid-iēse</b> | -iēses | -iēse        | -iésemos | -iéseis | -iēsen.          |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>pid-iēre</b> | -iēres | -iēre        | -iéremos | -iéreis | -iēren.          |

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

|         |          |      |     |        |       |       |
|---------|----------|------|-----|--------|-------|-------|
| FUTURE. | pedir-é  | -ás  | -á  | -émos  | -éis  | -án.  |
| CONDIT. | pedir-ía | -ías | -ía | -íamos | -íais | -ían. |

### 513. *Servir*, (sirviendo), servido, *to serve*.

|              |                  |               |               |                 |                |                   |
|--------------|------------------|---------------|---------------|-----------------|----------------|-------------------|
| PRES. IND.   | <b>sirvo</b>     | <b>sirves</b> | <b>sirve</b>  | servimos        | servís         | <b>sirven.</b>    |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | <b>sirva</b>     | <b>sirvas</b> | <b>sirva</b>  | <b>sirvāmos</b> | <b>sirváis</b> | <b>sirvan.</b>    |
| IMPERAT.     | —                | <b>sirve</b>  | <b>sirva</b>  | <b>sirvāmos</b> | servid         | <b>sirvan.</b>    |
| IMPERF.      | serv-ía          | -ías          | -ía           | -íamos          | -íais          | -ían.             |
| GERUND.      | <b>sirviēdo.</b> |               |               |                 |                |                   |
| PAST DEF.    | serv-í           | -iste         | <b>sirvió</b> | servimos        | -ísteis        | <b>sirviēron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>sirv-iēra</b> | -iēras        | -iēra         | -iéramos        | -iérais        | -iēran.           |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>sirv-iēse</b> | -iēses        | -iēse         | -iésemos        | -iéseis        | -iēsen.           |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>sirv-iēre</b> | -iēres        | -iēre         | -iéremos        | -iéreis        | -iēren.           |
| FUTURE.      | servir-é         | -ás           | -á            | -émos           | -éis           | -án.              |
| CONDIT.      | servir-ía        | -ías          | -ía           | -íamos          | -íais          | -ían.             |

## Orthographic and Euphonic Changes.

**514.** Verbs of this class in *-gir*, besides modifying the radical vowel *e*, observe the euphonic changes indicated in § 375:—

**515. Regir, (regiendo), regido, to rule.**

|              |                 |               |              |                 |                |                  |
|--------------|-----------------|---------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|------------------|
| PRES. IND.   | <b>rijo</b>     | <b>riges</b>  | <b>rige</b>  | <b>regimos</b>  | <b>regís</b>   | <b>rigen.</b>    |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | <b>rija</b>     | <b>rijas</b>  | <b>rija</b>  | <b>rijāmos</b>  | <b>rijáis</b>  | <b>rijan.</b>    |
| IMPERAT.     | —               | <b>rige</b>   | <b>rija</b>  | <b>rijāmos</b>  | <b>regid</b>   | <b>rijan.</b>    |
| IMPERF.      | <b>reg-ía</b>   | <b>-ías</b>   | <b>-ía</b>   | <b>-íamos</b>   | <b>-lais</b>   | <b>-ían.</b>     |
| GERUND.      | <b>rigiēdo.</b> |               |              |                 |                |                  |
| PAST DEF.    | <b>reg-í</b>    | <b>-iste</b>  | <b>rigió</b> | <b>re-gimos</b> | <b>-ísteis</b> | <b>rigiēron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>rig-iēra</b> | <b>-iēras</b> | <b>-iēra</b> | <b>-iéramos</b> | <b>-iérais</b> | <b>-iēran.</b>   |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>rig-iēse</b> | <b>-iēses</b> | <b>-iēse</b> | <b>-iésemos</b> | <b>-iéseis</b> | <b>-iēsen.</b>   |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>rig-iēre</b> | <b>-iēres</b> | <b>-iēre</b> | <b>-iéremos</b> | <b>-iéreis</b> | <b>-iēren.</b>   |
| FUTURE.      | <b>regir-é</b>  | <b>-ás</b>    | <b>-á</b>    | <b>-émos</b>    | <b>-éis</b>    | <b>-án.</b>      |
| CONDIT.      | <b>regir-ía</b> | <b>-ías</b>   | <b>-ía</b>   | <b>-íamos</b>   | <b>-lais</b>   | <b>-ían.</b>     |

**516.** Verbs of this class in *-guir* (*gheer*) modify the stem-vowel, and conform to the euphonic changes laid down in § 376:—

**Seguir, (siguiendo), seguido, to follow.**

|              |                   |               |               |                 |                |                   |
|--------------|-------------------|---------------|---------------|-----------------|----------------|-------------------|
| PRES. IND.   | <b>sigo</b>       | <b>sigues</b> | <b>sigue</b>  | <b>seguimos</b> | <b>seguís</b>  | <b>siguen.</b>    |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | <b>sigā</b>       | <b>sigā</b>   | <b>sigā</b>   | <b>sigāmos</b>  | <b>sigáis</b>  | <b>sigan.</b>     |
| IMPERAT.     | —                 | <b>sigue</b>  | <b>sigā</b>   | <b>sigāmos</b>  | <b>seguid</b>  | <b>sigan.</b>     |
| IMPERF.      | <b>seguíā</b>     | <b>-ías</b>   | <b>-ía</b>    | <b>-íamos</b>   | <b>-lais</b>   | <b>-ían.</b>      |
| GERUND.      | <b>siguiendo.</b> |               |               |                 |                |                   |
| PAST DEF.    | <b>seguí</b>      | <b>-iste</b>  | <b>siguíó</b> | <b>seguimos</b> | <b>-ísteis</b> | <b>siguieron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>sigulera</b>   | <b>-iēras</b> | <b>-iera</b>  | <b>-iéramos</b> | <b>-iérais</b> | <b>-ieran.</b>    |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>sigulese</b>   | <b>-iēses</b> | <b>-iese</b>  | <b>-iésemos</b> | <b>-iéseis</b> | <b>-iesen.</b>    |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>sigulere</b>   | <b>-iēres</b> | <b>-iere</b>  | <b>-iéremos</b> | <b>-iéreis</b> | <b>-ieren.</b>    |
| FUTURE.      | <b>seguiré</b>    | <b>-ás</b>    | <b>-á</b>     | <b>-émos</b>    | <b>-éis</b>    | <b>-án.</b>       |
| CONDIT.      | <b>seguiría</b>   | <b>-ías</b>   | <b>-ía</b>    | <b>-íamos</b>   | <b>-lais</b>   | <b>-ían.</b>      |

**517.** Verbs of this class in the double consonant *-ñir*, and optionally those in *-chir*, modify the stem-vowel *e*,

and absorb the *i* of the diphthongs *ie*, *io*, contained in the gerund, the past definite third persons singular and plural, and the derivative tenses, according to § 378:—

**518. Cefñir, (ciñendo), ceñido, to gird.**

|              |          |       |      |          |         |          |
|--------------|----------|-------|------|----------|---------|----------|
| PRES. IND.   | ciño     | ciñes | ciñe | ceñimos  | ceñís   | ciñen.   |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | ciña     | ciñas | ciña | ciñamos  | ciñáis  | ciñan.   |
| IMPERAT.     | —        | ciñe  | ciña | ciñamos  | ceñid   | ciñan.   |
| IMPERF.      | ceñ-ía   | -ías  | -ía  | -íamos   | -íais   | -ían.    |
| GERUND.      | ciñendo. |       |      |          |         |          |
| PAST DEF.    | ceñ-í    | -iste | ciñó | ceñ-imos | -ísteis | ciñeron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | ciñ-era  | -eras | -era | -éramos  | -érais  | -eran.   |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | ciñ-ese  | -eses | -ese | -ésemos  | -éseis  | -esen.   |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | ciñ-ere  | -eres | -ere | -éremos  | -éreis  | -eren.   |
| FUTURE.      | ceñir-é  | -ás   | -á   | -émos    | -éis    | -án.     |
| CONDIT.      | ceñir-ía | -ías  | -ía  | -íamos   | -íais   | -ían.    |

**519.** Verbs in *-eir* modify the stem-vowel *e* into *i*, according to this class, but they lose the *i* of the diphthongs *ie* and *io* throughout the preterit stem:—

**520. Re-ir, (ri-endo), re-ido, to laugh.**

|              |              |       |      |         |               |         |
|--------------|--------------|-------|------|---------|---------------|---------|
| PRES. IND.   | río          | ries  | rie  | reímos  | reís          | rien.   |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | ria          | rias  | ria  | riāmos  | riáis         | rian.   |
| IMPERAT.     | —            | rie   | ria  | riāmos  | reid          | rian.   |
| IMPERF.      | re-ía        | -ías  | -ía  | -íamos  | -íais         | -ían.   |
| GERUND.      | ri-endo.     |       |      |         |               |         |
| PAST DEF.    | re-í         | -iste | rió  | re-imos | -ísteis       | riéron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | ri-ēra       | -eras | -ēra | -éramos | -érais        | -ēran.  |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | ri-ēse       | -eses | -ēse | -ésemos | -éseis        | -ēsen.  |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | ri-ēre       | -eres | -ēre | -éremos | -éreis        | -ēren.  |
| FUTURE.      | reir-é, etc. |       |      | CONDIT. | reir-ía, etc. |         |

**Fourth Class.**

**521.** This class embraces all verbs in *-uir*, including those in *-güir* (not those in *-guir*, § 376 and remark). The gerund uniformly belongs to the preterit system, as in the second and third classes.

In the present stem a *y* consonant is inserted before the ending when the radical is tonic (weak or strong), and also when atonic strong; that is, in the same positions of the present indicative, subjunctive, and of the imperative, in which the third class modifies the stem-vowel.

In the preterit system, including the gerund, the diphthongs *ie* and *io* are consonantized throughout (§§ 441; 442, *b*).

### 522. **Huir**, (huyendo), huído, *to flee*.

PRESENT STEMS. — *hu-y* (tonic; atonic strong), *hu* (atonic weak)

|         |               |              |             |                |               |               |
|---------|---------------|--------------|-------------|----------------|---------------|---------------|
| PR. IN. | <b>hūyo</b>   | <b>hūyes</b> | <b>hūye</b> | huimos         | huís          | <b>hūyen.</b> |
| PR. SJ. | <b>hūya</b>   | <b>hūyas</b> | <b>hūya</b> | <b>huyāmos</b> | <b>huyáis</b> | <b>hūyan.</b> |
| IMPER.  | —             | <b>hūye</b>  | <b>hūya</b> | <b>huyāmos</b> | huid          | <b>hūyan.</b> |
| IMPERF. | hu- <i>fa</i> | - <i>fas</i> | - <i>fa</i> | - <i>lamos</i> | - <i>lais</i> | - <i>lan.</i> |

PRETERIT STEM. — *hu* (with diphthongs consonantized).

GERUND. **huyēndo.**

|            |                 |                |               |                  |                 |                 |
|------------|-----------------|----------------|---------------|------------------|-----------------|-----------------|
| P. DEF.    | hu- <i>f</i>    | - <i>iste</i>  | - <b>yó</b>   | - <i>imos</i>    | - <i>isteis</i> | - <b>yēron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SJ. | hu- <b>yēra</b> | - <b>yēras</b> | - <b>yēra</b> | - <b>yéramos</b> | - <b>yérais</b> | - <b>yēran.</b> |
| 2 IMP. SJ. | hu- <b>yēse</b> | - <b>yēses</b> | - <b>yēse</b> | - <b>yésemos</b> | - <b>yéséis</b> | - <b>yēsen.</b> |
| FUT. SJ.   | hu- <b>yēre</b> | - <b>yēres</b> | - <b>yēre</b> | - <b>yéremos</b> | - <b>yéreís</b> | - <b>yēren.</b> |

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

|         |                 |              |             |                |               |               |
|---------|-----------------|--------------|-------------|----------------|---------------|---------------|
| FUTURE. | huir- <b>é</b>  | - <b>ás</b>  | - <b>á</b>  | - <b>émos</b>  | - <b>éis</b>  | - <b>án.</b>  |
| CONDIT. | huir- <i>fa</i> | - <i>fas</i> | - <i>fa</i> | - <i>lamos</i> | - <i>lais</i> | - <i>lan.</i> |

### 523. **Atribuir**, (atribuyendo), atribuído, *to ascribe*.

|         |                   |              |             |                      |               |                     |
|---------|-------------------|--------------|-------------|----------------------|---------------|---------------------|
| PR. IN. | atribū- <b>yo</b> | - <b>yes</b> | - <b>ye</b> | atribu- <i>imos</i>  | - <i>ís</i>   | atribū- <b>yen.</b> |
| PR. SJ. | atribū- <b>ya</b> | - <b>yas</b> | - <b>ya</b> | atribu- <b>yāmos</b> | - <b>yáis</b> | atribū- <b>yan.</b> |
| IMPER.  | —                 | - <b>ye</b>  | - <b>ya</b> | atribu- <b>yāmos</b> | - <i>id</i>   | atribū- <b>yan.</b> |
| IMPERF. | atribu- <i>fa</i> | - <i>fas</i> | - <i>fa</i> | - <i>lamos</i>       | - <i>lais</i> | - <i>lan.</i>       |

GERUND. **atribuyēndo.**

|            |                     |                |               |                  |                 |                 |
|------------|---------------------|----------------|---------------|------------------|-----------------|-----------------|
| P. DEF.    | atribu- <i>f</i>    | - <i>iste</i>  | - <b>yó</b>   | - <i>imos</i>    | - <i>isteis</i> | - <b>yēron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SJ. | atribu- <b>yēra</b> | - <b>yēras</b> | - <b>yēra</b> | - <b>yéramos</b> | - <b>yérais</b> | - <b>yēran.</b> |
| 2 IMP. SJ. | atribu- <b>yēse</b> | - <b>yēses</b> | - <b>yēse</b> | - <b>yésemos</b> | - <b>yéséis</b> | - <b>yēsen.</b> |
| FUT. SJ.   | atribu- <b>yēre</b> | - <b>yēres</b> | - <b>yēre</b> | - <b>yéremos</b> | - <b>yéreís</b> | - <b>yēren.</b> |
| FUTURE.    | atribuir- <b>é</b>  | - <b>ás</b>    | - <b>á</b>    | - <b>émos</b>    | - <b>éis</b>    | - <b>án.</b>    |
| CONDIT.    | atribuir- <i>fa</i> | - <i>fas</i>   | - <i>fa</i>   | - <i>lamos</i>   | - <i>lais</i>   | - <i>lan.</i>   |

**524. Instituir, (instituyendo), instituïdo, to establish.**

|              |                     |        |       |               |         |              |
|--------------|---------------------|--------|-------|---------------|---------|--------------|
| PRES. IND.   | institū-yo          | -yes   | -ye   | institū-imos  | -ís     | institū-yen. |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | institū-ya          | -yas   | -ya   | institū-yāmos | -yāís   | institū-yan. |
| IMPERAT.     | —                   | -ye    | -ya   | institū-yāmos | -íd     | institū-yan. |
| IMPRF.       | institū-ía          | -ías   | -ía   | -íamos        | -íais   | -ían.        |
| GERUND.      | <b>instituyēdo.</b> |        |       |               |         |              |
| PAST DEF.    | institū-í           | -iste  | -yó   | -imos         | -ísteis | -yēron.      |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | institū-yēra        | -yēras | -yēra | -yéramos      | -yérais | -yēran.      |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | institū-yēse        | -yēses | -yēse | -yésemos      | -yéseis | -yēsen.      |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | institū-yēre        | -yēres | -yēre | -yéremos      | -yéreis | -yēren.      |
| FUTURE.      | instituir-é         | -ás    | -á    | -émos         | -éis    | -án.         |
| CONDIT.      | instituir-ía        | -ías   | -ía   | -íamos        | -íais   | -ían.        |

**525.** Verbs in *-güir* lose the diaeresis as often as they admit the *y* consonant : —

**526. Argüir, (arguyendo), argüïdo, to discuss.**

|          |                  |        |         |            |         |             |
|----------|------------------|--------|---------|------------|---------|-------------|
| PR. IN.  | argū-yo          | -yes   | -ye     | argü-imos  | -ís     | argū-yen.   |
| PR. SJ.  | argū-ya          | -yas   | -ya     | argü-yāmos | -yāís   | argū-yan.   |
| IMPER.   | —                | -ye    | -ya     | argü-yāmos | argü-íd | argū-yan.   |
| IMPRF.   | argü-ía          | -ías   | -ía     | -íamos     | -íais   | -ían.       |
| GER.     | <b>arguyēdo.</b> |        |         |            |         |             |
| P. DEF.  | argü-í           | -iste  | argü-yó | argü-imos  | -ísteis | argü-yēron. |
| 1 I. SJ. | argü-yēra        | -yēras | -yēra   | -yéramos   | -yérais | -yēran.     |
| 2 I. SJ. | argü-yēse        | -yēses | -yēse   | -yésemos   | -yéseis | -yēsen.     |
| FU. SJ.  | argü-yēre        | -yēres | -yēre   | -yéremos   | -yéreis | -yēren.     |
| FUT.     | argüir-é         | -ás    | -á      | -émos      | -éis    | -án.        |
| COND.    | argüir-ía        | -ías   | -ía     | -íamos     | -íais   | -ían.       |

**Fifth Class.**

**527.** This class embraces those verbs that have irregular preterit systems derived from the Latin by attraction, with the tonic accent on the radical in the first and third persons singular of the past definite. The present and future stems are generally irregular.

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

528. **Andar**, *andando*, *andado*, *to go* (indefinitely).

## PRESENT STEM.—REGULAR.

|             |         |       |      |         |        |        |
|-------------|---------|-------|------|---------|--------|--------|
| PRES. IND.  | ando    | andas | anda | andāmos | andáis | āndan. |
| PRES. SUBJ. | ande    | andes | ande | andēmos | andéis | ānden. |
| IMPERAT.    | —       | anda  | ande | andēmos | andād  | ānden. |
| IMPERF.     | and-aba | -abas | -aba | -ábamos | -ábais | -āban. |

PRETERIT STEM.—**anduv** (§ 452).

|              |                   |                  |               |                   |                  |                |
|--------------|-------------------|------------------|---------------|-------------------|------------------|----------------|
| PAST DEF.    | <b>andūve</b>     | <b>anduviste</b> | <b>andūvo</b> | <b>anduv-imos</b> | <b>-ísteis</b>   | <b>-iēron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>anduv-iēra</b> | <b>-iēras</b>    | <b>-iēra</b>  | <b>-iēramos</b>   | <b>-iéraires</b> | <b>-iēran.</b> |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>anduv-iēse</b> | <b>-iēses</b>    | <b>-iēse</b>  | <b>-iēsemos</b>   | <b>-iéseis</b>   | <b>-iēsen.</b> |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>anduv-iēre</b> | <b>-iēres</b>    | <b>-iēre</b>  | <b>-iēremos</b>   | <b>-iéreis</b>   | <b>-iēren.</b> |

## FUTURE STEM.—REGULAR.

|         |               |         |                |
|---------|---------------|---------|----------------|
| FUTURE. | andar-é, etc. | CONDIT. | andar-fa, etc. |
|---------|---------------|---------|----------------|

*a. Andar* is a general undefined going, expressing manner or state; *ir*, a going in a specific direction, or for a definite purpose. Of inanimate objects and animals, *andar* is used; of persons, *ir*. *Ir á*, followed by an infinitive, means *to be going to*, *to be about to*:—

**andar** de Ceca en Meca,<sup>1</sup> *to go from Dan to Beersheba.*

**andar** vagando por todas partes, *to go roaming all over.*

**andar** de prisa — despacio, *to go fast — slow.*

**andar** á gatas, *to go on all fours.*

el reloj no anda; está parado, *the watch don't go; it has stopped.*

el caballo anda bien, *the horse travels well.*

la tierra anda, *the earth moves.*

**ir** de Madrid á Sevilla, *to go from Madrid to Seville.*

**ir** al teatro — á la compra, *to go to the play — to market.*

**ir** de un recado, *to go of an errand.*

él va de ministro á tal parte, *he goes as a minister to such a place. [to take a short walk.*

**voy** á dar un paseito, *I am going; qué me va V. á dar? what are you going to give me?*

<sup>1</sup> The **Ceca** of Córdoba, originally a *Mint* (Arab. *dār as-sikka*), was the central oratory for pilgrims in the western caliphate, corresponding to the *ca'aba* of Mecca in that of Bagdad.

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

**529. Caber, cabiendo, cabido, to be contained in, (en), to hold.**

PRESENT STEMS. — **quep** (strong, § 446, *d*), **cab** (weak).

|             |               |               |              |                 |                |                |
|-------------|---------------|---------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>quepo</b>  | <b>cabes</b>  | <b>cabe</b>  | <b>cabēmos</b>  | <b>cabēis</b>  | <b>caben.</b>  |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>quepa</b>  | <b>quepas</b> | <b>quepa</b> | <b>quepāmos</b> | <b>quepāis</b> | <b>quepan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —             | <b>cabe</b>   | <b>quepa</b> | <b>quepāmos</b> | <b>cabēd</b>   | <b>quepan.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | <b>cab-ía</b> | <b>-ías</b>   | <b>-ía</b>   | <b>-íamos</b>   | <b>-íais</b>   | <b>-ían.</b>   |

PRETERIT STEM. — **cup** (§ 452).

|              |                 |                |              |                 |                |                |
|--------------|-----------------|----------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PAST DEF.    | <b>cūpe</b>     | <b>cupiste</b> | <b>cūpo</b>  | <b>cup-imos</b> | <b>-ísteis</b> | <b>-iēron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>cup-iēra</b> | <b>-iēras</b>  | <b>-iēra</b> | <b>-iérāmos</b> | <b>-iérāis</b> | <b>-iēran.</b> |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>cup-iēse</b> | <b>-iēses</b>  | <b>-iēse</b> | <b>-iésemos</b> | <b>-iéseis</b> | <b>-iēsen.</b> |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>cup-iēre</b> | <b>-iēres</b>  | <b>-iēre</b> | <b>-iéremos</b> | <b>-iéreis</b> | <b>-iēren.</b> |

FUTURE STEM. — **cabr** (§ 454).

|         |                |             |            |               |              |              |
|---------|----------------|-------------|------------|---------------|--------------|--------------|
| FUTURE. | <b>cabr-é</b>  | <b>-ás</b>  | <b>-á</b>  | <b>-émos</b>  | <b>-éis</b>  | <b>-án.</b>  |
| CONDIT. | <b>cabr-ía</b> | <b>-ías</b> | <b>-ía</b> | <b>-íamos</b> | <b>-íais</b> | <b>-ían.</b> |

*a.* The use of **caber** (from the Latin *capĕre*, *to take*) is anomalous, in that it reverses the English order of subject and object, and is construed with the preposition *en*. Thus: **En esta sala caben quinientas personas**, *this hall holds five hundred persons*, — literally, “five hundred persons hold in this hall”; **no cabe más en esta vasija**, *this vessel will not hold any more*, — literally, “no more holds in this vessel.” In this sense of material capacity, *coger*, with the English construction, may be substituted; as, *esta sala coge quinientas personas*; *esta vasija no coge más*.

*b.* **Caber** signifies also moral capacity in the sense of *to be capable of*; as, **no cabe en él tal infamia**, *he is not capable of such baseness*; **todo cabe en fulano**, *so and so is capable of anything*; **no cabe más**, *there is no room for more*, or “that caps the climax,” — the latter meaning also expressed in Spanish by **no faltaba más**.

*c.* **Cabe** is used impersonally in the sense of “it is possible”; negative, “there is no — possible”: **si cabe**, *if it is possible, if it may be*; **no cabe duda**, *there is no possible doubt*.



**530. Hacer, haciendo, hecho, to make, to do (Lat. *facere*).**

PRESENT STEMS. — **hag** (strong, § 446, *e*), **hac** (weak).

|             |             |                    |             |                |               |               |
|-------------|-------------|--------------------|-------------|----------------|---------------|---------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>hago</b> | haces              | hace        | hacēmos        | hacēis        | hacen.        |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>haga</b> | <b>hagas</b>       | <b>haga</b> | <b>hagāmos</b> | <b>hagáis</b> | <b>hagan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —           | <b>haz</b> (§ 450) | <b>haga</b> | <b>hagāmos</b> | hacēd         | <b>hagan.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | hacía       | hacías             | hacía       | -íamos         | -íais         | -ían.         |

PRETERIT STEM. — **hice** (§ 452).

|              |                |                 |                    |                |         |         |
|--------------|----------------|-----------------|--------------------|----------------|---------|---------|
| PAST DEF.    | <b>hice</b>    | <b>hiciste</b>  | <b>hizo</b> (§ 14) | <b>hicimos</b> | -isteis | -ieron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>hiciera</b> | <b>hicieras</b> | <b>hiciera</b>     | -iéramos       | -iérais | -ieran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>hiciese</b> | <b>hicieses</b> | <b>hiciese</b>     | -iésemos       | -iéseis | -iesen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>hiciere</b> | <b>hicieres</b> | <b>hiciere</b>     | -iéremos       | -iéreis | -ieren. |

FUTURE STEM. — **har** (§ 455).

|         |               |      |     |        |       |       |
|---------|---------------|------|-----|--------|-------|-------|
| FUTURE. | <b>har-é</b>  | -ás  | -á  | -émos  | -éis  | -án.  |
| CONDIT. | <b>har-ía</b> | -ías | -ía | -íamos | -íais | -ían. |

**531. Satisfacer, satisfaciendo, satisfecho, to satisfy.**

*satis-*

|              |                   |                    |             |                |                    |               |
|--------------|-------------------|--------------------|-------------|----------------|--------------------|---------------|
| PRES. IND.   | <b>fago</b>       | faces              | face        | facēmos        | facēis             | facen.        |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | <b>faga</b>       | <b>fagas</b>       | <b>faga</b> | <b>fagāmos</b> | <b>fagáis</b>      | <b>fagan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.     | —                 | face <i>or</i> faz | <b>faga</b> | <b>fagāmos</b> | facēd              | <b>fagan.</b> |
| IMPERF.      | facía             | -ías               | -ía         | -íamos         | -íais              | -ían.         |
| PAST DEF.    | <b>fice</b>       | <b>ficiste</b>     | <b>fizo</b> | <b>ficimos</b> | -isteis            | -ieron.       |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>ficiera</b>    | -ieras             | -iera       | -iéramos       | -iérais            | -ieran.       |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>ficiese</b>    | -ieses             | -iese       | -iésemos       | -iéseis            | -iesen.       |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>ficiere</b>    | -ieres             | -iere       | -iéremos       | -iéreis            | -ieren.       |
| FUTURE.      | <b>faré, etc.</b> |                    |             | CONDIT.        | <b>faría, etc.</b> |               |

**532. Poder, (pudiendo), podido, to be able.**

PRESENT STEMS. — **pued** (tonic, § 445, *a*), **pod** (atonic, § 435).

|             |              |               |              |         |        |                |
|-------------|--------------|---------------|--------------|---------|--------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>puedo</b> | <b>puedes</b> | <b>puede</b> | podemos | podeis | <b>pueden.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>pueda</b> | <b>puedas</b> | <b>pueda</b> | podamos | podais | <b>puedan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —            | —             | —            | —       | —      | —              |
| IMPERF.     | pod-ía       | -ías          | -ía          | -íamos  | -íais  | -ían.          |

PRETERIT STEM. — **pud** (§ 452).

|              |                  |                |             |                 |         |         |
|--------------|------------------|----------------|-------------|-----------------|---------|---------|
| GERUND.      | <b>pudiendo.</b> |                |             |                 |         |         |
| PAST DEF.    | <b>pūde</b>      | <b>pudiste</b> | <b>pūdo</b> | <b>pud-imos</b> | -isteis | -ieron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>pud-iera</b>  | -ieras         | -iera       | -iéramos        | -iérais | -ieran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>pud-iese</b>  | -ieses         | -iese       | -iésemos        | -iéseis | -iesen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>pud-iere</b>  | -ieres         | -iere       | -iéremos        | -iéreis | -ieren. |

FUTURE STEM. — **podr** (§ 454).

|         |               |           |         |                |            |  |
|---------|---------------|-----------|---------|----------------|------------|--|
| FUTURE. | <b>podr-é</b> | -ás, etc. | CONDIT. | <b>podr-ía</b> | -ías, etc. |  |
|---------|---------------|-----------|---------|----------------|------------|--|

*a. Poder* is one of the so-called modal verbs, and signifies *may* (*might*), *can* (*could*), denoting physical or moral possibility, permission, and a possible contingency:—

|                                     |                                |
|-------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| no <b>puedo</b> hacerlo,            | I cannot do it.                |
| no <b>hemos podido</b> efectuarlo,  | we could not bring it about.   |
| ¿ <b>se puede</b> pasar?            | may one (I) come in?           |
| no <b>se puede</b> seguir adelante, | you can't go on.               |
| <b>podrá</b> ser; <b>pudo</b> ser,  | it may be; it might have been. |

### 533. **Poner**, poniendo, puesto, *to put, to place.*

PRESENT STEMS.—**pong** (strong, § 446, *b*), **pon** (weak).

|             |              |                    |              |                 |                |                |
|-------------|--------------|--------------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>pongo</b> | pones              | pone         | ponēmos         | ponēis         | ponen.         |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>ponga</b> | <b>pongas</b>      | <b>ponga</b> | <b>pongāmos</b> | <b>pongáis</b> | <b>pongan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —            | <b>pon</b> (§ 450) | <b>ponga</b> | <b>pongāmos</b> | ponēd          | <b>pongan.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | pon-ía       | -ías               | -ía          | -íamos          | -íais          | -ían.          |

PRETERIT STEM.—**pus** (§ 452).

|              |                 |                |             |                 |         |         |
|--------------|-----------------|----------------|-------------|-----------------|---------|---------|
| PAST DEF.    | <b>puse</b>     | <b>pusiste</b> | <b>puso</b> | <b>pus-imos</b> | -ísteis | -ieron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>pus-iera</b> | -ieras         | -iera       | -iéramos        | -iérais | -ieran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>pus-iese</b> | -ieses         | -iese       | -iésemos        | -iéseis | -iesen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>pus-iere</b> | -ieres         | -iere       | -iéremos        | -iéreis | -ieren. |

FUTURE STEM.—**pondr** (§ 454).

|         |                 |      |     |        |       |       |
|---------|-----------------|------|-----|--------|-------|-------|
| FUTURE. | <b>pondr-é</b>  | -ás  | -á  | -émos  | -éis  | -án.  |
| CONDIT. | <b>pondr-ía</b> | -ías | -ía | -íamos | -íais | -ían. |

*a. Poner* may be accompanied by the prepositions *en*, *sobre*, or *encima de*, to signify “to put” or “set on” a surface or the *outside* of anything. “To place” or “put in” the *inside* of anything is expressed by *meter en*. The synonym of both verbs is *colocar*:—

|  |                                  |
|--|----------------------------------|
| <b>poner</b> ( <i>or colocar</i> ) el sombrero | to put the hat on the table.     |
| <b>en</b> la mesa,                             |                                  |
| <b>meter</b> la costura <b>en</b> el cajón,    | to put the sewing in the drawer. |
| <b>colocarla</b> <b>en</b> su sitio,           | to put it in its place.          |

*b. Ponerse*, *to set one's self about, to begin*, followed by *a* and an infinitive; *to put on* a garment, gloves, etc. **Meterse en**, *to get one's self into, to meddle with*:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>se puso á cantar y á bailar,</b>          | he began to sing and to dance.                     |
| <b>me pongo la levita,</b>                   | I put on the frock-coat.                           |
| <b>se ha metido en honduras,</b>             | he has got into straits — “gone beyond his depth.” |
| <b>no se meta V. en los negocios ajenos,</b> | do not meddle with other people's business.        |

### 534. *Querer, queriendo, querido, to will, to wish.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **queler** (tonic), **quer** (atonic).

|             |                |                |               |                 |                |                 |
|-------------|----------------|----------------|---------------|-----------------|----------------|-----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>quero</b>   | <b>quieres</b> | <b>quiere</b> | <b>querēmos</b> | <b>querēis</b> | <b>quieren.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>quiera</b>  | <b>quieras</b> | <b>quiera</b> | <b>querāmos</b> | <b>querāis</b> | <b>quieran.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —              | <b>quiere</b>  | <b>quiera</b> | <b>querāmos</b> | <b>querēd</b>  | <b>quieran.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | <b>quer-ía</b> | <b>-ías</b>    | <b>-ía</b>    | <b>-íamos</b>   | <b>-íais</b>   | <b>-ían.</b>    |

PRETERIT STEM. — **quis** (§ 452).

|              |                  |                 |              |                  |                |                |
|--------------|------------------|-----------------|--------------|------------------|----------------|----------------|
| PAST DEF.    | <b>quise</b>     | <b>quisiste</b> | <b>quiso</b> | <b>quis-imos</b> | <b>-ísteis</b> | <b>-ieron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>quis-iera</b> | <b>-ieras</b>   | <b>-iera</b> | <b>-iéramos</b>  | <b>-iérais</b> | <b>-ieran.</b> |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>quis-iese</b> | <b>-ieses</b>   | <b>-iese</b> | <b>-iésemos</b>  | <b>-iéseis</b> | <b>-iesen.</b> |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>quis-iere</b> | <b>-ieres</b>   | <b>-iere</b> | <b>-iéremos</b>  | <b>-iéreis</b> | <b>-ieren.</b> |

FUTURE STEM. — **querr** (§ 454).

|         |                 |             |            |               |              |              |
|---------|-----------------|-------------|------------|---------------|--------------|--------------|
| FUTURE. | <b>querr-é</b>  | <b>-ás</b>  | <b>-á</b>  | <b>-émos</b>  | <b>-éis</b>  | <b>-án.</b>  |
| CONDIT. | <b>querr-ía</b> | <b>-ías</b> | <b>-ía</b> | <b>-íamos</b> | <b>-íais</b> | <b>-ían.</b> |

*a. Querer, as a verb of mode, denotes will, inclination, in the meanings to will, to be willing, to wish :—*

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <b>¿quiere V. leer esta carta?</b>                          | will you read this letter?                               |
| <b>no quiso hacer lo que yo le propuse,</b>                 | he would not do what I suggested.                        |
| <b>el muchacho quería jugar, mas su compañero no quiso,</b> | the boy wanted to play, but his mate was not willing to. |

*b. When will, would, signify future time, or a condition, the appropriate tense must be used :—*

|   |                                   |
|---|-----------------------------------|
| <b>¿cuándo vendrá V. á verme?</b>         | when will you come to see me?     |
| <b>vendría pronto, si tuviese tiempo,</b> | I would come soon, if I had time. |

*c. Querer signifies also to like, to love, to be fond of :—*

|                                     |                                     |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <b>el padre quiere á sus hijos,</b> | the father is fond of his children. |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|

535. **Saber**, sabiendo, sabido, *to know* (things).PRESENT STEMS. — **sep** (strong), **sab** (weak).

|             |                      |       |      |         |        |        |
|-------------|----------------------|-------|------|---------|--------|--------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>sé</b> (§ 446, d) | sabes | sabe | sabēmos | sabēis | saben. |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>sepa</b>          | sepas | sepa | sepāmos | sepáis | sepan. |
| IMPERAT.    | —                    | sabe  | sepa | sepāmos | sabēd  | sepan. |
| IMPERF.     | sab- <i>ía</i>       | -ías  | -ía  | -íamos  | -íais  | -ían.  |

PRETERIT STEM. — **sup** (§ 452).

|              |             |         |       |          |         |         |
|--------------|-------------|---------|-------|----------|---------|---------|
| PAST DEF.    | <b>sūpe</b> | supiste | sūpo  | sup-imos | -ísteis | -ieron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | sup-iera    | -ieras  | -iera | -iéramos | -iérais | -ieran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | sup-iese    | -ieses  | -iese | -iésemos | -iéseis | -iesen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | sup-iere    | -ieres  | -iere | -iéremos | -iéreis | -ieren. |

FUTURE STEM. — **sabr** (§ 454).

|         |                 |      |     |        |       |       |
|---------|-----------------|------|-----|--------|-------|-------|
| FUTURE. | sabr- <i>é</i>  | -ás  | -á  | -émos  | -éis  | -án.  |
| CONDIT. | sabr- <i>ía</i> | -ías | -ía | -íamos | -íais | -ían. |

*a. Saber* is *to know* things, objects of thought; *conocer* (§ 374, c), *to know* persons, and *to be acquainted with* things, objects of thought: —

lo **sé**; no quiero **saberlo**, *I know it; I do not want to know it.*

¿**sabe** V. su lección? la **sé** de memoria, *do you know your lesson? I know it by heart.*

yo ya **sabía** lo que quiso averiguar, *I knew what he wanted to find out.*

le **conozco**; no quiero **conocerle**, *I know him; I do not wish to know him.*

¿**conoce** V. este libro? lo **conozco**, *are you acquainted with this book? I am.*

**conozco** mi deber, y **sabré** desempeñarlo, *I know my duty, and shall find means to discharge it.*

*b. Can (could)* is always rendered by **saber** instead of **poder**, when it means *to know how*: —

**sabe** hablar Castellano,

yo **sé**  
yo puedo } *hacer eso,*

he can speak Spanish.

I can (*intellectual possibility*)  
I can (*physical possibility*) } *do that.*

536. **Tener**, *teniendo, tenido, to have, to possess.*PRESENT STEMS. — **teng** (strong), **tien** (tonic weak), **ten** (atonic weak).

|             |               |                    |              |                 |                |                |
|-------------|---------------|--------------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>tengo</b>  | <b>tienes</b>      | <b>tiene</b> | <b>tenēmos</b>  | <b>tenēis</b>  | <b>tienen.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>tenga</b>  | <b>tengas</b>      | <b>tenga</b> | <b>tengāmos</b> | <b>tengāis</b> | <b>tengan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —             | <b>ten</b> (§ 450) | <b>tenga</b> | <b>tengāmos</b> | <b>tenēd</b>   | <b>tengan.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | <b>ten-fa</b> | <b>-fas</b>        | <b>-fa</b>   | <b>-famos</b>   | <b>-fais</b>   | <b>-fan.</b>   |

PRETERIT STEM. — **tuv** (§ 452).

|              |                 |                |              |                 |                |                |
|--------------|-----------------|----------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PAST DEF.    | <b>tāve</b>     | <b>tuviste</b> | <b>tāvo</b>  | <b>tuv-imos</b> | <b>-fsteis</b> | <b>-iēron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>tuv-iera</b> | <b>-ieras</b>  | <b>-iera</b> | <b>-iéramos</b> | <b>-iérais</b> | <b>-ieran.</b> |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>tuv-iese</b> | <b>-ieses</b>  | <b>-iese</b> | <b>-iésemos</b> | <b>-iéseis</b> | <b>-iesen.</b> |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>tuv-iere</b> | <b>-ieres</b>  | <b>-iere</b> | <b>-iéremos</b> | <b>-iéreis</b> | <b>-ieren.</b> |

FUTURE STEM. — **tendr** (§ 454).

|         |                 |             |            |               |              |              |
|---------|-----------------|-------------|------------|---------------|--------------|--------------|
| FUTURE. | <b>tendr-é</b>  | <b>-ás</b>  | <b>-á</b>  | <b>-émos</b>  | <b>-éis</b>  | <b>-án.</b>  |
| CONDIT. | <b>tendr-fa</b> | <b>-fas</b> | <b>-fa</b> | <b>-famos</b> | <b>-fais</b> | <b>-fan.</b> |

*a. Tener* was formerly much used as an auxiliary verb, but at present it is limited to certain verbs in certain locutions not easy to define. The student will do well to confine himself to *haber*, till experience and observation serve to guide him surely:—

|                                    |                                  |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| <b>tengo entendido</b> que . . . , | I have learned that . . . .      |
| lo <b>tiene averiguado</b> ya,     | he has ferretted it out already. |
| <b>tienen ideado</b> un proyecto,  | they have a plan in mind.        |

537. **Traer**, *trayendo (§ 442, b), traído, to bring.*PRESENT STEMS. — **traig** (strong), **tra** (weak).

|         |               |                |               |                  |                 |                 |
|---------|---------------|----------------|---------------|------------------|-----------------|-----------------|
| PR. IN. | <b>trāigo</b> | <b>traes</b>   | <b>trae</b>   | <b>traēmos</b>   | <b>traēis</b>   | <b>trāen.</b>   |
| PR. Sj. | <b>trāiga</b> | <b>traigas</b> | <b>traiga</b> | <b>traigāmos</b> | <b>traigāis</b> | <b>traigan.</b> |
| IMPER.  | —             | <b>trae</b>    | <b>traiga</b> | <b>traigāmos</b> | <b>traēd</b>    | <b>traigan.</b> |
| IMPF.   | <b>tra-fa</b> | <b>-ías</b>    | <b>-fa</b>    | <b>-famos</b>    | <b>-fais</b>    | <b>-fan.</b>    |

PRETERIT STEM. — **traj** (§ 452).

|          |                 |                 |              |                  |                |                       |
|----------|-----------------|-----------------|--------------|------------------|----------------|-----------------------|
| P. DEF.  | <b>trāje</b>    | <b>trajiste</b> | <b>trājo</b> | <b>traj-imos</b> | <b>-fsteis</b> | <b>-eron (§ 443).</b> |
| 1 I. Sj. | <b>traj-era</b> | <b>-eras</b>    | <b>-era</b>  | <b>-éramos</b>   | <b>-érais</b>  | <b>-eran.</b>         |
| 2 I. Sj. | <b>traj-ese</b> | <b>-eses</b>    | <b>-ese</b>  | <b>-ésemos</b>   | <b>-ésels</b>  | <b>-esen.</b>         |
| FU. Sj.  | <b>traj-ere</b> | <b>-eres</b>    | <b>-ere</b>  | <b>-éremos</b>   | <b>-érels</b>  | <b>-eren.</b>         |

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

|       |                 |             |            |               |              |              |
|-------|-----------------|-------------|------------|---------------|--------------|--------------|
| FUT.  | <b>traer-é</b>  | <b>-ás</b>  | <b>-á</b>  | <b>-émos</b>  | <b>-éis</b>  | <b>-án.</b>  |
| COND. | <b>traer-fa</b> | <b>-fas</b> | <b>-fa</b> | <b>-famos</b> | <b>-fais</b> | <b>-fan.</b> |

*a.* The preterit stem *truj* is now obsolete as a literary form, although it is still heard, like most Castilian archaisms, among rustic people. Its inflection is precisely like the prevailing form:—

|              |                 |                 |              |                  |                |               |
|--------------|-----------------|-----------------|--------------|------------------|----------------|---------------|
| PAST DEF.    | <b>trūje</b>    | <b>trujiste</b> | <b>trūjo</b> | <b>truj-imos</b> | <b>-lsteis</b> | <b>-ēron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>truj-ēra</b> | <b>-ēras</b>    | <b>-ēra</b>  | <b>-éramos</b>   | <b>-érais</b>  | <b>-ēran.</b> |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>truj-ēse</b> | <b>-ēses</b>    | <b>-ēse</b>  | <b>-ésemos</b>   | <b>-ésels</b>  | <b>-ēsen.</b> |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>truj-ēre</b> | <b>-ēres</b>    | <b>-ēre</b>  | <b>-éremos</b>   | <b>-érels</b>  | <b>-ēren.</b> |

## THIRD CONJUGATION.

**538. Conducir, conduciendo, conducido, to conduct.**

PRESENT STEMS. — **conduze** (strong, § 374, *d*), **conduc** (weak).

|             |              |               |              |                 |                |                |
|-------------|--------------|---------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
|             | <i>con-</i>  |               | <i>con-</i>  |                 |                |                |
| PRES. IND.  | <b>dūzco</b> | dūces         | dūce         | ducimos         | ducís          | dūcen.         |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>dūzca</b> | <b>dūzcas</b> | <b>dūzca</b> | <b>duzcāmos</b> | <b>duzcāis</b> | <b>dūzcan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —            | dūce          | <b>dūzca</b> | <b>duzcāmos</b> | ducid          | <b>dūzcan.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | ducía        | -ías          | -ía          | -íamos          | -íais          | -ían.          |

PRETERIT STEM. — **conduj** (§ 452).

|              |                |                |             |                 |                |                       |
|--------------|----------------|----------------|-------------|-----------------|----------------|-----------------------|
| PAST DEF.    | <b>dūje</b>    | <b>dujiste</b> | <b>dūjo</b> | <b>duj-imos</b> | <b>-lsteis</b> | <b>-ēron (§ 443).</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>duj-ēra</b> | <b>-ēras</b>   | <b>-ēra</b> | <b>-éramos</b>  | <b>-érais</b>  | <b>-ēran.</b>         |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>duj-ēse</b> | <b>-ēses</b>   | <b>-ēse</b> | <b>-ésemos</b>  | <b>-ésels</b>  | <b>-ēsen.</b>         |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>duj-ēre</b> | <b>-ēres</b>   | <b>-ēre</b> | <b>-éremos</b>  | <b>-érels</b>  | <b>-ēren.</b>         |

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

|         |                 |             |            |               |              |              |
|---------|-----------------|-------------|------------|---------------|--------------|--------------|
| FUTURE. | <b>ducir-é</b>  | <b>-ás</b>  | <b>-á</b>  | <b>-émos</b>  | <b>-éis</b>  | <b>-án.</b>  |
| CONDIT. | <b>ducir-ía</b> | <b>-ías</b> | <b>-ía</b> | <b>-íamos</b> | <b>-íais</b> | <b>-ían.</b> |

*a.* **Ducir** (Lat. *ducere*), *to lead*, is not in use, as a simple verb, since the close of the fifteenth century.

**539. Decir, diciendo, dicho, to say, to tell.**

PRESENT STEMS. — **dig** (strong), **díc** (tonic weak), **dec** (atonic weak).

|             |              |                   |             |                |               |               |
|-------------|--------------|-------------------|-------------|----------------|---------------|---------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>digo</b>  | <b>dices</b>      | <b>dice</b> | <b>decimos</b> | <b>decís</b>  | <b>dicen.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>diga</b>  | <b>digas</b>      | <b>diga</b> | <b>digāmos</b> | <b>digāis</b> | <b>digan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —            | <b>dí</b> (§ 450) | <b>diga</b> | <b>digāmos</b> | <b>decid</b>  | <b>digan.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | <b>decía</b> | <b>-ías</b>       | <b>-ía</b>  | <b>-íamos</b>  | <b>-íais</b>  | <b>-ían.</b>  |

PRETERIT STEM. — **dij** (§ 452).

|              |                |                |             |                 |                |                       |
|--------------|----------------|----------------|-------------|-----------------|----------------|-----------------------|
| PAST DEF.    | <b>dije</b>    | <b>dijiste</b> | <b>dijo</b> | <b>dij-imos</b> | <b>-lsteis</b> | <b>-ēron (§ 443).</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>dij-ēra</b> | <b>-ēras</b>   | <b>-ēra</b> | <b>-éramos</b>  | <b>-érais</b>  | <b>-ēran.</b>         |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>dij-ēse</b> | <b>-ēses</b>   | <b>-ēse</b> | <b>-ésemos</b>  | <b>-ésels</b>  | <b>-ēsen.</b>         |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>dij-ēre</b> | <b>-ēres</b>   | <b>-ēre</b> | <b>-éremos</b>  | <b>-érels</b>  | <b>-ēren.</b>         |

FUTURE STEM.—*dir* (§ 455).

|         |               |      |     |        |       |       |
|---------|---------------|------|-----|--------|-------|-------|
| FUTURE. | <i>dir-é</i>  | -ás  | -á  | -émos  | -éis  | -án.  |
| CONDIT. | <i>dir-la</i> | -ías | -ía | -íamos | -íais | -ían. |

*a.* The special form *dir*, *they say*, seems to be a contraction of the Latin *dicitur* (*dicit-ur*, *dist*, like *moz-o* from *must-us*). It is a quaint sort of a synonym for *se dice* or *dicen* :—

*dir* que ese labrador es rico, | *they say* that farmer is rich.

*b.* Like *decir*, are inflected all the compounds, such as *antedecir*, *contradecir*, *desdecir*, *entrededir*, *interdecir*, *prededir*, save only in the imperative second singular, which, in these, is generally *dice*, instead of *di*. In *bendecir* and *maldecir*, the variations are more numerous, as will appear by the inflection of the first. The latest edition of the Academy's grammar makes all compounds of *decir* follow the inflection of *bendecir* in the imperative and in the future stem; but this use is not constant either in literature or in conversation.

540. *Bendecir*, *bendiciendo*, *bendecido*, (*bendito*), *to bless*.

This verb and its contrary, *maldecir*, *to curse*, differ from the simple *decir*, in the past participle, the imperative second singular, and in the future stem only. Thus :—

|              | <i>ben-</i>     |                |             | <i>ben-</i>     |               |               |
|--------------|-----------------|----------------|-------------|-----------------|---------------|---------------|
| PRES. IND.   | <i>digo</i>     | <i>dices</i>   | <i>dice</i> | <i>decimos</i>  | <i>decís</i>  | <i>dicen.</i> |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | <i>diga</i>     | <i>digas</i>   | <i>diga</i> | <i>digamos</i>  | <i>digais</i> | <i>digan.</i> |
| IMPERAT.     | —               | <i>dice</i>    | <i>diga</i> | <i>digamos</i>  | <i>decid</i>  | <i>digan.</i> |
| IMPERF.      | <i>decía</i>    | -ías           | -ía         | -íamos          | -íais         | -ían.         |
| PAST DEF.    | <i>dije</i>     | <i>dijiste</i> | <i>dijo</i> | <i>dij-imos</i> | -ísteis       | -eron.        |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <i>dij-era</i>  | -eras          | -era        | -éramos         | -érais        | -eran.        |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <i>dij-ese</i>  | -eses          | -ese        | -ésemos         | -éseis        | -esen.        |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <i>dij-ere</i>  | -eres          | -ere        | -éremos         | -éreis        | -eren.        |
| FUTURE.      | <i>decir-é</i>  | -ás            | -á          | -émos           | -éis          | -án.          |
| CONDIT.      | <i>decir-la</i> | -ías           | -ía         | -íamos          | -íais         | -ían.         |

*a.* The irregular past participles *bendito* and *maldito* are used little as such, save in a few expressions, as : *bendito* seas, *blessings on thee*; *maldito* sea, *confound him*—literally, *mayest thou be blessed, may he be accursed*.

541. **Venir**, (viniendo), venido, *to come*.PRESENT STEMS. — **veng** (strong), **vien** (tonic weak), *ven* (atonic weak).

|             |               |                    |              |                 |                |                |
|-------------|---------------|--------------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>vengo</b>  | <b>vienes</b>      | <b>viene</b> | <b>venimos</b>  | <b>venís</b>   | <b>vienen.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>venga</b>  | <b>vengas</b>      | <b>venga</b> | <b>vengamos</b> | <b>vengáis</b> | <b>vengan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —             | <b>ven</b> (§ 450) | <b>venga</b> | <b>vengamos</b> | <b>venid</b>   | <b>vengan.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | <b>ven-ía</b> | <b>-ías</b>        | <b>-ía</b>   | <b>-íamos</b>   | <b>-íais</b>   | <b>-ían.</b>   |

PRETERIT STEM. — **vin** (§ 453).

|              |                  |                |              |                 |                |                |
|--------------|------------------|----------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| GERUND.      | <b>viniendo.</b> |                |              |                 |                |                |
| PAST DEF.    | <b>vine</b>      | <b>viniste</b> | <b>vino</b>  | <b>vin-imos</b> | <b>-ísteis</b> | <b>-ieron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>vin-iéra</b>  | <b>-iéras</b>  | <b>-iéra</b> | <b>-iéramos</b> | <b>-iérais</b> | <b>-ieran.</b> |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>vin-iése</b>  | <b>-iéses</b>  | <b>-iése</b> | <b>-iésemos</b> | <b>-iéseis</b> | <b>-iesen.</b> |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>vin-iere</b>  | <b>-ieres</b>  | <b>-iere</b> | <b>-iéremos</b> | <b>-iéreis</b> | <b>-ieren.</b> |

FUTURE STEM. — **vendr** (§ 454).

|         |                 |             |            |               |              |              |
|---------|-----------------|-------------|------------|---------------|--------------|--------------|
| FUTURE. | <b>vendr-é</b>  | <b>-ás</b>  | <b>-á</b>  | <b>-émos</b>  | <b>-éis</b>  | <b>-án.</b>  |
| CONDIT. | <b>vendr-ía</b> | <b>-ías</b> | <b>-ía</b> | <b>-íamos</b> | <b>-íais</b> | <b>-ían.</b> |

## Sixth Class.

542. This class embraces a few verbs not easily reducible to any of the foregoing.

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

543. **Dar**, dando, dado, *to give*.PRESENT STEM. — **d** REGULAR.

|             |                    |              |             |                |               |               |
|-------------|--------------------|--------------|-------------|----------------|---------------|---------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>doy</b> (§ 449) | <b>das</b>   | <b>da</b>   | <b>damos</b>   | <b>dais</b>   | <b>dan.</b>   |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>dé</b>          | <b>des</b>   | <b>dé</b>   | <b>demos</b>   | <b>deis</b>   | <b>den.</b>   |
| IMPERAT.    | —                  | <b>da</b>    | <b>dé</b>   | <b>demos</b>   | <b>dad</b>    | <b>den.</b>   |
| IMPERF.     | <b>daba</b>        | <b>dabas</b> | <b>daba</b> | <b>dábamos</b> | <b>dábais</b> | <b>daban.</b> |

PRETERIT STEM. — **d** (second conjugation).

|              |              |               |              |                 |                |                |
|--------------|--------------|---------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PAST DEF.    | <b>dí</b>    | <b>diste</b>  | <b>dió</b>   | <b>dimos</b>    | <b>disteis</b> | <b>dieron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>diera</b> | <b>dieras</b> | <b>diera</b> | <b>diéramos</b> | <b>diérais</b> | <b>dieran.</b> |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>diése</b> | <b>dieses</b> | <b>diése</b> | <b>diésemos</b> | <b>diéseis</b> | <b>diesen.</b> |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>diere</b> | <b>dieres</b> | <b>diere</b> | <b>diéremos</b> | <b>diéreis</b> | <b>dieren.</b> |

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

|         |               |             |            |               |              |              |
|---------|---------------|-------------|------------|---------------|--------------|--------------|
| FUTURE. | <b>dar-é</b>  | <b>-ás</b>  | <b>-á</b>  | <b>-émos</b>  | <b>-éis</b>  | <b>-án.</b>  |
| CONDIT. | <b>dar-ía</b> | <b>-ías</b> | <b>-ía</b> | <b>-íamos</b> | <b>-íais</b> | <b>-ían.</b> |



## SECOND CONJUGATION.

544. **Caer**, cayendo (§ 442, *b*), caído, *to fall*.PRESENT STEMS. — **caig** (strong, § 446, *c*), **ca** (weak).

|             |              |               |              |                 |                |                |
|-------------|--------------|---------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>cāigo</b> | cāes          | cāe          | caēmos          | caēis          | caen.          |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>cāiga</b> | <b>cāigas</b> | <b>cāiga</b> | <b>caigāmos</b> | <b>caigāis</b> | <b>caigan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —            | cāe           | <b>cāiga</b> | <b>caigāmos</b> | caēd           | <b>caigan.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | ca-ía        | -ías          | -ía          | -íamos          | -íais          | -ían.          |

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR (but see § 442, *b*).

|              |         |        |              |                 |                |                |
|--------------|---------|--------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PAST DEF.    | caí     | caíste | <b>cayó</b>  | ca-ímos         | -ísteis        | <b>-yēron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | ca-yēra | -yēras | <b>-yēra</b> | <b>-yéramos</b> | <b>-yérais</b> | <b>-yēran.</b> |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | ca-yēse | -yēses | <b>-yēse</b> | <b>-yésemos</b> | <b>-yéseis</b> | <b>-yēsen.</b> |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | ca-yēre | -yēres | <b>-yēre</b> | <b>-yéremos</b> | <b>-yéreis</b> | <b>-yēren.</b> |

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

|         |         |      |     |        |       |       |
|---------|---------|------|-----|--------|-------|-------|
| FUTURE. | caer-é  | -ás  | -á  | -émos  | -éis  | -án.  |
| CONDIT. | caer-ía | -ías | -ía | -íamos | -íais | -ían. |

545. **Placer**, placiendo, placido, *to please*.

|             |                         |              |                               |
|-------------|-------------------------|--------------|-------------------------------|
| PRES. IND.  | place.                  | 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>pluguiera</b> (placiera).  |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>plazca</b> (plegue). | 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>pluguliese</b> (placiese). |
| IMPERAT.    | <b>plegue</b> (plega).  | FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>plugulere</b> (placiere).  |
| IMPERF.     | placía.                 | FUTURE.      | placerá.                      |
| PAST DEF.   | <b>plugo</b> (plació).  | CONDIT.      | placería.                     |

*a.* The impersonal verb *placer* is now mostly archaic, except in ejaculations. Otherwise, it is replaced by *querer*, *to wish*, *to please*; *gustarle á uno*, and *parecerle á uno*, *to please*, *to suit*, *any one* : —

¡plegue á Dios que se salve !  
 ¡pluguiera á Dios que jamás le  
   hubieses visto !  
 vendrás cuando te pluguliere,  
 si á V. le place,  
 si le gusta á V.,  
 si á V. le parece,  
 si V. quiere,

God grant he may be saved !  
 would God you had never seen  
   him !  
 you will come when you please.

if you please, *or* if you like.

**546.** The compounds of *placer* are conjugated like *nacer* (§ 374, *b*) ; that is, they are regular throughout, except in the present stem, when they are euphonized by the intercalation of a *z* with strong vowel-endings : —

**Complacer**, *complaciendo*, *complacido*, *to oblige*.

|              | <i>com-</i>   |                | <i>com-</i>   |                  |                          |
|--------------|---------------|----------------|---------------|------------------|--------------------------|
| PRES. IND.   | <b>plazco</b> | places         | place         | placemos         | placeis placen.          |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | <b>plazca</b> | <b>plazcas</b> | <b>plazca</b> | <b>plazcamos</b> | <b>plazcais plazcan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.     | —             | place          | <b>plazca</b> | <b>plazcamos</b> | placed <b>plazcan.</b>   |
| IMPERF.      | placía        | -ías           | -ía           | -íamos           | -íais -ían.              |
| PAST DEF.    | plací         | -iste          | -ió           | -imos            | -ísteis -ieron.          |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | placiera      | -ieras         | -iera         | -iéramos         | -iérais -ieran.          |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | placiесе      | -ieses         | -iese         | -iésemos         | -iéseis -iesen.          |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | placiere      | -ieres         | -iere         | -iéremos         | -iéreis -ieren.          |
| FUTURE.      | placer-é      | -ás            | -á            | -émos            | -éis -án.                |
| CONDIT.      | placer-ía     | -ías           | -ía           | -íamos           | -íais -ían.              |

**547. Valer**, *valiendo*, *valido*, *to be worth*.

PRESENT STEMS. — **valg** (strong, § 446, *b*), *val* (weak).

|             |              |                            |              |                 |                |                |
|-------------|--------------|----------------------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>valgo</b> | vales                      | vale         | valēmos         | valēis         | vālen.         |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>valga</b> | <b>valgas</b>              | <b>valga</b> | <b>valgāmos</b> | <b>valgāis</b> | <b>valgan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —            | <b>val</b> and <b>vale</b> | <b>valga</b> | <b>valgāmos</b> | valēd          | <b>valgan.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | val-ía       | -ías                       | -ía          | -íamos          | -íais          | -ían.          |

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

|              |          |        |       |          |         |         |
|--------------|----------|--------|-------|----------|---------|---------|
| PAST DEF.    | val-í    | -iste  | -ió   | -imos    | -ísteis | -iēron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | val-iēra | -iēras | -iēra | -iēramos | -iērais | -iēran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | val-iēse | -iēses | -iēse | -iēsemos | -iēseis | -iēsen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | val-iēre | -iēres | -iēre | -iēremos | -iēreis | -iēren. |

FUTURE STEM. — **valdr** (§ 454).

|         |                 |      |     |        |       |       |
|---------|-----------------|------|-----|--------|-------|-------|
| FUTURE. | <b>valdr-é</b>  | -ás  | -á  | -émos  | -éis  | -án.  |
| CONDIT. | <b>valdr-ía</b> | -ías | -ía | -íamos | -íais | -ían. |

*a.* So also the reflexive verb **valerse**, *to avail one's self of (de)*, *to take advantage* : —

me **valgo**, te vales, se vale, nos valemos, os valeis, etc.

**se vale** de este recurso para  
engañar y estafar á la gente  
sencilla,

he takes advantage of this expedient  
to deceive and defraud  
simple people.

548. **Ver**, *viendo, visto, to see.*

| PRESENT STEMS. — <i>ve</i> (strong), <i>v</i> (weak). |                    |               |                             |                 |                |                |
|---|--------------------|---------------|-----------------------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>veo</b>         | <b>ves</b>    | <b>ve</b>                   | <b>vemos</b>    | <b>véis</b>    | <b>ven.</b>    |
| PRES. SUBJ.   | <b>vea</b>         | <b>veas</b>   | <b>vea</b>                  | <b>veāmos</b>   | <b>veáis</b>   | <b>vean.</b>   |
| IMPERAT.  | —                  | <b>ve</b>     | <b>vea</b>                  | <b>veāmos</b>   | <b>ved</b>     | <b>vean.</b>   |
| IMPERF. (§ 451)                                       | <b>ve-ía</b>       | <b>-ías</b>   | <b>-ía</b>                  | <b>-íamos</b>   | <b>-íais</b>   | <b>-ían.</b>   |
| PRÆTERIT STEM. — <i>v</i> REGULAR.                    |                    |               |                             |                 |                |                |
| PAST DEF.   | <b>ví</b>          | <b>viste</b>  | <b>vió</b>                  | <b>vimos</b>    | <b>vísteis</b> | <b>vieron.</b> |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ.  | <b>viera</b>       | <b>vieras</b> | <b>viera</b>                | <b>viéramos</b> | <b>viérais</b> | <b>vieran.</b> |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ.  | <b>viese</b>       | <b>vieses</b> | <b>viese</b>                | <b>viésemos</b> | <b>viéseis</b> | <b>viesen.</b> |
| FUT. SUBJ.  | <b>viere</b>       | <b>vieres</b> | <b>viere</b>                | <b>viéremos</b> | <b>viéreis</b> | <b>vieren.</b> |
| FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.                               |                    |               |                             |                 |                |                |
| FUTURE.   | <b>ver-é, etc.</b> |               | CONDIT. <b>ver-ía, etc.</b> |                 |                |                |

*a.* **Ver** was formerly written and pronounced *veer* (from the Latin *videre*), and was regular in the present indicative and subjunctive, but still irregular in the imperfect. Thus:—

|            |             |            |                 |                |              |
|------------|-------------|------------|-----------------|----------------|--------------|
| <b>veo</b> | <b>vees</b> | <b>vee</b> | <b>(veēmos)</b> | <b>(veēis)</b> | <b>veen.</b> |
| <b>vea</b> | <b>veas</b> | <b>vea</b> | <b>veamos</b>   | <b>veais</b>   | <b>vean.</b> |
| —          | <b>vee</b>  | —          | —               | <b>veed.</b>   |              |
| <b>vía</b> | <b>vías</b> | <b>vía</b> | <b>víamos</b>   | <b>víais</b>   | <b>vían.</b> |

In the past definite first and third persons singular, the forms *vide*, *vido*, from the Latin *vidi*, *vidit*, were used.

549. Like **ver** are inflected all its own compounds; those in **veer**, as well as all simple verbs in *-eer*, like **creer**, **leer**, **poseer**, etc., are regular throughout, save that the diphthongs *ie* and *io* must always be *consonantized*, according to § 442, *b*:—

*a.* **Proveer**, *proveyendo, proveído, or provisto, to provide.*

|              |                   |                |               |                  |                 |                 |
|--------------|-------------------|----------------|---------------|------------------|-----------------|-----------------|
| PRES. IND.   | <b>provēo</b>     | <b>provēes</b> | <b>provēe</b> | <b>proveēmos</b> | <b>proveéis</b> | <b>provēen.</b> |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | <b>provēa</b>     | <b>provēas</b> | <b>provēa</b> | <b>proveāmos</b> | <b>proveáis</b> | <b>provēan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.     | —                 | <b>provēe</b>  | <b>provēa</b> | <b>proveāmos</b> | <b>proveēd</b>  | <b>provēan.</b> |
| IMPERF.      | <b>prove-ía</b>   | <b>-ías</b>    | <b>-ía</b>    | <b>-íamos</b>    | <b>-íais</b>    | <b>-ían.</b>    |
| PAST DEF.    | <b>prove-í</b>    | <b>-iste</b>   | <b>-yó</b>    | <b>-imos</b>     | <b>-ísteis</b>  | <b>-yēron.</b>  |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>prove-yēra</b> | <b>-yēras</b>  | <b>-yēra</b>  | <b>-yéramos</b>  | <b>-yérais</b>  | <b>-yēran.</b>  |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | <b>prove-yēse</b> | <b>-yēses</b>  | <b>-yēse</b>  | <b>-yésemos</b>  | <b>-yéseis</b>  | <b>-yēsen.</b>  |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | <b>prove-yēre</b> | <b>-yēres</b>  | <b>-yēre</b>  | <b>-yéremos</b>  | <b>-yéreis</b>  | <b>-yēren.</b>  |
| FUTURE.      | <b>proveer-é</b>  | <b>-ás</b>     | <b>-á</b>     | <b>-émos</b>     | <b>-éis</b>     | <b>-án.</b>     |
| CONDIT.      | <b>proveer-ía</b> | <b>-ías</b>    | <b>-ía</b>    | <b>-íamos</b>    | <b>-íais</b>    | <b>-ían.</b>    |

**b. Creer, creyendo (§ 442, b), creído, to believe.**

|              |               |                        |       |          |         |         |
|--------------|---------------|------------------------|-------|----------|---------|---------|
| PRES. IND.   | creo          | crees                  | cree  | creemos  | creéis  | creen.  |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | crea          | creas                  | crea  | creamos  | creáis  | crean.  |
| IMPERAT.     | —             | crée                   | crea  | creamos  | creed   | crean.  |
| IMPERF.      | cre-ía        | -ías                   | -ía   | -íamos   | -íais   | -ían.   |
| PAST DEF.    | cre-í         | -iste                  | -yó   | -imos    | -isteis | -yeron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | cre-yera      | -yeras                 | -yera | -yéramos | -yérais | -yeran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | cre-yese      | -yeses                 | -yese | -yésemos | -yéseis | -yesen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | cre-yere      | -yeres                 | -yere | -yéremos | -yéreis | -yeren. |
| FUTURE.      | creer-é, etc. | CONDIT. creer-ía, etc. |       |          |         |         |

**c. Poseer, poseyendo, poseído, to possess.**

|              |                |                         |       |          |         |         |
|--------------|----------------|-------------------------|-------|----------|---------|---------|
| PRES. IND.   | poseo          | posees                  | posee | poseemos | poseéis | poseen. |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | posea          | poseas                  | posea | poseamos | poseáis | posean. |
| IMPERAT.     | —              | posee                   | posea | poseamos | poseed  | posean. |
| IMPERF.      | pose-ía        | -ías                    | -ía   | -íamos   | -íais   | -ían.   |
| PAST DEF.    | pose-í         | -iste                   | -yó   | -imos    | -isteis | -yeron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | pose-yera      | -yeras                  | -yera | -yéramos | -yérais | -yeran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | pose-yese      | -yeses                  | -yese | -yésemos | -yéseis | -yesen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | pose-yere      | -yeres                  | -yere | -yéremos | -yéreis | -yeren. |
| FUTURE.      | poseer-é, etc. | CONDIT. poseer-ía, etc. |       |          |         |         |

**550. Yacer, yaciendo, yacido, to lie (Lat. jacere).**

|             |   |  |       |          |         |         |
|-------------|---|--|-------|----------|---------|---------|
| PRES. IND.  | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{yazco} \\ \text{yazgo} \\ \text{yago} \end{array} \right\}$ | yaces  | yace  | yacemos  | yaceis  | yacen.  |
| PRES. SUBJ. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{yazca} \\ \text{yazga} \\ \text{yaga} \end{array} \right\}$ | yazcas   | yazca | yazcamos | yazcáis | yazcan. |
|             |   | yazgas   | yazga | yazgamos | yazgáis | yazgan. |
|             |   | yagas  | yaga  | yagamos  | yagáis  | yagan.  |
| IMPERAT.    | —   | yace, or yaz   |       | yaced    |         |         |
|             |   | yací; yací, yaciera, yaciese, yaciere; yacer-é, -ía. |       |          |         |         |

## THIRD CONJUGATION.

**551. Asir, asiendo, asido, to lay hold of.**PRESENT STEMS. — **asg** (strong), **as** (weak).

|             |             |   |             |                |               |               |
|-------------|-------------|---|-------------|----------------|---------------|---------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>asgo</b> | ases  | ase         | asimos         | asís          | āsen.         |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>asga</b> | <b>asgas</b>                                      | <b>asga</b> | <b>asgāmos</b> | <b>asgāis</b> | <b>asgan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —           | ase   | <b>asga</b> | <b>asgāmos</b> | asíd          | <b>asgan.</b> |
|             |             | asía; así, asiera, asiese, asiere; asiré, asiría. |             |                |               |               |

**552. Ir, yendo (§ 442, a), ido, to go (definitely).**

|              |             |            |       |          |          |         |
|--------------|-------------|------------|-------|----------|----------|---------|
| PRES. IND.   | voy (§ 449) | vas        | va    | vamos    | vais     | van.    |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | vaya        | vayas      | vaya  | vayāmos  | vayáis   | vayan.  |
| IMPERAT.     | —           | ve (§ 450) | vaya  | vamos    | id       | vayan.  |
| IMPERF.      | iba (§ 451) | ibas       | iba   | íbamos   | íbais    | iban.   |
| PAST DEF.    | fui         | fuiste     | fué   | fuimos   | fuísteis | fueron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | fuera       | fueras     | fuera | fuéramos | fuérais  | fueran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | fuese       | fueses     | fuese | fuésemos | fuéseis  | fuesen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | fuere       | fueres     | fuere | fuéremos | fuéreis  | fueren. |
| FUTURE.      | ir-é        | -ás        | -á    | -émos    | -éis     | -án.    |
| CONDIT.      | ir-ía       | -ías       | -ía   | -íamos   | -íais    | -ían.   |

**a.irse, yéndose, ídose, to go away, to go.**

|              |          |           |          |              |              |            |
|--------------|----------|-----------|----------|--------------|--------------|------------|
| PRES. IND.   | me voy   | te vas    | se va    | nos vamos    | os vais      | se van.    |
| PRES. SUBJ.  | me vaya  | te vayas  | se vaya  | nos vayāmos  | os vayáis    | se vayan.  |
| IMPERAT.     | —        | véte      | váyase   | vámonos      | ídos (§ 404) | váyanse.   |
| IMPERF.      | me iba   | te ibas   | se iba   | nos íbamos   | os íbais     | se iban.   |
| PAST DEF.    | me fui   | te fuiste | se fué   | nos fuimos   | os fuísteis  | se fueron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | me fuera | te fueras | se fuera | nos fuéramos | os fuérais   | se fueran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | me fuese | te fueses | se fuese | nos fuésemos | os fuéseis   | se fuesen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | me fuere | te fueres | se fuere | nos fuéremos | os fuéreis   | se fueren. |
| FUTURE.      | me iré   | te irás   | se irá   | nos irémos   | os iréis     | se irán.   |
| CONDIT.      | me iría  | te irías  | se iría  | nos iríamos  | os iríais    | se irían.  |

**553. Oír, oyendo (§ 442, b), oído, to hear.**PRESENT STEMS. — *oír* (strong), *oy* (tonic weak), *o* (atonic weak).

|             |       |        |       |         |        |         |
|-------------|-------|--------|-------|---------|--------|---------|
| PRES. IND.  | oírgo | ōyes   | ōye   | oímos   | oís    | ōyen.   |
| PRES. SUBJ. | oírga | oírgas | oírga | oigāmos | oigáis | oírgan. |
| IMPERAT.    | —     | ōye    | oírga | oigāmos | oid    | oírgan. |
| IMPERF.     | o-ía  | -ías   | -ía   | -íamos  | -íamos | -ían.   |

PRETERIT STEM. — *o* (diphthongs *ie, id*, consonantized).

|              |       |        |       |          |         |         |
|--------------|-------|--------|-------|----------|---------|---------|
| PAST DEF.    | oí    | oíste  | oyó   | oímos    | oísteis | oyeron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | oyēra | oyēras | oyēra | oyéramos | oyérais | oyēran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | oyēse | oyēses | oyēse | oyésemos | oyéseis | oyēsen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | oyēre | oyēres | oyēre | oyéremos | oyéreis | oyēren. |

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

|         |        |      |     |        |       |       |
|---------|--------|------|-----|--------|-------|-------|
| FUTURE. | oir-é  | -ás  | -á  | -émos  | -éis  | -án.  |
| CONDIT. | oir-ía | -ías | -ía | -íamos | -íais | -ían. |

554. **Salir**, saliendo, salido, *to go out*.PRESENT STEMS. — **salg** (strong), *sal* (weak).

|             |              |               |              |                 |                |                |
|-------------|--------------|---------------|--------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| PRES. IND.  | <b>salgo</b> | sales         | sale         | salimos         | salís          | salen.         |
| PRES. SUBJ. | <b>salga</b> | <b>salgas</b> | <b>salga</b> | <b>salgamos</b> | <b>salgais</b> | <b>salgan.</b> |
| IMPERAT.    | —            | sal           | <b>salga</b> | <b>salgamos</b> | salid          | <b>salgan.</b> |
| IMPERF.     | sal-ía       | -ías          | -ía          | -íamos          | -íais          | -ían.          |

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

|              |          |        |       |          |         |         |
|--------------|----------|--------|-------|----------|---------|---------|
| PAST DEF.    | sal-í    | -iste  | -ió   | -imos    | -ísteis | -ieron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | sal-iera | -ieras | -iera | -iéramos | -iérais | -ieran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | sal-iese | -ieses | -iese | -iésemos | -iéseis | -iesen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | sal-iere | -ieres | -iere | -iéremos | -iéreis | -ieren. |

FUTURE STEM. — **saldr** (§ 454).

|         |                 |      |     |        |       |       |
|---------|-----------------|------|-----|--------|-------|-------|
| FUTURE. | <b>saldr-é</b>  | -ás  | -á  | -émos  | -éis  | -án.  |
| CONDIT. | <b>saldr-ía</b> | -ías | -ía | -íamos | -íais | -ían. |

## DEFECTIVE VERBS.

555. The following verbs are used only in those forms of which the personal ending begins with an *i*, including, however, the future : —

|              |                    |             |                     |
|--------------|--------------------|-------------|---------------------|
| abolir,      | <i>regular.</i>    | despavorir, | <i>regular.</i>     |
| aguerir,     | <i>like herir.</i> | embair,     | <i>regular.</i>     |
| arrecirse,   | <i>like herir.</i> | empedernir, | <i>like servir.</i> |
| aterirse,    | <i>like herir.</i> | garantir,   | <i>regular.</i>     |
| desmarrirse, | <i>regular.</i>    | manir,      | <i>regular.</i>     |

## Examples.

a. **Abolir**, aboliendo, abolido, *to abolish*.

|              |           |        |       |           |         |         |
|--------------|-----------|--------|-------|-----------|---------|---------|
| PRES. IND.   | —         | —      | —     | abol-imos | -ís     | —       |
| IMPERAT.     | —         | —      | —     | —         | abol-id | —       |
| IMPERF.      | abol-ía   | -ías   | -ía   | -íamos    | -íais   | -ían.   |
| PAST DEF.    | abol-í    | -iste  | -ió   | -imos     | -ísteis | -ieron. |
| 1 IMP. SUBJ. | abol-iera | -ieras | -iera | -iéramos  | -iérais | -ieran. |
| 2 IMP. SUBJ. | abol-iese | -ieses | -iese | -iésemos  | -iéseis | -iesen. |
| FUT. SUBJ.   | abol-iere | -ieres | -iere | -iéremos  | -iéreis | -ieren. |
| FUTURE.      | abolir-é  | -ás    | -á    | -émos     | -éis    | -án.    |
| CONDIT.      | abolir-ía | -ías   | -ía   | -íamos    | -íais   | -ían.   |

b. **Aguerrir, aguirriendo, aguerrido, to exercise in war.**

|          |                    |        |                 |             |           |                     |
|----------|--------------------|--------|-----------------|-------------|-----------|---------------------|
| PR. IN.  | —                  | —      | —               | aguerr-imos | -ís       | —                   |
| IMPER.   | —                  | —      | —               | —           | aguerr-id | —                   |
| IMPF.    | aguerr-la          | -ías   | -la             | -íamos      | -lais     | -ían.               |
| PA. D.   | aguerr-í           | -iste  | <b>aguirrió</b> | aguerr-imos | -ísteis   | <b>aguirrieron.</b> |
| 1 I. SJ. | <b>aguirr-iera</b> | -ieras | -iera           | -iéramos    | -iérais   | -ieran.             |
| 2 I. SJ. | <b>aguirr-iese</b> | -ieses | -iese           | -iésemos    | -iéseis   | -iesen.             |
| FU. SJ.  | <b>aguirr-iere</b> | -ieres | -iere           | -iéremos    | -iéreis   | -ieren.             |
| FUT.     | aguerrir-é         | -ás    | -á              | -émos       | -éis      | -án.                |
| COND.    | aguerrir-la        | -ías   | -la             | -íamos      | -lais     | -ían.               |

**556.** The verb **raer**, *to erase*, is now replaced by **rayar**, which is regular. The original form is, however, met with occasionally, conjugated like **caer**. Thus :—

**raigo and rayo, raes, rae, raemos, raéis, raen.**

**raiga and raya, etc.**

ra-la; raí, raiste, **rayó, etc.**; **rayera, rayese, rayere, etc.**

**557. Roer, to gnaw, has the following forms :—**

**róo, roigo, and royo; roes, roe, etc.**

**roa, roiga, and roya; roas, roigas, and royas; etc.**

a. **Corroer, to corrode**, makes *corroe* — *corroen* in the indicative present, and *corroa* — *corroan* in the subjunctive.

**558.** Many verbs are used only in the third persons singular and plural of certain tenses (see also § 422) :—

a. **Aplacer, to please (obsolete) :—**

aplace — aplacen.

aplacía — aplacían.

b. **Atañer, to appertain :—**

atañe — atañen.

atañía — atañían.

|                                  |  |                             |
|----------------------------------|--|-----------------------------|
| aquien lo de yuso en esta nra    |  | to whom appertaineth or may |
| carta contenido <b>atañe</b> / o |  | appertain what followeth in |
| <b>atañer</b> puede,             |  | this our letter.            |

— *Law for the expulsion of the Jews from Spain, A.D. 1492.*

c. **Concernir**, *concerniendo*, *concernido*, *to concern*.

**conclerme** — **conclernen**.  
**conclerna** — **conclernan**.  
 concernía — concernían.  
 concernió — concernieron.

concerniera — concernieran.  
 concerniese — concerniesen.  
 concerniere — concernieren.  
 concernirá, *etc.*; all little used.

**559.** The verb **soler**, *to be accustomed to* (past participle **solido**) has in common use only the following forms:—

|         |              |               |              |                |               |                 |
|---------|--------------|---------------|--------------|----------------|---------------|-----------------|
| PRES.   | <b>suelo</b> | <b>sueles</b> | <b>suele</b> | <b>solemos</b> | <b>soleis</b> | <b>suelen</b> . |
| IMPERF. | solía        | solías        | solía        | solíamos       | solíais       | solían.         |

#### IRREGULAR PAST PARTICIPLES.

**560.** Past participles are said to be irregular when they do not end in *-ado* or *-ido*, like the primitive models *habl-ado*, *com-ido*, *viv-ido*. The irregularity proceeds from the original Latin form, more or less contracted and modified (classic and post-classic), and is found even with verbs that are otherwise regular in Spanish.

**561.** Regular verbs in Spanish that have an irregular past participle are the following, together with their compounds:—

**abrir**, *to open*;  
 entreabrir, *to half-open*;  
**cubrir**, *to cover*;  
 descubrir, *to discover*;  
 encubrir, *to conceal*;  
**escribir**, *to write*;  
 circunscribir, *to circumscribe*;  
 inscribir, *to register*;  
 prescribir, *to prescribe*;  
 proscribir, *to proscribe*;  
**imprimir**, *to print*;

**abierto** (L. *apertus*), *opened*.  
 entreabierto, *half-opened*.  
**cubierto** (L. *co-opertus*), *covered*.  
 descubierta, *discovered*.  
 encubierto, *concealed*.  
**escrito** (L. *scriptus*), *written*.  
 circunscrito, *circumscribed*.  
 inscrito, *registered*.  
 prescrito, *prescribed*.  
 proscrito, *proscribed*.  
**impreso** (L. *impressus*), *printed*.



**562.** Irregular verbs in Spanish that have an irregular past participle are the following, together with their compounds :—

**decir, to say, to tell;**

|              |              |
|--------------|--------------|
| contradecir, | to gainsay;  |
| desdecir,    | to unsay;    |
| interdecir,  | to prohibit; |
| predecir,    | to foretell; |

**hacer (obs. facer), to make, to do;**

|              |             |
|--------------|-------------|
| contrahacer, | to falsify; |
| deshacer,    | to undo;    |
| rehacer,     | to do over; |
| satisfacer,  | to satisfy; |

**morir, to die;**

**poner, to put, to place;**

|           |               |
|-----------|---------------|
| componer, | to mend;      |
| deponer,  | to lay down;  |
| disponer, | to dispose;   |
| exponer,  | to set forth; |
| imponer,  | to deposit;   |
| oponer,   | to oppose;    |
| proponer, | to propose;   |
| suponer,  | to suppose;   |

**resolver (obs.), to solve;**

|           |              |
|-----------|--------------|
| absolver, | to absolve;  |
| disolver, | to dissolve; |
| resolver, | to resolve;  |

**ver, to see;**

|           |                  |
|-----------|------------------|
| entrever, | to get a glimpse |
| prever,   | to foresee; [of: |
| rever,    | to review;       |

**volver, to turn to return;**

|           |               |
|-----------|---------------|
| devolver, | to give back; |
| envolver, | to wrap up;   |
| revolver, | to turn over; |

**dicho (L. dictus), said, told.**

|              |             |
|--------------|-------------|
| contradicho, | gainsaid.   |
| desdicho,    | unsaid.     |
| interdicho,  | prohibited. |
| predicho,    | foretold.   |

**hecho (L. factus), made, done.**

|              |            |
|--------------|------------|
| contrahecho, | falsified. |
| deshecho,    | undone.    |
| rehecho,     | done over. |
| satisfecho,  | satisfied. |

**muerto (L. mort[u]us), died.**

**puesto (L. pos[it]us), put.**

|            |            |
|------------|------------|
| compuesto, | mended.    |
| depuesto,  | laid down. |
| dispuesto, | disposed.  |
| expuesto,  | set forth. |
| impuesto,  | deposited. |
| opuesto,   | opposed.   |
| propuesto, | proposed.  |
| supuesto,  | supposed.  |

**suelto (L. sol[ut]us), solved.**

|           |            |
|-----------|------------|
| absuelto, | absolved.  |
| disuelto, | dissolved. |
| resuelto, | resolved.  |

**visto (L. vistus for visus), seen.**

|             |                |
|-------------|----------------|
| entrevisto, | got a glimpse  |
| previsto,   | foreseen. [of: |
| revisto,    | reviewed.      |

**vuelto (L. vol[ut]us), returned.**

|           |              |
|-----------|--------------|
| devuelto, | given back.  |
| envuelto, | wrapped up.  |
| revuelto, | turned over. |

**563.** The verbs **bendecir, to bless**, and **maldecir, to curse**, have the regular past participles **bendecido, maldecido**, although compounds of *decir*. The ancient past participles **bendito, maldito**, are now used as

adjectives, save only when a wish or desire in the form of an exclamation is to be expressed : —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Dios le ha <b>bendecido</b> á él y á<br>toda su casa,<br>nadie diga que es <b>maldecido</b><br>de Dios, [jeres!<br>; <b>bendita</b> seas tú entre las mu-<br>; sean <b>malditos</b> todos ellos!<br>agua <b>bendita</b> ; una <b>bendita</b> li-<br>mosna, | God hath blessed him and all<br>his house.<br>let no one say he is accursed of<br>God.<br>blessed be thou among women!<br>may they all be accursed !<br>holy water; a blessed alms. |
|--|---|

*a.* “Blessed,” throughout the Scriptures, is rendered by **bienaventurado** when it represents the Hebrew *āshārīm*, and the Greek *μακάριος* : —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| ; <b>bienaventurado</b> el varon que<br>no anda en consejo de malos ! | blessed is the man that walketh<br>not in the counsel of the un-<br>godly ! |
|---|---|

**564. Bienquerer, to esteem, and malquerer, to abhor,** have the regular past participles **bienquerido, malquerido**, but are more commonly employed with *ser* in the ancient forms **bienquisto, malquisto** : —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| es <b>bienquisto</b> de sus vecinos,<br>no es <b>malquisto</b> de ellos, | he is much esteemed by his<br>neighbors.<br>he is not hated by them. |
|--|--|

*a.* These two verbs are oftener used as separable, and thus we say: les **queremos bien**, *we are very fond of them*; no la **quiso mal**, *he did not hate her*.

**565. Freir, to fry, and its compounds,** have two past participles, **freído** and **frito**, either of which may be used with *haber*; but with *ser* and *estar* it is more common to employ the latter form : —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| { <b>freído</b><br><b>frito</b> } todavía los huevos?<br>los huevos ya están <b>fritos</b> , | have they not fried the eggs<br>yet?<br>the eggs are fried now. |
|--|---|

**566. Injerir**, *to graft*, has the regular past participle **injerido** with *haber* and *ser*, and the form **injerto** in other relations without an auxiliary:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| fueron quebradas (las ramas)                                 | (the branches) were broken off                                   |
| para que yo fuese <b>injerido</b> ,                          | that I might be grafted in.                                      |
| mi padre me decía que era Español transplantado en Italiano, | my father told me I was a Spaniard transplanted into an Italian, |
| y Gallego <b>enjerto</b> en Romano,                          | and a Gallician grafted on to a Roman.                           |
| — <i>Estébanillo</i> , 1646.                                 |  |

*a.* The orthography of *injerir*, instead of *ingerir*, is sustained both by the etymology of the word and the old form of writing it. **Enxerir** (pronounced *ensherir*) came from *inserère*, and not *ingerère*, the *s* medial regularly passing over into *sh*; old Spanish, *x*, and modern, *j*. The Academy, however, recognizes only *ingerir*, an untenable form.

**567. Matar**, in its proper sense of *to kill*, referring to persons, has the irregular past participle **muerto**, like *morir*; but, in the figurative senses, involving the idea of harassing, worrying, putting one out of patience, and, as a reflexive verb, as well as in its proper sense, referring to animals, it is regular — **matado**:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| álguien <b>ha muerto</b> ( <i>morir</i> ),    | some one has died (is dead).            |
| álguien <b>le ha muerto</b> ( <i>matar</i> ), | some one has killed him.                |
| me <b>ha matado</b> con sus chismes,          | he worried me to death with his gossip. |
| dice que yo <b>he matado</b> la vaca,         | he says that I killed the cow.          |
| él <b>se ha muerto</b> ( <i>morirse</i> ),    | he has died (he died).                  |
| él <b>se ha matado</b> ( <i>matarse</i> ),    | he has committed suicide.               |

**568. Oprimir**, *to oppress*, and **suprimir**, *to suppress*, have the regular past participles **oprimido**, **suprimido**, and occasionally the irregular forms **opreso** and **supreso**, although the latter do not often occur:—

se ha **suprimido** El Imparcial,

la obra fué **suprimida**,

"The Imparcial" has been suppressed.

the work was suppressed.

569. The verb **prender** in the sense of *to arrest* a person, has two participles, **prendido** and **preso** (Lat. *prensus*). With *haber*, either form may be used; but with *ser* and *estar*, it is customary to prefer **preso**:—

han **prendido** } al reo,  
han **preso** }

llegó el alguacil y dijo, sed **preso**  
en nombre del rey,

todos están **presos** ya,

they have arrested the culprit.

the constable came up and said,  
"You are my prisoner in the  
king's name."

all are now made prisoners.

a. In all other significations, *prender* is regular throughout:—  
el fuego había **prendido** en la casa, | the house had taken fire.

b. All compounds of *prender* have only the regular past participle. Such are: **aprender**, *to learn*; **comprender**, *to understand*; **emprender**, *to undertake*; etc.:—

ha **aprendido** algo nuevo hoy,

han **comprendido** la trama,  
el encargo no fué **emprendido**,

he has learned something new  
to-day.

they understood the plot.  
the charge was not undertaken.

570. **Proveer**, *to provide*, makes **proveído** and **provisto**, the latter usually with *estar*:—

el gobierno ha **proveído** lo necesario  
para la seguridad del país,

la plaza estaba **provista** de todo,

the government has provided  
what is necessary for the security  
of the country.

the fortress was provided with  
everything.

571. **Romper**, *to break*, makes **rompido** and **roto** in the past participle, but the latter form generally prevails in all positions, when the verb is used transitively:—

|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| han roto los cristales de la tienda, | they have broken the window-panes of the shop. |
| se ha roto el vaso,                  | the glass has been broken. [use.               |
| la fuente está rota; ya no sirve,    | the dish is broken; it is of no                |

*a.* As an intransitive verb, *romper* is regular in its past participle:—

|  |                                |
|--|--------------------------------|
| ha <b>rompido</b> con su amigo, <i>but</i> | he has broken with his friend. |
| ha roto todos los lazos,                   | he has severed every tie.      |

*b.* The compound forms of *romper* are regular. Thus: **corromper**, *to corrupt*; **interrumpir**, *to interrupt*; etc.:—

|                                    |                                |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| sin ser <b>corrompido</b> ,        | without being corrupted.       |
| le han <b>interrumpido</b> ,       | they interrupted him.          |
| después de haber <b>prorumpido</b> | after having burst into tears. |
| en lágrimas,                       |                                |

**572.** Past participles are variable in gender and number, like adjectives in *o*, when they are conjugated with any auxiliary whatever, except *haber*; likewise, when used as pure adjectives or participial adjectives without a verb:—

|                                      |                               |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| ella <b>tiene escrita</b> una carta, | she has written a letter.     |
| las cartas <b>están escritas</b> ,   | the letters are written.      |
| las condiciones del empréstito       | the terms of the (government) |
| <b>han sido publicadas</b> ,         | loan have been published.     |
| la cuestion <b>queda zanjada</b> ,   | the affair is adjusted.       |
| una leccion <b>aprendida</b> ,       | a lesson learned.             |
| los libros <b>impresos</b> ,         | printed books.                |
| una hoja <b>suelta</b> ,             | a printed sheet, a notice.    |
| las simpatías <b>granjeadas</b> ,    | sympathies acquired.          |
| ella <b>ha escrito</b> la carta,     | she has written the letter.   |
| <b>han emprendido</b> las obras,     | they have begun building.     |

**573.** Past participles, like common adjectives, are often converted into substantives:—

|                          |                               |
|--------------------------|-------------------------------|
| preso, <i>arrested</i> ; | un preso, <i>a prisoner</i> . |
|--------------------------|-------------------------------|

## § 574.

## GENERAL ALPHABETICAL INDEX

TO THE

INFLECTION OF ALL THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

| A.                         |                       |           |
|----------------------------|-----------------------|-----------|
| abastecer . . .            | like <i>carecer</i> , | § 374, a. |
| abnegar . . .              | " <i>negar</i> ,      | § 468.    |
| aborrecer . . .            | " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| absolver . . .             | " <i>volver</i> ,     | § 491.    |
| pp. <i>absuelto</i> .      |                       |           |
| absonar . . .              | " <i>sonar</i> ,      | § 472.    |
| abstenerse . . .           | " <i>tener</i> ,      | § 536.    |
| abstraer . . .             | " <i>traer</i> ,      | § 537.    |
| abufolar . . .             | " <i>volar</i> ,      | § 476.    |
| acaecer . . .              | §§ 374, a; 422.       |           |
| acertar . . .              |                       | § 458.    |
| aclocar . . .              | " <i>trocar</i> ,     | § 482.    |
| acollar . . .              | " <i>hollar</i> ,     | § 475.    |
| acontecer . . .            | §§ 374, a; 422.       |           |
| acordar <sup>1</sup> . . . |                       | § 474.    |
| acornar . . .              | " <i>acordar</i> ,    | § 474.    |
| acostar . . .              | " <i>costar</i> ,     | § 473.    |
| acrecentar . . .           | " <i>alentar</i> ,    | § 459.    |
| acrecer . . .              | " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| adecentar . . .            | " <i>alentar</i> ,    | § 459.    |
| adestrar . . .             | " <i>atestar</i> ,    | § 462.    |
| adherir . . .              | " <i>herir</i> ,      | § 500.    |
| adolescer . . .            | " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| adormecer . . .            | " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| adormir . . .              | " <i>dormir</i> ,     | § 508.    |
| adquirir . . .             |                       | § 507.    |
| aducir . . .               | " <i>conducir</i> ,   | § 538.    |
| advertir . . .             |                       | § 502.    |
| afollar . . .              | " <i>hollar</i> ,     | § 475.    |
| aforar <sup>2</sup> . . .  | " <i>sonar</i> ,      | § 472.    |
| agorar . . .               |                       | § 488.    |
| agradecer . . .            | like <i>carecer</i> , | § 374, a. |
| aguerrir . . .             |                       | § 555, b. |
| alebrarse . . .            | " <i>sembrar</i> ,    | § 463.    |
| alentar . . .              |                       | § 459.    |
| aliquebrar . . .           | " <i>sembrar</i> ,    | § 463.    |
| almorzar . . .             | " <i>fornar</i> ,     | § 486.    |
| alongar . . .              | " <i>rogar</i> ,      | § 483.    |
| amanecer . . .             | " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| amoblar . . .              | " <i>acordar</i> ,    | § 474.    |
| amolar . . .               | " <i>volar</i> ,      | § 476.    |
| amollecer . . .            | " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| amorecer . . .             | " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| amortecer . . .            | " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| amover . . .               | " <i>mover</i> ,      | § 489.    |
| andar . . .                |                       | § 528.    |
| anochecer . . .            | " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| antedecir . . .            | " <i>decir</i> ,      | § 539, b. |
| pp. <i>antedicho</i> .     |                       |           |
| anteponer . . .            | " <i>poner</i> ,      | § 533.    |
| pp. <i>antepuesto</i> .    |                       |           |
| antever . . .              | " <i>ver</i> ,        | § 548.    |
| pp. <i>antevisto</i> .     |                       |           |
| apacentar . . .            | " <i>alentar</i> ,    | § 459.    |
| aparecer . . .             | " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| apercollar . . .           | " <i>hollar</i> ,     | § 475.    |
| apernar . . .              | " <i>acertar</i> ,    | § 458.    |
| apetecer . . .             | " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| apostar <sup>1</sup> . . . | " <i>costar</i> ,     | § 473.    |
| apretar . . .              |                       | § 461.    |
| aprobar . . .              | " <i>probar</i> ,     | § 478.    |

<sup>1</sup> Regular in the sense of "to tune."<sup>2</sup> Regular when it means "to gauge."<sup>1</sup> Regular in the sense of "to post" men, guards, etc.

|   |           |
|---|-----------|
| argüir . . .                                    | § 526.    |
| arrecirse . . .                                 | § 555.    |
| arrendar . . . like <i>alentar</i> ,            | § 459.    |
| arrepentirse . . . " <i>sentir</i> ,            | § 499.    |
| ascender . . . " <i>entender</i> ,              | § 471.    |
| asentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,                | § 459.    |
| asentir . . . " <i>sentir</i> ,                 | § 499.    |
| aserrar . . . " <i>cerrar</i> ,                 | § 460.    |
| asir . . .                                      | § 551.    |
| asolar . . . " <i>volar</i> ,                   | § 476.    |
| asoldar . . . " <i>acordar</i> ,                | § 474.    |
| asonar . . . " <i>sonar</i> ,                   | § 472.    |
| asosegar . . . " <i>negar</i> ,                 | § 468.    |
| atañer . . . §§ 378, b; 558, b.                 |           |
| atender . . . " <i>entender</i> ,               | § 471.    |
| atenerse . . . " <i>tener</i> ,                 | § 536.    |
| atentar <sup>1</sup> . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,   | § 459.    |
| aterirse . . .                                  | § 555.    |
| aterrar <sup>2</sup> . . . " <i>cerrar</i> ,    | § 460.    |
| atestar <sup>3</sup> . . .                      | § 462.    |
| atraer . . . " <i>traer</i> ,                   | § 537.    |
| atravesar . . . " <i>apretar</i> ,              | § 461.    |
| atribuir . . .                                  | § 523.    |
| atronar . . . " <i>sonar</i> ,                  | § 472.    |
| avalentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,              | § 459.    |
| avanecerse . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,             | § 374, a. |
| avénir . . . " <i>venir</i> ,                   | § 541.    |
| aventar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,                | § 459.    |
| avergonzar,                                     |           |
| like <i>agorar</i> , § 488, and <i>forzar</i> , | § 486.    |
| azolar . . . like <i>volar</i> ,                | § 476.    |

## B.

|                                       |           |
|---------------------------------------|-----------|
| berdecir . . .                        | § 540.    |
| pp. <i>bendecido</i> .                |           |
| bienquerer . . . like <i>querer</i> , | § 534.    |
| blanquecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,   | § 374, a. |
| bregar . . . " <i>negar</i> ,         | § 468.    |
| brufir . . . " <i>plañir</i> ,        | § 378, c. |
| bullir . . .                          | § 378, a. |

## C.

|  |           |
|--|-----------|
| caber . . .                            | § 529.    |
| caer . . .                             | § 544.    |
| calentar . . . like <i>alentar</i> ,   | § 459.    |
| canecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,       | § 374, a. |
| carecer . . .                          | § 374, a. |
| cegar . . . " <i>negar</i> ,           | § 468.    |
| ceñir . . .                            | § 518.    |
| cerner . . . " <i>perder</i> ,         | § 470.    |
| cerrar . . .                           | § 460.    |
| cimentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,      | § 459.    |
| circuir . . . " <i>atribuir</i> ,      | § 523.    |
| clarecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,      | § 374, a. |
| clocar . . . " <i>trocar</i> ,         | § 482.    |
| cocer . . .                            | § 497.    |
| colar . . . " <i>volar</i> ,           | § 476.    |
| colegir . . . " <i>regir</i> ,         | § 515.    |
| colgar . . . " <i>rogar</i> ,          | § 483.    |
| comedir . . . " <i>pedir</i> ,         | § 512.    |
| comenzar . . . " <i>empezar</i> ,      | § 469.    |
| compadecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| comparecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| competir . . . " <i>pedir</i> ,        | § 512.    |
| complacer . . .                        | § 546.    |
| complañir . . . " <i>plañir</i> ,      | § 378, c. |
| componer . . . " <i>poner</i> ,        | § 533.    |
| pp. <i>compuesto</i> .                 |           |
| comprobar . . . " <i>probar</i> ,      | § 478.    |
| concebir . . . " <i>pedir</i> ,        | § 512.    |
| concernir . . .                        | § 558, c. |
| concertar . . . " <i>acertar</i> ,     | § 458.    |
| concluir . . . " <i>huir</i> ,         | § 522.    |
| concordar . . . " <i>acordar</i> ,     | § 474.    |
| condescender . . . " <i>entender</i> , | § 471.    |
| condolerse . . . " <i>moler</i> ,      | § 492.    |
| conducir . . .                         | § 538.    |
| conferir . . . " <i>herir</i> ,        | § 500.    |
| confesar . . . " <i>apretar</i> ,      | § 461.    |
| confuir . . . " <i>huir</i> ,          | § 522.    |
| conmover . . . " <i>mover</i> ,        | § 489.    |
| conocer . . .                          | § 374, c. |
| conseguir . . . " <i>seguir</i> ,      | § 516.    |
| consentir . . . " <i>sentir</i> ,      | § 499.    |
| consolar . . . " <i>volar</i> ,        | § 476.    |
| consonar . . . " <i>sonar</i> ,        | § 472.    |

<sup>1</sup> Regular in the more usual modern sense of "to attempt a crime."

<sup>2</sup> Regular when it means "to terrify."

<sup>3</sup> Meaning "to testify," it is regular.

|                           |                         |           |
|---------------------------|-------------------------|-----------|
| constituir . . .          | like <i>instituir</i> , | § 524.    |
| constrefir . . .          | " <i>ceñir</i> ,        | § 518.    |
| construir . . .           | " <i>huir</i> ,         | § 522.    |
| contar . . .              |                         | § 477.    |
| contender . . .           | " <i>entender</i> ,     | § 471.    |
| contener . . .            | " <i>tener</i> ,        | § 536.    |
| contorcerse . . .         | " <i>torcer</i> ,       | § 496.    |
| contracordar . . .        | " <i>acordar</i> ,      | § 474.    |
| contradecir . . .         | " <i>decir</i> ,        | § 539, b. |
| pp. <i>contradicho</i> .  |                         |           |
| contraer . . .            | " <i>traer</i> ,        | § 537.    |
| contrahacer . . .         | " <i>hacer</i> ,        | § 530.    |
| pp. <i>contrahecho</i> .  |                         |           |
| contraponer . . .         | " <i>poner</i> ,        | § 533.    |
| pp. <i>contrapuesto</i> . |                         |           |
| contravenir . . .         | " <i>venir</i> ,        | § 541.    |
| contribuir . . .          | " <i>atribuir</i> ,     | § 523.    |
| controvertir . . .        | " <i>advertir</i> ,     | § 502.    |
| convalecer . . .          | " <i>carecer</i> ,      | § 374, a. |
| convenir . . .            | " <i>venir</i> ,        | § 541.    |
| convertir . . .           | " <i>advertir</i> ,     | § 502.    |
| corregir . . .            | " <i>regir</i> ,        | § 515.    |
| corroer . . .             |                         | § 557, a. |
| costar . . .              |                         | § 473.    |
| crecer . . .              | " <i>carecer</i> ,      | § 374, a. |
| crear . . .               |                         | § 549, b. |

## D.

|                    |                     |           |
|--------------------|---------------------|-----------|
| dar . . .          |                     | § 543.    |
| decaer . . .       | like <i>caer</i> ,  | § 544.    |
| decentar . . .     | " <i>alentar</i> ,  | § 459.    |
| decir . . .        |                     | § 539.    |
| pp. <i>dicho</i> . |                     |           |
| decrecer . . .     | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| deducir . . .      | " <i>conducir</i> , | § 538.    |
| defender . . .     | " <i>entender</i> , | § 471.    |
| defenecer . . .    | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| deferir . . .      | " <i>herir</i> ,    | § 500.    |
| degollar . . .     | " <i>agorar</i> ,   | § 488.    |
| demoler . . .      | " <i>moler</i> ,    | § 492.    |
| demostrar . . .    | " <i>costar</i> ,   | § 473.    |
| denegar . . .      | " <i>negar</i> ,    | § 468.    |
| denegrecer . . .   | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| denostar . . .     | " <i>costar</i> ,   | § 473.    |
| dentar . . .       | " <i>alentar</i> ,  | § 459.    |

|                              |                     |           |
|------------------------------|---------------------|-----------|
| deponer . . .                | like <i>poner</i> , | § 533.    |
| pp. <i>depuesto</i> .        |                     |           |
| derrenegar . . .             | " <i>negar</i> ,    | § 468.    |
| derrengar . . .              | " <i>negar</i> ,    | § 468.    |
| derretir . . .               | " <i>pedir</i> ,    | § 512.    |
| derrocar . . .               | " <i>trocar</i> ,   | § 482.    |
| derruir . . .                | " <i>huir</i> ,     | § 522.    |
| desabastecer . . .           | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| desacertar . . .             | " <i>acertar</i> ,  | § 458.    |
| desacollar . . .             | " <i>hollar</i> ,   | § 475.    |
| desacordar . . .             | " <i>acordar</i> ,  | § 474.    |
| desadormecer . . .           | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| desadvertir . . .            | " <i>advertir</i> , | § 502.    |
| desaferrar . . .             | " <i>cerrar</i> ,   | § 460.    |
| desaforar <sup>1</sup> . . . | " <i>sonar</i> ,    | § 472.    |
| desagradecer . . .           | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| desalentar . . .             | " <i>alentar</i> ,  | § 459.    |
| desamoblar . . .             | " <i>acordar</i> ,  | § 474.    |
| desandar . . .               | " <i>andar</i> ,    | § 528.    |
| desaparecer . . .            | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| desapretar . . .             | " <i>apretar</i> ,  | § 461.    |
| desaprobar . . .             | " <i>probar</i> ,   | § 478.    |
| desarrendar . . .            | " <i>alentar</i> ,  | § 459.    |
| desasentar . . .             | " <i>alentar</i> ,  | § 459.    |
| desasir . . .                | " <i>asir</i> ,     | § 551.    |
| desasosegar . . .            | " <i>negar</i> ,    | § 468.    |
| desatender . . .             | " <i>entender</i> , | § 471.    |
| desatentar . . .             | " <i>alentar</i> ,  | § 459.    |
| desaterrar . . .             | " <i>cerrar</i> ,   | § 460.    |
| desatraer . . .              | " <i>traer</i> ,    | § 537.    |
| desatravesar . . .           | " <i>apretar</i> ,  | § 461.    |
| desavenir . . .              | " <i>venir</i> ,    | § 541.    |
| desaventar . . .             | " <i>alentar</i> ,  | § 459.    |
| desbastecer . . .            | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| desbravecer . . .            | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| descabullirse . . .          | " <i>bullir</i> ,   | § 378, a. |
| descaecer . . .              | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| descender . . .              | " <i>entender</i> , | § 471.    |
| desceñir . . .               | " <i>ceñir</i> ,    | § 518.    |
| descolgar . . .              | " <i>rogar</i> ,    | § 483.    |
| descollar . . .              | " <i>hollar</i> ,   | § 475.    |
| descomedirse . . .           | " <i>pedir</i> ,    | § 512.    |

<sup>1</sup> Regular when it means "to redeem a heritage."



|  |  |  |  |
|--|--|--|--|
| <b>descomponer</b> , like <i>poner</i> , § 533.<br>pp. <i>descompuesto</i> . |  | <b>desgobernar</b> , like <i>acertar</i> , § 458.        |  |
| <b>desconcertar</b> , " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.                              |  | <b>desguarnecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.       |  |
| <b>desconocer</b> , " <i>conocer</i> , § 374, c.                             |  | <b>deshacer</b> , " <i>hacer</i> , § 530.                |  |
| <b>desconsentir</b> , " <i>sentir</i> , § 499.                               |  | pp. <i>deshecho</i> .                                    |  |
| <b>desconsolar</b> , " <i>volar</i> , § 476.                                 |  | <b>deshelar</b> , " <i>helar</i> , § 464.                |  |
| <b>descontar</b> , " <i>contar</i> , § 477.                                  |  | <b>desherrar</b> , " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.              |  |
| <b>desconvenir</b> , " <i>venir</i> , § 541.                                 |  | <b>deshombrecerse</b> , <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.       |  |
| <b>descordar</b> , " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.                                 |  | <b>deshumedecer</b> , <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.         |  |
| <b>descornar</b> , " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.                                 |  | <b>desimponer</b> , " <i>poner</i> , § 533.              |  |
| <b>descrecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                              |  | pp. <i>desimpuesto</i> .                                 |  |
| <b>desdar</b> , " <i>dar</i> , § 543.  |  | <b>desinvernar</b> , " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.           |  |
| <b>desdecir</b> , " <i>decir</i> , § 539.                                    |  | <b>desleir</b> , " <i>reir</i> , § 520.                  |  |
| pp. <i>desdicho</i> .  |  | <b>deslendar</b> , " <i>sembrar</i> , § 463.             |  |
| <b>desdentar</b> , " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.                                 |  | <b>deslucir</b> , " <i>lucir</i> , § 374, d.             |  |
| <b>desembebecerse</b> , <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                           |  | <b>desmajolar</b> , " <i>volar</i> , § 476.              |  |
| <b>desembellecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                          |  | <b>desmedirse</b> , " <i>pedir</i> , § 512.              |  |
| <b>desembravecer</b> , <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                            |  | <b>desmelar</b> , " <i>helar</i> , § 464.                |  |
| <b>desempedrar</b> , " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.                               |  | <b>desmembrar</b> , " <i>sembrar</i> , § 463.            |  |
| <b>desempobrecer</b> , <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                            |  | <b>desmentir</b> , " <i>sentir</i> , § 499.              |  |
| <b>desencarecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                           |  | <b>desmerecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.         |  |
| <b>desencerrar</b> , " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.                                |  | <b>desmullir</b> , " <i>bullir</i> , § 378, a.           |  |
| <b>desencordar</b> , " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.                               |  | <b>desnegar</b> , " <i>negar</i> , § 468.                |  |
| <b>desenrudecer</b> , <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                             |  | <b>desnevar</b> , " <i>nevar</i> , § 417.                |  |
| <b>desencruelecer</b> , <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                           |  | <b>desobedecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.        |  |
| <b>desenfurecerse</b> , <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                           |  | <b>desoir</b> , " <i>oir</i> , § 553.                    |  |
| <b>desengrosar</b> , " <i>costar</i> , § 473.                                |  | <b>desolar</b> , " <i>volar</i> , § 476.                 |  |
| <b>desenmohecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                           |  | <b>desoldar</b> , " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.              |  |
| <b>desenmudecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                           |  | <b>desollar</b> , " <i>hollar</i> , § 475.               |  |
| <b>desensoberbecer</b> , <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                          |  | <b>desobstruir</b> , " <i>huir</i> , § 522.              |  |
| <b>desentenderse</b> , " <i>entender</i> , § 471.                            |  | <b>desosar</b> <sup>1</sup> , " § 480.                   |  |
| <b>desenterrar</b> , " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.                                |  | <b>desovar</b> , " <i>desosar</i> , § 480.               |  |
| <b>desentorpecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                          |  | <b>desparecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.         |  |
| <b>desentristecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                         |  | <b>despedir</b> , " <i>pedir</i> , § 512.                |  |
| <b>desentumecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                           |  | <b>despedrar</b> , " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.             |  |
| <b>desenvolver</b> , " <i>volver</i> , § 491.                                |  | <b>desperecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.         |  |
| pp. <i>desenvuelto</i> .   |  | <b>despernar</b> , " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.             |  |
| <b>deservir</b> , " <i>servir</i> , § 513.                                   |  | <b>despertar</b> , " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.             |  |
| <b>desfallecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                            |  | <b>despezar</b> <sup>2</sup> , " <i>empesar</i> , § 469. |  |
| <b>desfavorecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                           |  | <b>desplacer</b> , " <i>complacer</i> , § 546.           |  |
| <b>desferrar</b> , " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.                                  |  | <b>desplegar</b> , " <i>negar</i> , § 468.               |  |
| <b>desflaquecerse</b> , <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                           |  |  |  |
| <b>desflocar</b> , " <i>trocar</i> , § 482.                                  |  |  |  |
| <b>desflorecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                            |  |  |  |
| <b>desfortalecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.                          |  |  |  |

<sup>1</sup> Signifying "not to dare," it is regular.<sup>2</sup> Regular when it means to reduce the end of a pipe or tube, so as to fit it to another.

|   |                            |           |
|---|----------------------------|-----------|
| <b>despoblar</b>                                | like <i>probar</i> ,       | § 478.    |
| <b>desprobeer</b>                               | " <i>probeer</i> ,         | § 549, a. |
| pps. <i>desprovido</i> and <i>desprovisto</i> . |                            |           |
| <b>destentar</b>                                | like <i>alentar</i> ,      | § 459.    |
| <b>destefir</b>                                 | " <i>ceñir</i> ,           | § 518.    |
| <b>desterrar</b>                                | " <i>cerrar</i> ,          | § 460.    |
| <b>destituir</b>                                | " <i>instituir</i> ,       | § 524.    |
| <b>destorcer</b>                                | " <i>torcer</i> ,          | § 496.    |
| <b>destrocar</b>                                | " <i>trocar</i> ,          | § 482.    |
| <b>destruir</b>                                 | " <i>huir</i> ,            | § 522.    |
| <b>desvanecer</b>                               | " <i>carecer</i> ,         | § 374, a. |
| <b>desventar</b>                                | " <i>alentar</i> ,         | § 459.    |
| <b>desverdecir</b>                              | " <i>carecer</i> ,         | § 374, a. |
| <b>desvergonzarse</b> ,                         |                            |           |
| like <i>forzar</i> ,                            | § 486; and <i>agorar</i> , | § 488.    |
| <b>desvolver</b>                                | like <i>volver</i> ,       | § 491.    |
| pp. <i>desvuelto</i> .                          |                            |           |
| <b>detener</b>                                  | " <i>tener</i> ,           | § 536.    |
| <b>detraer</b>                                  | " <i>traer</i> ,           | § 537.    |
| <b>devolver</b>                                 | " <i>volver</i> ,          | § 491.    |
| pp. <i>devuelto</i> .                           |                            |           |
| <b>dezmar</b>                                   | " <i>atestar</i> ,         | § 462.    |
| <b>diferir</b>                                  | " <i>herir</i> ,           | § 500.    |
| <b>difuir</b>                                   | " <i>huir</i> ,            | § 522.    |
| <b>digerir</b>                                  | " <i>herir</i> ,           | § 500.    |
| <b>diluir</b>                                   | " <i>huir</i> ,            | § 522.    |
| <b>discerner</b>                                | " <i>perder</i> ,          | § 470.    |
| <b>discernir</b>                                | " <i>hervir</i> ,          | § 503.    |
| <b>disconvenir</b> ,                            | " <i>venir</i> ,           | § 541.    |
| <b>discordar</b>                                | " <i>acordar</i> ,         | § 474.    |
| <b>disentir</b>                                 | " <i>sentir</i> ,          | § 499.    |
| <b>disminuir</b>                                | " <i>huir</i> ,            | § 522.    |
| <b>disolver</b>                                 | " <i>volver</i> ,          | § 491.    |
| pp. <i>disuelto</i> .                           |                            |           |
| <b>disonar</b>                                  | " <i>sonar</i> ,           | § 472.    |
| <b>dispertar</b>                                | " <i>acertar</i> ,         | § 458.    |
| <b>displacer</b>                                | " <i>complacer</i> ,       | § 546.    |
| <b>disponer</b>                                 | " <i>poner</i> ,           | § 533.    |
| pp. <i>dispuesto</i> .                          |                            |           |
| <b>distender</b>                                | " <i>entender</i> ,        | § 471.    |
| <b>distraer</b>                                 | " <i>traer</i> ,           | § 537.    |
| <b>distribuir</b>                               | " <i>atribuir</i> ,        | § 523.    |
| <b>divertir</b>                                 | " <i>advertir</i> ,        | § 502.    |
| <b>doler</b>                                    | " <i>moler</i> ,           | § 492.    |
| <b>dormir</b>                                   |                            | § 508.    |

## E.

|                          |                        |           |
|--------------------------|------------------------|-----------|
| <b>educir</b>            | like <i>conducir</i> , | § 538.    |
| <b>elegir</b>            | " <i>regir</i> ,       | § 515.    |
| <b>embarbecer</b>        | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>embastecer</b>        | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>embebecer</b>         | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>embellecer</b>        | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>embermejecer</b> ,    | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>embestir</b>          | " <i>servir</i> ,      | § 513.    |
| <b>emblandecer</b> ,     | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>emblanquecer</b> ,    | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>embobecer</b>         | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>embosquecer</b> ,     | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>embravecer</b>        | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>embrutecer</b>        | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>emparentar</b>        | " <i>alentar</i> ,     | § 459.    |
| <b>empedernir</b>        |                        | § 555.    |
| <b>empedrar</b>          | " <i>cerrar</i> ,      | § 460.    |
| <b>empellar</b>          | " <i>helar</i> ,       | § 464.    |
| <b>empequeñecer</b> ,    | <i>carecer</i> ,       | § 374, a. |
| <b>empezar</b>           |                        | § 469.    |
| <b>emplastecer</b> ,     | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>emplumecer</b> ,      | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>empobrecer</b> ,      | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>empodrecer</b> ,      | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>empoltronecerse</b> , | <i>carecer</i> ,       | § 374, a. |
| <b>emporcar</b>          | " <i>trocar</i> ,      | § 482.    |
| <b>enaltecer</b>         | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>enardecer</b>         | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>encabellecerse</b> ,  | <i>carecer</i> ,       | § 374, a. |
| <b>encalvecer</b>        | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>encallecer</b>        | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>encandecer</b>        | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>encanecer</b>         | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>encarecer</b>         | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>encarnecer</b>        | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>encender</b>          | " <i>entender</i> ,    | § 471.    |
| <b>encentar</b>          | " <i>alentar</i> ,     | § 459.    |
| <b>encerrar</b>          | " <i>cerrar</i> ,      | § 460.    |
| <b>enclocar</b>          | " <i>trocar</i> ,      | § 482.    |
| <b>encloquecer</b>       | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| <b>encomendar</b>        | " <i>alentar</i> ,     | § 459.    |
| <b>encontrar</b>         | " <i>contar</i> ,      | § 477.    |
| <b>encorar</b>           | " <i>sonar</i> ,       | § 472.    |
| <b>encordar</b>          | " <i>acordar</i> ,     | § 474.    |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>encorecer</b> . . . like <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a. | <b>enruinecerse</b> , like <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.  |
| <b>encornar</b> . . . " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.        | <b>ensalmar</b> . . . " <i>volar</i> , § 476.          |
| <b>encovar</b> . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.           | <b>ensandecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   |
| <b>encrudecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   | <b>ensangrentar</b> , " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.        |
| <b>encruelecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.  | <b>ensoberbecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.     |
| <b>encubertar</b> . . . " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.      | <b>ensoñar</b> . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.           |
| <b>endentar</b> . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.        | <b>ensordecir</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   |
| <b>endentecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   | <b>entallecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   |
| <b>endurecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    | <b>entender</b> . . . § 471.                           |
| <b>enfierecerse</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a. | <b>entenebrece</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.      |
| <b>enflaquecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.  | <b>enternecer</b> , . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a. |
| <b>enfranquecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.     | <b>enterrar</b> . . . " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.         |
| <b>enfurecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    | <b>entigrecerse</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a. |
| <b>engorar</b> . . . " <i>agorar</i> , § 488.          | <b>entontecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   |
| <b>engrandecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.      | <b>entorpecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   |
| <b>engreírse</b> . . . " <i>reír</i> , § 520.          | <b>entortar</b> . . . " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.        |
| <b>engrosar</b> . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.          | <b>entredcir</b> . . . " <i>decir</i> , § 539.         |
| <b>engrumecerse</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.     | pp. <i>entredicho</i> .                                |
| <b>engullir</b> . . . " <i>bullir</i> , § 378, a.      | <b>entregerir</b> . . . " <i>herir</i> , § 500.        |
| <b>enhambrece</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.       | <b>entrelucir</b> . . . " <i>lucir</i> , § 374, d.     |
| <b>enhambrantar</b> , " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.        | <b>entremorir</b> . . . " <i>morir</i> , § 509.        |
| <b>enhestar</b> . . . " <i>atestar</i> , § 462.        | pp. <i>muerto</i> .                                    |
| <b>enlenzar</b> . . . " <i>empezar</i> , § 469.        | <b>entreoir</b> . . . " <i>oir</i> , § 553.            |
| <b>enloquecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   | <b>entreparecerse</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   |
| <b>enlucir</b> . . . " <i>lucir</i> , § 374, d.        | <b>entrepernar</b> . . . " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.     |
| <b>enlentece</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    | <b>entreponer</b> . . . " <i>poner</i> , § 533.        |
| <b>enmagrecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   | pp. <i>entrepuesto</i> .                               |
| <b>enmalecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    | <b>entretener</b> . . . " <i>tener</i> , § 536.        |
| <b>enmarillecerse</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   | <b>entrever</b> . . . " <i>ver</i> , § 548.            |
| <b>enmelar</b> . . . " <i>helar</i> , § 464.           | pp. <i>entrevisto</i> .                                |
| <b>enmendar</b> . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.        | <b>entristecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.  |
| <b>enmohece</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.     | <b>entullece</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    |
| <b>enmollece</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    | <b>entumecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    |
| <b>enmudece</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.     | <b>envanecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    |
| <b>ennegrecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   | <b>envejecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    |
| <b>ennoblece</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    | <b>enverdece</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    |
| <b>ennudece</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.     | <b>envestir</b> . . . " <i>servir</i> , § 513.         |
| <b>enorgullece</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.      | <b>envilece</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.     |
| <b>enrarece</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.     | <b>envolver</b> . . . " <i>volver</i> , § 491.         |
| <b>enriquece</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    | pp. <i>envuelto</i> .                                  |
| <b>enrobustecer</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.     | <b>enzurdece</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    |
| <b>enrodar</b> . . . " <i>probar</i> , § 478.          | <b>equivaler</b> . . . " <i>valer</i> , § 547.         |
| <b>enrojecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    | <b>erguir</b> . . . § 505.                             |
| <b>enronquece</b> , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.       | <b>errar</b> . . . § 466.                              |
| <b>enroñecer</b> . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.    | <b>escabullirse</b> . . . " <i>bullir</i> , § 378, a.  |

|                          |                    |
|--------------------------|--------------------|
| escandecer . . . like    | carecer, § 374, a. |
| escarmentar, " . . .     | alentar, § 459.    |
| escarnecer . . . " . . . | carecer, § 374, a. |
| esclarecer . . . " . . . | carecer, § 374, a. |
| escocer . . . " . . .    | cocer, § 497.      |
| escolar . . . " . . .    | volar, § 476.      |
| esforzar . . . " . . .   | forzar, § 486.     |
| establecer . . . " . . . | carecer, § 374, a. |
| estar . . . . .          | § 382.             |
| estatuir . . . " . . .   | instituir, § 524.  |
| estregar . . . " . . .   | negar, § 468.      |
| estremecer . . . " . . . | carecer, § 374, a. |
| estreñir . . . " . . .   | ceñir, § 518.      |
| excluir . . . " . . .    | huir, § 522.       |
| expedir . . . " . . .    | pedir, § 512.      |
| exponer . . . " . . .    | poner, § 533.      |
| pp. expuesto.            |                    |
| extender . . . " . . .   | entender, § 471.   |
| extraer . . . " . . .    | traer, § 537.      |
| extreñir . . . " . . .   | ceñir, § 518.      |

## F.

|                          |                    |
|--------------------------|--------------------|
| fallecer . . . like      | carecer, § 374, a. |
| favorecer . . . " . . .  | carecer, § 374, a. |
| fenecer . . . " . . .    | carecer, § 374, a. |
| ferrar . . . " . . .     | cerrar, § 460.     |
| florecer . . . " . . .   | carecer, § 374, a. |
| fluir . . . " . . .      | huir, § 522.       |
| follar . . . " . . .     | hollar, § 475.     |
| fortalecer . . . " . . . | carecer, § 374, a. |
| forzar . . . " . . .     | § 486.             |
| fregar . . . " . . .     | negar, § 468.      |
| freir . . . " . . .      | reir, § 520.       |

pps. freído and frito.

## G.

|                         |                    |
|-------------------------|--------------------|
| gañir . . . like        | plañir, § 378, c.  |
| gemecer . . . " . . .   | carecer, § 374, a. |
| gemir . . . " . . .     | pedir, § 512.      |
| gobernar . . . " . . .  | acertar, § 458.    |
| gruir . . . " . . .     | huir, § 522.       |
| grufir . . . " . . .    | plañir, § 378, c.  |
| guañir . . . " . . .    | plañir, § 378, c.  |
| guarecer . . . " . . .  | carecer, § 374, a. |
| guarnecer . . . " . . . | carecer, § 374, a. |

## H.

|                         |                    |
|-------------------------|--------------------|
| haber . . . . .         | § 351.             |
| hacendar . . . like     | alentar, § 459.    |
| hacer . . . . .         | § 530.             |
| pp. hecho.              |                    |
| heder . . . . .         | perder, § 470.     |
| helar . . . . .         | § 464.             |
| henchir . . . . .       | §§ 378, d; 513.    |
| hender . . . . .        | entender, § 471.   |
| heñir . . . . .         | ceñir, § 518.      |
| herbar . . . . .        | acertar, § 458.    |
| herbecer . . . . .      | carecer, § 374, a. |
| herir . . . . .         | § 500.             |
| herrar . . . . .        | cerrar, § 460.     |
| hervir . . . . .        | § 503.             |
| holgar . . . . .        | rogar, § 483.      |
| hollar . . . . .        | § 475.             |
| huir . . . . .          | § 522.             |
| humedecer . . . " . . . | carecer, § 374, a. |

## I.

|                          |                  |
|--------------------------|------------------|
| imbuir . . . like        | atribuir, § 523. |
| impedir . . . " . . .    | pedir, § 512.    |
| imponer . . . " . . .    | poner, § 533.    |
| pp. impuesto.            |                  |
| improbar . . . " . . .   | probar, § 478.   |
| incensar . . . " . . .   | pensar, § 457.   |
| incluir . . . " . . .    | huir, § 522.     |
| indisponer . . . " . . . | poner, § 533.    |
| pp. indispueto.          |                  |
| inducir . . . . .        | conducir, § 538. |
| inferir . . . . .        | herir, § 500.    |
| infernar . . . . .       | acertar, § 458.  |
| influir . . . . .        | huir, § 522.     |
| ingerir . . . . .        | herir, § 500.    |

pp. ingerto.

|                        |                  |
|------------------------|------------------|
| inhestar . . . " . . . | atestar, § 462.  |
| injerir . . . . .      | herir, § 500.    |
| pp. injerto.           |                  |
| inquirir . . . . .     | adquirir, § 507. |
| inseguir . . . . .     | seguir, § 516.   |
| instituir . . . . .    | § 524.           |
| instruir . . . . .     | atribuir, § 523. |
| interdecir . . . . .   | decir, § 539.    |
| pp. interdicho.        |                  |

|                          |                     |        |
|--------------------------|---------------------|--------|
| interponer . . .         | like <i>poner</i> , | § 533. |
| pp. <i>interpuesto</i> . |                     |        |
| intervenir . . .         | " <i>venir</i> ,    | § 541. |
| introducir . . .         | " <i>conducir</i> , | § 538. |
| invernár . . .           | " <i>acertar</i> ,  | § 458. |
| invertir . . .           | " <i>advertir</i> , | § 502. |
| invertir . . .           | " <i>servir</i> ,   | § 513. |
| ir . . . . .             |                     | § 552. |

## J.

|                |                       |        |
|----------------|-----------------------|--------|
| jimenzar . . . | like <i>empezar</i> , | § 469. |
| jugar . . . .  |                       | § 485. |

## L.

|                                 |                       |           |
|---------------------------------|-----------------------|-----------|
| languidecer, like               | <i>carecer</i> ,      | § 374, a. |
| leer . . . . .                  | " <i>creer</i> ,      | § 549, b. |
| liquefacér . . .                | " <i>satisfacer</i> , | § 531.    |
| lobreguecer, " <i>carecer</i> , |                       | § 374, a. |
| lucir . . . . .                 |                       | § 374, d. |
| luir . . . . .                  | " <i>huir</i> ,       | § 522.    |

## Ll.

|                |  |        |
|----------------|--|--------|
| llover . . . . |  | § 418. |
|----------------|--|--------|

## M.

|                  |                        |           |
|------------------|------------------------|-----------|
| maldecir . . .   | like <i>bendecir</i> , | § 540.    |
| malherir . . .   | " <i>herir</i> ,       | § 500.    |
| malquerer . . .  | " <i>querer</i> ,      | § 534.    |
| malsonar . . .   | " <i>sonar</i> ,       | § 472.    |
| maltraer . . .   | " <i>traer</i> ,       | § 537.    |
| mancornar . . .  | " <i>acordar</i> ,     | § 474.    |
| manifestar . . . | " <i>atestar</i> ,     | § 462.    |
| mantener . . .   | " <i>tener</i> ,       | § 536.    |
| mecer . . . .    |                        | § 373.    |
| medir . . . .    | " <i>pedir</i> ,       | § 512.    |
| melar . . . .    | " <i>helar</i> ,       | § 464.    |
| mentar . . . .   | " <i>alentar</i> ,     | § 459.    |
| mentir . . . .   | " <i>sentir</i> ,      | § 499.    |
| merecer . . . .  | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| merendar . . .   | " <i>alentar</i> ,     | § 459.    |
| moblar . . . .   | " <i>contar</i> ,      | § 477.    |
| mohecer . . . .  | " <i>carecer</i> ,     | § 374, a. |
| moler . . . .    |                        | § 492.    |
| morder . . . .   |                        | § 490.    |
| morir . . . .    |                        | § 509.    |

pp. *muerto*.

|               |                   |        |
|---------------|-------------------|--------|
| mostrar . . . | " <i>costar</i> , | § 473. |
|---------------|-------------------|--------|

|                |                    |           |
|----------------|--------------------|-----------|
| mover . . . .  |                    | § 489.    |
| muir . . . . . | like <i>huir</i> , | § 522.    |
| mullir . . . . | " <i>bullir</i> ,  | § 378, a. |
| muñir . . . .  | " <i>plañir</i> ,  | § 378, c. |

## N.

|                 |                       |           |
|-----------------|-----------------------|-----------|
| nacer . . . . . |                       | § 374, b. |
| negar . . . . . |                       | § 468.    |
| negrecer . . .  | like <i>carecer</i> , | § 374, a. |
| nevar . . . . . |                       | § 417.    |

## O.

|                 |                       |           |
|-----------------|-----------------------|-----------|
| obedecer . . .  | like <i>carecer</i> , | § 374, a. |
| obscurer . . .  | " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| obstruir . . .  | " <i>huir</i> ,       | § 522.    |
| obtener . . .   | " <i>tener</i> ,      | § 536.    |
| ofrecer . . . . | " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| oir . . . . .   |                       | § 553.    |
| oler . . . . .  |                       | § 494.    |
| oponer . . . .  | " <i>poner</i> ,      | § 533.    |

pp. *opuesto*.

|                 |                    |           |
|-----------------|--------------------|-----------|
| oscurecer . . . | " <i>carecer</i> , | § 374, a. |
|-----------------|--------------------|-----------|

## P.

|                                  |                     |           |
|----------------------------------|---------------------|-----------|
| pacer . . . . .                  | like <i>nacer</i> , | § 374, b. |
| padecer . . . .                  | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| palidecer . . .                  | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| parecer . . . .                  | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| pedir . . . . .                  |                     | § 512.    |
| pensar . . . .                   |                     | § 457.    |
| perder . . . .                   |                     | § 470.    |
| perecer . . . .                  | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| permanecer . .                   | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| perniquebrar, " <i>sembrar</i> , |                     | § 463.    |
| perseguir . . .                  | " <i>seguir</i> ,   | § 516.    |
| pertenecer . . .                 | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| pervertir . . .                  | " <i>advertir</i> , | § 502.    |
| pimpollecér . .                  | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| placer . . . .                   |                     | § 545.    |
| plañir . . . .                   |                     | § 378, c. |
| plastecer . . .                  | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |
| plegar . . . .                   | " <i>negar</i> ,    | § 468.    |
| poblar . . . .                   | " <i>sonar</i> ,    | § 472.    |
| poder . . . . .                  |                     | § 532.    |
| podrecer . . .                   | " <i>carecer</i> ,  | § 374, a. |

|  |           |
|--|-----------|
| podrir . . .                               | § 510.    |
| poner . . .                                | § 533.    |
| pp. <i>puesto</i> .                        |           |
| poseer . . .                               | § 549, c. |
| posponer . . . like <i>poner</i> ,         | § 533.    |
| pp. <i>pospuesto</i> .                     |           |
| preconocer . . . " <i>conocer</i> ,        | § 374, c. |
| predecir . . . " <i>decir</i> ,            | § 539.    |
| pp. <i>predicho</i> .                      |           |
| predisponer . . . " <i>poner</i> ,         | § 533.    |
| pp. <i>predispuesto</i> .                  |           |
| preferir . . . " <i>herir</i> ,            | § 500.    |
| prelucir . . . " <i>lucir</i> ,            | § 374, d. |
| premorir . . . " <i>morir</i> ,            | § 509.    |
| pp. <i>premuerto</i> .                     |           |
| preponer . . . " <i>poner</i> ,            | § 533.    |
| pp. <i>prepuesto</i> .                     |           |
| presentir . . . " <i>sentir</i> ,          | § 499.    |
| presuponer . . . " <i>poner</i> ,          | § 533.    |
| pp. <i>presupuesto</i> .                   |           |
| prevalecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,        | § 374, a. |
| prevaler . . . " <i>valer</i> ,            | § 547.    |
| prevenir . . . " <i>venir</i> ,            | § 541.    |
| prever . . . " <i>ver</i> ,                | § 548.    |
| pp. <i>previsto</i> .                      |           |
| probar . . .                               | § 478.    |
| producir . . . " <i>conducir</i> ,         | § 538.    |
| proferir . . . " <i>herir</i> ,            | § 500.    |
| promover . . . " <i>mover</i> ,            | § 489.    |
| proponer . . . " <i>poner</i> ,            | § 533.    |
| pp. <i>propuesto</i> .                     |           |
| proseguir . . . " <i>seguir</i> ,          | § 516.    |
| prostituir . . . " <i>instituir</i> ,      | § 524.    |
| proveer . . .                              | § 549, a. |
| pps. <i>proveido</i> and <i>provisto</i> . |           |
| provenir . . . like <i>venir</i> ,         | § 541.    |
| pudrir . . .                               | § 510.    |

## Q.

|                                     |        |
|-------------------------------------|--------|
| quebrar . . . like <i>sembrar</i> , | § 463. |
| querer . . .                        | § 534. |

## R.

|   |           |
|---|-----------|
| raer . . . . .                            | § 556.    |
| rarefacier . . . like <i>satisfacer</i> , | § 531.    |
| pp. <i>rarefecho</i> .                    |           |
| reagradecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,      | § 374, a. |

|  |           |
|--|-----------|
| reaparecer . . . like <i>carecer</i> , | § 374, a. |
| reapretar . . . " <i>apretar</i> ,     | § 461.    |
| reaventar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,     | § 459.    |
| rebendecir . . . " <i>bendecir</i> ,   | § 540.    |
| reblandecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,   | § 374, a. |
| rebullirse . . . " <i>bullir</i> ,     | § 378, a. |
| recaer . . . " <i>caer</i> ,           | § 544.    |
| recalentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,    | § 459.    |
| recentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,      | § 459.    |
| receñir . . . " <i>ceñir</i> ,         | § 518.    |
| recluir . . . " <i>huir</i> ,          | § 522.    |
| recocer . . . " <i>cocer</i> ,         | § 497.    |
| recolar . . . " <i>volar</i> ,         | § 476.    |
| recolegir . . . " <i>regir</i> ,       | § 515.    |
| recomendar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,    | § 459.    |
| recomponer . . . " <i>poner</i> ,      | § 533.    |
| pp. <i>recompuesto</i> .               |           |
| reconducir . . . " <i>conducir</i> ,   | § 538.    |
| reconocer . . . " <i>conocer</i> ,     | § 374, c. |
| reconstruir . . . " <i>huir</i> ,      | § 522.    |
| recontar . . . " <i>contar</i> ,       | § 477.    |
| reconvalecer, " <i>carecer</i> ,       | § 374, a. |
| reconvenir . . . " <i>venir</i> ,      | § 541.    |
| recordar . . . " <i>acordar</i> ,      | § 474.    |
| recostar . . . " <i>costar</i> ,       | § 473.    |
| recrecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,      | § 374, a. |
| recrudecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| redargüir . . . " <i>argüir</i> ,      | § 526.    |
| redoler . . . " <i>moler</i> ,         | § 492.    |
| reducir . . . " <i>conducir</i> ,      | § 538.    |
| reelegir . . . " <i>regir</i> ,        | § 515.    |
| reencomendar, " <i>alentar</i> ,       | § 459.    |
| referir . . . " <i>herir</i> ,         | § 500.    |
| reflorecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,    | § 374, a. |
| refluir . . . " <i>huir</i> ,          | § 522.    |
| reforzar . . . " <i>forzar</i> ,       | § 486.    |
| refregar . . . " <i>negar</i> ,        | § 468.    |
| refreir . . . " <i>reir</i> ,          | § 520.    |

pp. *refreido* and *refrito*.

|                                     |           |
|-------------------------------------|-----------|
| regañir . . . like <i>plañir</i> ,  | § 378, c. |
| regar . . . " <i>negar</i> ,        | § 468.    |
| regimentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , | § 459.    |
| regir . . . . .                     | § 515.    |
| regoldar . . . " <i>agorar</i> ,    | § 488.    |
| regruñir . . . " <i>plañir</i> ,    | § 378, c. |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| rehacer . . . like <i>hacer</i> , § 530.       | resentirse . . . like <i>sentir</i> , § 499.   |
| pp. <i>rehecho</i> .                           | resolver . . . " <i>volver</i> , § 491.        |
| rehenchir . . . " <i>henchir</i> , § 378, d.   | pp. <i>resuelto</i> .                          |
| reherir . . . " <i>herir</i> , § 500.          | resollar . . . " <i>hollar</i> , § 475.        |
| reherrar . . . " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.        | resonar . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.          |
| rehervir . . . " <i>hervir</i> , § 503.        | resplandecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.     |
| rehollar . . . " <i>hollar</i> , § 475.        | resquebrar . . . " <i>sembrar</i> , § 463.     |
| rehuir . . . " <i>huir</i> , § 522.            | restablecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a. |
| rehumedecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.      | restituir . . . " <i>instituir</i> , § 524.    |
| reir . . . . . § 520.                          | restregar . . . " <i>negar</i> , § 468.        |
| rejuvenecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a. | restrñir . . . " <i>plañir</i> , § 378, c.     |
| relentecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.  | retallecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.  |
| relucir . . . " <i>lucir</i> , § 374, d.       | retemblar . . . " <i>sembrar</i> , § 463.      |
| remendar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.       | retener . . . " <i>tener</i> , § 536.          |
| rementir . . . " <i>sentir</i> , § 499.        | retentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.       |
| remolar . . . " <i>volar</i> , § 476.          | reteñir . . . " <i>ceñir</i> , § 518.          |
| remoler . . . " <i>moler</i> , § 492.          | retiñir . . . " <i>plañir</i> , § 378, c.      |
| remorder . . . " <i>morder</i> , § 490.        | retoñecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   |
| remover . . . " <i>mover</i> , § 489.          | retorcer . . . " <i>torcer</i> , § 496.        |
| remullir . . . " <i>bullir</i> , § 378, a.     | retostar . . . " <i>costar</i> , § 473.        |
| renacer . . . " <i>nacer</i> , § 374, b.       | retraer . . . " <i>traer</i> , § 537.          |
| rendir . . . " <i>servir</i> , § 513.          | retribuir . . . " <i>atribuir</i> , § 523.     |
| renegar . . . " <i>negar</i> , § 468.          | retronar . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.         |
| renovar . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.          | retrotraer . . . " <i>traer</i> , § 537.       |
| reñir . . . " <i>ceñir</i> , § 518.            | revejecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   |
| repacer . . . " <i>nacer</i> , § 374, b.       | revenirse . . . " <i>venir</i> , § 541.        |
| repadecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.   | reventar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.       |
| repedir . . . " <i>pedir</i> , § 512.          | rever . . . " <i>ver</i> , § 548.              |
| repensar . . . " <i>pensar</i> , § 457.        | pp. <i>revisto</i> .                           |
| repetir . . . " <i>pedir</i> , § 512.          | reverdecir . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.  |
| replegar . . . " <i>negar</i> , § 468.         | reverter . . . " <i>perder</i> , § 470.        |
| repoblar . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.         | revestir . . . " <i>servir</i> , § 513.        |
| repodrir . . . " <i>podrir</i> , § 510.        | revolar . . . " <i>volar</i> , § 476.          |
| reponer . . . " <i>poner</i> , § 533.          | revolcarse . . . " <i>trocar</i> , § 482.      |
| pp. <i>repuesto</i> .                          | revolver . . . " <i>volver</i> , § 491.        |
| reprobar . . . " <i>probar</i> , § 478.        | pp. <i>revuelto</i> .                          |
| reproducir . . . " <i>conducir</i> , § 538.    | robustecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.  |
| repudrir . . . " <i>podrir</i> , § 510.        | rodar . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.            |
| requerbrar . . . " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.      | roer . . . . . § 557.                          |
| requerer . . . " <i>querer</i> , § 534.        | rogar . . . . . § 483.                         |
| requerir . . . " <i>herir</i> , § 500.         |  |
| resaber . . . " <i>saber</i> , § 535.          | S.   |
| resalir . . . " <i>salir</i> , § 554.          | saber . . . . . § 535.                         |
| resegar . . . " <i>negar</i> , § 468.          | salir . . . . . § 554.                         |
| resembrar . . . " <i>sembrar</i> , § 463.      | salpimentar . . . like <i>alentar</i> , § 459. |

salpullir . . . like *bullir*, § 378, a.  
 sarmantar . . . " *alentar*, § 459.  
 sarpullir . . . " *bullir*, § 378, a.  
 satisfacer . . . § 531.

pp. *satisfecho*.

segar . . . . . " *negar*, § 468.  
 seguir . . . . . § 516.  
 sembrar . . . . . § 463.  
 sementar . . . " *alentar*, § 459.  
 sentar . . . . . " *alentar*, § 459.  
 sentir . . . . . § 499.  
 ser . . . . . § 385.  
 serrar . . . . . " *cerrar*, § 460.  
 servir . . . . . § 513.  
 simenzar . . . " *empesar*, § 469.  
 sobrecrecer . . " *carecer*, § 374, a.

sobreentender, " *entender*, § 471.

sobrentender, " *entender*, § 471.

sobreponer . . . " *poner*, § 533.

pp. *sobrepuesto*.

sobresalir . . . " *salir*, § 554.  
 sobreseñar, " *señar*, § 463.  
 sobresolar . . . " *volar*, § 476.  
 sobrevenir . . . " *venir*, § 541.  
 sobreventar . . " *alentar*, § 459.  
 sobrevertirse, " *perder*, § 470.  
 sobrevestir . . . " *sentir*, § 499.  
 sofreir . . . . . " *reir*, § 520.

pps. *sofreido* and *sofrito*.

solar . . . . . like *volar*, § 476.  
 soldar . . . . . " *acordar*, § 474.  
 soler . . . . . § 559.  
 soltar . . . . . " *acordar*, § 474.  
 [solver] . . . . . " *volver*, § 491.

pp. *suelto*.

sollar . . . . . " *hollar*, § 475.  
 somover . . . . . " *mover*, § 489.  
 sonar . . . . . § 472.  
 sonreir . . . . . " *reir*, § 520.  
 sonrodarse . . . " *volar*, § 476.  
 soñar . . . . . " *sonar*, § 472.  
 sorregar . . . . . " *negar*, § 468.  
 sosegar . . . . . " *negar*, § 468.  
 sostener . . . . . " *tener*, § 536.  
 soterrar . . . . . " *cerrar*, § 460.

subarrendar. like *alentar*, § 459.

subentender. " *entender*, § 471.

subseguir . . . . . " *seguir*, § 516.

substituir . . . . . " *instituir*, § 524.

substraer . . . . . " *traer*, § 537.

subtender . . . . . " *entender*, § 471.

subvenir . . . . . " *venir*, § 541.

subvertir . . . . . " *advertir*, § 502.

sugerir . . . . . " *herir*, § 500.

superponer . . . . . " *poner*, § 533.

pp. *superpuesto*.

supervenir . . . . . " *venir*, § 541.

suponer . . . . . " *poner*, § 533.

pp. *supuesto*.

sustituir . . . . . " *instituir*, § 524.

sustraer . . . . . " *traer*, § 537.

# T.

tallecer . . . . . like *carecer*, § 374, a.

tañer . . . . . § 378, b.

temblar . . . . . " *sembrar*, § 463.

tender . . . . . " *entender*, § 471.

tener . . . . . § 536.

tentar . . . . . " *alentar*, § 459.

teñir . . . . . " *ceñir*, § 518.

torcer . . . . . § 496.

tostar . . . . . " *costar*, § 473.

traducir . . . . . " *conducir*, § 538.

traer . . . . . § 537.

transcender . . . . . " *entender*, § 471.

transfregar . . . . . " *negar*, § 468.

translucirse . . . . . " *lucir*, § 374, d.

transponer . . . . . " *poner*, § 533.

pp. *transpuesto*.

trascender . . . . . " *entender*, § 471.

trascolar . . . . . " *volar*, § 476.

trascordarse, " *acordar*, § 474.

trasegar . . . . . " *negar*, § 468.

trasferir . . . . . " *herir*, § 500.

trafregar . . . . . " *negar*, § 468.

traslucir . . . . . " *lucir*, § 374, d.

trasoír . . . . . " *oir*, § 553.

trasoñar . . . . . " *sonar*, § 472.

trasponer . . . . . " *poner*, § 533.

pp. *traspuesto*.



|                      |                               |           |
|----------------------|-------------------------------|-----------|
| <b>trastrocar</b>    | . like <i>trocar</i> ,        | § 482.    |
| <b>trasverter</b>    | . " <i>perder</i> ,           | § 470.    |
| <b>trasvolar</b>     | . " <i>vo.</i> <sup>~</sup> ; | § 476.    |
| <b>travesar</b>      | . " <i>acertar</i> ,          | § 458.    |
| <b>trocar</b>        | . . . . .                     | § 482.    |
| <b>tronar</b>        | . . . . .                     | § 472.    |
| <b>tropezar</b>      | . . . . .                     | § 469.    |
| <b>tullir</b>        | . . . . .                     | § 378, a. |
| <b>tumefacerse</b> , | " <i>satisfacer</i> ,         | § 531.    |

pp. *tumefecho*.

## V.

|                    |                             |        |
|--------------------|-----------------------------|--------|
| <b>valer</b>       | . . . . .                   | § 547. |
| <b>venir</b>       | . . . . .                   | § 541. |
| <b>ventar</b>      | . . . like <i>alentar</i> , | § 459. |
| <b>ver</b>         | . . . . .                   | § 548. |
| pp. <i>visto</i> . |                             |        |

|                     |                             |                          |
|---------------------|-----------------------------|--------------------------|
| <b>verdecen</b>     | . . . like <i>carecer</i> , | § 374, a.                |
| <b>verter</b>       | . . . . .                   | " <i>perder</i> , § 470. |
| <b>vestir</b>       | . . . . .                   | " <i>servir</i> , § 513. |
| <b>volar</b>        | . . . . .                   | § 476.                   |
| <b>volcar</b>       | . . . . .                   | " <i>trocar</i> , § 482. |
| <b>volver</b>       | . . . . .                   | § 491.                   |
| pp. <i>vuelto</i> . |                             |                          |

## Y.

|                          |                       |        |
|--------------------------|-----------------------|--------|
| <b>yacer</b>             | . . . . .             | § 550. |
| <b>yuxtaponer</b>        | . like <i>poner</i> , | § 533. |
| pp. <i>yuxtapuesto</i> . |                       |        |

## Z.

|                    |                            |                             |
|--------------------|----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <b>zabullir</b>    | . . . like <i>bullir</i> , | § 378, a.                   |
| <b>zaherir</b>     | . . . . .                  | " <i>herir</i> , § 500.     |
| <b>zambullirse</b> | . . . . .                  | " <i>bullir</i> , § 378, a. |

The Adverb.

**575.** Adverbs may be classed according to their **form** and **signification**.

**576.** With reference to their *form*, adverbs are **simple** or **compound**.

**577.** *Simple* adverbs are further divisible into **primitive** and **derivative**.

**578.** A *primitive* adverb is one that is expressed by an originally single word, without affixes or etymological adhesions, as :—

**sí; no; bien; mal; luego,** | **yes; no; well; badly; presently.**

*a.* Some adverbs, though simple in form, are etymologically compound :—

|   |  |   |
|---|--|---|
| <b>acaso</b> (from <b>á caso</b> ), <i>perchance.</i> |  | <b>despacio</b> ( <b>de espacio</b> ), <i>slowly.</i> |
| <b>amenudo</b> ( <b>á menudo</b> ), <i>often.</i>     |  | <b>apénas</b> ( <b>á penas</b> ), <i>scarcely.</i>    |

*b.* Many simple adverbs are properly neuter adjectives temporarily used as adverbs :—

|                                    |  |                              |  |                                  |
|------------------------------------|--|------------------------------|--|----------------------------------|
| <b>alto</b> , <i>aloud.</i>        |  | <b>mucho</b> , <i>much.</i>  |  | <b>sólo</b> , <i>only.</i>       |
| <b>bajo</b> , <i>low.</i>          |  | <b>poco</b> , <i>little.</i> |  | <b>súbito</b> , <i>suddenly.</i> |
| <b>falso</b> , <i>out of tune.</i> |  | <b>pronto</b> , <i>soon.</i> |  | <b>temprano</b> , <i>early.</i>  |

**579.** *Derivative* adverbs are formed principally from common adjectives by applying to them the affix **-mente** (corresponding to the English ending *-ly*), agreeably to the following laws :—

*a.* Common adjectives in *o* (fem. *a*) attach the affix to the feminine form :—

|             |                 |               |                |
|-------------|-----------------|---------------|----------------|
| franco ;    | francamente,    | frank ;       | frankly.       |
| orgullosa ; | orgullosamente, | proud ;       | proudly.       |
| gracioso ;  | graciosamente,  | graceful ;    | gracefully.    |
| acertado ;  | acertadamente,  | appropriate ; | appropriately. |
| cierto ;    | ciertamente,    | sure ;        | surely.        |

REMARK. — Common adjectives of two terminations that do not end in *-o*, form their adverbs by a circumlocution with *manera*, *manner*, never in *-mente* :—

burlon, a, *roguish* — *de una manera burlona, roguishly*.

b. If the adjective be of one termination for both genders, the affix is applied to the common form :—

|            |                |            |             |
|------------|----------------|------------|-------------|
| prudente ; | prudentemente, | prudent ;  | prudently.  |
| cortés ;   | cortésmente,   | polite ;   | politely.   |
| fácil ;    | fácilmente,    | easy ;     | easily.     |
| feliz ;    | felizmente,    | happy ;    | happily.    |
| fiel ;     | fielmente,     | faithful ; | faithfully. |

REMARK. — The affix *-mente* is originally the ablative singular of the Latin feminine noun *mens*, the *mind*, which finally passed over into the popular signification of *manner*, replacing the classic endings *-ter*, *-e*, etc. Thus :—

|                           |                           |
|---------------------------|---------------------------|
| certâ mente, ciertamente, | felici mente, felizmente. |
| facili mente, fácilmente. | fideli mente, fielmente.  |

At different periods of the Spanish language, the affix was variously written *mientre*, *miente*, and *mente*, and was generally separated from the adjective till about the beginning of the fifteenth century.

580. The affix *-mente* is **atonic**, and does not, therefore, modify, in any way, the accent or structure of the adjective :—

|               |                 |            |                |
|---------------|-----------------|------------|----------------|
| ásperamente ; | fácilmente,     | harshly ;  | easily.        |
| útilmente ;   | cortésmente,    | usefully ; | politely.      |
| ciértamente ; | certísimamente, | surely ;   | very surely.   |
| fuértamente ; | fortísimamente, | strongly ; | most strongly. |

**581.** When two or more adverbs in *-mente* follow one another connected by a conjunction, the affix is applied to the last adjective only:—

|                                |                           |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------|
| clara y distintamente,         | clearly and distinctly.   |
| justa ó injustamente,          | justly or unjustly.       |
| prudente pero terminantemente, | prudently, but decidedly. |

**582.** Adverbs in *-mente* usually express **manner**, and in this sense may be equally turned into adverbial phrases by employing the adjective with the noun **manera** or **modo**, *way, manner*:—

seguramente, de una manera segura, or de un modo seguro.  
 terminantemente, de una manera (or de un modo) terminante.  
 justa y verdaderamente, or de un modo justo y verdadero.

**583.** Adjectives derived from the names of countries, provinces, and cities, are made adverbs of manner by assuming the dative singular feminine with the definite article, agreeing with some noun understood like **usanza**, *usage, style, fashion*:—

|                  |                             |
|------------------|-----------------------------|
| á la española,   | in the Spanish fashion.     |
| á la francesa,   | in the French style.        |
| á la valenciana, | after the mode of Valencia. |
| á la andaluza,   | in the Andalusian style.    |

These forms correspond to the Latin *more hispanico, gallico, valentino, bætico*.

**REMARK.**—The same idea may be rendered by the phrase **al estilo** followed by the adjective, or **al estilo de** followed by the proper noun:—

|                        |                              |
|------------------------|------------------------------|
| al estilo andaluz,     | in the Andalusian style.     |
| al estilo de Castilla, | after the manner of Castile. |

584. Many common adjectives assume the feminine formula with *á la*, when they express *manner*, and adopt the adverbial affix when they indicate *time*:—

|                                    |                              |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>á la antigua, á la moderna,</i> | in ancient — modern — style. |
| <i>antiguamente; modernamente,</i> | anciently; in recent times.  |

585. A few adjectives derived from proper nouns also admit the adverbial formula *á la*:—

|  |                              |
|--|------------------------------|
| <i>andar á la jineta,</i> <sup>1</sup> | to ride with short stirrups. |
| <i>vestido á la maja,</i> <sup>2</sup> | dressed picturesquely.       |

586. A very few derivative adverbs have the inorganic affix *s*, which belongs to a comparatively late period in the development of the language:—

| OLD.  | MODERN.                  |                    |
|---|--------------------------|--------------------|
| <i>ante;</i>                                  | <i>ánte,</i>             | formerly; rather.  |
| <i>dempues (de-in-post);</i>                  | <i>despues,</i>          | afterwards; since. |
| <i>dende (de-inde);</i>                       | <i>desde,</i>            | since.             |
| <i>estonce (ex tunc);</i>                     | <i>entónces,</i>         | then.              |
| <i>mientras ([du]m interim);</i> <sup>3</sup> | <i>mientras,</i>         | while.             |
| <i>quiza (quis sapit);</i>                    | <i>quizás and quizá,</i> | perhaps.           |

REMARK.—In the adverb *léjos, far, far off*, the *s* is organic, the word being from *laxius*,—by attraction, *laixus* and *lexos*,—the form in which it was written prior to the appearance of the Academy's *Dictionary* in 1726–39.

<sup>1</sup> The *jinete* or *ginete* is a name derived from that of a Barbary clan,—the *Beni-Zenēta*,—once the famous Moorish cavalry of Spain, characterized, aside from their armor, by their peculiar mode of riding, so that *andar á la jineta* now means *to ride with short stirrups*, after the manner of the “Zeneta” family.

<sup>2</sup> The “Maja” and “Manola” are Spanish types of women now only to be met with, as such, in the plays of Ramon de la Cruz, or on the boards of the Madrid theatres. In their fatigue uniforms of plain *percalina*, their descendants are soberly employed in the government tobacco factories.

<sup>3</sup> Compare *Mingo*, old Spanish for *Domingo*, *Dominic*.

**587.** *Compound* adverbs consist of two or more words variously associated, as substantives, adjectives, and adverbs with prepositions, adverbs with adverbs, etc.

*a.* With the article:—

á la clara, } manifestly.  
 á las claras, }  
 á la larga, *in the long run*.  
 á la ligera, *superficially*.  
 á la moda, *in fashion*.  
 á la verdad, *truly*.  
 al contado, *in cash, cash*.  
 al momento, *instantly*.  
 al paso, *at a walk, slowly*.

al punto, *immediately*.  
 al revés, *on the other side*.  
 al vivo, *to the life*.  
 á lo divino, *in the sacred style*.  
 en el acto, *instantly*.  
 en lo sucesivo, *henceforward*.  
 por lo más, *at most*.  
 por lo ménos, *at least*.  
 por lo pronto, *for the present*.

*b.* Without the article, singular:—

á caballo, *on horseback*.  
 á conciencia, *conscientiously*.  
 á escape, *in haste, quick*.  
 á menudo, *often*.  
 á pié, *on foot*.  
 á porfía, *persistently*.  
 á una, *together*,  
 con ligereza, *superficially*.  
 con todo, *notwithstanding*.  
 de antemano, *beforehand*.  
 de buena gana, *willingly*.  
 de continuo, *continually*.  
 de día, *by day*.  
 de etiqueta, *in full dress*.  
 de frente, *face to face*.  
 de golpe, *suddenly*.  
 de hecho, *de facto, truly*.  
 de improviso, *off one's guard*.  
 de lance, *at a bargain*.  
 de molde, *perfectly*.  
 de noche, *by night*.  
 de nuevo, *anew*.

de paso, *on one's way*.  
 de prisa, *in haste*.  
 de pronto, *quickly*.  
 de propósito, *purposely*.  
 de raíz, *radically*.  
 de seguro, *surely*.  
 de suyo, *of one's own accord*.  
 de todo punto, *wholly*.  
 de tropel, *pell-mell*.  
 de vista, *by sight*.  
 en fin, *finally*.  
 en resúmen, *in short*.  
 en seguida, *at once*.  
 por alto, *over*.  
 por cierto, *certainly, of course*.  
 por consiguiente, *consequently*.  
 por mayor, *at wholesale*.  
 por menor, *at retail*.  
 por supuesto, *of course*.  
 por último, *lastly*.  
 por ventura, *peradventure*.  
 sin novedad, *as usual*.

## c. Without the article, plural :—

á ciegas, *blindly*.  
 á coces, *with kicks, kicking*.  
 á cuestras, *on one's shoulders*.  
 á escondidas, *secretly*.  
 á escondillas, *stealthily*.  
 á gatas, *on all fours*.  
 á hurtadillas, *stealthily*.  
 á oscuras, *in the dark*.  
 á pié juntillas, *firmly*.  
 á ojos cerrados, *blindly*.  
 á trechos, *at intervals*.

á sabiendas, *wittingly, knowing*.  
 á secas, *plainly, plain*.<sup>1</sup> [*ly*.  
 á solas, *alone, in private*.  
 á tientas, *feeling one's way*.  
 á voces, *aloud*.  
 de oídas, *by hearsay, report*.  
 de rodillas, *on one's knees*.  
 de veras, *truly*.  
 en ayunas, *agog, uninformed*.  
 en cueros, *naked*.  
 por momentos, *every moment*.

588. To these may be added a few Latin technical terms, some of them more or less corrupted :—

alias,<sup>2</sup> *otherwise called*.  
 ex profeso, *purposely*.  
 grátis, *gratis*.  
 inclusive, *inclusive*.  
 incontinenti, *at once*.

infraganti (*flagranti delicto*), *in the act*.  
 interin, *meanwhile*.  
 item and iten, *furthermore*.  
 máxime, *especially*.

589. With reference to their *signification*, adverbs may be variously classed as :—

a. Adverbs of *time* :—

ahora ; entónces,  
 amenudo ; raras veces,  
 anoche ; anteanoche,  
 ántes ; despues,  
 ayer ; anteayer,  
 hoy ; mañana,  
 siempre ; nunca,  
 tarde ; temprano,

now ; then.  
 often ; seldom.  
 last night ; night before last.  
 before ; afterward.  
 yesterday ; day before yesterday.  
 to-day ; to-morrow.  
 always ; never.  
 late ; early.

<sup>1</sup> As : se llamó Amadís á secas, *he called himself plain Amadis*.

<sup>2</sup> Always written in abbreviation and between parentheses ; as, José Blanco (a) Pepito el Chico, *Joseph White, alias "Little Joe."*

*b. Adverbs of place:—*

|                                |                               |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| adelante; atrás,               | forward; backward.            |
| á derecha; á izquierda,        | on the right; on the left.    |
| aquí, allí; acá, allá,         | here, there; hither, thither. |
| arriba; abajo; encima; debajo, | up; down; above; below.       |
| cerca; lejos; dentro; fuera,   | near; far; within; without.   |

*c. Adverbs of manner:—*

|                              |                               |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| así; como,                   | so; as.                       |
| alto, <i>or</i> en alta voz, | aloud, <i>or</i> audibly.     |
| bajo, <i>or</i> en voz baja, | low, <i>or</i> in a low tone. |
| bien; mal,                   | well; badly <i>or</i> ill.    |
| con el aliento,              | in a whisper.                 |
| mejor; peor,                 | better; worse.                |

and most adverbs in *-mente*.

*d. Adverbs of quantity:—*

|  |                            |
|--|----------------------------|
| mucho; muy; poco,                      | much; very; little.        |
| ménos; por lo menos,                   | less; at least.            |
| más; por lo más,                       | more; at most.             |
| demasiado, <i>or</i> sobrado,          | too; too much.             |
| bastante; harto ( <i>asaz, obs.</i> ), | enough; sufficiently.      |
| algo; como; apenas,                    | somewhat; about; scarcely. |

*e. Adverbs of affirmation and negation:—*

|                              |                                    |
|------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| sí; eso sí; justo; claro,    | yes; that indeed; true; of course. |
| por supuesto; por cierto,    | of course; certainly.              |
| ciertamente; verdaderamente, | surely; truly.                     |
| sin duda,                    | undoubtedly.                       |
| no; eso no; nada,            | no; not that; not at all.          |
| tampoco; ni yo tampoco,      | no; nor I either.                  |
| nunca; jamás,                | never.                             |

*f. Adverbs of doubt:—*

|                                   |                       |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------|
| acaso; tal vez, <i>or</i> quizás, | perchance; perhaps.   |
| apénas; probablemente,            | hardly; probably.     |
| diffícilmente,                    | unlikely, improbably. |



**590.** There are also in Spanish a great number of adverbial phrases like the following:—

|  |                     |  |
|--|---------------------|--|
| á más correr, <i>at one's utmost speed.</i>  | [ <i>might.</i> ]   | en alguna parte, <i>somewhere.</i>             |
| á más no poder, <i>with all one's</i>        |                     | en cualquier parte, <i>anywhere.</i>           |
| á más tardar, <i>at the latest.</i>          |                     | en ninguna parte, } <i>nowhere.</i>            |
| cuando ménos, <i>at least.</i>               |                     | en parte alguna, }                             |
| cuanto ántes, <i>as soon as possible.</i>    |                     | en otra parte, <i>elsewhere.</i>               |
| de acá para allá, <i>hither and thither.</i> |                     | hoy día, } <i>at the present day,</i>          |
| de aquí para allí, <i>here and there.</i>    |                     | hoy en día, } <i>now-a-days.</i>               |
| de cuando en cuando, } <i>now and</i>        |                     | luego á luego, <i>little by little (time).</i> |
| de vez en cuando, } <i>then.</i>             |                     | paso á paso, <i>step by step, slowly.</i>      |
| de hito en hito, (to look) <i>through</i>    |                     | poco á poco, <i>little by little (de-</i>      |
| <i>and through.</i>                          | [ <i>through.</i> ] | <i>gree).</i>                                  |
| de parte á parte, (to thrust)                |                     | uno á uno, <i>one by one, one after</i>        |
|  |                     | <i>another.</i>                                |

**591.** Adverbs in *-mente* are frequently replaced by a phrase composed of the preposition **con**, *with*, and the appropriate noun:—

|                 |    |                |                 |
|-----------------|----|----------------|-----------------|
| francamente,    | or | con franqueza, | frankly.        |
| maliciosamente, | or | con malicia,   | maliciously.    |
| rápidamente,    | or | con rapidéz,   | rapidly.        |
| recelosamente,  | or | con recelo,    | apprehensively. |
| enojosamente,   | or | con enojo,     | angrily.        |
| cautelosamente, | or | con cautela,   | circumspectly.  |

#### Use of Certain Adverbs.

**592.** Some adverbs stand after nouns in the sense of “up” and “down,” “out” and “in,” “before” and “after,” etc:—

|                                     |                                       |
|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| escalera arriba, <i>up stairs.</i>  | mar afuera, <i>seaward.</i>           |
| escalera abajo, <i>down stairs.</i> | camino adelante, <i>onward.</i>       |
| cuesta arriba, <i>up hill.</i>      | meses ántes, <i>months before.</i>    |
| ciudad abajo, <i>down town.</i>     | días despues, <i>days afterwards.</i> |
| tierra adentro, <i>inland.</i>      | años atrás, <i>years back, ago.</i>   |

593. The words **acaso** in the modern language, and **por ventura** in the quainter style, both meaning *forsooth, pray*, are often mere interrogative signs, and as such need not be translated:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| ¿ <b>acaso</b> soy yo el que tengo la culpa?                  | am I the one to blame (forsooth)?       |
| ¿ <b>acaso</b> no me entiende V.?                             | don't you understand me?                |
| ¿es hora esta <b>por ventura</b> de hallar la puerta abierta? | is this an hour to find the door open?  |
| ¿y habéisla visto algun dia <b>por ventura</b> ?              | and have ye seen her at any time, pray? |

594. **Aquí, ahí, and allí**, with verbs of rest, bear the same relation to each other that the demonstratives *este, ese, and aquel*, do. With verbs of motion, they properly assume the forms **acá, ahí, allá**:—

| REST.                           | MOTION.   |  |
|---------------------------------|-----------|--|
| aquí,                           | acá,      | here (where <i>I</i> am).                |
| ahí,                            | ahí,      | there (where <i>you</i> are).            |
| allí,                           | allá,     | there (distant from both).               |
| por aquí,                       | por acá,  | this way, here, hereabouts.              |
| por ahí,                        | por ahí,  | that way, there, thereabouts.            |
| por allí,                       | por allá, | that way, there, thereabouts.            |
| aquí está,                      |           | here he is,                              |
| viene acá,                      |           | here he comes, } (where <i>I</i> am).    |
| ahí está,                       |           | there he is,                             |
| ahí va,                         |           | there he goes, } (where <i>you</i> are). |
| allí está,                      |           | there he is,                             |
| allá va,                        |           | there he goes, } (distant from both).    |
| ¿vive V. <b>por aquí</b> ?      |           | do you live hereabouts?                  |
| coloque V. eso <b>por ahí</b> , |           | set that there, somewhere.               |

REMARK.—**Por ahí** has also certain vague meanings referring to the whereabouts of persons and things, not easily translated. It is conveniently used when we do not know or wish to declare where a person or thing is, as well in a favorable as in an unfavorable sense:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| ¿dónde está fulano?—estará por<br>ahí,<br>anda por ahí como siempre,<br>la cesta está por ahí fuera, | where is so and so?—I presume<br>he's off somewhere.<br>he is at his old haunts. [where.<br>the basket is out there some- |
|--|---|

a. We may say **aquí en**, *here in* (Madrid, where *I* am); **ahí en**, *there in* (Valparaíso, where *you* are); but **allá en**, *there in* (California, where *neither* is)—never **alli en**. In good English, the adverb is usually omitted in such cases:—

|                     |                         |
|---------------------|-------------------------|
| aquí en Filadélfia, | (here) in Philadelphia. |
| ahí en Sevilla,     | (there) in Seville.     |
| allá en Bóston,     | (there) in Boston.      |

b. By the same principle, **de aquí** means *from here*, or *hence* (from what *I* have said); **de ahí**, *thence* (from what *you* have said); and **de allí**, *from there*, *thence* (from what *has been* said).

595. **Donde**, *where*, is either an interrogative adverb of place, or a relative signifying *which*. Its meaning is rendered specific by prepositions like **á**, *to*; **en**, *in*; **de**, *from*, and **por**, *through*:—

*Interrogative.*

|                     |   |
|---------------------|---|
| ¿dónde vive V.?     | where do you live? ( <i>rest.</i> )     |
| ¿á dónde va V.?     | where are you going? ( <i>motion.</i> ) |
| ¿de dónde viene V.? | where do you come from?                 |
| ¿por dónde pasa V.? | which way do you go?                    |

*Relative.*

|                                      |   |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| la calle donde, or en donde<br>vive, | the street where or in which he<br>lives. |
| la calle á donde va,                 | the street to which he goes.              |
| la calle de donde viene,             | the street from which he comes.           |
| las calles por donde pasa,           | the streets through which he<br>passes.   |

**REMARK.** — **Donde** assumes the graphic accent only when it is interrogative in a direct or indirect sentence : —

|                             |                                  |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------------|
| ¿ <b>dónde</b> vive?        | where does he live?              |
| no sé <b>dónde</b> vive,    | I do not know where he lives.    |
| ¿ <b>á dónde</b> va?        | where is he going?               |
| ignoro <b>á dónde</b> vaya, | I do not know where he is going. |

**596.** The adverbs *ago*, *since*, are expressed by certain tenses of the verbs **hacer** and **haber** used impersonally : —

| <i>hacer</i>              | <i>haber</i>             |                             |
|---------------------------|--------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <b>hace</b> cuatro días,  | cuatro días <b>há</b> ,  | four days ago.              |
| <b>hace</b> mucho tiempo, | mucho tiempo <b>há</b> , | long ago.                   |
| <b>hacía</b> un mes,      | un mes <b>había</b> ,    | (it was) a month ago.       |
| <b>hará</b> seis años,    | seis años <b>habrá</b> , | (it will be) six years ago. |

**597.** **Mismo** qualifies such adverbs of time and place as *ahora*, *hoy*, *ayer*, *mañana*, *aquí*, *allí*, etc. : —

|   |                                    |
|---|------------------------------------|
| ahora <b>mismo</b> ; hoy <b>mismo</b> ,   | this very moment ; — day.          |
| ayer <b>mismo</b> ; mañana <b>mismo</b> , | only yesterday ; to-morrow surely. |
| aquí <b>mismo</b> ; allí <b>mismo</b> ,   | in this — that — very place.       |

**598.** **Muy**, *very*, *very much*, qualifies adjectives, adverbs, and adverbial expressions, in the *positive* degree : —

|  |                                 |
|--|---------------------------------|
| <b>muy</b> bueno ; <b>muy</b> bien,        | very good ; very well.          |
| <b>muy</b> amado ; <b>muy</b> alegremente, | very much beloved ; very gaily. |
| <b>muy</b> á la ligera,                    | very rapidly, superficially.    |

*a.* Likewise past participles of verbs conjugated with *ser*, *estar*, or their substitutes : —

|  |                              |
|--|------------------------------|
| es <b>muy</b> amado,                     | he is very much beloved.     |
| estaba <b>muy</b> afligido,              | he was very much grieved.    |
| se quedó <b>muy</b> satisfecho,          | he was very well satisfied.  |
| <b>muy</b> airado ; <b>muy</b> exaltado, | very much angered — excited. |

**599. Mucho, much, and muchísimo, very much,** qualify adjectives, adverbs, and adverbial phrases, in the *comparative* degree:—

|                                  |                           |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------|
| <b>mucho</b> mejor ; mucho peor, | much better ; much worse. |
| <b>mucho</b> más ; mucho ménos,  | much more ; much less.    |
| <b>mucho</b> más contento,       | much better pleased.      |
| <b>muchísimo</b> mejor — peor,   | very much better — worse. |

*a.* Likewise verbs, and past participles conjugated with *haber*:—

|   |                                 |
|---|---------------------------------|
| lo siento <b>mucho</b> — <b>muchísimo</b> , | I regret it much — very much.   |
| no conviene hablar <b>mucho</b> ,           | it is not fitting to talk much. |
| se ha quejado <b>mucho</b> ,                | he complained a good deal.      |
| han sufrido <b>muchísimo</b> ,              | they endured very much.         |

*a.* *Muy* cannot qualify *mucho*, in the present state of the language ; *very much, a great deal*, must be expressed by the superlative **muchísimo**:—

|                           |                          |
|---------------------------|--------------------------|
| pide <b>muchísimo</b> ,   | he demands a great deal. |
| padece <b>muchísimo</b> , | he suffers very much.    |

*b.* *Muy* can never stand alone without an adjective or an adverb ; in such case it is always replaced by *mucho* in the signification of *muy*:—

|  |                             |
|--|-----------------------------|
| ¿es divertido el cuento?— <b>mucho</b> ,             | is the story amusing?—very. |
| ¿está muy triste?—sí, <b>mucho</b> ,                 | is he very sad?—yes, very ; |
| but not <i>mucho</i> divertido, <i>mucho</i> triste. |                             |

**600. Recientemente, recently,** is reduced to **recien** when standing as an adverb before participial adjectives:—

|                                  |                           |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------|
| llegó <b>recientemente</b> ,     | he arrived recently.      |
| el <b>recien</b> llegado,        | the newly-arrived person. |
| un niño <b>recien</b> nacido,    | a new-born child.         |
| los <b>recien</b> venidos,       | the new comers.           |
| los <b>recien</b> casados,       | the newly-married pair.   |
| casas <b>recien</b> construidas, | newly-built houses.       |

**601.** The conjunction **si**, *if*, is often employed adverbially to mean *why*, expressive of wonder, surprise, or it may have the force of an expletive :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>si</b> no he dicho nada,                      | why, I did not say anything.                 |
| <b>si</b> lo acabo de ver,                       | why, I just saw it.                          |
| pero, señores, <b>si</b> no lo he dicho todavía. | but, gentlemen, I have not mentioned it yet. |

**602.** **Si** (with the graphic accent) signifies *yes*, and may be strengthened and emphasized by adding particles like *tal*, *que*, or by its position. It is then translated by *yes*, *indeed*, or by one of the modal auxiliaries *do*, *did*, *would*, etc. :—

|  |   |                            |   |
|--|---|----------------------------|---|
| ¿lo ve V. ya?—   | <b>si tal,</b><br><b>si que lo veo,</b><br>lo veo, <b>si,</b> | do you see it now?—        | <b>I do.</b><br>indeed, I do.<br>yes, I do.       |
| ¿vendrá V.?—   | <b>si tal,</b><br><b>si que vendré,</b><br>vendré, <b>si,</b> | will you come?—            | <b>I will.</b><br>indeed, I will.<br>yes, I will. |
| ¿le conviene á V. esto?—<br>que me conviene,                   | <b>eso si</b>   | does this suit you?—       | that, indeed,<br>does suit me.                    |
| ¿le gustan á V. los cuadros?—<br><b>esos si</b> que me gustan, |   | do you like the pictures?— | those,<br>I do, indeed.                           |

*a.* In contrasted clauses, **si** is likewise equivalent to *indeed*, *I grant*, *I concede*, or to any appropriate modal auxiliary :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| pobre, <b>si</b> ; pero honrado como ninguno, <sup>1</sup> | poor, it is true; but second to none in integrity.    |
| vendré, <b>si</b> ; pero no hoy,                           | I will come; but not to-day.                          |
| es licencia, <b>si</b> ; pero no poética,                  | it is a license, I grant you; but not a poetical one. |
| él no lo quiso; yo, <b>si</b> ,                            | he did not wish to; I did.                            |
| estos, <b>si</b> ; pero no aquellos,                       | these, indeed; but not those.                         |

<sup>1</sup> In the dialect of the illiterate, *probe si*; *pero honrão como denguno*.

*b.* After verbs of declaring, believing, suspecting, fearing, and so forth, the adverbs **sí** and **no** are joined to such verbs by means of the conjunction **que**, *that*, and are translated by *yes* or *so*, *not*, or by the appropriate modal auxiliary : —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| dice <b>que sí</b> , — <b>que no</b> , | { he says “yes,” — “no,” <i>or</i><br>“that he will,” — “will not.” |
| creo <b>que sí</b> , — <b>que no</b> , | { I think so, — not, <i>or</i><br>that I (he) will, — will not.     |

#### Negation in Spanish.

**603.** **No** signifies *not*, and always stands before the verb, or in default of the verb, after a subject-pronoun : —

|  |                                 |
|--|---------------------------------|
| <b>no</b> tengo ; ¿ <b>no</b> tengo yo ?       | I have not ; have I not ?       |
| <b>no</b> lo tengo ; ¿ <b>no</b> lo tengo yo ? | I have it not ; have I it not ? |
| yo <b>no</b> ; ellos <b>no</b> ,               | not I ; not they.               |

**604.** Two negatives strengthen one another in Spanish. Therefore adverbs like **ni**, *neither, nor*; **nunca** or **jamás**, *never*; **nada**, *nothing, not anything*, require the verb to be made negative when they stand after the verb; but, if they stand before it, the negative is not required : —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>no</b> tengo <b>ni</b> pluma <b>ni</b> papel, } | I have neither pen nor paper.               |
| <b>no</b> tengo pluma <b>ni</b> papel, }           |   |
| <b>ni</b> pluma <b>ni</b> papel tengo, }           |   |
| <b>no</b> le he visto <b>nunca</b> , }             | I have never seen him.                      |
| <b>nunca</b> le he visto, }                        |   |
| <b>no</b> me lo dijo <b>jamás</b> , }              | he never told me so.                        |
| <b>jamás</b> me lo dijo, }                         |   |
| tal obra <b>jamás</b> la tuvo entre sus libros,    | he never had such a work among his books.   |
| <b>no</b> nos hace falta <b>nada</b> , }           | we lack nothing (nothing is wanting to us). |
| <b>nada</b> nos hace falta, }                      |   |

*a. Nunca and jamás* may be associated in the same sentence to emphasize a negation : —

|                                    |  |
|------------------------------------|--|
| ya no le hablaré nunca jamás,      | I shall <i>never</i> speak to him again. |
| nunca jamás se lo volveré á decir, | I shall never say it to him again.       |

*b. Instead of nunca or jamás, the term en mi vida, without a negative expressed, is frequently employed for never, never in my life : —*

|  |   |
|--|---|
| en mi vida he dicho semejante cosa,                    | I never said such a thing.                              |
| en mi vida me había visto señor de tanto dinero junto, | never before was I master of so much money at one time. |

*c. Nunca, jamás, and en mi vida, signify, on the other hand, ever, in clauses containing sin, without; ni or tampoco, nor; in interrogative and exclamatory sentences expecting negative answers, and after comparatives or superlatives : —*

|  |   |
|--|---|
| sin que diga nunca lo que piensa,                    | without his ever saying what he thinks.                 |
| sin haberle visto jamás,                             | without ever having seen him.                           |
| ¿cómo podré pagar nunca todo lo que le debo?         | how can I ever pay all that I owe him?                  |
| ¿podría yo ir jamás á un sitio tal?                  | could I ever go to such a place?                        |
| tampoco se diga nunca que yo le haya faltado,        | nor let it ever be said that I have slighted him.       |
| hoy está peor que nunca,                             | he is worse to-day than ever.                           |
| tiene la figura más mala que en mi vida he visto,    | he has the worst countenance that I ever saw.           |
| (un animal) el más adornada que en mi vida he visto, | (an animal) the most adorned with trappings I ever saw. |

605. *Siquiera, even, at least,* may be employed affirmatively or negatively with *no* and *ni* : —



|   |   |
|---|---|
| le rogué me hiciese el favor una vez siquiera, [ra,         | I begged him to do me the favor once at least. [(five cents). |
| no quiso rebajar un real siquiera ni siquiera una vez, or } | he would not take off even a <i>real</i> not even once.       |
| ni una vez siquiera, }                                      |   |
| ni un real siquiera, or }                                   | not one real even.  |
| ni siquiera un real, }                                      |   |
| no le ofreci ni uno siquiera,                               | I did not promise him one even.                               |

**606. Tampoco, nor** — *either, no*, can be used with *no* and *ni* when it closes a negative phrase, and without them when it begins one. In a series of two or more negative answers, it replaces the adverb *no* after the first: —

|   |                                     |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| ni yo tampoco,                          | nor I either.                       |
| ¿quiere V. este libro? — no. Y          | do you want this book? — no.        |
| ese? — <b>tampoco</b> ,                 | And that one? — no.                 |
| no quiero ese libro <b>tampoco</b> , or | I do not want that book, either, or |
| <b>tampoco</b> quiero ese libro,        | nor do I want that book.            |

**607. Ya, already, now** (Lat. *jam*), means, with a negative, *no longer, not any longer, not* — *now*: —

|                   |                              |
|-------------------|------------------------------|
| ya no me habla,   | he does not speak to me now. |
| ya no hace falta, | I don't need it any more.    |

**608.** Certain verbs, in association with others, are translated into English by adverbial expressions. Such are: **volver á**, followed by an infinitive, meaning *again*; **acabar de**, followed likewise by an infinitive and equivalent to *to have just*, while the infinitive is translated by the past participle: —

|  |                                |
|--|--------------------------------|
| <b>vuelve á</b> hablar; á escribir,                      | he speaks again; writes again. |
| <b>acaba de</b> salir; de entrar,                        | he has just gone out; come in. |
| <b>acababa de</b> llegar,                                | he had just arrived.           |
| (literally, he returns to speak; he finishes to go out.) |                                |

Comparison of Adverbs.

609. Adverbs, like adjectives, have the three usual degrees of comparison, but without variation for gender and number :—

| Positive.  | Comparative.   |
|--|--|
| cerca, <i>near</i> .<br>lédjos, <i>far, far off</i> .<br>claro, <i>clearly</i> .<br>doctamente, <i>learnedly</i> .<br>fielmente, <i>faithfully</i> .   | más cerca, <i>nearer</i> .<br>más lédjos, <i>farther, farther off</i> .<br>más claro, <i>more clearly</i> .<br>más doctamente, <i>more learnedly</i> .<br>más fielmente, <i>more faithfully</i> .                |
| Superlative Relative.  | Superlative Absolute.  |
| (lo) más cerca, <i>the nearest</i> .<br>(lo) más lédjos, <i>the farthest off</i> .<br>(lo) más claro, <i>the most clearly</i> . [ <i>edly</i> .<br>(lo) más doctamente, <i>the most learn-</i><br>(lo) más fielmente, <i>the most faithfully</i> . | cerquísimo (§ 180, <i>b</i> ), <i>very near</i> .<br>lejísimo, <i>very far off</i> .<br>clarísimo, <i>very clearly</i> .<br>doctísimamente, <i>very learnedly</i> .<br>fidelísimamente, <i>very faithfully</i> . |

610. Four adverbs have an independent organic comparison :—

| Positive.   | Comparative.   | Superlative Relative.  | Superlative Absolute.  |
|---|--|--|--|
| mucho, <i>much</i> .<br>poco, <i>little</i> .<br>bien, <i>well</i> .<br>mal, <i>badly</i> . | más, <i>more</i> .<br>ménos, <i>less</i> .<br>mejor, <sup>1</sup> <i>better</i> .<br>peor, <sup>2</sup> <i>worse</i> . | (lo) más, <i>the most</i> .<br>(lo) ménos, <i>the least</i> .<br>(lo) mejor, <i>the best</i> .<br>(lo) peor, <sup>2</sup> <i>the worst</i> . | muchísimo, <i>very much</i> .<br>poquísimo, <i>very little</i> .<br>— — —<br>malísimo, <i>very badly</i> . |

611. Another form of the superlative absolute is constructed by associating with the positive one of the

<sup>1</sup> Más bien, like *antes*, means *rather*.

<sup>2</sup> Occasionally más mal, *worse* or *worst*.

adverbs **muy**, **bien**, *very*; **bastante**, **harto**, *quite*, *sufficiently*; **sumamente**, *exceedingly*; etc. :—

|                                       |                            |
|---------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| <b>muy</b> cerca ; <b>bien</b> claro, | very near ; very clearly.  |
| <b>bastante</b> léjos,                | a good way off, quite far. |
| <b>sumamente</b> bien,                | exceedingly well.          |

REMARK. — A kind of superlative absolute is found in the repetition of certain adverbs :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>bien</b> <b>bien</b> , <i>very well</i> .                   | <b>luego</b> <b>luego</b> , <i>very soon</i> .                          |
| <b>casi</b> <b>casi</b> , <i>very nearly</i> .                 | <b>lo</b> <b>ménos</b> <b>lo</b> <b>ménos</b> , <i>the very least</i> . |
| <b>de</b> <b>par</b> <b>en</b> <b>par</b> , <i>wide open</i> . | <b>ya</b> <b>ya</b> , <i>very truly, quite so</i> .                     |

## 612. Comparative formulæ are :—

613. Equality, with adverbs: **tan** — **como**, *as* — *as* ;  
**no** — **ménos** — **que**, *not* — *less* — *than* :—

|   |                                      |
|---|--------------------------------------|
| escribe <b>tan</b> bien <b>como</b> V.,               | he writes as well as you.            |
| vive <b>tan</b> léjos <b>como</b> nosotros,           | he lives as far off as we.           |
| lee <b>tan</b> corrientemente <b>como</b> su maestro, | he reads as fluently as his teacher. |
| [yo,  | [I do.                               |
| <b>no</b> viene <b>ménos</b> amenudo <b>que</b>       | he does not come less often than     |
| <b>no</b> trabaja con <b>ménos</b> asiduidad          | he does not work less steadily       |
| <b>que</b> el oficial (§ 624),                        | than the journeyman.                 |

a. With verbs: **tanto** **como**, or **tanto** **cuanto**, *as much as* ; **no** — **ménos** **que**, *not* — *less than* :—

|  |                                    |
|--|------------------------------------|
| estudia <b>tanto</b> <b>como</b> (or <b>cuanto</b> ) su hermano, | he studies as much as his brother. |
| <b>no</b> trabajo <b>ménos</b> <b>que</b> V.,                    | I do not work less than you.       |

614. Superiority, with adverbs: **más** — **que**, *more* — *than* :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| escribe <b>más</b> rápidamente <b>que</b> el dependiente de banquero, | he writes more rapidly than the banking-clerk. |
| vive <b>más</b> cerca <b>que</b> V.,                                  | he lives nearer than you.                      |

a. With verbs: **más que**, *more than*; **mejor que**, *better than*:—

escribe **más que** su hermano,  
vivirá **más que** nosotros,  
está mucho **mejor que** ántes,

he writes more than his brother.  
he will live longer than we.  
he is much better than formerly.

**615.** Inferiority, with adverbs: **ménos — que**, *less — than*; **no — tan — como**, *not — so — as*:—

escribe **ménos** elegantemente  
**que** su maestro,  
**no** habla **tan** corrientemente  
**como** su hermano, [ántes,  
me visita **ménos** amenudo **que**  
**no** me visita **tan** amenudo **como**  
ántes, [solfa,  
**no** obra **tan** de ligero **como**

he writes less beautifully than  
his master.  
he does not speak so fluently as  
his brother. [than before.  
he calls on me less frequently  
he does not call on me so often  
as before. [used to.  
he does not act so giddily as he

a. With verbs: **ménos que**, *less than*; **no — tanto como**, or **no — tanto cuanto**, *not — so much as*; **peor que**, *worse than*:—

sale **ménos que** ántes,  
**no** sale **tanto cuanto** solfa, }  
**no** sale **tanto como** solfa, }  
vive **peor que** sus vecinos todos,  
escribe **peor que** su hermana,

he goes out less than formerly.  
he does not go out as much as  
he used to. [bors.  
he lives worse than all his neigh-  
he writes worse than his sister.

**616.** The correlatives **cuanto — tanto**, *the — so much the* —, may be used with any comparative adverb. **Tanto**, *so much*, may be omitted from the formula in both languages, unless used alone:—

**cuanto más** habla, (**tanto**) **más**  
perjudica su causa,  
**cuanto más** estudia, (**tanto**)  
**más** aprende,  
**cuanto ménos** escribe, (**tanto**)  
**peor** sale su letra,

the more he talks, (so much) the  
more he injures his case.  
the more he studies, (so much)  
the more he learns.  
the less he writes, (so much) the  
worse his hand appears.

|                                     |                             |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <b>cuanto ménos, (tanto) mejor,</b> | the less, the better.       |
| <b>tanto peor para él,</b>          | so much the worse for him.  |
| <b>tanto mejor para todos,</b>      | so much the better for all. |

**617.** *Than* before a numeral is expressed by **de**, instead of **que**, unless the verb in the first member of the comparison be negative :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| se lo dije más <b>de</b> dos veces,                 | I told him so more than twice.                    |
| hace más <b>de</b> mes y medio que<br>estoy aquí,   | I have been here more than a<br>month and a half. |
| <b>no</b> me dijo más <b>que</b> dos pala-<br>bras, | he did not say more than two<br>words to me.      |

**618.** *Than* is expressed by **de lo que** when the second member of the comparison contains a verb forming a complete sentence :—

|                                  |                           |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------|
| pide más <b>de lo que</b> tengo, | he asks more than I have. |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------|

**619.** In the phrase, **no poder ménos de**, *to be able to do no less than*, the use of *que* is regarded in Spain as provincial :—

|                                     |   |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| <b>no pudo ménos de</b> censurarle, | he could not do less than censure<br>him. |
|-------------------------------------|---|

**620.** The use of the expletive adverb **no**, *not*, may be admitted into the second member of a comparison after **que**, *than*, provided the first member be not interrogative, or negative expecting a negative answer :—

|  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| más vale el contentamiento que<br><b>no</b> las riquezas, [nosotros? | contentment is better than<br>riches. |
| ¿ <b>no</b> son ellos más felices que                                | are they not happier than we?         |

**621.** The relative superlative of adverbs is identical in form with the comparative :—

él es quien vive **más cerca**,  
 el que lee **más distintamente**,  
 los que escriben **más rápida y  
 elegantemente**, [gozan,  
 los reyes no son los que **más**  
 los que **ménos** trabajan,  
 el que come **mejor** es el que  
 tiene buen apetito,  
 es lo que **ménos** le preocupa,

he lives nearest. [tinctly.  
 the one who reads the most dis-  
 the ones who write most rapidly  
 and beautifully. [most.  
 kings are not the ones who enjoy  
 those who toil least.  
 he who dines the best is the one  
 who has a good appetite.  
 that troubles him least.

a. If, however, the relative superlative is followed by a qualifying term, the neuter article **lo**, *the*, may be used:—

lo **más cerca** or }  
 cuanto **más cerca** } posible,  
 acérquese V. lo **más que pueda**,  
 se acercó lo **más que pudo**,  
 lo **ménos posible**,

the nearest possible, or  
 as near as possible.  
 come as near as you can.  
 he came as near as he could.  
 the least possible.

obra lo **más cuerdate** { **que pueda**, } *he acts as prudently*  
 { **que le sea posible**, } *as he can.*

REMARK.—We may also say, **hizo lo posible para . . .**, or **cuanto estuvo de su parte para . . .**, *he did all that he could to . . .*

622. When “most” means *the greater part*, it is expressed by **la mayor parte** in the singular, and by **los** or **las más** in the plural:—

me dejó en herencia **la mayor  
 parte** de todo cuanto poseía,  
**los más** de los hombres,  
**los más** no consintieron en ello,  
 de las señoras **las más** se que-  
 daron en casa,  
 fabulosos son **los más** de los  
 asuntos por los trágicos de  
 todo tiempo immortalizados,

he bequeathed to me the most  
 of all that he possessed.  
 most men. [it.  
 the greater part did not agree to  
 of the ladies, the greater part  
 stayed at home.  
 the greater part of the subjects  
 immortalized by tragic writers  
 in every age are pure fable.

**623.** The absolute superlative indicates a very high degree, but without comparison :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| vive <b>lejísimos</b> , <i>or</i> <b>muy léjos</b> ,                                  | he lives a great way off.              |
| escribe <b>elegantísimamente</b> , <i>or</i><br>con <b>suma</b> elegancia,            | he writes most beautifully.            |
| se ha portado <b>muy mal</b> , <i>or</i><br><b>malísimamente</b> ,                    | he has acted despicably.               |
| el actor representó <b>pésima-</b><br><b>mente</b> , <i>or</i> <b>malísimamente</b> , | the actor played very badly<br>indeed. |

**624.** Adverbs formed by the association of the preposition **con** with a substantive, insert between them the first term of the comparative :—

|  |                              |
|--|------------------------------|
| <b>Con frecuencia</b> ,                        | <i>Frequently.</i>           |
| con <b>tanta</b> frecuencia <b>como</b> ántes, | as frequently as before.     |
| con <b>más</b> frecuencia <b>que</b> ántes,    | more frequently than before. |
| con <b>suma</b> frecuencia, <i>or</i> }        |                              |
| con la <b>mayor</b> frecuencia, }              | very frequently.             |

But, aside from *con* :—

|                                    |   |
|------------------------------------|---|
| <b>Á gusto</b> ,                   | <i>Satisfactorily.</i>                          |
| <b>tan á gusto como</b> siempre,   | as satisfactorily as ever.                      |
| <b>más á gusto que</b> nunca,      | more satisfactorily than ever.                  |
| <b>más á gusto ; muy á gusto</b> , | most satisfactorily ; very satis-<br>factorily. |

### *The Preposition.*

**625.** Prepositions are **simple** or **complex**, according as they govern their object directly, or in combination with other words.

**626.** The *simple* prepositions are :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>á</b> , <i>to</i> .                        | <b>cabe</b> , <i>near, by</i> (archaism). |
| <b>ante</b> , <i>before, in presence of</i> . | <b>con</b> , <i>with</i> .                |
| <b>bajo</b> , <i>under</i> .                  | <b>contra</b> , <i>against</i> .          |

|   |         |                                       |
|---|---------|---------------------------------------|
| <b>de</b> , of, from.                     | [since. | <b>no obstante</b> , notwithstanding. |
| <b>desde</b> (vulg. <b>dende</b> ), from, |         | <b>para</b> , for, in order to, to.   |
| <b>durante</b> , during.                  |         | <b>por</b> , by, through.             |
| <b>en</b> , in, at, on.                   |         | <b>sacado</b> , a (part.), deducting. |
| <b>entre</b> , between, among.            |         | <b>salvo</b> , excepting, save.       |
| <b>excepto</b> , except.                  |         | <b>segun</b> , according to.          |
| <b>hácia</b> , towards.                   |         | <b>sin</b> , without.                 |
| <b>hasta</b> , till, until, up to, to.    |         | <b>so</b> (sub), under, on.           |
| <b>mediante</b> , through, by means of.   |         | <b>sobre</b> , on, upon, about.       |
| <b>ménos</b> , except, but.               |         | <b>tras</b> , after.                  |

627. The *complex* prepositions are :—

*a.* Those composed of simple adverbs followed by *de*, that is, governing the genitive :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <b>acerca de</b> , about, concerning.   | <b>delante de</b> , before (place).      |
| <b>además de</b> , beside.              | <b>dentro de</b> , within, in, into.     |
| <b>alrededor de</b> , around.           | <b>despues de</b> , after (time, order). |
| <b>antes de</b> , before (time, order). | <b>detrás de</b> , behind (place).       |
| <b>cerca de</b> , near, about.          | <b>encima de</b> , on, over.             |
| <b>debajo de</b> , under (place).       | <b>fuera de</b> , outside, beyond.       |
| <b>léjos de</b> , far from.             |  |

*b.* Those composed of simple adverbs followed by *á*, that is, governing the dative :—

|  |                                      |
|--|--------------------------------------|
| <b>conforme á</b> , according to.        | <b>junto á</b> , near, close by.     |
| <b>contrario á</b> , contrary to.        | <b>respecto á</b> , with respect to. |
| <b>frente á</b> , opposite, in front of. | <b>tocante á</b> , touching.         |

*c.* One composed of a single adverb followed by *con* :—

|                         |                |
|-------------------------|----------------|
| <b>juntamente con</b> , | together with. |
|-------------------------|----------------|

*d.* Those composed of compound adverbial expressions followed by *de* :—

|                                     |  |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| <b>á casa de</b> , to the house of. | <b>á excepcion de</b> , with the excep-    |
| <b>á causa de</b> , on account of.  | <b>á fuerza de</b> , by dint of. [tion of. |



á la vista de, *within sight of.*  
 al cabo de, *at the expiration of.*  
 al lado de, *by the side of.*  
 al través de, *across, through.*  
 á pesar de, *in spite of.*  
 á razon de, *at the rate of.*  
 de casa de, *from the house of.*  
 de parte de, *on the part of.*  
 en casa de, *at the house of.*  
 en frente de, *opposite.*

en lugar de, *instead of.*  
 en medio de, *in the midst of.*  
 en vez de, *instead of.*  
 en virtud de, *by virtue of.*  
 en vista de, *in view of.*  
 más allá de, *beyond.*  
 por causa de, *on account of.*  
 por el lado de, *on the side of.*  
 por razon de, *by reason of.* [*ing.*  
 sin embargo de, *notwithstand-*

e. Those composed of compound adverbial expressions followed by *á* :—

en cuanto á, *with respect to.* | en órden á, *with regard to.*

f. Those composed of two successive prepositions :—

de á, *of, at, — each.* | para con, *towards, to.*

#### USE OF CERTAIN PREPOSITIONS.

##### A, En, De.

628. The leading signification of *á* is *to*, with verbs of motion toward a given point; that of *en*, *in*, *at*, *on*, with verbs of rest in a place :—

##### Voy

á España, á Lisbõa, al correo,  
 al rio, á palacio, á casa,  
 á la tienda, á la plaza,

##### Estoy

en España, en Madrid,  
 en palacio, en casa,

##### Vengo

de España, de Madrid,  
 de palacio, de casa,  
 de la tienda, del Museo,

##### I am going

to Spain, to Lisbon, to the post;  
 to the river, to the palace, home;  
 to the shop, to market.

##### I am

in Spain, at Madrid;  
 at the palace, at home.

##### I come

from Spain, from Madrid;  
 from the palace, from home;  
 from the shop, from the Museum.

REMARK. — It will be observed that the Spanish use of *á* and *en* differs materially from the French: *je vais en Espagne, à Lisbonne; j'ai demeuré en Espagne, á Madrid.*

629. **Á** is further used:—

*a.* In general, in the dative relation — *to*:—

|                          |                                |
|--------------------------|--------------------------------|
| al hombre; al muchacho,  | to the man; to the boy.        |
| á la mujer; á los niños, | to the woman; to the children. |

*b.* To mark a personal object when specific (§ 76):—

|                                   |  |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| busco al criado; busco un criado, | I look for <i>the</i> servant; — <i>a</i> servant. |
| veo á la mujer; veo una mujer,    | I see <i>the</i> woman; — <i>a</i> woman.          |
| temen á Dios; — al juez,          | they fear God; — the judge.                        |

*c.* As a connective between certain verbs and a dependent infinitive — *to*:—

|                   |                        |
|-------------------|------------------------|
| voy á verle,      | I am going to see him. |
| empieza á hablar, | he begins to speak.    |
| echó á correr,    | he set out to run.     |
| se puso á llorar, | he commenced to cry.   |

*d.* Temporary situation — *at*:—

|                            |                             |
|----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| á la puerta; á la esquina, | at the door; at the corner. |
| á la mesa; al mostrador,   | at table; at the counter.   |
| al Atenœo; á la Academia,  | at the Atheneum; — Academy. |

*e.* Time, price, rate, — *at*:—

|                            |                                  |
|----------------------------|----------------------------------|
| á la noche; al amanecer,   | at night; at dawn.               |
| á las doce; á media noche, | at noon; at midnight.            |
| á dos reales el metro,     | at two reals per metre.          |
| á veinte duros mensuales,  | at twenty dollars a month.       |
| á ocho reales diarios,     | at forty cents <i>per diem</i> . |
| ¿á cuánto? — á tanto,      | at how much? — at so much.       |

f. Distance off — *at* — *off* : —

|  |                                     |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| á una lëgua ; á veinte pasos,          | at a league off ; at twenty paces.  |
| á tiro de ballesta ; á tiro de piedra, | at a bow shot ; at a stone's throw. |

g. Distributively — *by* : —

|                        |                          |
|------------------------|--------------------------|
| uno á uno ; dos á dos, | one by one ; two by two. |
| gota á gota,           | drop by drop.            |
| poco á poco,           | little by little.        |

h. Adverbially — *on*, *in*, *with* : —

|                     |                         |
|---------------------|-------------------------|
| á caballo ; á pié,  | on horseback ; on foot. |
| á tiempo ; á palos, | in time ; with blows.   |

i. After certain verbs — *on*, *at*, *in*, *off*, *from* : —

|                                     |                                    |
|-------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| las ventanas dan al jardin,         | the windows face the garden.       |
| jugar á los naipes ; — al ajedrëz ; | to play (at) cards ; — chess ; —   |
| — á la lotería,                     | (in) the lottery. [garlic.         |
| sabe á herejía ; sabe á ajo,        | it savors of heresy ; it tastes of |
| huele á ámbar,                      | it smells of amber. [dollars.      |
| llevó al caballero una onza,        | he charged the gentleman sixteen   |
| robó al mozo su chaqueta,           | he stole the lad's jacket.         |

(*literally*, he took from the gentleman [the price of] an ounce ; he stole from the lad his jacket).

## j. Elliptically : —

|                       |                          |
|-----------------------|--------------------------|
| á que no lo tiene V., | I'll bet you haven't it. |
| á que sí ; á que no,  | I have ; you haven't.    |

REMARK. — This ellipse, common in ordinary conversation, depends on the verb *apostar á*, *to wager that*, expressed or understood. *Apuesto (or apostaré) á que me va V. á pagar lo que me debe*, *I'll wager you'll pay me what you owe me*. — *Á que no*, *I'll bet I won't*. — *Á que sí*, *you will*, etc. So, *á que vendrá mañana Fulano de Tal*, *I'll wager So and So will come to-morrow*. — *Á que no vendrá*, *I'll bet he won't*, etc. Not very elegant, but constantly heard.

**630. En** further signifies *on, in* : —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <b>en</b> la mesa ; <b>en</b> la chimenea ; <b>en</b> la silla, | on the table ; on the mantel-piece ; on the chair. |
| <b>en</b> el cajon de la mesa,                                  | in the table-drawer.                               |
| <b>en</b> la ciudad ; <b>en</b> el campo,                       | in the city ; in the country.                      |
| <b>en</b> su ausencia ; <b>en</b> general,                      | in his absence ; in general.                       |

**631. De** primarily signifies *of*, and corresponds to the English possessive case : —

|                               |                                   |
|-------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| las tapias <b>de</b> la casa, | the (outside) walls of the house. |
| los árboles <b>del</b> paseo, | the trees of the promenade.       |
| el palacio <b>del</b> rey,    | the king's palace.                |
| un amor <b>de</b> madre,      | a mother's love.                  |

*a.* It is often to be translated by *to* : —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| el camino <b>de</b> la Corte ; — <b>de</b> la ciudad, | the road <i>or</i> way to the capital, — to the city. |
| la guia <b>de</b> España,                             | the guide-book to Spain.                              |

*b.* It often connects words which are to be translated by compound expressions, or by an adjective and a noun : —

|                                    |                                  |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| un buzón <b>de</b> correos,        | a post-box, letter-box (public). |
| un apartado <b>de</b> correos,     | a letter-box (private).          |
| un billete <b>de</b> ferro-carril, | a railway ticket.                |
| un talon <b>de</b> equipage,       | a luggage-check.                 |
| un carro <b>de</b> mudanza,        | a furniture van.                 |
| la estación <b>del</b> mediodía,   | the southern station.            |
| el tren <b>del</b> Norte,          | the northern train.              |
| una cuchara <b>de</b> plata,       | a silver spoon.                  |
| un reloj <b>de</b> oro,            | a gold watch.                    |

*c.* It denotes cause — *for, with* : —

|   |                                |
|---|--------------------------------|
| lloró <b>de</b> gozo,                       | he wept for joy.               |
| brincó <b>de</b> contento,                  | he leaped about with pleasure. |
| tiembla <b>de</b> frio ; — <b>de</b> miedo, | he trembles with cold ; — fear |

*d.* After certain participles and adjectives :—

|                               |                      |
|-------------------------------|----------------------|
| colmado <b>de</b> beneficios, | laden with benefits. |
| aborrecido <b>de</b> todos,   | detested by all.     |

*e.* It is often superfluous in English :—

|                                 |                         |
|---------------------------------|-------------------------|
| se olvida <b>de</b> sus amigos, | he forgets his friends. |
| abusa <b>de</b> la amistad,     | he abuses friendship.   |
| no me acuerdo <b>de</b> él,     | I do not remember him.  |

*f.* After certain verbs — *as, in* :—

|                         |                                |
|-------------------------|--------------------------------|
| va <b>de</b> empleado,  | he goes as a government-clerk. |
| va <b>de</b> embajador, | he goes as an ambassador.      |
| está <b>de</b> luto,    | he is in mourning.             |

**Ante, Delante de, Antes de.**

**632.** **Ante** signifies *in the presence of* an authority ; and, in an official sense, relating to persons, courts, deliberative bodies, nations, the world, history, the conscience, etc., viewed as judges, witnesses, or interested spectators :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>ante</b> el juez ; — el alcalde,            | before the judge ; — the mayor.        |
| <b>ante</b> el gobierno ; — una comisión,      | before the government ; — a committee. |
| <b>ante</b> los tribunales ; — la Cámara,      | before the courts ; — the House.       |
| <b>ante</b> la nación ; — la historia,         | before the nation ; — history.         |
| <b>ante</b> la conciencia ; <b>ante</b> todos, | before conscience ; before all.        |

*a.* Also, in general, *in presence of, in view of* :—

|                                      |   |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| <b>ante</b> esta actitud del pueblo, | in view of this attitude of the people. |
|--------------------------------------|---|

*b.* Likewise order and preference :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| ponen á cubierto <b>ante</b> todas cosas su responsabilidad, | first of all, they put their responsibility out of danger. |
| <b>ante</b> todo soy Español,                                | I am a Spaniard before all else.                           |

**633. Delante de** denotes mere situation in front of things ; location before people, but without the formality inherent in **ante** : —

|   |                                  |
|---|----------------------------------|
| <b>delante de</b> la casa ; — <b>del</b> rey,   | before the house ; — the king.   |
| <b>delante del</b> espejo ; — <b>del</b> mundo, | before the mirror ; — the world. |
| habló <b>delante de</b> mucha gente,            | he spoke before many people.     |
| lo dijo <b>delante de</b> testigos,             | he said it before witnesses.     |

REMARK. — *Ante* and *delante de* may, therefore, be used interchangeably before persons, according as we attribute to them a judicial or critical attitude, or consider them as mere auditors.

**634. Antes de** denotes priority of time, order, and rank : —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>antes de</b> la comida ; — <b>de</b> la reunion,                      | before dinner ; before the meeting.                        |
| <b>antes de</b> la una ; — <b>de</b> las dos,                            | before one — two — o'clock.                                |
| <b>antes de</b> un año ; <b>antes de</b> su llegada,                     | before a year ; before his (her, their) arrival.           |
| V. está <b>antes de</b> mí,  | you come before me.  |
| un marques es <b>antes de</b> un duque, y éste <b>antes de</b> un conde, | a marquis is before a duke, and the latter before an earl. |

**Tras, Detrás de, Después de.**

**635. Tras** is *after* in the sense of what immediately follows : —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>tras</b> mí viene mi amigo,                               | after me comes my friend.                             |
| <b>tras</b> la sogá viene la mula,                           | after the rope came the mule.                         |
| <b>tras</b> un mal vino otro,                                | after one misfortune came another.                    |
| [suerte,   | [come.  |
| <b>tras</b> la adversidad vendrá mejor uno <b>tras</b> otro, | after adversity a better time will one after another. |
| yo iba <b>tras</b> él,                                       | I went after him.                                     |
| <b>tras</b> esto,  | (immediately) after this.                             |

**a. Tras de** often occurs, but rather in the sense of *aside from, besides* :—

|                              |                                      |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| tras de venir tarde, regaña, | besides coming late, he finds fault. |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------------|

**636. Detrás de** signifies *behind, close behind*, of place, situation, and order, corresponding to **delante de**, *in front of* :—

|                       |                   |
|-----------------------|-------------------|
| detrás de la puerta,  | behind the door.  |
| detrás de la tapia,   | behind the wall.  |
| se puso detrás de mí, | he got behind me. |

**637. Despues de**, *after*, corresponds to **antes de**, *before*, of time and order :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| despues de mucho tiempo,                                   | after a long time.  |
| llegó despues de todos,                                    | he arrived the last of all.                                   |
| el ministro es despues del em-<br>bajador,                 | the minister is after the ambas-<br>sador (in rank).          |
| despues de haber platicado<br>largo rato, al fin se sentó, | after having discoursed a long<br>while, at last he sat down. |

#### Bajo, So, Debajo de.

**638. Bajo** denotes situation close under; hence *beneath, underneath, below* :—

|                             |                                 |
|-----------------------------|---------------------------------|
| bajo la mano; — la piedra,  | under the hand; — the stone.    |
| bajo el cielo; bajo el sol, | beneath the sky; under the sun. |

**a.** Figuratively and adverbially with the idea of protection, guarantee, subordination in rank, duty, etc. :—

|  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| bajo sobre; — fianza; — pro-<br>testa, | under cover; — bonds; — pro-<br>test. |
| bajo llave,                            | under lock and key.                   |

|                           |                                  |
|---------------------------|----------------------------------|
| bajo ciertas condiciones, | on certain conditions.           |
| bajo palabra de honor,    | upon honor.                      |
| bajo un gefe ; bajo ayos, | under a superior ; under tutors. |

REMARK. — **Bajo de** is occasionally heard among the people, and frequently found in the older literature or modern quaint style.

639. **So** (Lat. *sub*), formerly interchangeable with *bajo* in the second sense, is now limited to a few phrases only : —

|                              |         |                                 |
|------------------------------|---------|---------------------------------|
| so pena de la vida, }        | under { | forfeiture of life.             |
| bajo pena de muerte, }       |         | penalty of death.               |
| so capa de ; so pretexto de, |         | under the mask — pretence — of. |

640. **Debajo de** corresponds to **encima de**, and denotes mere material situation, *under* : —

|   |                                 |
|---|---------------------------------|
| debajo de la mesa,                      | under the table.                |
| debajo de la higuera,                   | under the fig-tree.             |
| el miedo de las cosas debajo de tierra, | the fear of things underground. |

REMARK. — *Bajo* and *debajo*, like *ante* and *delante*, are often used interchangeably.

*bajo or debajo de mis plantas,* | *beneath or under my feet.*

#### Sobre, Encima de.

641. **Sobre** (Lat. *super*) and **encima de** (en cima = *on top*) both mean *on, upon*, in the sense of location ; but **encima** has an additional application to things higher than we — *up on*. It also means *over*, higher than one's head : as, *the birds fly over the house*, **encima de la casa** : —

|                              |                             |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| sobre or encima de la mesa,  | on the table.               |
| sobre or encima de la silla, | on the chair.               |
| encima del armario,          | on the top of the wardrobe. |
| encima de la ciudad,         | over the town or city.      |



*a. Sobre* has also the figurative sense of *over, more than, above* : —

amará Dios **sobre** todas las cosas, | to love God above all things.

*b. It also signifies of, concerning, about* : —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| ¿qué opina V. <b>sobre</b> esto?             | what is your opinion about this?                |
| hablando <b>sobre</b> estas cosas se exaltó, | speaking about these things, he became excited. |

### Con.

**642. Con** denotes accompaniment, means, and instrument : —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| ir <b>con</b> alguno,                     | to go (along) with some one.                           |
| <b>con</b> estos recursos se rehabilitan, | by means of such expedients, they regain public favor. |
| le hirió <b>con</b> una porra,            | he struck him with a club.                             |

*a. Con* makes many idiomatic expressions with verbs, especially with **dar**, *to give* : —

|  |                                  |
|--|----------------------------------|
| dió <b>con</b> él en la calle,           | he met him in the street.        |
| dió <b>con</b> ellos por la ventana,     | he threw them out of the window. |
| le dió <b>con</b> la puerta en los ojos, | he closed the door in his face.  |
| dió <b>consigo</b> en el suelo,          | he fell down.                    |

### Desde.

**643. Desde** signifies *from*, as a starting-point of time and place : —

|                            |                             |
|----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| desde entónces,            | from that time, since then. |
| desde el principio,        | from the beginning.         |
| desde arriba hácia abajo,  | from above, downwards.      |
| desde la una en adelante,  | from one o'clock onwards.   |
| desde Lóndres hasta París, | from London to Paris.       |
| desde muchos años,         | for many years.             |

**Hacia.**

**644. Hacia** denotes material direction *towards* : —

|   |                                 |
|---|---------------------------------|
| los vió venir <b>hacia</b> sí,            | he saw them coming toward him.  |
| la proa del buque se dirigió <b>hacia</b> | the ship's bow was pointed      |
| el Mediodía,                              | toward the south.               |
| miraba <b>hacia</b> el puerto,            | he was looking toward the port. |
| <b>hacia</b> la noche,                    | towards night.                  |

*a.* It also is popularly used in the sense of moral direction *toward* one, like **para con** : —

|                                     |                                |
|-------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| demuestra mucho cariño <b>hacia</b> | he displays a great attachment |
| nosotros,                           | for us.                        |

**Hasta.**

**645. Hasta** signifies *as far as, to, up to, till, until*, of place, time, and degree : —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>hasta</b> la puerta ; — la ciudad ;        | up to the door ; — the town.              |
| <b>hasta</b> Paris ; <b>hasta</b> Londres,    | up to ( <i>or to</i> ) Paris ; to London. |
| <b>hasta</b> entónces ; <b>hasta</b> ahora,   | until then ; until now.                   |
| <b>hasta</b> las doce ; — las dos,            | up to twelve — two — o'clock.             |
| la acompañé <b>hasta</b> su casa,             | I went with her as far as her house.      |
| <b>hasta</b> no más ; <b>hasta</b> lo último, | as far as I could ; up to the very last.  |

**Para, Por.**

**646. Para** represents the Latin dative and the prepositions *pro* and *ad* ; therefore, its meaning is *for* in the sense of destination, end, purpose ; and it also denotes the relation of one thing to another — *for, to, in order to, for the purpose of* : —

|  |                                   |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| esta carta no es <b>para</b> V.,           | this letter is not for you.       |
| no sirve <b>para</b> militar,              | he will not do for a soldier.     |
| se sentía más apto <b>para</b> la política | he felt that he was better fitted |
| que <b>para</b> las letras,                | for politics than for letters.    |

me marchó para fuera,  
me parece que no es para ménos,  
para hacer eso se necesitan  
tiempo y dinero,

I am going abroad, *or* out of town.  
it seems to me I could not do less.  
to do that time and money are  
necessary.

**647.** **Por**, a confounding of the Latin *per* and *pro*, has the meanings of both — *for, in behalf of, for the sake of, by, through, along, on account of, out of, as* : —

lo hago por un amigo,  
(lo hago para un amigo,)  
dan dinero por verlo,  
(dan dinero para poder ver,  
y lo consiguen,)  
lo dan por cosa extraña,  
  
ó, por mejor decir,  
por miedo de las consecuencias,  
por (amor de) Dios,

I do it for (in behalf of) a friend.  
(I am making it for a friend.)  
they give money to see it.  
(they give money to be able  
to see, and they succeed.)  
they represent it as a strange  
thing. [rectly].  
or, rather (to speak more cor-  
for fear of consequences.  
for Heaven's sake.

**Á casa de, En casa de.**

**648.** The prepositions **á casa de**, *to the house or shop* of any one ; **en casa de**, *at the house or shop* of any one, are respectively translated by *to* and *at* with the possessive case. The former is used with verbs of motion, and the latter with verbs of rest : —

ha ido á casa del Señor de  
Herrera,  
viene de casa de Lhardy,  
ha ido á su casa ; — á casa,  
está en casa de Murillo,  
no vive ya más en casa del señor  
marqués,

he has gone to Mr. Herrera's.  
  
he comes from Lhardy's. [home.  
he has gone to his house ; —  
he is at Murillo's.  
he does not live at the marquis's  
any more.

¿á dónde va V.? — á casa, *or* á  
casa del señor conde,

where are you going? — home,  
*or* to the earl's.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| ¿de dónde viene V.? — <b>de casa</b> ,<br>or <b>de casa del</b> señor Moreno,     | where do you come from? — from<br>home, or from Mr. Moreno's. |
| ¿en dónde ha estado V.? — <b>en</b><br><b>casa</b> , or <b>en casa de</b> Lhardy, | where have you been? — home,<br>or at Lhardy's.               |

**649. De á** (*of, at*) are employed to denote rate, denomination, or with adverbs to convert them into species of adjectives:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| un guardia civil <b>de á</b> caballo,<br>los <b>de á</b> caballo; los <b>de á</b> pié,<br>veinte sellos (de correo) <b>de á</b><br>veinte y cinco céntimos, | a mounted rural guard.<br>the cavalry; the infantry.<br>twenty five-cent stamps (twenty<br>stamps at twenty-five centimes<br>each). |
| dos cañones <b>de á</b> veinte y cuatro,<br>una moneda <b>de á</b> ocho ( <i>obs.</i> ),<br>el patio <b>de á</b> mano derecha,                              | two twenty-four pounders (guns).<br>a piece of eight (coin).<br>the right-hand court.   |

REMARK. — The prepositions **de**, **para**, and **por**, are idiomatically associated with other prepositions to define more closely the direction, time, or manner, expressed by the latter:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>de entre</b> los árboles,<br>cada uno <b>de por</b> sí,<br>antes los títulos de condes se<br>daban <b>de por</b> vida,<br><b>para entre</b> amigos se deja de<br>complimientos,<br>pasar <b>por delante de</b> una casa,<br>“ <b>Por entre</b> unas matas,<br>Seguido de perros<br>(No diré corría)<br>Volaba un conejo,” | from among the trees.<br>each one by himself.<br>formerly the title of a count was<br>given for life (only).<br>among friends compliments are<br>to be laid aside.<br>to pass along by a house.<br>“Through the thicket,<br>Pursued by dogs,<br>A coney flew<br>(Not to say ran).”— <i>Iriarte</i> . |
|--|--|

**650. Para con**, *to, toward*, signifies moral direction:—  
su conducta **para con** sus hijos, | his behavior toward his children.

**651.** Many complex prepositions which contain a noun, transform their object into an adjective when that object is a personal pronoun:—

|                                       |                                 |
|---------------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| <b>al lado de,</b>                    | by the side of.                 |
| <b>al lado mio, or á mi lado,</b>     | at my side, by me.              |
| <b>de parte de,</b>                   | on the part of, from.           |
| <b>de parte suya, or de su parte,</b> | on his part, from him.          |
| <b>en conformidad con esto,</b>       | in harmony with this, <i>or</i> |
| <b>en esta conformidad,</b>           | in this way.                    |

But the latter, I think, is originally dialectic, since it is largely used by *Aragonese* writers.

### *The Conjunction.*

**652.** Pure conjunctions are few in number, while adverbs and prepositions temporarily employed as conjunctions, with or without *que*, are numerous. All admit the usual divisions into copulative, disjunctive, causal, concessive, conditional, temporal, adversative, etc.

**653.** The pure conjunctions are:—

|                                     |                                      |
|-------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| <b>pero, mas, sino, but.</b>        | <b>que, that.</b>                    |
| <b>ni, nor.</b>                     | <b>si, if, whether, I wonder if.</b> |
| <b>ó (before another o, ú), or.</b> | <b>y (before i or hi, é), and.</b>   |

**654.** **Pero** and **mas** are found at the beginning of a paragraph or a phrase, and in an adversative sentence; but **sino** only in such a sentence when the first clause contains a negation that is contrasted with an affirmation in the second:—

|   |                                      |
|---|--------------------------------------|
| <b>pero</b> la historia dice otra cosa, | but history tells a different story. |
| así lo cuenta él; <b>pero</b> otros lo  | so he relates it; but others give    |
| refieren de distinto modo,              | a different account.                 |
| el niño sabía perfectamente la          | the child knew the lesson per-       |
| lección, <b>mas</b> no supo decirla,    | fectly, but could not recite it.     |

no fué él, en verdad, el único intolerante de su siglo; **mas** ¿qué importa? [por lo serio, no lo digo en broma, **sino** muy no hay optimismo en lo que digo, **sino** pura imparcialidad y justicia,

truly he was not the only intolerant man of his time; but what matters it? [all sincerity. I do not say it jestingly, but in there is no optimism in what I say, but pure impartiality and justice.

**655.** The conjunction **y**, *and*, assumes its ancient form **é** when a word follows beginning with the vowel *i* or the syllable *hi*:—

Fernando **é** Isabel,  
padres **é** hijos,

Ferdinand and Isabella.  
parents and children.

REMARK.—**Y** and **hy** were anciently adverbs meaning *there*, and the conjunction *and* was always expressed by **é** (Lat. *et*). In the latter part of the fifteenth century **y** and **é** became interchangeable, but a century later **é** had entirely disappeared:—

**é** murieron **y** muchos moros,  
**é** tomaron los cuerpos delos reyes que **y** yazien enterrados  
**é** lleuarõ los alas Asturias,

and many Moors died there.  
and they took the bodies of the kings who lay buried there and carried them to Asturias.

—*Chronica General*, A.D. 1260, ed. 1541; ff. 260b, 261a.

fincó **hy** sus tiendas,  
que nõ se partiria de **hy**,

he pitched his tents there.  
that he would not go from there.

—*Chronica del Cid*, fourteenth-century, ed. 1593; pp. 87, 95.

**656.** Conjunctions with *que*, formed of adverbs and prepositions, are:—

á fin de que, *in order that*.  
á ménos que, }  
á no ser que, } *unless*.  
ántes que, *before*.  
así que, *so that, so*.  
aunque, }  
bien que, } *although*.

caso que, *in case that*.  
como quiera que, *however*.  
con que, *so, therefore, so then*.  
con motivo que, *so that*.  
con tal que, *provided that*.  
cuanto más que, *the more since*.  
dado que, *in case that*.

dado caso que, *supposing that.*

de manera que, }  
de modo que, } *so that.*  
de suerte que, }

desde que, *since.*

despues que, *after.*

en tanto que, *while, in case that.*

en vez de que, *instead of.*

entre tanto que, *while.*

excepto que, *excepting.*

hasta que, *until.*

luego que, *as soon as.*

miéntras que, *while.* [ing.

no obstante que, *notwithstanding-*

para que, *in order that.*

por — que, *however.*

porque, *because, in order that.*

por más que, *however much.*

por ménos que, }  
por poco que, } *however little.*

pues que, }  
puesto que, } *since.*

sea que, *whether, while.*

siempre que, *whenever.*

sin que, *without.*

supuesto que, *since.*

tanto que, *so that.*

ya que, *since.*

### 657. The principal correlatives are :—

apénas — cuando, *scarcely —*  
*when.*

así — como, *both — and.*

ni — ni, *neither — nor.* [when.

no bien — cuando, *scarcely —*

no solo — sino, } *not only*  
no solamente — sino, } *— but.*

ó — ó, *either — or.*

sea — sea, *whether — or.*

### The Interjection.

#### 658. The interjections proper are :—

a. Exclamations denoting any strong emotion, such as surprise, pain, disgust, encouragement, remonstrance, desire, etc. :—

oh, ah, oh! *ah!*

ay, oh! *alas! ah!*

ha (exultation), *ha! eh!*

hé (shock, start), *eh!*

ea (encouragement), *come!*

ea ea (impatience), *come now!*

huy (pain, shock), *oh! dear me!*

ola, or hola (recognition or discovery), *ah! oh!*

puf (aversion), *ugh!*

uf (weariness), *oh!*

ca and quíá (expressive of indignant negation or doubt).

cáspita, *zounds!*

chiton, *hist! hush!*

ojalá, *would that! O that!*

REMARK. — Of these *ay*, *ea*, *huy*, *uf*, and *ojald*,<sup>1</sup> are of Arabic origin, and consequently *un*-European and characteristic, especially *ay*, which indicates delight, as well as pain or surprise; and, popularly, is as common as the trans-Pyrenean *oh*! **Chiton** imposes silence about something forbidden, with the finger on the lips, well illustrated by the national proverb, **Inquisicion . . . chiton!** *when the Inquisition is mentioned, hold your breath!*

b. Cries addressed to domestic animals, birds, etc. :—

|             |   |                                     |
|-------------|---|-------------------------------------|
| <b>arre</b> | } (to urge forward horses,<br>mules, etc.). | <b>so, jo, or cho, whoa!</b>        |
| <b>anda</b> |   | <b>ox</b> (to frighten away birds). |
| <b>alza</b> |   | <b>zape</b> (to frighten cats).     |

c. Words that serve to imitate sounds :—

**cataplúm, crash!** | **tras and zas, thump, thump!**

REMARK. — These are very numerous, and differ with the individual character or province. *Tras* and *zas* may be repeated to represent rapping at the door, the sound of feet tripping along the hall, and many other movements and sounds.

d. Idle or profane terms, common to all classes, with their euphemisms or evasions of the original word :—

|  |  |   |
|--|--|---|
| <b>caramba</b>   | } and others in<br>ca-(expressing<br>surprise), } <i>egad!</i> | <b>cielos, Dios, por Dios, heavens!</b> |
| <b>carál</b>   |  | <b>Dios mio, dear me!</b>               |
| <b>caracóles</b>   |  | <b>ay Dios mio, Oh, dear me!</b>        |
| <b>canasto</b>   |  | <b>Jesús, O heavens!</b>                |
| <b>canario</b>   |  | <b>válgame Dios, bless me!</b>          |
| <b>diantre</b> (to avoid <i>diablo</i> , demonio), the deuce! by Jove! |  | <b>vírgen santa, marry!</b>             |

REMARKS. — “; *Jesús!*” “; *Ave María!*” “; *Ave María purísima!*” are heard when anything heretical, exaggerated, or surprising, is told or seen; and the exclamation ; **Jesús!** alone, when any one sneezes or gapes, is considered as a polite formula of exorcism, at which name evil spirits will forbear pursuing their advantage to possess the individual.

<sup>1</sup> From *in shâ 'llah*, “if Allah please,” written formerly *oxald*, and pronounced anciently *oshald*.



659. Other words used as exclamations are :—

a. Verbs in the imperative mode :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>anda</b> (importunity, incredulity),<br><i>come! pshaw!</i>                    | <b>quita</b> , or } <i>let me alone!</i><br><b>quítese</b> V., } <i>go away!</i>    |
| <b>calla</b> or <b>calle</b> (command, incredulity), <i>keep still! nonsense!</i> | <b>toma</b> , <i>indeed! really!</i>  |
| <b>diga</b> , <i>say!</i>   | <b>vamos</b> , <i>come! why! well!</i>  |
| <b>oye</b> and <b>oiga</b> , <i>say! hallo!</i>                                   | <b>vaya</b> (surprise, to take leave, as-<br>sent), <i>indeed! well! of course!</i> |

b. Nouns, adjectives, and adverbs :—

|   |                                       |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| <b>al asesino</b> , <i>murder!</i>          | <b>cómo</b> , <i>how! why!</i>        |
| <b>al ladron</b> , <i>stop thief!</i>       | <b>cuidado</b> , <i>take care!</i>    |
| <b>bravo</b> , <i>bravo! good!</i>          | <b>fuego</b> , <i>fire!</i>           |
| <b>caballero</b> (indignation), <i>sir!</i> | <b>socorro</b> , <i>help! murder!</i> |

REMARK.—Conversation is frequently rendered emphatic by introducing the words **hombre**, *man*; **mujer**, *woman*; **as**, **sí**, **hombre**, *yes, of course*; **no**, **mujer**, *not at all, sure*.

660. Adjectives employed as interjections are accompanied by the preposition *de* when a personal pronoun follows :—

|                                   |                               |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| ¡necio <b>de</b> mí!              | silly me that I am (I was)!   |
| ¡pobre <b>de</b> mí!              | alas for me!                  |
| ¡desgraciados <b>de</b> nosotros! | unfortunate ones that we are! |

a. The interjection *¡ay!* is also accompanied by *de* when a noun or pronoun follows :—

|   |                            |
|---|----------------------------|
| ¡ay <b>de</b> mí!                       | alas for me! woe is me!    |
| ¡ay <b>de</b> mi Alhama!                | alas for my (city) Alhama! |
| ¡ay <b>de</b> tí! — <b>de</b> nosotros! | alas for you! — for us!    |
| ¡ay <b>del</b> malhechor!               | woe to the transgressor!   |

REMARK.—With adjectives, exclamations may be introduced by *qué*: **as**, ¡**qué** **desgraciada** **soy**! *how unfortunate I am!* ¡**qué** **bueno** **es**! *how kind he is!*

## SECTION THIRD.

### THE ESSENTIALS OF SYNTAX

#### *The Article.*

##### Use of the Definite Article.

**661.** The expression or omission of the definite article *el, la, los, las*, depends, in general, on the degree of limitation we wish to assign to the accompanying substantive. The laws that govern this article may be reduced to three, two of which correspond also with the English usage.

**662. First.** The definite article is expressed both in Spanish and in English, when it designates a particular individual or a specific object, thought, or class, in the singular, and several particular individuals, or objects of a class, in the plural :—

|  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| <i>el</i> hombre es soberbio,              | <i>the</i> man is haughty.            |
| <i>la</i> casa es hermosa,                 | <i>the</i> house is beautiful.        |
| <i>el</i> paño es carísimo,                | <i>the</i> cloth is very dear.        |
| <i>el</i> trigo está vendido,              | <i>the</i> wheat is sold.             |
| <i>los</i> hombres son soberbios,          | <i>the</i> men are haughty.           |
| <i>los</i> caballos son fogosos, [nas,     | <i>the</i> horses are fiery. [guages. |
| <i>el</i> estudio de las lenguas moder-    | <i>the</i> study of the modern lan-   |
| <i>la</i> enseñanza de <i>los</i> jóvenes, | <i>the</i> instruction of the young.  |

*a.* Consequently, the article is used in both languages before the epithets of sovereigns, poets, artists, and with facetious nicknames (*apodos*) :—

Alfonso **el** Sabio,  
 Fernando **el** Católico,  
 Pedro **el** Cruel,  
 Carlos tercero **el** Grande,  
 Boabdil **el** Chico,  
 Herrera **el** Mozo,  
 Pepito **el** Ciego,

Alfonso the Wise.  
 Ferdinand the Catholic.  
 Peter the Cruel.  
 Charles III. the Great.  
 Boabdell the Less.  
 Herrera the younger.<sup>1</sup>  
 little Joe, the blind boy.

REMARK. — Under this law of particulars, the article often has the force of a demonstrative adjective, and may be translated by *that*.

**663. Second.** The definite article is omitted in both languages, when the noun is taken in an indeterminate sense, involving a portion of a substance or a class : —

déme V. pan ; — queso,  
 tráigame V. dinero ; — vino,  
 me dió oro y valores,  
 ganoso de paz y tranquilidad,  
 tiene casas y heredades,  
 veo praderas y huertas,  
 cargado con grandes paquetes,  
 cubierto de riquísimos paños,

give me bread ; — cheese.  
 bring me money ; — wine.  
 he gave me gold and securities.  
 desirous of peace and quiet.  
 he possesses houses and lands.  
 I see green fields and plantations.  
 laden with large bundles.  
 covered with rich stuffs.

REMARK 1. — This law of the partitive sense of substantives is expressed regularly in French by a special use of the definite article ; as : —

donnez-moi **du** pain,  
 apportez-moi **de** l'argent, [leurs,  
 il m'a donné **de** l'or et **des** va-

give me some bread.  
 bring me some money.  
 he gave me gold and securities.

2. — An echo of this construction is occasionally met with in Spanish : —

“ — te he dicho  
 Que me des **de** lo añejo  
 Cuando te pida vino,”

“ — I ordered you  
 To give me some of the old  
 When I call for wine.”

— *Cadalso, Obras, Madrid, 1818, vol. iii., p. 37.*

es *or* son **de** los famosos, [hay,  
 son **de** los **más** célebres que

it is *or* they are famous ones.  
 they are some of the best known.

<sup>1</sup> To distinguish him from **Herrera el viejo**, the elder Herrera.

3.—In Spanish, as in English, the partitive substantive may be qualified by some term like **alguno, un poco de, some, a little**, for the singular; and **algunos, unos, unos cuantos, unos pocos, some, a few**, for the plural:—

|                                    |                          |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------|
| déme V. <b>un poco de</b> pan,     | give me a little bread.  |
| tráe <b>unos cuantos</b> paquetes, | he brings a few parcels. |

a. Also in a great many adverbial expressions:—

|                             |  |
|-----------------------------|--|
| á pié; á caballo; en coche, | on foot; on horseback; by coach.                 |
| con alegría; con dolor,     | with joy; with sorrow.                           |
| á casa; en casa,            | home ( <i>motion</i> ); at home ( <i>rest</i> ). |
| llevado en triunfo,         | borne in triumph.                                |

664. *Third.* The definite article is expressed in Spanish and omitted in English, when it designates an object, a substance, or a thought, in an universal, very general, or in an absolute sense, for the singular, and all the individuals of a class, for the plural:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| la vida es breve,                                 | life is short.                           |
| la juventud es pasajera,                          | youth is transitory.                     |
| el oro es preciosísimo,                           | gold is very precious.                   |
| el trigo es abundante,                            | wheat is plentiful.                      |
| la caridad es benigna,                            | charity is kind.                         |
| la muerte se acerca, [jenable,                    | death draws near.                        |
| la libertad es un derecho inalienable,            | liberty is an inalienable right.         |
| la buena administracion conduce á la prosperidad, | good administration leads to prosperity. |
| el hombre piensa; — habla,                        | man thinks; — talks.                     |
| los caballos son útiles,                          | horses are useful.                       |
| los gobiernos son necesarios,                     | governments are necessary.               |
| los hombres piensan; — hablan,                    | men think; — talk.                       |

REMARK. — Nearly all these and similar comprehensive sentences may be turned into particular ones, when the sense requires it, or by some slight modification, such as the insertion of an adjective, an adjunct, or a relative:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>la vida del hombre</b> es breve,            | <i>the life of man</i> is short.               |
| <b>el mejor trigo</b> no es siempre abundante, | <i>the best wheat</i> is not always plentiful. |
| <b>el hombre que</b> piensa,                   | <i>the man who</i> thinks.                     |
| <b>los caballos que</b> posee,                 | <i>the horses which</i> he owns.               |

*a.* The same law applies to the English also, in a few words, when we speak of them in general terms :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <b>la mente</b> no lo alcanza,                          | <i>the mind</i> cannot grasp it.                             |
| <b>el caballo</b> es un animal sumamente fuerte y útil, | <i>the horse</i> is an exceedingly strong and useful animal. |

*b.* Likewise, in general, the article is expressed with words that are originally adjectives, when they are used as nouns, and are taken in an universal or very comprehensive range of meaning :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>los avaros</b> nunca están satisfechos,                             | <i>misers (the avaricious)</i> are never satisfied.             |
| <b>los Españoles</b> son bastante punzoneros,                          | <i>Spaniards (the Spanish)</i> are very jealous of their honor. |
| tanto <b>los Protestantes</b> como <b>los Católicos</b> adoran á Dios, | <i>both Protestants and Catholics</i> worship God.              |

665. The definite article is furthermore expressed diversely from the English usage :—

*a.* With the names of the days of the week, except in dates :—

|                                    |                           |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------|
| <b>vendrá el sábado,</b>           | he will come on Saturday. |
| <b>los miércoles y juéves,</b>     | Wednesdays and Thursdays. |
| <b>todos los mártes y viérnes,</b> | every Tuesday and Friday. |
| <b>domingo, tres de abril,</b>     | Sunday, April 3.          |

*b.* With the names of the seasons :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>en la primavera</b> parece que la naturaleza se despierta como de un sueño, | <i>in spring, nature</i> appears to rouse up as from |
|--|--|

|   |   |
|---|---|
| mi amigo pasa el verano á los<br>baños de mar; el otoño en<br>Madrid, y el invierno en Se-<br>villa ó Málaga, | my friend spends summer at the<br>seaside, autumn at Madrid,<br>and winter in Seville or Ma-<br>laga. |
|---|---|

c. Before all titles of respect, dignity, or office, when the individual is spoken of, not when he is addressed:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| el señor y la señora (or los se-<br>ñores) de Moreno,<br>las señoritas de García,<br>el rey don Alfonso doce,<br>el general Concha,<br>el secretario Zurita,<br>el cardenal Quiroga,<br>el maestro Luis de Leon,<br>el padre Íñigo ( <i>een'-ye-go</i> ),<br>la madre Serafina, | Mr. and Mrs. Moreno.<br><br>the Misses ( <i>young ladies</i> ) Garcia.<br>King Alfonso the Twelfth.<br>General Concha.<br>Secretary Zurita.<br>Cardinal Quiroga.<br>Master Louis de Leon.<br>Father Ignatius.<br>Mother Seraphina ( <i>prioress</i> ). |
|---|--|

Exceptions are: the title of **don** (before the Christian name); **fray** (of an ecclesiastical order) and **frey** (of a military order), *brother*; **san** or **santo**, *saint*; **sor** (of nuns), *sister*, but the more common word **hermana** takes the article; as, **sor Angélica**, or **la hermana Angélica**, *sister Angelica*.

d. Before the names of Italian classic writers and artists:—

el Dante, el Bocacio, el Petrarca, el Ticiano, *etc.*

So also with the names of Spanish authors when they represent their works:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| tráigame V. el Garcilaso,<br>no encuentro esa voz en el Co-<br>varrubias, | bring me Garcilaso's works.<br>I do not find that word in Covar-<br>rubias ( <i>Dictionary</i> , 1611). |
|---|---|

The same with titles of well-known books:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| la Raquel de Vicente García de<br>la Huerta ó la de Ullóa,<br>estoy leyendo el Quijote, | Huerta's or Ulloa's Rachel ( <i>tra-<br/>                 gedy</i> ).<br>I am reading Don Quixote. |
|---|--|

*e.* With a few names of countries, provinces, and cities. Such are at present chiefly :—

|   |                                       |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| <b>el</b> Japon ; <b>el</b> Brasil,                   | Japan ; Brazil.                       |
| <b>el</b> Canadá ; <b>el</b> Perú,                    | Canada ; Peru.                        |
| <b>el</b> Paraguay ; <b>la</b> Florida,               | Paraguay ; Florida.                   |
| <b>La</b> Mancha ; <b>La</b> Rioja,                   | ( <i>provinces of Spain</i> ).        |
| Castilla <b>la</b> Nueva ; — <b>la</b> Vieja,         | New — Old — Castile. [vana.           |
| <b>la</b> Coruña ; <b>la</b> Habana,                  | Corunna ( <i>the "Groyne"</i> ) ; Ha- |
| <b>el</b> Ferrol ; <b>el</b> Cairo ; <b>el</b> Havre, | Ferrol ; Cairo ; Havre.               |

REMARK.—With other names of countries and provinces it is not now common to use the article, save in the poetical or oratorical style, or when an adjective qualifies them.

|                            |                  |
|----------------------------|------------------|
| <b>la</b> Europa católica, | Catholic Europe. |
| <b>la</b> España liberal,  | liberal Spain.   |

*f.* With the Christian names of women in familiar style :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>la</b> María ; <b>la</b> Juana,                        | Mary ; Jane.  |
| <b>la</b> Mercêdes ; <b>la</b> Dolores,                   | Mercy ; Dolores.  |
| me lo regaló <b>la</b> Pepa,                              | Josie gave it to me.  |
| <b>la</b> Mariquita no ignoraba el contenido de la carta, | Molly was not unacquainted with the contents of the letter. |

Also with surnames, but generally vulgar :—  
me lo contó **la** Álvarez, | (the woman) Alvarez told it to me.

*g.* With numerals to indicate the hour :—

|  |                                   |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| <b>es</b> <b>la</b> una ; son <b>las</b> diez, | it is one — ten — o'clock.        |
| á <b>la</b> una ; á <b>las</b> diez,           | at one ; at ten (o'clock).        |
| á <b>las</b> doce (del día),                   | at twelve o'clock, noon.          |
| á <b>la</b> madrugada,                         | before sunrise, at an early hour. |

*h.* With many adverbial and other phrases :—

|   |                                 |
|---|---------------------------------|
| á <b>la</b> noche ; á <b>la</b> ciudad,                   | at night ; to town.             |
| á <b>la</b> escuela ; á <b>la</b> iglesia,                | to school ; to church.          |
| en <b>la</b> ciudad ; en <b>la</b> escuela, <i>etc.</i> , | in town ; at school ; — church. |
| al cuidado de ; <b>las</b> mañanas,                       | in care of ; mornings.          |

**666.** The definite article is sometimes employed for the indefinite, in general, indeterminate, expressions and phrases :—

|                                   |                                  |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| la fragancia de la rosa,          | the fragrance of a rose.         |
| me parece que la monarquía        | it appears to me that a monarchy |
| tiene sus ventajas,               | has its advantages. [went out.   |
| me dió las buenas noches y salió, | he bade me (a) good night and    |

*a.* Also to denote rate, with words signifying weight, measure, and distance :—

|                               |                                 |
|-------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| dos duros la libra,           | two dollars a pound.            |
| cuatro reales la botella,     | four reals a bottle.            |
| á tanto la vara ; — la légua, | at so much a yard ; — a league. |

**667.** The definite article is omitted in Spanish and expressed in English :—

*a.* Before a number indicating the order of succession of pontiffs and sovereigns :—

|  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| Pablo cuarto, <i>or</i> Pablo IV.,       | Paul the Fourth, <i>or</i> Paul IV.   |
| Cárlos quinto de Alemania y              | Charles the Fifth of Germany          |
| primero de España,                       | and the First of Spain. [ <i>etc.</i> |
| Felipe segundo ; — tercero ; <i>etc.</i> | Philip the Second ; — the Third ;     |
| Fernando séptimo,                        | Ferdinand the Seventh.                |
| Alfonso doce, rey de España,             | Alfonso XII., king of Spain.          |

Except when speaking of the ancient sovereigns in whose times the article was employed, but even with these the use is not uniform :—

|                                    |                              |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| Don Alfonso décimo,                | Alfonso the Tenth.           |
| Don Alfonso el oncenno,            | Alfonso the Eleventh.        |
| Don Enrique el cuarto,             | Henry the Fourth (of Spain). |
| Don Juan segundo, <i>or</i> el s., | John the Second (of Spain).  |

REMARK.—The ordinal numbers are used in such cases up to eleven ; thence onward the cardinals. See § 674.



*b.* With nouns in the predicate modified by an adjunct :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| es hija de un conde,   | she is the daughter of an earl.                                      |
| es comandante de la plaza,                                       | he is the commander of the fort.                                     |
| la necesidad es madre de la invencion,                           | necessity is the mother of invention.                                |
| ha sido nombrado representante de España cerca de la Santa Sede, | he has been appointed the representative of Spain near the Holy See. |

*c.* With a word in apposition :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Don Quijote, obra del inmortal Cervantes, | Don Quixote, the work of the immortal Cervantes. |
| Madrid, corte de España,                  | Madrid, the capital of Spain.                    |
| Boabdil, último rey moro de Granada,      | Boabdil, the last Moorish king of Granada.       |

*d.* At the head of titles of books and articles :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Vida del arzobispo de Toledo, primado de las Españas, | The Life of the Archbishop of Toledo, the Primate of Spain. |
| Historia del sitio de Gibraltar,                      | The History of the Siege of Gibraltar.                      |
| Revista Hispano-Americana,                            | The Spanish-American Review.                                |

*e.* In certain conventional phrases :—

|                                       |  |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| á esquina de tal calle,               | on the corner of such a street.                |
| á orillas de un rio,                  | on the banks of a river.                       |
| á razon de cuatro millas la legua,    | at the rate of four miles per league. [palace. |
| ir á casa de ; — á palacio,           | to go to the house of ; — to the               |
| estar en casa de ; — en palacio,      | to be at the house of ; — at the palace.       |
| tener intencion de,                   | to have the intention of.                      |
| dormir siesta (= horá <i>sextá</i> ), | to take the noon nap.                          |
| de parte de su padre,                 | on the part of his father.                     |
| en nombre de la religion,             | in the name of religion.                       |
| con objeto de,                        | with the object of.                            |

Use of the Indefinite Article.

668. The indefinite article **un, una**, is in general used much the same in both languages. Special divergences, however, are the following : —

669. The indefinite article is omitted in Spanish : —

*a.* Before substantives standing in the predicate when they denote rank, class, occupation, and characteristic, in very general terms : —

|                                    |                                    |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| mi amigo es capitan,               | my friend is a captain.            |
| fulano es artista inglés,          | such a one is an English artist.   |
| es caballero ; es título,          | he is a gentleman ; — a noble.     |
| es sastre ; es albañil,            | he is a tailor ; — a mason.        |
| es cobarde ; es holgazan,          | he is a coward ; — an idler.       |
| se ha hecho soldado,               | he has become a soldier.           |
| la fé es don de Dios,              | faith is a gift of God. [charity.  |
| dar la limosna es obra de caridad, | to distribute alms is a work of    |
| es católico ; es protestante,      | he is a Catholic ; — a Protestant. |
| es judío ; es libre pensador,      | he is a Jew ; — a free-thinker.    |

REMARK. — But if the separate existence of the predicate substantive is to be emphasized and particularized, the article may be expressed : —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| es <b>un</b> cobarde ; — <b>un</b> holgazan,              | he is a coward ; — an idler.             |
| esta niña es <b>una</b> pobre huérfana,                   | this girl is a poor orphan.              |
| es <b>un</b> oficial de grande mérito,                    | he is an officer of great merit.         |
| su madre es <b>una</b> católica de las<br>más fervorosas, | her mother is a most fervid<br>Catholic. |

*b.* With nouns designating title, office, or attribute, preceded by the preposition *de* : —

|                              |  |
|------------------------------|--|
| el empleo de secretario,     | the office of (a) secretary.                 |
| va de embajador á tal parte, | he goes as an ambassador to such<br>a place. |

|                                       |                                       |
|---------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| el título de grande de España,        | the title of (a) grandee of Spain.    |
| el nombre de libertador de la patria, | the name of liberator of his country. |

c. With substantives that express an idea in a general, indefinite way : —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| tengo motivo para afirmarlo,   | I have a reason for affirming it.   |
| tiene derecho de manifestarlo,   | he has a right to declare it.   |
| poner precio ; — tasa <i>or</i> coto,  | to fix a price ; — a limit.   |
| poner escuela ; — tienda,  | to set up a school ; — a shop.  |
| buscar vida desahogada,  | to seek an easy life.   |
| llegó á pasar por jóven de esperanzas,   | he came to be considered as a young man of expectations.                        |
| los palaciegos lo tenían por incomparable desgracia el ser desterrado de la corte, | palace people considered it an unequalled calamity to be exiled from the court. |
| manifestó odio encarnizado contra la herejía, [festar,                             | he exhibited a furious hatred towards heresy. [declare it.                      |
| dia vendrá en que lo he de mani-   | a day will come in which I shall  |

d. After the verb *tener* with a substantive denoting some quality of the mind or heart, when combined with an adjective : —

|                                 |                               |
|---------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| tiene buen corazon,             | he has a good heart.          |
| tiene feliz memoria, [cerlo,    | he possesses a fine memory.   |
| tiene grande inclinacion de ha- | he has a great mind to do it. |

REMARK. — So also in general after *tener* and *tener por*, as under rule c, in indefinite statements : —

|                            |                                  |
|----------------------------|----------------------------------|
| tener gana de, tiempo de,  | to have a mind, time, to.        |
| tener apetito ; — motivos, | to have an appetite ; — reasons. |

e. With words in apposition : —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Cádiz, ciudad de Andalucía,                           | Cadiz, a city of Andalusia.                             |
| Calderon, poeta insigne,                              | Calderon, a celebrated poet.                            |
| la Carta de Paracuellos, sátira de Francisco Sánchez, | the Paracuellos Epistle, a satire by Francisco Sanchez. |
| entró su hijo, muchacho vivo,                         | his son, a bright lad, came in.                         |

*f.* With certain indefinite expressions, like **otro, otra vez, cierto, semejante, tal, como, gran número de, tan** :—

vino el dia siguiente **otro** aviso,

**otra** vez no seré tan torpe,  
llegó á mis oidos **cierta** noticia,  
no me gusta **semejante** engaño,  
**tal** dia; **tal** noche,  
obró **como** maestro,  
la pintura **como** arte,  
hubo **gran número de** gente,  
á **tan** concluyente explicacion  
nadie puede replicar,

the following day another notice  
came. [stupid.

another time I shall not be so  
a certain item came to my ears.  
I do not like such deception.  
such a day; such a night.  
he proceeded like a master.  
painting as an art. [people.  
there was a large number of  
to such a conclusive explanation  
no one can reply.

*g.* With nouns in negative sentences :—

sin obtener respuesta,  
se fué sin decir palabra,  
sin que recibiese contestacion,  
no me ha de quedar consuelo,  
no tengo genio para eso,

without obtaining an answer.  
he went off without saying a word.  
without his getting a reply.  
no consolation will remain to me.  
I have no talent for that.

*h.* At the head of book titles :—

Diccionario de la Lengua Cas-  
tellana, [Española,  
Ensayo sobre la Legislacion

A Dictionary of the Castilian  
Language. [tion.  
An Essay on Spanish Legisla-

*i.* With nouns denoting weight or measure, accom-  
panied by the fractions thereof :—

compré libra y media,  
anduve legua y cuarta,  
me midió dos varas y tercia,

I purchased a pound and a half.  
I travelled a league and a quarter.  
he measured me off two yards  
and a third.

*j.* In exclamations after **qué** :—

¡**qué** ruido! ¡**qué** dia!  
¡**qué** hermoso paisaje!  
¡**qué** bobo eres!

what a noise! what a day!  
what a fine landscape!  
what a dunce you are!

Use of the Neuter Article *Lo*.

**670.** The neuter article *lo* is only used in the singular, and turns an adjective into a substantive, for which a pure substantive may likewise be often employed (see §§ 83 ; 113, *a*) :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| dominaba en ella el sentimiento<br>de <i>lo</i> maravilloso,      | the sense of the marvellous was<br>dominant in her.                   |
| no dejes de mandarles algo de<br><i>lo</i> mucho que vas á ganar, | do not fail to send them some-<br>thing of the much you will<br>earn. |
| en <i>lo</i> sucesivo ; <i>lo</i> pasado,                         | for the future ; the past.  |
| en <i>lo</i> más escondido de un valle,                           | in the most retired (part) of a<br>valley. laws.                      |
| contra <i>lo</i> dispuesto por las leyes,                         | against what is provided by the                                       |

**671.** The substantive nature of the adjective with *lo* is especially manifest when they are accompanied by **que** with the verb *to be*, or one of its substitutes. In this case, as we have seen (§ 113, *a*), the adjective is varied anomalously, agreeing in gender and number with the noun subject to the verb. The formula then will be :—

**Lo** — variable adjective — **que** — verb *to be* — noun-subject ; or, without *que* : noun-subject — verb *to be* — **lo** — variable adjective.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <i>lo</i> <i>amena</i> que es esta pradera,  | the amenity of this green field.  |
| <i>lo</i> <i>caprichosa</i> que es la imaginacion, [ballero,   | the capriciousness of the imagination. [tleman.                           |
| <i>lo</i> <i>pundonoroso</i> que es este <i>calo</i> <i>frescas</i> que son estas aceitunas,                 | the punctiliousness of this gentle freshness of these olives.             |
| <i>lo</i> <i>desatendidas</i> que habían sido sus súplicas,  | the deaf ear that had been turned to his prayers.                         |
| <i>lo</i> <i>honrados</i> que se considerarían, si, <i>etc.</i>  | the honor they would consider done to them, if, <i>etc.</i>               |
| <i>lo</i> <i>convenientes</i> que fueron en otros tiempos, y <i>lo</i> <i>útiles</i> que pueden ser todavía, | the suitableness of them in other days, and their possible utility still. |

una prueba de lo satisfactorios  
que le son vuestros trabajos,  
el ministro se propone que la  
discusion de los presupuestos  
sea todo lo amplia posible,  
es una de esas reformas que por  
lo necesarias están fuera de  
toda discusion,

a proof of his satisfaction with  
your labors.  
the minister proposes to give  
all possible latitude to the  
discussion of the budget.  
it is one of those reformatory  
measures, the necessity of  
which is too evident for dis-  
cussion.

The literal version of a few of these examples, which are all taken from modern writers, will explain this extraordinary idiom :—

*The agreeable that this green field is; the fresh that these olives are; the honored that they would consider themselves, if, etc.; the suitable that they were in other times, and the useful that they may still be; a proof of the satisfactory that your labors are to him; the minister proposes that the debate on the estimates be all the broad possible; it is one of those reforms that by the necessary (on account of their necessity) are beyond all discussion.*

### The Use of the Numerals.

672. Order in a series is properly expressed as in English by the ordinal numbers :—

el primer día; el segundo año,  
el tercer aniversario,  
la cuarta fila,  
el quinto artículo, [oíma,  
las lecciones décima y undé-  
los siglos décimo sexto y déci-  
mo séptimo,  
el libro trigésimo tercio,

the first day; the second year.  
the third anniversary.  
the fourth row or file.  
the fifth article.  
the tenth and eleventh lessons.  
the sixteenth and seventeenth  
centuries.  
the thirty-third book.

673. Popularly, the cardinals are more generally used than the ordinals to specify the number of a volume, book, chapter, lesson, century, or other word which, from its signification, naturally involves a series :—

capítulo **veinte y uno**,  
lección **quince**,  
página **ciento y una**,  
el siglo **diez y nueve**,

chapter twenty-first.  
lesson fifteenth.  
page one hundred and first.  
the nineteenth century.

**674.** The ordinals are used up to *eleven*, to indicate the order of succession of sovereigns; but from that number, the cardinals are regularly substituted:—

Carlos **primero** de España y  
**quinto** de Alemania,  
Henrique **cuarto**,  
Fernando **séptimo**,  
Leon **trece**; Alfonso **doce**,  
Luis **catorce**, rey de Francia,

Charles the First of Spain and  
the Fifth of Germany.  
Henry the Fourth.  
Ferdinand the Seventh.  
Leo XIII; Alfonso XII.  
Louis XIV, king of France.

**675.** The cardinal numbers are used instead of the ordinals, in *dates*, with the sole exception of **primero**, *first*. In this case, the month and year, when expressed, are always to be preceded by the preposition *de*:—

Madrid, **primero de Enero, de**  
mil ochocientos y ochenta,  
el **dos** de Mayo, **de** 1808,  
el **diez y siete** de Abril,  
el día **once** de Febrero,  
viércoles, **cuatro** de Julio, **de** mil  
setecientos sesenta,  
vendrá el día **diez**,

Madrid, January first, eighteen  
hundred and eighty.  
the second of May, 1808.  
April 17th.  
February 11th.  
Friday, July fourth, seventeen  
hundred and sixty.  
he will come on the 10th.

REMARK.—The word **día**, *day*, may be or not employed when the month is expressed; but when the number stands alone, it is more common to give it:—

el **día** quince Junio, *or* }  
el **quince** de Junio, }  
el **día** cuatro,  
tenemos cita para el **día** doce,  
falleció el día dieciseis,

the fifteenth of June.  
the fourth. [twelfth.  
we have an appointment for the  
he died on the sixteenth.

676. The question, *What day of the month is it?* may be expressed in Spanish by **¿qué día del mes tenemos?** or by **¿á cuántos estamos del mes?** and is answered in the first case by the cardinal number (except the *first*) with the definite article; and in the second case, by the same preceded by the preposition *á*, with or without the corresponding verb:—

| <i>tenemos</i>                                       | [ <i>seis</i> , | <i>estamos</i>   |
|--|-----------------|--|
| el <b>primero</b> ; el <b>dos</b> ; el <b>dieci-</b> |                 | <b>á primero</b> ; <b>á dos</b> ; <b>á diez y seis</b> |
| it is the first; — the second; — the sixteenth.      |                 |  |

REMARK. — Indefinite or approximate expressions are: —

|   |  |  |
|---|--|--|
| <b>á primeros</b> de (Enero),           |  | in the early part of (January).            |
| <b>á principios</b> del (siglo actual), |  | at the beginning of (the present century). |
| <b>á mediados</b> del (año pasado),     |  | about the middle of (last year).           |
| <b>á fines</b> del (siglo pasado),      |  | toward the close of (the last century).    |
| <b>á últimos</b> del (mes que viene),   |  | about the end of (next month).             |

More definite are: —

|                                  |  |                              |
|----------------------------------|--|------------------------------|
| <b>á or en primero</b> de (mes), |  | on the first of (the month). |
| <b>á or en fin</b> de (año),     |  | at the end of (the year).    |

677. A week is more often expressed by **ocho días**, and a fortnight by **quince días**, than by the general terms *una semana*, *dos semanas*: —

|                                      |  |                                  |
|--------------------------------------|--|----------------------------------|
| vendrá dentro de <b>ocho días</b> ,  |  | he will come within a week.      |
| mañana en <b>ocho días</b> ,         |  | a week from to-morrow.           |
| hace más de <b>quince días</b> que   |  | I have not seen him in more than |
| no le veo; <b>quince días</b> há,    |  | a fortnight; a fortnight ago.    |
| de hoy en <b>ocho (quince)</b> días, |  | a week (fortnight) from to-day.  |

678. The hour or time of day is expressed by the cardinals with the feminine article plural *las* (except *la una*, *one*), agreeing with *hora*, *horas*, understood: —



¿qué hora es?  
 es la **una**; la una y media,  
 es la una y tres cuartos, *or* }  
 son las **dos** ménos cuarto, }  
 son las **once**; las **doce**,  
 son las diez y cuarto,  
 á la una; á las siete,  
 á las dos de la madrugada,  
 á las ocho de la mañana,  
 á las cuatro de la tarde,  
 á las nueve de la noche,

what time is it? [o'clock.  
 it is one — half-past one —  
 it is quarter to two.  
 it is eleven — twelve — o'clock.  
 it is a quarter past ten.  
 at one o'clock; at seven.  
 at two o'clock in the morning.  
 at eight, A.M.  
 at four o'clock, P.M.  
 at nine o'clock at night.

REMARK. — To *strike the hour* is **dar la hora**, used intransitively: —

las tres van á dar,  
 ya van á dar las cinco,  
 han dado las doce ya,  
 dada la una; dadas las once,  
 al dar las doce,

it is going to strike three.  
 it is just going to strike five.  
 it has already struck twelve.  
 when it had struck one — eleven.  
 as it struck twelve.

**679.** In stating age, the Spanish employs the verb **tener**, *to have*, with **años**, *years*, preceded by the cardinal number: —

¿cuántos **años** tiene V.?  
 ¿qué edad tiene V.?  
**tengo** veinticinco años,  
 este jóven **tendrá** unos diez y  
 ocho años,  
 su padre **tiene** cincuenta años,  
 y su madre **cuarenta**,  
 no es muy viejo,  
 es todavía jóven, ó más bien de  
 edad mediana,  
 es un viejo (*indelicate*), }  
 es un anciano (*courteous*), }  
 fué mi antiguo preceptor,

how old are you?  
 what is your age?  
 I am twenty-five years old.  
 this young man must be about  
 eighteen.  
 his father is fifty years old, and  
 his mother forty.  
 he is not very old (in life).  
 he is still young, or rather in  
 middle life.  
 he is an old man.  
 he was my old teacher.

REMARK. — **Viejo** always signifies literally *old in years*; *old*, meaning “former,” is **antiguo**; *he is an old friend*, **es un antiguo**

**amigo.** To be “older” than another is, **tener más edad, más años, que otro**, although aged people might say of each other, **más viejo que, older than.**

**690.** “To be just so many years old,” “to have completed so many years” is **tener — años cumplidos, cumplir — años:—**

|   |  |  |
|---|--|--|
| tiene veintiseis años <b>cumplidos,</b> |  | he is just twenty-six years old.           |
| al <b>cumplir</b> los trece años,       |  | when he had completed his thirteenth year. |

**REMARK.** — Idioms with expressions of age and time are : —

|                                   |  |  |
|-----------------------------------|--|--|
| á los dos días,                   |  | in two days, on the second day.          |
| á la edad de cinco años,          |  | at five years of age.                    |
| á los cinco años de su edad,      |  | at the age of five years.                |
| á los veinte años de su reinado,  |  | in the twentieth year of his reign.      |
| á los cinco meses de su estancia, |  | { after a stay of five months, <i>or</i> |
| falleció joven de veinte años,    |  | { when he had stayed five months.        |
|                                   |  | he died at the age of twenty years.      |

### *The Laws of Agreement.*

#### **The Adjective and Noun.**

**691.** Adjectives agree in gender and number with the substantive they limit or describe : —

|  |  |   |
|--|--|---|
| un hombre <b>activo,</b>   |  | an active man.  |
| una señora <b>anciana,</b>   |  | an old lady.  |
| personas <b>emprendedoras,</b>   |  | enterprising persons.                                 |
| <b>ciertas</b> sociedades son <b>fomentadoras</b> de la riqueza pública, |  | certain societies are promoters of the public wealth. |

**692.** A plural substantive may be limited by two or three adjectives in the singular, agreeing in gender only, when they relate to distinct members of the same series : —

las lenguas **castellana y francesa,**

los tomos **primero y cuarto,**

los siglos **segundo y tercero,**

the Spanish and French languages.

the first and fourth volumes.

the second and third centuries.

**683.** When an adjective relates to two or more substantives of the same gender (whichever be the number), it stands in the plural, and the gender will be determined by that of the substantives :—

el padre y el hijo están **malos,**  
la madre y su hija son muy **parecidas,**

la madre y sus hijas son **bellas,**  
la aplicacion y constancia en el estudio son **necesarias** al que quiere adelantar,

the father and son are ill.

the mother and her daughter look very much alike. [fair.

the mother and her daughters are diligence and perseverance in study are necessary to one who desires to advance.

**684.** When an adjective relates to two or more substantives in the singular number and of different genders, it stands in the masculine plural, provided the substantives have distinct meanings :—

el padre y la madre son **ambos caritativos,** [admiracion,  
el cielo y la tierra son **dignos** de la plaza y el cuartel más **limpios** de la ciudad,

the father and mother are both benevolent. [of admiration.

the sky and the earth are worthy the neatest square and neighborhood in town.

REMARK.—If, however, the two nouns are synonymous, or nearly so, in meaning, whichever be their gender, the adjective agrees in the singular with the nearest noun :—

muestra una capacidad, un talento **singular,**

con un alborozo, una satisfaccion **indescriptible,**

para solaz y desahogo **comun,**

he displays singular ability and talent.

with indescribable joy and satisfaction. [lief.

for common consolation and re-

**685.** When an adjective relates to two or more substantives in the plural number and of different genders, it agrees with the nearest noun in gender and number :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| observaban ademanes y conversaciones <b>agitadas</b> , [v <b>anos</b> , | they noticed excited gestures and conversation. [v <b>ain</b> . |
| sus esperanzas y temores eran   | their hopes and their fears were                                |

**686.** Adjectives of all kinds that stand before the noun they limit agree in gender and number with the nearest one :—

|  |                                     |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| n <b>uestro</b> atraso y decadencia,   | our low state and decline.          |
| p <b>oca</b> unidad y trabazon,        | little unity and connection. [ness. |
| con s <b>ingular</b> vigor y presteza, | with marked energy and prompt-      |
| con m <b>ucha</b> furia y denuedo,     | with great fury and boldness.       |

**687.** With titles, the adjective agrees with the natural, not the grammatical, gender, when it stands in the predicate or as a participle past :—

|  |                               |
|--|-------------------------------|
| su majestad está <b>enfermo</b> ,      | his majesty is ill.           |
| su majestad está <b>enferma</b> ,      | her majesty is ill.           |
| sus majestades, <b>prevenidos</b> , se | their majesties (the king and |
| levantaron,                            | queen) being notified, arose. |

*a.* But adjectives that form part of the title agree regularly :—

|                                   |  |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| su <b>sagrada</b> majestad,       | his sacred majesty ( <i>Rom. Emp.</i> ). |
| sus majestades <b>católicas</b> , | their Catholic majesties.                |
| <b>vuestra</b> señoría,           | your lordship.                           |

#### The Verb with its Subject.

**688.** The verb agrees with its subject, expressed or understood, in number and person :—

|  |                                   |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| yo leo ; nosotros le <b>emos</b> ,     | I read ; we read.                 |
| la hoja cae ; las hojas ca <b>en</b> , | the leaf falls ; the leaves fall. |

**689.** Collective terms in the singular number require a verb in that number whether they involve the idea of unity or plurality : —

|                               |                                |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| el pueblo le escucha,         | the people listen to him.      |
| el público se divierte,       | the public amuse themselves.   |
| la gente lo dice,             | people say so.                 |
| el ejército avanza,           | the army moves forward.        |
| la tropa acudió,              | the troops came up.            |
| el congreso se reunió,        | the congress met.              |
| la Academia lo aprueba,       | the Academy approves it.       |
| la junta se disolvió,         | the committee was dissolved.   |
| la multitud se impresionó,    | the throng was moved.          |
| la poblacion queda tranquila, | the town remains quiet.        |
| el rebaño huye ante el lobo,  | the flock flees from the wolf. |

**690.** Collective terms followed by an adjunct in the *plural*, expressed or understood, require a plural verb : —

|                                      |                                     |                                |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| multitud de personas le felicitaron, | crowds of people congratulated him. | [tieron en ello, [agree to it. |
| gran parte de ellos no consintieron, | a large number of them did not      |                                |
| la mayor parte lo saben,             | the greater part know it.           |                                |
| parte venían sin armas,              | a part came without arms.           |                                |
| la mitad perecieron,                 | one-half perished.                  |                                |

but

|   |  |
|---|--|
| la mayor parte de la gente lo cree,                       | the greater part of the people believe it.     |
| gran parte de la poblacion ha quedado reducida á cenizas, | a large part of the town was reduced to ashes. |

**691.** Nouns in the singular, connected by the correlative **ni** — **ni**, *neither* — *nor*, are now generally accompanied by a plural verb : —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| ni el miedo ni el interés torcieron su fé,                    | neither fear nor interest swerved his faith.                   |
| ni un solo grito, ni un solo gesto empafiaron aquella escena, | neither a single shout nor a single gesture marred that scene. |

REMARK. — With **6** — **6**, *either* — *or*, the use of the language does not seem to be fixed, both numbers being met with: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>6</b> la ambicion <b>6</b> la ira le <b>movió</b><br>and le <b>movieron</b> , | either ambition or anger im-<br>pelled him. |
|--|---|

**692.** When there are two or more subjects in either number, the verb is regularly put in the plural; but in vehement discourse, the verb is often found to agree in the singular with the first noun of a series, before which the verb stands, as if the enumeration of characteristics were mere expansions of one thought: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| la novela y las poesías me <b>han</b><br><b>gustado</b> mucho,<br>las cartas y el prólogo me <b>pare-</b><br><b>cieron</b> muy bien escritos, | I was much pleased with the<br>novel and the poetry.<br>the letters and the preface ap-<br>peared to me to be very well<br>written. |
|---|---|

|   |  |
|---|--|
| nunca <b>fué</b> tan expuesto su valor<br>y constancia,<br>decía mi amigo, con la autoridad<br>que le <b>dá</b> su palabra, su talen-<br>to, su íntegro carácter, | his courage and firmness were<br>never so tested.<br>my friend said, with all the weight<br>that his words, talent, and integ-<br>rity of character give him . . . |
|---|--|

*a.* A singular verb may accompany a double subject when these are used synonymously, whichever be the position of the verb: —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| el contento y el aplauso <b>fué</b><br>grande,<br>el disgusto y murmuracion no<br><b>dejó</b> de hacerse sentir, | the satisfaction and applause<br>were great.<br>dissatisfaction and murmurs did<br>not fail to make themselves felt. |
|--|--|

**693.** When a verb has two or more subjects of different persons, it is put in the plural and agrees with the first person rather than the second or third, and with the second person rather than the third: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| ni yo ni mi amo la <b>habemos</b><br>visto jamás, [buenos,<br>yo espero que tú y ella <b>estéis</b><br><b>irémos</b> usted y yo, | neither I nor my master have<br>ever seen her.<br>I hope that you and she are well.<br>you and I will go. |
|--|---|

**694.** When the subject is a relative pronoun, the verb properly agrees in person and number with the person to whom the relative refers, that is, with the antecedent:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| yo soy quien lo <b>digo</b> ,                  | I am the one who say it.                         |
| nosotros somos los que lo <b>hemos visto</b> , | we are the ones who saw it, <i>or</i> we saw it. |
| [mejor que yo,                                 | [better than we.                                 |
| vosotros sois los que lo <b>sabéis</b>         | you are the ones who know it                     |
| VV. son los que <b>hablaron</b> con él,        | you are the ones who spoke to him.               |

*a.* In ordinary language, however, and even in literature, it is not uncommon to find the verb in the third person:—

|   |         |                                    |
|---|---------|------------------------------------|
| yo soy quien lo <b>dice</b> ,           | [favor, | I am the one who say (says) it.    |
| ahora soy yo el que <b>pido</b> á V. el |         | it is I who ask you the favor now. |

**695.** The third person plural is often used in reference to a vague subject equivalent to the passive voice, or to the French *on* with a singular verb:—

|  |                                 |
|--|---------------------------------|
| vuelva V. mañana, nos <b>decían</b>  | come again to-morrow, said they |
| en todas partes, [casino,  | everywhere. [to the club.       |
| cuando <b>cierran</b> el café voy al   | when they close the café, I go  |
| (that is, <i>I was told everywhere to call the next day.</i> French: <i>me disait-on partout; lorsqu'on ferme le café, je m'en vais au cercle.</i> ) |                                 |

### *The Use of the Tenses.*

#### Indicative Mode.

#### **696.** PRESENT TENSE.

|                                |                         |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------|
| hablo; <b>estoy hablando</b> , | I speak; I am speaking. |
| cómo; <b>estoy comiendo</b> ,  | I eat; I am eating.     |
| vivo; <b>estoy viviendo</b> ,  | I live; I am living.    |

*a.* Expresses what occurs at the time in which it is asserted:—

|                           |                            |
|---------------------------|----------------------------|
| <b>escribo</b> una carta, | I am writing a letter.     |
| Juan lee el diario,       | John is reading the paper. |

REMARK. — In this sense, the Spanish may employ equally well the simple verb or the progressive form (§ 379) : —

|                          |              |                          |              |
|--------------------------|--------------|--------------------------|--------------|
| <b>escribo, or</b>       | } una carta. | <b>Juan lee, or</b>      | } el diario. |
| <b>estoy escribiendo</b> |              | <b>Juan está leyendo</b> |              |

*b.* Expresses habit, custom, and absolute fact, without regard to a determinate period : —

|  |                               |
|--|-------------------------------|
| <b>mi tío es</b> periodista,                   | my uncle is a journalist.     |
| <b>doy</b> lecciones de Castellano,            | I give Spanish lessons.       |
| <b>nos levantamos</b> temprano,                | we get up early.              |
| <b>mi hermana dibuja</b> bien,                 | my sister draws well. [away.  |
| <b>Dios da</b> los bienes y los <b>quita</b> , | God gives wealth and takes it |
| <b>el hombre propone</b> , y Dios <b>dis-</b>  | man proposes, and God dis-    |
| <b>pone</b> ,                                  | poses.                        |

*c.* Replaces the future in familiar language : —

|   |                               |
|---|-------------------------------|
| <b>voy</b> al instante,                 | I'll go at once.              |
| <b>vuelve</b> en seguida,               | he'll be back directly.       |
| en ese caso no <b>salgo</b> ,           | in that case I'll not go out. |
| ¿qué <b>hago</b> ? ¿ <b>consiento</b> ? | what shall I do? consent?     |
| no lo <b>firmo</b> ,                    | I will not sign it.           |
| ¿me <b>hace</b> V. el favor?            | will you do me the favor?     |

*d.* Replaces the past definite in lively narration : —

|   |                                    |
|---|------------------------------------|
| <b>coge</b> su sombrero y <b>sale</b> ,           | he caught up his hat and went out. |
| <b>llega</b> , <b>saluda</b> , y me <b>dice</b> , | he came up, greeted me, and said.  |

*e.* Used idiomatically after a clause with the impersonal verb **hace**, *it is*, with expressions of time : —

|  |                                    |
|--|------------------------------------|
| <b>hace</b> mucho tiempo que no le           | it is a long time since I have     |
| <b>veo</b> , [en esta casa,                  | seen him. [house.                  |
| <b>hace</b> cuatro años que <b>vivimos</b>   | we have lived four years in this   |
| <b>hace</b> ocho días que <b>rondan</b> la   | for a week they have been prowling |
| calle donde vivo,                            | about the street I live in.        |
| ¿cuánto tiempo <b>hace</b> que <b>está</b>   | how long have you been in          |
| V. en Madrid? [rando?                        | Madrid?                            |
| ¿ <b>hace</b> mucho que <b>está</b> V. espe- | have you been waiting long?        |



## 697. IMPERFECT TENSE.

|                                  |                          |
|----------------------------------|--------------------------|
| <b>hablaba; estaba hablando,</b> | I spoke; I was speaking. |
| <b>comía; estaba comiendo,</b>   | I ate; I was eating.     |
| <b>vivía; estaba viviendo,</b>   | I lived; I was living.   |

*a.* Denotes progressive continuity in the past:—

|                                 |                             |
|---------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <b>como decía; como andaba,</b> | as I was saying; — walking. |
| <b>me hacía señales,</b>        | he made signs to me.        |

*b.* Describes an action or situation that was going on or existing, when some incident, expressed by the past definite, was introduced or intervened. In this case, the progressive form must be employed in English and may be also in Spanish:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>escribía (or estaba escribiendo) cuando entró Juan,</b>          | I was writing when John came in.                    |
| <b>estaba (or me encontraba) en mi despacho cuando oí el grito,</b> | I was in my office (or study) when I heard the cry. |
| <b>mientras que nos paseábamos, empezó á llover,</b>                | while we were taking a walk, it began to rain.      |

*c.* Denotes customary action or state during some previous period. In this case, it may be translated by the absolute imperfect (*I spoke*) or by the term “used to”:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>cuando vivía en Sevilla, visitaba amenudo los jardines del duque,</b>         | when I lived in Seville, I often visited the duke's gardens.                              |
| <b>me gustaba andar por el río entre la Torre del Oro y el Puente de Barcas,</b> | I used to like strolling along the river, between the Gold-Tower and the Bridge of Boats. |
| <b>le veía todos los días,</b>   | I used to see him daily.  |
| <b>los Griegos cultivaban las letras y los Romanos la guerra,</b>                | the Greeks cultivated letters, and the Romans war.  |

REMARK.—Custom may also be expressed by the imperfect tense of the verb *soler*, *to be wont to*:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| en aquella época <b>solíamos</b> ir<br>cada año á los baños,<br><b>solían</b> acompañarnos muchos<br>amigos y amigas, | at that period, we used to go to<br>the baths every year.<br>many friends of both sexes were<br>wont to accompany us. |
|---|---|

d. It is translated by the absolute past when it involves the idea of more or less duration over a series of moments or of years. In this sense, it is found in vivid descriptions and narrations, or to declare what a person or object was during a certain period in the past:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>mirábase</b> el muchacho con<br>asombro,<br>me <b>decía</b> muchas cosas que me<br><b>causaban</b> extrañeza, [casa,<br><b>estaba</b> de huésped en dicha<br>Ciceron <b>era</b> grande orador,<br>Alejandro <b>era</b> rey de Grecia, | the lad gazed at him with aston-<br>ishment.<br>he told me many things which<br>surprised me. [mentioned.<br>I was a boarder in the house<br>Cicero was a great orator.<br>Alexander was king of Greece. |
|--|--|

e. In the old language, especially in the ballad poetry, the imperfect occasionally takes the place of the present when the verse requires it:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Si hallo el agua clara,<br>Turbia la bebía yo, | If I find the water clear,<br>When I drink it it is roiled. |
| — Ballad beginning " <i>Fonte frida</i> ."     |   |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Que un Cristiano dejó muerto,<br>Tras mí <b>venía</b> el alcalde, | I have slain a Christian,<br>The sheriff is pursuing me. |
| — Ballad " <i>Yo m'era mora Morayma</i> ."                        |  |

f. In familiar language, the imperfect often replaces the conditional:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| si le hubiera dicho la verdad, me<br><b>exponía</b> á un regaño,             | if I had told him the truth, I<br>should have risked a scolding.                          |
| era tan amigo del padre Quieto,<br>que no le <b>movía</b> un terre-<br>moto, | he was so partial to father <i>Ease</i> ,<br>that an earthquake would not<br>disturb him. |

REMARK. — The simple form of the English past tense (*I spoke, I wrote*) is expressed then, in Spanish, by two distinct tenses — the imperfect, denoting prolonged past action or custom; and by the past definite, denoting past action without continuity, a past incident: —

|   |  |   |
|---|--|---|
| <b>hablaba</b> , <i>I spoke</i> , — that is, <i>I</i><br><i>was speaking.</i> |  | <b>hablé</b> , <i>I spoke</i> , — that is, <i>on one</i><br><i>occasion past.</i> |
|---|--|---|

#### 698. PAST DEFINITE TENSE.

|                                |  |                             |  |                               |
|--------------------------------|--|-----------------------------|--|-------------------------------|
| <b>hablé</b> , <i>I spoke.</i> |  | <b>comí</b> , <i>I ate.</i> |  | <b>viví</b> , <i>I lived.</i> |
|--------------------------------|--|-----------------------------|--|-------------------------------|

*a.* Indicates what occurred on *one* occasion in the past, whether a short time or ages before, of which no part is continued to the present, and without involving duration or extension of time. It is, therefore, the tense of absolute past time, corresponding to the Greek aorist: —

|  |  |  |
|--|--|--|
| le <b>vi</b> hace un momento,<br>lo <b>dijo</b> ayer, pero lo niega hoy,   |  | I saw him a moment ago.<br>he said so yesterday, but he denies it to-day.                                    |
| Juan <b>salió</b> temprano, [corial,<br>el mes pasado <b>estuve</b> en el Es-<br>Alejandro <b>murió</b> joven,<br>Cain <b>mató</b> á su hermano, |  | John went out early.<br>last month I was at the Escorial.<br>Alexander died young.<br>Cain slew his brother. |

*b.* Hence the past definite is the favorite tense for historical narration, in every case in which the action or state is devoid of the idea of repetition, custom, and prolonged duration, which distinguishes it radically from the imperfect: —

|  |  |  |
|--|--|--|
| hasta la mañana del ocho no<br><b>pudo</b> el confesor enterar del<br>edicto á Carlos III, quien sin<br>demora <b>mandó</b> á su ministro<br>despachar un correo al Inqui-<br>sidor general, |  | until the morning of the eighth,<br>the confessor was not able to<br>inform the king of the edict,<br>who immediately directed his<br>minister to despatch a courier<br>to the Inquisitor-general. |
|--|--|--|

— Ferrer del Rio, *Cárlos III*, Madrid, 1856; I. 388.

la ciudad de Granada **fué** poblacion de los de Damasco, que **vinieron** con Tarif su capitán; i diez años despues que los Alárabes **echaron** á los Godos del señorío de España, la **escogieron** por habitacion,

the city of Granada was settled by people from Damascus, who came with Tarif their leader, and ten years after the Arabs drove the Goths from power in Spain, they selected it for their residence.

—Mendoza, *Guerra de Granada*, Lisbon, 1627; f. 2, b.

c. In the ancient language, the past definite was often replaced by the old pluperfect in *ra* (**hablara, comiera**, from the Latin *fabularam, comederam*), now limited mostly to the subjunctive mood:—

El **dixera** otra razon, | He gave a different message.

—Ballad "*Rosa fresca*."

Por ahí **fuera** á pasar, | He passed that way.

—Ballad "*Fonte frida*."

Las cartas echó en el fuego, | Into the fire he threw the notes,  
Y al mensagero **matara**, | And slew the messenger.

—Ballad "*Pasedbase el rey moro*."

#### 699. PAST INDEFINITE TENSE.

**he hablado,**

*I have spoken.*

**he comido,**

*I have eaten.*

**he vivido,**

*I have lived.*

**he estado hablando,**

*I have been speaking.*

**he estado comiendo,**

*I have been eating.*

**he estado viviendo,**

*I have been living.*

a. Denotes what is absolutely past, but wholly undetermined as to the specific period:—

**he escrito** una carta,  
no digas nada á nadie de lo que  
**hemos tratado**, [cion,  
**han cumplido** con su obliga-  
**¿habeis quedado** en no ir?  
VV. no **han dicho** nada,  
España **ha producido** grandes  
hombres,

I have written a letter.  
do not tell anybody anything  
about what we have talked.  
they have discharged their duty.  
have you decided not to go?  
you have said nothing.  
Spain has produced great men

*b.* Indicates a determinate epoch in the past which has not entirely elapsed :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| hoy <b>hemos escrito</b> algunas cartas,                      | we have written some letters to-day.                     |
| mi hermano se marchó la semana pasada y <b>ha vuelto</b> hoy, | my brother went away last week, and has returned to-day. |
| este año <b>ha habido</b> mucha lluvia, [tal?                 | there has been a good deal of rain this year. [So?       |
| ¿cuándo <b>ha visto</b> V. á fulano de                        | when have you seen Mr. So and                            |
| le <b>he visto</b> este mes, }                                | { I have seen him this month.                            |
| no le <b>vi</b> el mes pasado, }                              | { I did not see him last month.                          |

*c.* This tense is often used incorrectly at the present day in imitation of the French :—

| POPULAR.  | CORRECT.  |
|---|---|
| <b>he ido</b> anoche al teatro.                                     | anoche <b>fuí</b> al teatro.                              |
| <b>ha venido</b> ayer y <b>se ha alojado</b> en la fonda del Cisne. | <b>vino</b> ayer y <b>se alojó</b> en la fonda del Cisne. |

*d.* The progressive form is used the same as the common one, except that it can only stand when the time during which an action or state lasted is mentioned or easily implied :—

|  |                                  |
|--|----------------------------------|
| ¿qué <b>ha hecho</b> V. hoy? [hoy?       | what have you done to-day?       |
| ¿qué <b>ha estado</b> V. <b>haciendo</b> | what have you been doing to-day? |
| <b>he estado</b> escribiendo cartas,     | I have been writing letters.     |

#### 700. PLUPERFECT TENSE.

|                               |                      |
|-------------------------------|----------------------|
| <b>había hablado,</b>         | I had spoken.        |
| <b>había comido,</b>          | I had eaten.         |
| <b>había vivido,</b>          | I had lived.         |
| <b>había estado hablando,</b> | I had been speaking. |
| <b>había estado comiendo,</b> | I had been eating.   |
| <b>había estado viviendo,</b> | I had been living.   |

*a.* Expresses an action or event that is absolutely completed, with reference to another which was simultaneous with or subsequent to it, expressed or implied :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| yo <b>había leído</b> ya un traslado<br>del libro, <b>antes que</b> saliese<br>impreso, | I had already read a transcript<br>of the book, before it came out<br>in print. |
| <b>El había estado durmiendo</b><br>durante la conversacion,                            | he had been sleeping during the<br>conversation.                                |
| le pregunté si <b>había oído</b> alguna<br>cosa nueva,                                  | I asked him if he had heard any-<br>thing new.                                  |

# 701. PAST ANTERIOR.

|                                |                      |
|--------------------------------|----------------------|
| (cuando) <b>hube hablado</b> , | (when) I had spoken. |
| (cuando) <b>hube comido</b> ,  | (when) I had eaten.  |
| (cuando) <b>hube vivido</b> ,  | (when) I had lived.  |

*a.* Expresses the same as the pluperfect, but is always preceded by some conjunction of time, such as, **cuando, when; despues que, after; luego que, así que, tan pronto como, as soon as; no bien, no sooner; apenas, scarcely, hardly;** etc. :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| cuando <b>hube leído</b> el oficio, se<br>lo devolví,                                     | when I had read the (official) pa-<br>per, I handed it back to him.                       |
| luego que <b>hubo escrito</b> la con-<br>testacion, la entregó al mozo,                   | after he had written the answer,<br>he delivered it to the waiter.                        |
| tan pronto como <b>hubimos pe-<br/>netrado</b> en el anden, se puso<br>en marcha el tren, | as soon as we had reached the<br>platform of the station, the<br>train began to move off. |

**702.** A simple form of the pluperfect indicative is often met with in the exalted prose, or poetical, style, a form derived from the Latin original in *-aram, -eram*, etc., and which is now chiefly confined to the imperfect subjunctive in *-ra* :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| el pendon de Castilla ondeó<br>luego en una de las torres (de<br>la Alhambra) donde tantos<br>siglos <b>tremolára</b> el estandarte<br>del Profeta, | soon the pennon of Castile float-<br>ed out over one of the towers<br>(of the Alhambra) where, for<br>so many centuries, the Proph-<br>et's standard <i>had waved</i> . |
|---|---|

— Lafuente, *Hist. de España*, 1850.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| divorciado del partido en cuyas<br>aras lo <b>sacrificára</b> todo, | divorced from the party on whose<br>altars he <i>had sacrificed</i> all. |
|---|--|

— Emilio Castelar, *Ferdinand VII*, 1864.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| abominado de la teocr cia  <br>quien <b>sirviera</b> , | detested by the fanatics whom<br>he <i>had served</i> . — <i>Ibid.</i> |
|--|--|

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Trayendo   nuestros pechos la<br>dulzura | Restoring to our hearts the joys<br>of peace |
|--|--|

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Que <b>perdieran</b> un tiempo a n<br>no olvidado, | That they <i>had lost</i> in days not<br>yet forgotten. |
|--|---|

— *Sonnet to King Alfonso*, 1877.

### 703. FUTURE TENSE.

**hablar **, *I shall speak*. | **comer **, *I shall eat*. | **vivir **, *I shall live*.

*a.* Denotes future time :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <b>escribir </b> la carta ma ana por la<br>ma ana,<br> qu  <b>har </b> V. en ese caso?<br>la guerra <b>acabar </b> pronto,<br><b>habr </b> una cosecha abundante<br>este a o,<br> cuando <b>vendr </b> ? sabes?<br><b>ser </b> V. elegido diputado, | I shall write the letter to-morrow<br>morning.<br>what will you do in that case?<br>the war will close soon.<br>there will be an abundant har-<br>vest this year.<br>when will he come, do you know?<br>you will be elected to Congress. |
|---|--|

*b.* It is employed in a potential sense in interrogative sentences that are undeniable in the estimation of the interrogator ; also in queries :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
|   <b>habr </b> desgracia mayor que la<br>mia? [m s ruin?<br>  <b>podr </b> manifestarse infamia | can there be a greater misfortune<br>than mine? [light?<br>can baser villainy be brought to |
|---|---|

*c.* Replaces the present tense, when something is affirmed of which there is a doubt. In such case, some adverb or phrase must be inserted like *perhaps*, *I suspect*, *I wonder*; and when speaking of time or age, *about* :—

**vendrá** para abonarme la cantidad que me debe,  
no sé á qué **vendrá**,  
¿cuántos años **tendrá**?  
**tendrá** unos veinte años,  
¿qué hora **será**?  
**serán** las diez,

he is coming, perhaps, to pay me the amount he owes me.  
I do not know what he comes for. about how old is he? [years old. he is somewhere about twenty what time is it, I wonder? it must be about ten.

(*d.*) Denotes not so much future time as *will*, moral consent or refusal:—

**haré** todo cuanto V. quiera,  
no lo **haré** de ningún modo,

I will do all you desire.  
I will not do it by any means.

#### 704. Idiomatic future forms are:—

*a. Haber de, to have to, to be to, to will, to be about to, denoting mild duty, intention, design, with reference to the future:—*

mañana **he de ir** á comer con un amigo mío,  
ella **ha de entregar** el lunes por la mañana, [*de ir*,  
la aseguro á V. que no **hemos**

to-morrow I am to dine with a friend of mine.  
she is to make her returns Monday morning.  
I assure you that we will not go.

*b. Haber de* also signifies possible possession, *to believe that one has, must have:—*

**he de tener** en casa un ejemplar del libro que V. busca,

I think I have at home a copy of the book you seek.

*c. Tener que, to have to, must, denotes necessity, positive obligation:—*

**tenemos** los pobres **que** trabajar para ganar el pan de cada día,  
¿qué **tiene** V. **que** hacer hoy?  
**tenemos** **que** hablar,

we poor people have to toil to earn our daily bread.  
what have you got to do to-day? a word with you (*seriously*).

*d. Tener que* means also what remains to be said, done, or denotes expostulation:—

¿qué **tiene** V. **que** decir?  
él no **tiene** nada **que** ver con eso,

what have you to say?  
he has nothing to do with that.



*e. Tener de, to have to, denotes provision : —*

|                                   |                           |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------|
| ¿tenemos algo de comer? <i>or</i> | have we anything to eat?  |
| ¿hay algo de comer?               | is there anything to eat? |

*f. Ir á, with an infinitive, to be going to : —*

|                       |                                     |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------------|
| voy á visitarle,      | I am going to pay him a visit.      |
| va á ver lo que sale, | he is going to see what will result |
| van á oír misa,       | they are going to attend mass.      |

#### 705. FUTURE PERFECT.

|                |                      |
|----------------|----------------------|
| habré hablado, | I shall have spoken. |
| habré comido,  | I shall have eaten.  |
| habré vivido,  | I shall have lived.  |

*a. This tense bears the same relation to the simple future that the pluperfect and past anterior do to the past definite : —*

|                               |                                 |
|-------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| ya habré terminado la tarèa   | I shall have finished my task   |
| cuando llegue el verano,      | when summer comes.              |
| mañana á estas horas ya habré | to-morrow, about this time, all |
| concluido todo,               | will be over.                   |

*b. The same special rules belong to this tense as to the simple form (§ 703, *b, c*) to express a conjecture in the tone of conviction or confidence : —*

|                                |                                 |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| ¿se habrá visto cosa más enre- | could anything be more in-      |
| dada? [chico?                  | volved? [have had?              |
| ¿qué vicio habrá tenido el     | what bad habit could the boy    |
| ya habrás oído decir eso       | doubtless you have often heard  |
| muchas veces, [mente,          | that said. [yourself clearly.   |
| no te habrás expresado clara-  | probably you have not expressed |
| habrán recibido malas noti-    | they must have received bad     |
| cias,                          | news.                           |

#### 706. CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

*hablaría, I should speak. | comería, I should eat. | viviría, I should live.*

*a. Used chiefly in conditional sentences of which it naturally forms the apodasis or conclusion, while the*

clause with **si**, *if*, forms the *protasis* or states the condition :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>leería</b> todo el día, <b>si tuviese</b> tiempo,         | I should read all day, if I had time.                         |
| <b>si no creía</b> que me <b>hiciese</b> daño,               | if I did not think it would hurt me,                          |
| <b>comería</b> aún más,                                      | I should eat even more.                                       |
| <b>viviría</b> mucho más tiempo, <b>si se cuidase</b> mejor, | he would live much longer, if he took better care of himself. |

*b.* In the protasis the forms in *-se* and *-ra* are interchangeable :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <b>leería</b> todo el día, <b>si tuviera</b> (or <b>tuviese</b> ) libros, | I should read all day, if I had books. |
|---|--|

*c.* The clauses in the protasis and apodosis may freely exchange places :—

|  |                                  |
|--|----------------------------------|
| <b>si tuviese</b> (or <b>tuviera</b> ) dinero, | if I had money, I would purchase |
| <b>compraría</b> la finca, [ <b>haría</b> ?    | the property. [would you do?     |
| <b>si estuviese</b> V. en mi lugar ¿qué        | if you were in my place, what    |

*d.* The protasis may be understood or implied :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| yo no lo <b>haría</b> de modo alguno,        | I would not do it by any means.                    |
| dijo que <b>vendría</b> ,                    | he said that he would come.                        |
| él <b>consentiría</b> en ello, yo nó,        | he would agree to it, I would not.                 |
| creyeron que <b>habría</b> una paz duradera, | they believed that there would be a lasting peace. |

*e.* To express a wish or modest request :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>desearía</b> ver las habitaciones de este cuarto. | I would like to see the rooms of this apartment. |
|--|--|

REMARK.—In this sense, the subjunctive form in *-ra* with the verb *querer*, *to wish*, *to like*, is more common :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>quisiera</b> ver lo que tiene V. en telas de algodón, | I should like to see what you have in cotton goods. |
|--|---|

*f.* To indicate an approximate or uncertain statement in narrations :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>sería</b> la una de la madrugada,   | it was <i>about</i> one A.M.                                |
| <b>serían</b> las dos de la tarde,     | it was <i>about</i> two P.M.                                |
| dicha señora <b>sería</b> muy hermosa, | the lady you mention was very beautiful, <i>I suppose</i> . |

*g.* To express possibility or fitness :—

|                                 |                             |
|---------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| ¿ <b>sería</b> verdad eso?      | could that be so?           |
| ¿ <b>debería</b> de hacerlo yo? | ought I to do it, forsooth? |

### *The Use of the Subjunctive Mode.*

**707.** The subjunctive mode expresses necessity, doubt, or emotion, and is chiefly used in a clause dependent on a verb containing one of these ideas.

**708.** In independent and principal sentences the subjunctive is used :—

*a.* In the present tense to supply the imperative mode, affirmatively in the first and third persons, and negatively in all persons :—

|                                    |                     |                        |                           |
|------------------------------------|---------------------|------------------------|---------------------------|
| sea yo,                            | <i>let me be.</i>   | no sea yo,             | <i>let me not be.</i>     |
| ( <i>sé tú</i> ),                  | (be thou).          | no seas ( <i>tú</i> ), | <i>do not be.</i>         |
| sea él,                            | <i>let him be.</i>  | no sea ( <i>él</i> ),  | <i>let him not be.</i>    |
| sea V.,                            | <i>be (sing.).</i>  | no sea V.,             | <i>do not be (sing.).</i> |
| seamos nosotros, <i>let us be.</i> |                     | no seamos,             | <i>let us not be.</i>     |
| ( <i>sed vosotros</i> ),           | (be ye).            | no seais,              | <i>do not be.</i>         |
| sean ellos,                        | <i>let them be.</i> | no sean,               | <i>let them not be.</i>   |
| sean VV.,                          | <i>be (plur.).</i>  | no sean VV.,           | <i>do not be (plur.).</i> |
| haga yo,                           | <i>let me do.</i>   | no haga yo,            | <i>let me not do.</i>     |
| ( <i>haz</i> ),                    | (do thou).          | no hagas,              | <i>do not do.</i>         |
| haga,                              | <i>let him do.</i>  | no haga,               | <i>let him not do.</i>    |
| haga V.,                           | <i>do (sing.).</i>  | no haga V.,            | <i>do not do (sing.).</i> |
| hagamos,                           | <i>let us do.</i>   | no hagamos,            | <i>let us not do.</i>     |
| ( <i>haced</i> ),                  | (do ye).            | no hagais,             | <i>do not do.</i>         |
| hagan,                             | <i>let them do.</i> | no hagan,              | <i>let them not do.</i>   |
| hagan VV.,                         | <i>do (plur.).</i>  | no hagan VV.,          | <i>do not do (plur.).</i> |

REMARK. — Thus it will be seen that the imperative has only one proper form in each number, and that in the affirmative diction. In all the other persons, and throughout the negative inflection, the subjunctive must be used. Hence, we cannot say, *no haz, no haced; no sé, no sed*; but only *no hagas, no hagais; no seas, no seas*:—

**haz** lo que *te* digo,  
**no hagas** lo que *te* prohibo,  
**haced** lo que *os* digo,  
**no hagais** lo que *os* prohibo,

do what I tell thee.  
do not do what I forbid thee.  
do what I tell you.  
do not do what I forbid you.

And in polite address:—

**haga** V. lo que le digo,  
**no haga** V. lo que le prohibo,  
**hagan** VV. lo que les digo,  
**no hagan** VV. lo que les prohibo,

do what I tell you (*sing.*).  
do not do what I forbid you.  
do what I tell you (*plur.*).  
do not do what I forbid you.

*b.* To express a gentle command, exhortation, suggestion:—

**séale** la tierra leve,  
**alábente** los cielos,  
**hágame** V. el favor,  
**pidan** lo que quieran,  
**¡viva** el rey!  
**sepan** cuantos estas cartas vienen,  
**pongamos** fin á la plática,  
**sepamos** qué es esto,  
**ándeme** yo caliente, y **ríase** la gente (*Góngora, 1627*),

may the ground be light over him.  
may the heavens praise thee.  
pray do me the favor.  
let them ask for what they wish.  
long live the king!  
know all men by these presents (*let all know who shall see, etc.*).  
let us end the discussion.  
let us know what this is.  
let me be warm, and the people may scorn.

REMARK. — With this use of the subjunctive, *que* may be added — an ellipse to be explained by understanding some verb expressing a command or wish:—

**que** pase, *let him enter.*  
**que** salga, *let him come out.*  
**que** venga otro, *bring another.*

**que** baile, *let him dance.* [*out.*]  
**que** no salga nadie, *let no one go*  
**que** se quite, *take him (or it) off.*

*c.* With indeterminate expressions involving indifference:—

venga lo que viniere,  
 salga lo que saliere,  
 sea la que fuere la contestacion,  
 digan lo que quieran,  
 donde quiera que vayan,

come what may.  
 be the issue what it may.  
 be the answer what it may.  
 let them say what they please.  
 wherever they go.

*d.* With correlatives that express alternative :—

que lo sepa ó no,  
 que llueva ó que no llueva,  
 que quieras ó no quieras,  
 quisiese ó no quisiese, [otro,  
 ya sea por un motivo, ya sea por  
 alegrase ó no el pueblo,

whether he knows it or not.  
 whether it rains or not.  
 whether you will or no.  
 whether he would or not. [other.  
 whether for one reason or for another  
 whether the people rejoice or not.

*e.* In the present or imperfect with verbs denoting a wish :—

plague á Dios no salga así,  
 [allí,  
 pluguiese á Dios me encontrára  
 ojalá hubiese escuchado mis  
 consejos, [obra,  
 permita Dios que lo pongas por

God grant [redacted] may not turn  
 out so!  
 would [redacted] I had been there!  
 would that he had listened to my  
 counsels! [practice!  
 God grant that you may put it in

**709.** The subjunctive mode is employed in dependent sentences connected with the principal clause by the conjunction **que, that** :—

*a.* When the principal clause contains a term that denies, doubts, or questions the assertion or possibility of the assertion contained in the dependent sentence :—

no creo que lo haya hecho,  
 dudo que lo hayan dicho, [tado?  
 ¿es verdad que lo hayan inten-  
 no pudo ser que lo negasen,  
 ni puede sostenerse que fuera  
 más tiránico que sus contem-  
 poráneos,  
 se sabe que lo hayan variado,

I do not believe he did it.  
 I doubt whether they said so.  
 is it true that they attempted it?  
 they could not have denied it.  
 and it cannot be maintained that  
 he was more tyrannical than  
 his contemporaries. [it.  
 it is not known that they changed

REMARK.—If the dependent verb refers to the future, the appropriate tense is employed:—

¿cree V. que **triunfarémos**? | do you think we shall triumph?

b. When the verb in the principal clause denotes hope, expectation, fear, apprehension:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>esperemos á que salgan</b> todos,       | let us wait for them all to go out.         |
| <b>temo que no haya</b> recibido la carta, | I fear that he has not received the letter. |

c. After verbs expressive of a command, direction, caution, wish, desire, entreaty, preference, concession, permission:—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>mandó que se hiciera</b> ,                    | he ordered it to be done.                                   |
| <b>dispuso que el rey asistiese á la junta</b> , | he took measures for the king to be present at the meeting. |
| <b>quiere que nos váyanos</b> ,                  | he desires us to go away.                                   |
| <b>le supliqué que no se fuera</b> ,             | I begged him not to go away.                                |
| <b>mire V. que no rompan el plato</b> ,          | see that they do not break the plate.                       |
| [pregunta,                                       |   |
| <b>permítame V. que le haga una</b>              | allow me to ask you a question.                             |
| <b>admito que no lo haya dicho</b> ,             | I grant that he did not say so.                             |
| <b>prefiero que no dudes</b> ,                   | I prefer you should not doubt.                              |

d. After terms denoting some strong emotion, such as joy, grief, regret, surprise, vexation:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>me alegraré que no haya sucedido</b> desgracia alguna, [venir, | I shall rejoice if no accident occurred. [come. |
| <b>siento que no hayámos</b> podido                               | I regret that we were not able to               |
| <b>me admiro que no lo confieses</b>                              | I am surprised that you do not                  |
| <b>con franqueza</b> ,  | frankly confess it.                             |

e. After impersonal expressions, unless they imply positive certainty:—

|                                   |                                       |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| <b>conviene que lo sepa</b> ,     | it is proper for him to know it.      |
| <b>es lástima que lo niegue</b> , | it is a pity that he denies it.       |
| <b>es fácil que no venga</b> ,    | it is probable that he will not come. |

es justo que **cobremos** nuestros derechos,  
 es necesario que lo **haga** V. pronto,  
 era preciso que la intolerancia se **personificara** en alguno,  
 no es seguro que **estén** más obligados ahora que **estuviesen** en vida á satisfacer indiscretas preguntas,

it is just that we secure our rights.  
 you must do it soon (*it is necessary that you, etc.*).  
 it was necessary that intolerance should take form in some one.  
 it is not certain that they are more obliged now than they were in life to satisfy indiscreet inquiries.

**710.** The subjunctive is employed after certain conjunctions in sentences expressing possibility, uncertainty, and indefinite future time. Such are:—

antes que, *before*.  
 á menos que, *unless*.  
 á fin de que, *to the end that*.  
 aunque, *although*.  
 bien que, *although*.  
 como, *when, as*.  
 como si, } *as if*.  
 cual si, } *[ing.*  
 como quiera que, *notwithstanding*.  
 con tal que, *provided that*.  
 cuando, *when*.  
 dado que, *granted that*.

en caso de que, *in case that*.  
 hasta que, *until*.  
 hasta donde, *as far as*.  
 luego que, *as soon as*.  
 mientras, *while*.  
 no sea que, *lest*.  
 ojalá, *would that*.  
 para que, *in order that*.  
 por — que, *however*.  
 siempre que, *whenever*.  
 sin que, *without*.  
 supuesto que, *supposing that*.

antes que **escribiese** V. este libro, ni acaso **imaginara** escribirlo,  
 aunque **pierda** la herencia, no consentiré,  
 como si no **comprendiera**,  
 con tal que lo **haga**,  
 se lo diré cuando **pueda**,  
 ¿que dirá tu amo cuando **vea** lo que has hecho?  
 hasta que **venga**,

before you wrote this book, or perhaps had an idea of writing it.  
 although I lose the inheritance, I will not consent.  
 as if he did not understand.  
 provided he do it.  
 I will tell him when I can.  
 what will your master say when he sees what you have done?  
 until I (or he) come.

luego que **hayan entregado** el  
dinero, venga V. á mi casa,  
para que lo **crea**,  
por sabio que **sea**,  
sin que lo **supiésemos**,

as soon as they have delivered  
the money, come to my house.  
that he may believe it.  
however wise he be.  
without our having known it.

**711.** The subjunctive is used in relative sentences, when the relative pronoun refers to a negative or restrictive idea, or to an interrogation involving a negative answer :—

no hay quien lo **crea**,  
no había quien le **ganase** en mal  
genio,  
tampoco fué el único que en su  
siglo **emprendiese** guerras  
religiosas,  
no hay mal que cien años **dure**,  
sólo dos personas hay que **sepan**  
más de él que V.,  
¿hay alguno que **haga** ménos  
que él?

there is no one who believes it.  
there was no one who exceeded  
him in bad temper.  
nor was he the only one who, in  
his time, engaged in religious  
wars.  
there is no ill that lasts forever.  
there are only two persons who  
know more of him than you.  
is there any one who does less  
than he?

**a.** The subjunctive is further used when the relative refers to persons, things, and ideas, that are unknown, or are mentioned in a general indefinite sense :—

si cayeras en manos de personas  
que te **supieran** manejar, ya  
trabajarías bien,  
aguardaba el paso de algun al-  
deano que le **diese** buenos  
informes,  
si existe álguien que **haya leído**  
todo lo que hemos escrito,  
habrá notado, *etc.*,  
deudores serán de VV. cuantos  
**escriban** sobre Felipe II,  
quien quiera que **seas**,  
adonde quiera que **vaya**,  
venga lo que **viniere**,

if you came into the hands of per-  
sons who knew how to manage  
you, you would work well.  
he waited for some villager to  
pass by who might give him  
reliable information.  
if there is any one who has read  
all that we have written, he  
has doubtless noted that, *etc.*  
all who write on Philip II will be  
your debtors.  
whoever you may be.  
wherever he goes.  
come what will (*or may*).



## Correspondence of Tenses.

**712.** The present subjunctive corresponds to the present and future indicative:—

|                                   |   |
|-----------------------------------|---|
| quiero que venga,                 | I wish him to come.   |
| no quiero que se vaya.            | I do not wish him to go.  |
| es preciso que la historia hable, | history must speak ( <i>it is necessary that history speak</i> ). |
| le rogaré que se abstenga,        | I will ask him to abstain. [stay.                                 |
| será preciso que se quede,        | it will be necessary for him to                                   |

**713.** The imperfect subjunctive in either form corresponds to any past tense of the indicative:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| quería que viniese ( <i>or viniera</i> ),                   | I wished him to come.                                 |
| no quise que se fuese ( <i>or se fuera</i> ),               | I did not wish him to go.                             |
| fué preciso que hablase,                                    | it was necessary for him to speak.                    |
| ha querido que se entendiesen ( <i>or se entendieran</i> ), | he desired that they should come to an understanding. |
| había exigido que no volviesen ( <i>or volvieran</i> ),     | he had required that they should not return.          |

**714.** The past indefinite subjunctive corresponds to the present or future of the indicative:—

|                                |                                     |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| es fácil que se haya ido,      | it is probable that he has gone.    |
| no creo que haya sobrado nada, | I do not believe anything was left. |

**715.** The pluperfect subjunctive in either form corresponds to any past tense of the indicative:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| no pensé que se hubiese ido tan pronto,           | I did not suppose that he would have gone so soon.         |
| fué preciso que se hubiera enterado cuanto ántes, | it was necessary for him to have informed himself at once. |

**716.** The future and future perfect subjunctive are employed in sentences introduced by *si, if; cuando, when;*

miéntras, *while*, or by a relative pronoun or adverb, when reference is made to a future contingency :—

|   |                                     |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| si <b>tuviere tiempo</b> , vendré,      | if I should have time, I will come. |
| mientras <b>durare</b> la vida,         | while life shall last.              |
| cuando <b>hubiere</b> concludido lo que | when he has finished what he        |
| tiene que hacer, escribirá la           | has to do, he will write the        |
| carta, [ren,                            | letter.                             |
| devolveré todo cuanto me <b>die-</b>    | I shall return all they give me.    |

REMARK. — Instead of this tense, the present or past indefinite subjunctive may be employed :—

|                                 |                       |
|---------------------------------|-----------------------|
| si <b>tenga</b> tiempo,         | if I have time.       |
| mientras <b>dure</b> la vida,   | while life lasts.     |
| todo cuanto me <b>den</b> ,     | all they give me.     |
| cuando <b>haya concludido</b> , | when he has finished. |

### The Use of the Infinitive Mode.

717. The infinitive, as a verbal noun (represented in English by the ending *-ing*), may be inflected precisely like any substantive in the singular :—

|                        |                            |                       |                         |
|------------------------|----------------------------|-----------------------|-------------------------|
| <b>hablar</b> ,        | <i>to speak, speaking.</i> | <b>vivir</b> ,        | <i>to live, living.</i> |
| <b>de hablar</b> ,     | <i>of speaking.</i>        | <b>de vivir</b> ,     | <i>of living.</i>       |
| <b>á hablar</b> ,      | <i>to speaking.</i>        | <b>á vivir</b> ,      | <i>to living.</i>       |
| <b>con hablar</b> , or | } <i>by speaking.</i>      | <b>con vivir</b> , or | } <i>by living.</i>     |
| <b>hablando</b> ,      |                            | <b>viviendo</b> ,     |                         |

|                                      |                               |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <b>hablar</b> mucho es un vicio,     | to talk much is a bad habit.  |
| el arte de bien <b>vivir</b> ,       | the art of living correctly.  |
| muy propenso á <b>mentir</b> ,       | much addicted to falsifying.  |
| <b>con hablar</b> } la gente se en-  | by talking, people come to an |
| <b>hablando</b> } tiende,            | understanding.                |
| el apetito viene { <b>comiendo</b> , | appetite comes by eating.     |
| { <b>con comer</b> ,                 |                               |

718. Hence the infinitive stands after all prepositions :—

antes de **levantarse**,  
después de **comer**,  
sin **preguntar**,

before getting up.  
after eating (*or* dinner).  
without asking *or* inquiring.

REMARK. — The preposition *en, in*, is, however, usually accompanied by the gerund when it signifies (1) *after*, (2) *by*. In the latter case, we may substitute *con* with the infinitive, or the gerund may be used alone : —

**en comiendo**, salgo á dar un  
paseito,  
**en entrando** en el despacho es  
inaccesible á todos, [cultad,  
**en pagándole** se zanja la difi-

after eating, I go out and take a  
short walk.  
after he enters the office, he is  
inaccessible to all. [ficulty.  
by paying him, you heal the dif-

719. The definite article is usually employed with the infinitive as subject or predicate : —

**el saber** es siempre útil, [vida,  
**el comer** es indispensable á la  
á Pedro toca **el gobernar**,  
sería curioso **el comparar** esta  
doctrina con la otra,  
el mejor medio es **el probar** que  
hay un pensamiento propio  
filosófico en España,

knowledge is always useful.  
eating is indispensable to life.  
it is Peter's duty to govern.  
it would be curious to compare  
this doctrine with the other.  
the best way is to prove that  
Spain has a philosophic idea  
of her own.

but

**gastar** en un banquete la renta  
de un año es locura,  
aunque sea **repetir** lo que nadie  
ignora, los Españoles estamos  
atrasados,

to expend on a banquet a year's  
income is folly.  
although it be to repeat what no  
one is ignorant of, we Spaniards  
are behind the age.

720. The infinitive governs its case only when used substantively ; otherwise, its apparent object is a true subject of the verbal idea : —

el dulce **lamentar** de dos pasto-  
res (= el dulce **lamento**),

the sweet lament of two shep-  
herds.

|   |                                      |
|---|--------------------------------------|
| oigo el <b>murmurar</b> de las fuentes<br>(= oigo el <b>murmullo</b> ), | I hear the playing of the fountains. |
| al <b>acabar</b> de la vida (= al <b>fin</b> de la vida),               | at the close of life.                |
| al <b>caer</b> del día (= á la <b>caída</b> del [día]),                 | at the close of day.                 |

but

|                                 |   |
|---------------------------------|---|
| al <b>alzarse</b> el telon,     | when the curtain rises ( <i>or</i> rose). |
| al <b>acabarse</b> la vida,     | when life closes ( <i>or</i> closed).     |
| al <b>entrar</b> el extranjero, | when the foreigner entered.               |
| al <b>asomarse</b> al balcon,   | on looking out at the balcony.            |
| al <b>caer</b> el día,          | when the day declined.                    |

**721.** The infinitive is used in the dative with the article to replace a finite clause introduced by a conjunction of time, as *when, after, as*; or a preposition, as *in*: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| al <b>hablar</b> así,   | in speaking thus.   |
| al <b>tocar</b> á misa,   | when the bell tolled for mass.                                  |
| al <b>verle</b> yo tan distraído,                                   | when I saw him thus inattentive.                                |
| al <b>cumplir</b> Simón los trece años<br>perdió su último hermano, | when Simón was thirteen years<br>old, he lost his last brother. |

*a.* Without the article, the preposition *á*, with an infinitive, often replaces the protasis of a conditional sentence: —

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>á saber</b> lo que resultaría (= si hubiese sabido),       | if I had known what would come of it.                       |
| <b>á no confesarlo</b> , saldría peor (= si no lo confesase), | if he did not confess it, it would turn out worse.          |
| <b>á no ser</b> yo el que lo pedí, no tendría inconveniente,  | were it not I who asked for it, I should have no objection. |

**722.** The infinitive is governed directly, or indirectly by a preposition, according to the regimen of the noun, adjective, or verb, on which it depends.

**723.** The infinitive depends directly on the verb when both have the same subject, except verbs of commanding, causing, hindering, or forbidding, which may take the infinitive *or* a subjunctive. Such verbs are:—

celebrar, *to be glad to.*  
 conviene, *it is expedient to.*  
 deber, *to ought, be to.*  
 dejar, *to let, allow to.*  
 desear, *to desire, want to.*  
 determinar, *to resolve to.*  
 esperar, *to hope, expect to.*  
 gustar, *to like to.*  
 hacer, *to make, cause to.*  
 impedir, *to prevent from.*  
 mandar, *to have, order.*  
 más vale, *it is better to.*

celebraría verle á V. allí,  
 no conviene hacerlo,  
 debo decirle á V. que . . . ,  
 no me deja concluir,  
 deseo hablar con él,  
 me gusta comer tarde,  
 ¿qué me manda V. hacer?  
 piensa partir pronto,  
 se prohíbe fijar carteles,

merecer, *to deserve to.*  
 necesitar, *to want to.*  
 oír, *to hear.*  
 osar, *to dare, venture to.*  
 pensar, *to intend to.*  
 poder, *to be able to, can.*  
 pretender, *to claim, try to.*  
 procurar, *to try to.*  
 prohibir, *to forbid to.*  
 querer, *to wish to.*  
 saber, *to know how to, can.*  
 temer, *to fear to.*

I should be glad to see you there.  
 it is not wise to do it.  
 I must tell you that . . . .  
 he will not let me finish.  
 I want to speak to him.  
 I like to dine late.  
 what do you direct me to do?  
 he intends to go soon.  
 it is forbidden to post notices.

**724.** The infinitive is governed by a preposition according to the signification or natural regimen of the noun, adjective, or verb, on which it depends:—

**725.** By the preposition *á*:—

*a.* With verbs of motion, and such as involve the idea of direction toward an end. Such are:—

aprender á, *to learn to.*  
 aspirar á, *to aspire to.*  
 comenzar á, *to commence to.*

dar á, *to give to.*  
 echar á, *to begin to.*  
 empezar á, *to begin to.*

enseñar á, *to teach to.*

enviar á, *to send to.*

ir á, *to go to, be going to.*

obligar á, *to compel to.*

pasar á, *to go, come to.*

salir á, *to go out to.*

venir á, *to come to.*

volver á, *to — again.*

Together with many reflexive verbs expressive of strong moral assertion, effort, or decision, such as :—

atreverse á, *to dare to.*

decidirse á, *to resolve to.*

esforzarse á, *to try to.*

negarse á, *to refuse to.*

ponerse á, *to begin to.*

resistirse á, *to resist.*

aprende á leer y á escribir,

me dió á entender,

echóse á reir,

empieza á llover,

voy á verle pronto,

vamos á dar un paseo,

viene á decirle eso que sabes,

he is learning to read and write.

he gave me to understand.

he began to laugh.

it begins to rain.

I am going to see him soon.

let us go and take a walk.

he comes to tell you that you know of.

vuelve á salir,

no nos volverá á ver,

se niega á aceptarlo,

no se atrevió á decirselo,

he goes out again.

he will not see us again.

he refuses to accept it.

he did not dare tell it to him.

b. In certain elliptical phrases, such as :—

á saber ; á decir la verdad,

| namely ; to speak truly.

726. By the preposition *de* :—

a. With nouns and adjectives which are followed by a genitive :—

tiene el atrevimiento **de** decir-  
melo á la cara,

no tengo costumbre **de** mentir,

tiene ganas **de** comer,

no me da la gana **de** hacerlo,

hágame V. el favor **de** decirme  
eso,

tengo vergüenza **de** pedirlo,

he has the impudence to say it  
to my face. [falsehoods.

I am not in the habit of telling

he has a desire to eat.

I don't choose to do it.

do me the favor to tell me that

I am ashamed to ask it.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| no tengo el gusto <b>de</b> conocer<br>á V., | I have not the pleasure of know-<br>ing you. |
| es difícil <b>de</b> conseguir,              | it is difficult to attain.                   |
| soy deseoso <b>de</b> aprender,              | I am desirous to learn.                      |

*b.* With verbs represented by the following :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| —acabar <b>de</b> , <i>to have just.</i>        | desistir <b>de</b> , <i>to cease from.</i>              |
| acordarse <b>de</b> , <i>to remember to.</i>    | haber <b>de</b> , <i>to be about to.</i> [ <i>with.</i> |
| alegrarse <b>de</b> , <i>to be glad to.</i>     | ocuparse <b>de</b> , <i>to busy one's self</i>          |
| arrepentirse <b>de</b> , <i>to repent of.</i>   | olvidarse, <i>to forget to.</i>                         |
| dejar <b>de</b> , <i>to fail to, leave off.</i> | tratar <b>de</b> , <i>to try to.</i>                    |
| acaba <b>de</b> salir,                          | he has just gone out.                                   |
| me acuerdo <b>de</b> haber dicho,               | I remember to have said.                                |
| se alegra <b>de</b> vernos,                     | he is glad to see us.                                   |
| no deja <b>de</b> escribir,                     | he does not cease writing.                              |
| hemos <b>de</b> vivir,                          | we must live.   |
| se me olvidó <b>de</b> decirlo,                 | I forgot to say so.                                     |
| trataré <b>de</b> venderlos,                    | I shall try to sell them.                               |

*c.* After the verb *to be*, used impersonally :—

|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| es <b>de</b> desear que no venga,    | it is desirable that he do not<br>come. [soon. |
| es <b>de</b> esperar que sea pronto, | it is to be hoped that it will be              |

**727.** By the preposition *en* :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| se empeñó <b>en</b> querer ir á verle, | he persisted in his desire to go<br>and see him. |
| no tardará <b>en</b> venir,            | he will not be long coming.                      |

**728.** By the preposition *con*, or the gerund with or without *en* :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| con hablar ( <b>en</b> hablando, hab-<br>lando) así, creía sacar algun<br>provecho, | by talking thus, he thought that<br>he would derive some advan-<br>tage. |
|---|--|

**729.** By the preposition *para*, *in order to*, *to*, *for the purpose of*, *about to*, expressing purpose, result, use, situation :—

se abriga uno **para** no tener frío,  
tiene bastante dinero **para** com-  
prar la casa, [**para** comer,  
se come **para** vivir, no se vive  
el hombre nace **para** morir,  
quien tiene oídos **para** oír, oiga,  
no sirve **para** aprender,  
estoy **para** marcharme,

one wraps up so as not to be cold.  
he has money enough to buy the  
house. [eat.  
we eat to live, we do not live to  
man is born to die. [hear.  
he who hath ears to hear, let him  
he is not fit to learn.  
I am about to set out.

**730.** By the preposition **por**, *for the sake of*, *on account of*, *to*, expressing motive, result, reason, willingness, or anticipation:—

trabaja **por** confundir á su con-  
trario,  
habla sólo **por** hablar,  
no me lo dijo ántes, **por** no faltar  
á un compromiso,  
me regañó **por** no haber hecho  
lo que él quería,  
llevaba la cara embozada **por** no  
darse á conocer,  
estuve **por** escribirle,  
la casa está **por** acabar,

he labors to silence his adver-  
sary. [talking.  
he only talks for the sake of  
he did not tell me before, so as  
not to break a promise.  
he scolded me for not having  
done as he wished me to do.  
he kept his face muffled, so as  
not to be known.  
I was willing to write him.  
the house is yet to be finished.

**731.** The infinitive may stand in sudden exclamations as an imperative, or as an interrogation of surprise:—  
¡callar! ; no correr! ; negarlo yo? | hush! don't run! I deny it?

**732.** The transitive verbs **oir**, *to hear*, and **ver**, *to see*, are followed by the infinitive, and not by the gerund as in English:—

me vió **venir**,  
le ví **acercarse**,

he saw me coming.  
I saw him approaching.

REMARK.—With intransitive verbs, the gerund is used as in English:—

vino **corriendo**,  
se fué **murmurando**,

he came running.  
he went off grumbling.



*The Gerund.*

**733.** The gerund partakes of the nature of the verb from which it is derived, and has the same regimen. It is, therefore, invariable in gender and number : —

**viéndole** acercarse le saludé,  
                                   [do una promesa,  
 no quiso decírmelo, **pretextan-**  
 los caballeros le recibieron con  
 amables sonrisas, **recono-**  
**ciéndole** el mérito de haber  
 conquistado el corazón de la  
 dama,  
 su doncella entró en el comedor,  
 y **acercándose** á su oído, le  
 dijo secretamente algunas pa-  
 labras,  
**volviéndose** á uno de los que  
 servían la mesa, añadió,

seeing him approach, I saluted  
 him.                                   [promise.  
 he would not tell me, pleading a  
 the gentlemen received him with  
 pleasant smiles, recognizing in  
 him the merit of having won  
 the heart of the lady.

her maid came into the dining-  
 room, and, approaching her,  
 she whispered in her ear pri-  
 vately a few words.  
 turning to one of those who  
 served the table, he added.

**734.** The gerund is freely used with certain verbs to form the idea of progression, of something going on in succession : —

los que **se iban reuniendo**,  
**se fueron presentando** los con-  
 vidados,  
**estaban comiendo** cuando vino,

those who were gathering.  
 the guests came one after an-  
 other.  
 they were eating when he came.

**735.** The gerund is often equivalent to the English present participle, or finite verb, introduced by *while*, *by*, *in* : —

pero la que vive en delicias, **vivi-**  
**endo** está muerta,  
 creyó engañarles **aparentando**  
 estar dormido,                   [dad,  
**haciendo** esto muestra su cari-

but she that liveth in pleasure is  
 dead while she liveth.  
 he thought to deceive them by  
 feigning sleep.                   [charity.  
 in doing this, he displays his

**736.** The gerund may have a definite or indefinite subject :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <b>pudiendo</b> más con él la fuerza<br>de la sangre que el atractivo<br>de la corona, [cosa, | the force of blood having more<br>power over him than the lure<br>of a crown. [thing else. |
| no <b>siendo</b> posible hacer otra   | it not being possible to do any-   |
| no <b>habiendo</b> tiempo para discu-   | there not being time to discuss  |
| tir la medida, se suspendió la<br>sesion,   | the measure, the session was<br>suspended.   |

**737.** The gerund, with or without the preposition *en*, may have an indefinite personal subject, and is translated by *when, if one has, is*, etc. :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <b>en habiendo</b> dinero en el bol-<br>sillo, se gasta sin miseria, | when one has money in his<br>pocket, he spends it freely. |
|--|---|

**738.** The gerund has the same regimen as the verb from which it is derived :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>gozando</b> de buena salud,                      | enjoying good health.                           |
| <b>olvidándose</b> de lo pasado,                    | forgetting the past.                            |
| me iba <b>aficionando</b> á estas<br>cosas, [yerno, | I came to grow fond of these<br>things. [known. |
| <b>queriendo</b> dar á conocer á su                 | desiring to make his son-in-law                 |

### The Use of the Past Participle.

**739.** The past participle of all verbs is invariable in the compound tenses formed by the auxiliary *haber* :—

|                                 |                     |
|---------------------------------|---------------------|
| los hombres han <b>comido</b> , | the men have eaten. |
| habíamos <b>vivido</b> allí,    | we had lived there. |

*a.* The verbs **llevar** and **tener**, when used as substitutes of *haber*, require the past participles that accompany them to agree in gender and number with their object :—

|  |                                  |
|--|----------------------------------|
| llevan <b>escritas</b> tres cartas,    | they have three letters written. |
| las cartas que tengo <b>escritas</b> , | the letters that I have written. |

*b.* In the tenses of the passive voice, the past participle of the verb conjugated passively is inflected, while those of *ser*, *estar*, and their substitutes, remain unchanged because dependent on *haber*:—

|                                  |                               |
|----------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| hemos sido <b>engañados</b> ,    | we have been deceived.        |
| han quedado <b>satisfechos</b> , | they have remained satisfied. |

**740.** Separated from the auxiliary, the past participle agrees, in gender and number, with the noun or pronoun qualified, like any adjective:—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| á la hora <b>convenida</b> , ella se presentó <b>apoyada</b> en el brazo de su padre, <b>oubierta</b> con un vestido blanco, | at the hour agreed on, she came forward leaning on her father's arm, dressed in a white robe.      |
| el gabinete <b>forrado</b> de raso blanco y <b>vestido</b> de guirnaldas de flores sirvió de capilla,                        | the sitting-room, lined with white satin and decked with garlands of flowers, served for a chapel. |

**741.** The past participle may be used absolutely:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <b>firmado</b> el contrato quedaba aún por legitimar la voluntad de los cónyuges, | the (civil) contract having been signed, the will of the pair yet remained to be legalized. |
| <b>disuelta</b> la asamblea se retiraron todos,                                   | the assembly dissolved, all withdrew.   |
| <b>reunidas</b> las Córtes se empezó á discutir el proyecto de ley,               | the Cortes having come together again, they began to discuss the bill.                      |

**742.** Relation of time in the absolute participial construction may be expressed by the preposition *después de*, placed before it:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <b>después de firmada</b> la paz ambas partes se felicitaron, | after peace was signed, both parties congratulated each other. |
|---|--|

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <p><b>despues de cerradas</b> todas las puertas y ventanas se entregaron las llaves al portero de al lado,</p> | <p>after all the doors and windows were locked, the keys were delivered to the porter of the next house.</p> |
|--|--|

**743.** The past participle with the preposition **para**, *for*, is used to express capability or necessity after the verb *to be*, with a negative :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <p>no es asunto <b>para satisfecho</b> en corto número de renglones, estas providencias no son <b>para propuestas</b>, las artes de la política tampoco son tan <b>para vistas</b> por dentro como las de la guerra,</p> | <p>it is not a subject to be exhausted in a few short lines. these measures are not to be proposed. nor are the arts of state polity so transparent (easy to be scrutinized) as those of war.</p> |
|--|---|

**744.** Past participles may be used as nouns :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <p>el <b>convidado</b>, <i>the guest</i>.<br/>los <b>desposados</b>, <i>the espoused</i>.</p> | <p>los <b>convidados</b>, <i>the guests</i>.<br/>los <b>desgraciados</b>, <i>the unfortunate</i>.</p> |
| <p>muchos son los <b>llamados</b> y pocos los <b>escogidos</b>,</p>                           | <p>many are the called, and few the chosen.</p>   |

**745.** The Latin future passive participle in *-ndus* is still preserved in a few substantives only :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <p>los <b>educandos</b>,<br/>los <b>bautizandos</b>,<br/>los libros <b>expurgandos</b>,</p> | <p>the pupils.<br/>the candidates for baptism.<br/>books to be expurgated.</p> |
|---|--|

REMARK. — In substitution, the Spaniards employ the verb *haber de* with the passive or reflexive :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <p>los libros que <b>han de ser expurgados</b>, [pacharse,<br/>los asuntos que <b>han de deste</b> negocio no <b>se ha de terminar</b> tan fácilmente como se cree,</p> | <p>the books that are to be expurgated. [posed of.<br/>the matters that are to be discussed this business will not be brought to a close so easily as they think.</p> |
|---|---|

**746.** The *present* participle, as such, has wholly disappeared from the Spanish, being replaced by the gerund. The few remaining forms are used as adjectives or substantives : —

|   |                                |
|---|--------------------------------|
| <b>amante</b> de la patria,                     | fond of one's country.         |
| un caballero <b>andante</b> ,                   | a knight-errant.               |
| un hijo <b>obediente</b> ,                      | an obedient child.             |
| un traslado <b>fehaciente</b> ,                 | an authentic copy.             |
| las Córtes <b>constituyentes</b> ,              | the constituent assembly.      |
| los enseres <b>pertenecientes</b> al            | the fixtures belonging to the  |
| almacen, [los <b>creyentes</b> ,                | warehouse. [the believers.     |
| los <b>participantes</b> ; los <b>oyentes</b> ; | the participants; the hearers; |

### *Regimen of Verbs.*

**747.** The object of a transitive verb regularly stands in the accusative case without a preposition, when it designates *things* or objects not endowed with life (*Impersonal Accusative*): —

|                                      |                                 |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| edificó la <b>casa</b> ,             | he built the house.             |
| alcanzaron <b>una victoria</b> ,     | they gained a victory.          |
| Cárlos lee los <b>diarios</b> ,      | Charles reads the newspapers.   |
| el hombre digno ama la <b>virtud</b> | the worthy man loves virtue and |
| y aborrece el <b>vicio</b> ,         | hates vice.                     |

**748.** The object of a transitive verb regularly stands with the preposition *á*, when it designates *persons* or *animals* (*Personal Accusative*): —

|                                      |                                  |
|--------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Juan sigue <b>á su hermano</b> ,     | John follows his brother.        |
| conozco <b>á este hombre</b> ,       | I know this man.                 |
| hemos visto <b>á los reyes</b> ,     | we have seen the king and queen. |
| debemos amar <b>á Dios y á nues-</b> | we ought to love God and our     |
| <b>tros</b> semejantes,              | fellow-men.                      |
| el espada mata <b>al toro</b> ,      | the swordsman slays the bull.    |
| el niño acaricia <b>al gato</b> ,    | the child fondles the cat.       |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| ¿ á quién buscas?                                      | whom do you seek?                                    |
| se debe recompensar á los que<br>nos sirven fielmente, | we ought to reward those who<br>serve us faithfully. |
| los hombres le acogieron como<br>á un sér afortunado,  | the men congratulated him as a<br>lucky person.      |

749. Hence the personal accusative is found :—

a. To indicate definite, determinate, known person-  
ality :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| busco á un orlado mio,   | I am seeking a servant of mine.                            |
| guardo á mis amigos,   | I am waiting for my friends.                               |
| fueron á llamar á un médico<br>muy conocido por su habili-<br>dad, | they went to call a physician well<br>known for his skill. |

b. With pronouns in the redundant construction, and  
in antithesis :—

|                                    |                                     |
|------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| créeme á mí,                       | believe <i>me</i> .                 |
| os veré á vosotros,                | I shall see you.                    |
| á mí de todo se me pegó,           | a little of everything clung to me. |
| deja á mí triste por alegrar á él, | he leaves me sad to cheer him.      |
| se miraron uno á otro,             | they looked at each other.          |
| se engañan unos á otros,           | they deceive one another.           |

c. With words that explain a personal pronoun :—

|  |  |
|--|--|
| nos abrazó á todos,                            | he embraced us all.                          |
| los vió á todos,                               | he saw them all.                             |
| nos acogieron muy bien á mi<br>hermana y á mí, | they received my sister and me<br>very well. |

d. After a predicate adjective or past participle :—

|   |                                     |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| la prosperidad hizo orgulloso á<br>mi amo, [hechor, | prosperity made my master<br>proud. |
| vimos muerto á nuestro bien-                        | we saw our benefactor lie dead.     |

e. When the object is the proper name of a person  
or animal, or of a place without the definite article :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| leo á Cervantes,                                    | I read Cervantes.                                       |
| conozco á Sevilla; — á Cádiz,                       | I know Seville; — Cadiz.                                |
| los Moros conquistaron á España en el siglo octavo, | the Moors conquered Spain in the eighth century.        |
| sin esperar más respuesta picó á Rocinante,         | without waiting for a reply, he put spurs to Rocinante. |
| but   |   |

|                            |                         |
|----------------------------|-------------------------|
| Pizarro conquistó el Perú, | Pizarro conquered Peru. |
| he visitado la Coruña,     | I have visited Corunna. |

750. The personal accusative stands with the names of things :—

a. When they are considered as personified :—

|                               |                            |
|-------------------------------|----------------------------|
| defiende á la patria,         | he defends his country.    |
| llamó á la muerte,            | he invoked death.          |
| las aves saludan á la aurora, | the birds salute the dawn. |
| recompensan al mérito,        | they reward merit.         |
| temía á su propia sombra,     | he feared his own shadow.  |

REMARK. — This principle is especially applied to animals, birds, and insects in fables :—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Éste á la Hormiga alaba, aquél al Perro,                    | This one praises the Ant, that one the Dog, |
| Quién á la Abeja, quién al Papagayo,                        | One the Bee, another the Parrot.            |
| — <i>Fábulas de Iriarte</i> , Madrid, 1787, vol. i., p. 54. |   |

b. To distinguish the object from the subject :—

|  |   |
|--|---|
| el invierno sigue al otoño,                    | winter follows autumn.                            |
| la noche precede al día,                       | night precedes day.                               |
| el verbo rige al nombre, y el nombre al verbo, | the verb governs the noun, and the noun the verb. |

c. To distinguish the object of the verb from its predicate :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| llama carácter á su capricho,                                 | he calls his caprice character.                          |
| trae unos anteojos que le hacen parecer riqueza á la pobreza, | he wears glasses that make poverty appear to him riches. |

**751.** The impersonal accusative stands even with a personal object :—

*a.* When that object is indeterminate, unknown, or taken partitively :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| busco <b>un criado</b> ,  | I am looking for a servant.                          |
| fueron á buscar <b>un médico</b> que<br>fuese experimentado,              | they went to look for an experi-<br>enced physician. |
| en mi vida he visto <b>hombre</b> que<br>sea más orgulloso, [gos,         | I have never seen anybody who<br>is prouder.         |
| hemos convidado <b>algunos ami-</b><br>conozco <b>señoras</b> más amables | we have invited a few friends.                       |
| que ella, [capitanes,   | I know ladies more amiable than<br>she. [tains.      |
| España ha producido <b>grandes</b>  | Spain has produced great cap-                        |

*b.* When the object is qualified by a numeral :—

|   |                                |
|---|--------------------------------|
| veo <b>cuatro personas</b> , [des,      | I see four persons. [alcaldes. |
| el gobernador citó <b>veinte alcal-</b> | the governor summoned twenty   |

*c.* After the verb **tener**, when it means *to have, to possess* :—

|  |                              |
|--|------------------------------|
| tengo <b>un buen padre</b> ,                           | I have a good father.        |
| es preciso que el ejército tenga<br><b>oficiales</b> , | the army must have officers. |

REMARK.— But when **tener** means *to hold a person fast*, or when it is put for *estar* in definite sentences, the personal accusative follows :—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| ¿á <b>quién</b> tengo? — tengo á <b>V.</b> ,          | whom have I? — I have you.                                       |
| tengo á <b>mi madre</b> enferma,                      | my mother is ill.  |
| tenemos á <b>nuestro hermano</b> en<br>el extranjero, | our brother is abroad ( <i>we have<br/>our brother abroad</i> ). |

but

|  |                                 |
|--|---------------------------------|
| tengo <b>una madre</b> muy indul-<br>gente, [trangero, | I have a very indulgent mother. |
| tenemos <b>un hermano</b> en el ex-                    | we have a brother abroad.       |



d. After the verb **perder**, *to lose*, since **perder á** signifies *to ruin* : —

|   |  |                        |
|---|--|------------------------|
| perdió <b>su</b> <b>único</b> <b>hijo</b> , |  | he lost his only son.  |
| he perdido <b>mi</b> <b>madre</b> ,         |  | I have lost my mother. |

REMARK. — Some modern writers, however, offend this rule : —

|  |  |                           |
|--|--|---------------------------|
| perdió <b>á</b> <b>su</b> <b>último</b> <b>hermano</b> , |  | he lost his last brother. |
|--|--|---------------------------|

— José Selgas, *Escenas Fantásticas*, p. 80, ed. 1876.

e. After the verb **querer**, in the meaning *to wish*, *to want*, since **querer á** signifies *to love*, *to like* : —

|   |  |                               |
|---|--|-------------------------------|
| yo quiero <b>un</b> <b>hombre</b> <b>honrado</b>  |  | I want an honest man to serve |
| que me sirva,                                     |  | me.                           |
| quiere muchísimo <b>á</b> <b>su</b> <b>hijo</b> , |  | he loves his child very much. |

f. After words of naming, appointing : —

|  |  |                                |
|--|--|--------------------------------|
| el rey nombró <b>los</b> <b>goberna-</b>     |  | the king appointed the gover-  |
| <b>dores</b> ,                               |  | <b>nors</b> .                  |
| el papa elige <b>los</b> <b>cardenales</b> , |  | the pope elects the cardinals. |

g. When the same verb governs an indirect object with **á**, or a personal pronoun without **á** : —

|  |  |                                    |
|--|--|------------------------------------|
| prefiero <b>el</b> <b>discreto</b> al valiente,      |  | I prefer the prudent (man) to the  |
| <b>Cervántes á</b> <b>Quevedo</b> , <b>Cádiz</b>     |  | brave, Cervantes to Quevedo,       |
| <b>á</b> <b>Valencia</b> ,                           |  | Cadiz to Valencia.                 |
| envia <b>el</b> <b>jardinero</b> <b>á</b> la plaza,  |  | he sends the gardener to the       |
|  |  | market. [the lady.                 |
| presentaron <b>el</b> <b>señor</b> <b>á</b> la dama, |  | they presented the gentleman to    |
| ha sido forzoso dejar <b>el</b> <b>conde</b>         |  | it has been necessary to leave the |
| en rehenes al enemigo,                               |  | count as a hostage with the foe.   |
| me recomendó <b>el</b> <b>general</b> ,              |  | he recommended the general to      |
|  |  | me.                                |
| enviaron <b>el</b> <b>hijo</b> <b>á</b> su padre,    |  | they sent the child to his father. |
| abandonan <b>el</b> <b>hombre</b> <b>á</b> su des-   |  | they deliver the man over to his   |
| esperacion,  |  | despair.                           |

For euphony, before the letter **á** very often, but not uniformly : —

|  |                                |
|--|--------------------------------|
| busco <b>amigos</b> ; — <b>algun amigo</b> , | I seek friends; — some friend. |
| { conoce V. <b>á este</b> caballero? }       |                                |
| { conoce V. <b>aquel</b> caballero? }        | do you know that gentleman?    |

**752.** Many transitive verbs admit two objects, — an indirect of the person and a direct of the thing: —

|                             |                              |
|-----------------------------|------------------------------|
| dí al mozo una propina,     | I gave the lad a gratuity.   |
| envió á fulano una esquila, | he sent so and so a note.    |
| le presté cinco duros,      | I lent him five dollars.     |
| dijo al juez la verdad,     | he told the judge the truth. |

**753.** Verbs that involve the notion of taking away, winning, asking, paying, thanking, praising, take in Spanish the dative of the person and the accusative of the thing, while in English the object is governed by some preposition other than *to*: —

|  |   |
|--|---|
| quitó al pobre todos sus ahorros,        | he took from the poor man all his savings.  |
| le quitó su hacienda,                    | he took from him his property.              |
| se la quitó,                             | he took it from him. [wages.                |
| robó al obrero su jornal,                | he robbed the mechanic of his               |
| se lo robó,                              | he robbed him of them. [ponent.             |
| ganó á su contrincante la apuesta,       | he won the wager from his op-               |
| el ganó la apuesta,                      | he won the wager from him.                  |
| el pobre pidió al caballero una limosna, | the beggar asked the gentleman for an alms. |
| se la pidió,                             | he asked him for one.                       |
| pagó al sastre el gaban,                 | he paid the tailor for the coat.            |
| le pagó al sastre,                       | he paid the tailor for it.                  |
| se lo pagó,                              | he paid him for it.                         |
| le agradecí su buena voluntad,           | I thanked him for his good will.            |
| se la agradecí,                          | I thanked him for it. [courage.             |
| alabaron al capitan su valor,            | they praised the captain for his            |
| se lo alabaron,                          | they praised him for it.                    |
| alabo á V. su aplicacion,                | I praise you for your industry.             |
| se la alabo á V.,                        | I praise you for it.                        |
| se lo pido á V. encarecidamente,         | I earnestly beg you to.                     |

REMARK. — **Merecer**, in the sense of *to receive as a reward of merit*, is similarly construed : —

|  |  |  |
|--|--|--|
| <b>merecer</b> al rey un nombramiento á un alto cargo, |  | to receive from the king a high appointment. |
|--|--|--|

**754.** Some verbs require the same construction with personal pronouns only : —

|   |  |   |
|---|--|---|
| persuadió á su hijo que lo hiciese, <i>but</i>    |  | he persuaded his son to do it, <i>but</i>     |
| <b>se</b> lo persuadió,                           |  | he persuaded him to.                          |
| impidió que lo hiciésemos, <i>but</i>             |  | he prevented us from doing so, <i>but</i>     |
| <b>nos</b> lo impidió,                            |  | he prevented us from it.                      |
| preguntaron al muchacho si fué verdad, <i>but</i> |  | they asked the lad if it was true, <i>but</i> |
| <b>se</b> lo preguntaron,                         |  | they asked him about it.                      |
| <b>se</b> lo prohibo á V.,                        |  | I forbid you to.                              |

REMARK. — “To give any one anything,” in the sense of a *present*, is expressed by **regalar alguna cosa á alguien**; otherwise **dar** is used : —

|                                  |  |                                   |
|----------------------------------|--|-----------------------------------|
| <b>me regaló</b> un reloj nuevo, |  | he presented me with a new watch. |
| <b>me dió</b> un reloj nuevo,    |  | he gave (handed) me a new [watch. |

**755.** In English, a verb often governs its object by means of a preposition, when, in Spanish, it is direct : —

|  |  |                                     |
|--|--|-------------------------------------|
| to look <i>for</i> anything,               |  | buscar alguna cosa, <i>or</i> algo. |
| to listen <i>to</i> advice,                |  | escuchar los consejos.              |
| to wait <i>for</i> the arrival of a train. |  | esperar la llegada de un tren.      |

**756.** Verbs which express the notion of perceiving, often take with the accusative of the thing a dative of the personal pronoun rendered into English by means of the preposition *in* or *from* : —

|   |  |   |
|---|--|---|
| trae V. una cara que no <b>le</b> he visto jamás, |  | you wear a countenance that I never saw in you. |
|---|--|---|

confieso que no **le** hallo ni chispa  
ni sentido,  
cuando **me** oyó la respuesta se  
puso furioso,

I confess that I do not find any  
wit or sense in it.  
when he heard the reply from  
me, he became very angry.

**757.** Many verbs signifying to rejoice, to boast, to be sorry, to pity, to remember, to forget, to trust, to distrust, to be ashamed, to laugh at, to want, to need, to deprive, to use, govern their object by means of the preposition **de**, *of*, *for*, *at*. Such verbs are:—

abusar **de**, *to abuse*.  
acordarse **de**, *to remember*.  
admirarse **de**, *to wonder at*.  
alegrarse **de**, *to rejoice at*.  
aprovecharse **de**, *to avail one's  
self of, to use*. [of.  
avergonzarse **de**, *to be ashamed*  
burlarse **de**, *to laugh at*.  
carecer **de**, *to want, to be without*.  
compadecerse **de**, *to pity*.  
condolerse **de**, *to pity*.  
desconfiar **de**, *to distrust*  
dudar **de**, *to doubt*.  
fiarse **de**, *to trust*.  
gozar **de**, *to enjoy*.  
jactarse **de**, *to boast*.

se acuerda **de** su juventud,  
gozamos **de** buena salud,  
se olvidan **de** sus amigos,  
usa **de** medios ilícitos,  
se sirve **de** los talentos ajenos,  
no dudo **de** ello,  
prescindiendo **de** eso,  
carecen **de** pan,

lamentarse **de**, *to lament*.  
mofarse **de**, *to scoff at*.  
necesitar **de**, *to need*.  
olvidarse **de**, *to forget*.  
preciarse **de**, *to boast*.  
prescindir **de**, *to do without, to  
leave out of the account*.  
privarse **de**, *to deprive of*.  
reirse **de**, *to laugh at*.  
renegar **de**, *to abominate*.  
servirse **de**, *to use*.  
tener lástima **de**, *to pity*. [of.  
tener vergüenza **de**, *to be ashamed*  
usar **de**, *to use*.  
valerse **de**, *to avail one's self of*.  
zafarse **de**, *to get rid of*.

he remembers his youth.  
we enjoy good health.  
they forget their friends.  
he uses unlawful means. [others.  
he avails himself of the talents of  
I do not doubt it.  
leaving that out of the account.  
they are without bread.

## APPENDIX TO PART SECOND.

---

### *Diminutives and Augmentatives.*

**758.** These consist of various endings applied chiefly to substantives to express different modes of characterizing persons, things, and qualities, as being *small* or *large*, together with certain other subordinate circumstances, involving attractiveness, burlesque, irony, and aversion. In view of the nice distinctions and shades of feeling they often suggest, it is scarcely possible for the learner to employ them appropriately; and they are, in fact, for the most part, a silent element in the northern tongues, unless rendered by some circumlocution adapted to the context. They abound in domestic and popular language, and in humorous, poetical, and satirical writings, but seldom suit the grave style of history or serious compositions of any kind. Among the uneducated classes, they very commonly appear as a makeshift for a limited vocabulary, or to emphasize passionate utterances.

#### DIMINUTIVES.

**759.** The leading diminutives end in :—

*a. Ito, cito, ecito ; fem. ita, cita, ecita*, applied to substantives, adjectives, and a few adverbs, to express smallness of size, quality, or degree, in connection with fondness, caresses, admiration, good humor, true sympathy, modest demand, respect (by servants), and irony stated without vituperation. Therefore this ending

cannot be used with words having in themselves an unlovely, repulsive signification, save in satire or ridicule. The translation may be expressed with substantives, by *little, pretty little, dear little*; with adjectives and adverbs, by *quite, very*, or all may be given by circumlocutions suited to the context:—

**papa**ito; **madre**cita,  
mi **herman**ito; mi **herman**ita,  
son **amigu**itos,  
mis **primit**os y **primit**as,  
la **cotor**rita tiene dos **pat**itas,  
¿qué **cas**ita tan **guap**ita!  
agradezco á V. su **regal**ito,  
¿pobre **hij**ita mia!  
¿me hace V. el favor de un **vas**ito  
de agua fresca?  
voy, **señor**ito; — **señor**ita,  
con que ¿**cuidad**ito!  
es **jovenc**ito y buen mozo,  
agua **fresqu**ita ¿quien pide?  
¿**buñuel**os **calent**itos!

á este caballero no le gustan las  
**brom**itas, [titos,  
yo aseguro que no faltarían **azo**-  
¿**angel**itos! qué pronto os aveza-  
ban á los sacrificios de la carne  
humana!

**Alfon**sito; **Manol**ito,  
**Carl**itos; **Merced**itas,  
**Dolor**citas; **Juan**ita,  
**Paqu**ito; **Pep**ito; **Peri**quito,

vive por ahí **cerqu**ita,  
se quedó algo **lej**itos,  
arrímate junto, **junt**ito,  
tome V. un **poqu**ito,  
andaba **pas**ito á paso,

papa, do; come, mother.  
my little brother; — sister.  
they are dear friends (of children).  
my little cousins.  
the little parrot has two little feet.  
what a pretty little house!  
I thank you for your nice gift.  
my poor child!  
will you give me a glass of cool  
water?  
yes, sir; — ma'am (of service).  
so then, take care now!  
he is young and good-looking.  
nice, cool water, who will buy?  
fritters, nice and hot!

this gentleman is not fond of  
jokes. [forgotten.  
I'll warrant the stripes were not  
angelic spirits! how quickly they  
habituated you to sacrifices of  
human flesh!

little Alfonso; — Manuel.  
Charley; little Mercy.  
little Dolores; Jennie.  
Frank; Josy; Peter.

he lives near here.  
he kept some distance off.  
move up, close up.  
take a little, pray.  
he was going very slowly.

*b. Tilo, cillo, ecillo ; fem. illa, cilla, ecilla*, applied likewise to substantives and adjectives, to express smallness of size, quantity, or degree, either stated indifferently without reference to fondness, etc., or in a tone of depreciation, roguishness, ridicule, with or without good humor, and pity for an unfortunate person. It may be translated by *little, somewhat, that* (in contempt), or as the context suggests :—

un **chiquillo** me guió,  
 un **ladroncillo** es,  
 vaya V. á comprar un **panecillo**,  
 estoy algo **malillo**,  
 déme V. un **poquillo**,  
 écheme V. un **traguillo**,  
 tiene un **gustillo** desagradable,

hubo un **olorcillo** de ajos,  
 habla con el **tonillo** de un Catalán,

es un pobre **viejecillo**,  
 una **mujercilla** que no tiene vergüenza,

**Julianillo** el jorobado,  
**Francesillo** el gracioso,  
**Sebastianillo** el enano,  
 el libro trae no pocos **cuentecillos**,

la Juliana es una **loquilla**,  
 como me quiere tanto el ama,  
 teme que mi madre le robe ese cariño ; **pobrecilla** !

a youngster directed me.  
 he is a little thief.  
 go and buy a loaf of bread.  
 I am somewhat ailing.  
 give me a very little (a trifle).  
 pour me out a little (swallow).  
 it has a somewhat unpleasant taste.

there was a slight odor of garlic.  
 he speaks with the (dialectic) accent of a Catalanian.

he is a poor old man.  
 a woman who has no sense of shame.

Julian, the hunchback.  
 Frank, the (court) jester.  
 Sebastian, the (court) dwarf.  
 the book contains quite a number of short stories.

Julia is a giddy girl.  
 as nurse loves me so much, she is afraid my mother will rob her of that affection, poor thing !

*c. Uelo, zuelo, ezuelo ; fem. uela, zuela, ezuela*, applied to substantives and less frequently to adjectives, to express smallness in a depreciative sense, involving inferiority, lowness, ridicule, and disdain ; and also in

a humorous, roguish, bantering style. Occasionally it replacès *illo* in its natural meaning of smallness without regard to other qualities:—

|  |                              |
|--|------------------------------|
| <b>chicuelo</b> ; <b>rapazuelo</b> ,     | urchin ; youngster.          |
| <b>mozuelo</b> ; <b>pequeñuelo</b> ,     | lad ; little one.            |
| <b>cojuelo</b> ; <b>tontuelo</b> ,       | limping ; silly person.      |
| <b>cazuela</b> ; <b>tinajuela</b> ,      | skillet ; jar.               |
| <b>plazuela</b> ; <b>callejuela</b> ,    | little square ; poor street. |
| <b>pajuelas</b> ; <b>pedazuelo</b> ,     | matches ; a petty morsel.    |
| <b>arroyuelo</b> ; <b>riachuelo</b> ,    | brooklet ; streamlet.        |
| <b>hombrezuelo</b> ; <b>mujerzuela</b> , | little man ; low woman.      |
| <b>autorzuelo</b> ; <b>pilluelo</b> ,    | poor author ; little thief.  |
| <b>jovenzuelo</b> ; <b>salonzuelo</b> ,  | vile youth ; little parlor.  |

REMARK. — If a polysyllabic stem ends in a vowel, the letter *h* or *g* is inserted with this ending:—

|  |                      |
|--|----------------------|
| <b>aldea</b> ,                           | } a wretched hamlet. |
| <b>aldehuela</b> , or <b>aldegüela</b> , |                      |
| <b>judío</b> ,                           | } a despised Jew.    |
| <b>judihuelo</b> , or <b>judigüelo</b> , |                      |

*d. Ete, cete ; fem. eta, ceta*, applied to substantives in a diminutive and depreciative sense:—

|   |                               |
|---|-------------------------------|
| <b>un mocete</b> ; <b>un pobrete</b> ,    | a small boy ; a poor fellow.  |
| <b>un librete</b> ; <b>un galancete</b> , | a small book ; a ladies' man. |
| <b>una aleta</b> ; <b>una lengüeta</b> ,  | a little wing ; — tongue.     |

*e. Ejo, fem. eja*, is applied most commonly to words ending in *l* or *n*, and denotes decided contempt ; occasionally, however, it merely indicates smallness of size, quality, degree:—

|                                       |                                   |
|---------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <b>animalejo</b> ,                    | any troublesome insect.           |
| <b>el alguacilejo</b> ,               | that constable (in disdain).      |
| <b>un librejo</b> ,                   | a worthless book.                 |
| <b>no cobro más que doce realejos</b> | I only get a pittance of twelve   |
| <b>diarios</b> , [ <b>papelejo</b> ,  | reals a day. [once said.          |
| <b>como dijo el autor de cierto</b>   | as the author of a certain scrawl |



|  |                                  |
|--|----------------------------------|
| doña Juana la <b>Beltraneja</b> , <sup>1</sup>                                       | lady Jane, she of Beltran.       |
| un <b>arbolejo</b> ; una <b>canaleja</b> ,<br><b>amarillejo</b> , <i>yellowish</i> . | a small tree; a drinking-trough. |

REMARK. — This ending is occasionally found with Arabic words hispanicized, to denote simple smallness or to distinguish the less from the greater:—

The little *square* by the Roman aqueduct at Segovia in Spain is called **El Azoguejo** from the Arabic *as-soq*, “the market,” “square,” and the Spanish diminutive ending. **Almadenejo** means “the lesser mine,” to distinguish it from **Almaden**, Arab. *al-ma’din*, “the mine.”

760. Other diminutives are formed by means of the endings **ico**, **in**, **ino**, and **iño**, all of which are local or dialectic, to wit:—

*a.* **Ico**, **cico**, **ecico**; *fem.* **ica**, **cica**, **ecica**, usually given as the synonym of *ito*, was originally a local variation proceeding from Aragon, and domesticated in the Castiles, to add a vein of sprightly humor impossible to characterize. It should not, therefore, be used indiscriminately for *ito*, but be held in reserve to season a choice diminutive wittily and warily:—

|  |                                |
|--|--------------------------------|
| <b>mocico</b> ; <b>jovencico</b> ,.                              | little lad; little youngster.  |
| <b>avecico</b> ; <b>perrico</b> ,                                | little bird; little dog.       |
| <b>Juanico</b> ; <b>Alfonsico</b> ; <sup>2</sup> <b>Perico</b> , | Johnny; Alfonso; Peter.        |
| el Emperador y <b>Felipico</b> , <sup>3</sup>                    | the Emperor and little Philip. |

<sup>1</sup> The princess doña Juana, daughter of the queen doña Juana, wife of Henry IV (1462), by the courtier don Beltran de la Cueva, was popularly called *par mépris* la **Beltraneja**, and because of her notorious illegitimacy, was set aside from the succession, at Henry's death, for the famous Isabella of Castile (1474).

<sup>2</sup> For example, when the present king of Spain succeeded to the throne in 1875, the Madrid people often spoke of him as **Alfonsico**, with a distinct mixture of irony and resignation; “Alfonsito” would have been a grave political error, because of the *adhesion* it implies.

<sup>3</sup> Actually said of Charles V and Philip, his son, about 1535, by the court-jester, Francesillo de Zúñiga, in his *Burlesque Chronicle*.

REMARK.—The Aragonese still use *ico* in the natural sense. Even in the old local ballad which first appeared in print in the *Cancionero General* of Valencia, 1511, we find the proper use:—

|  |                                   |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| Fonte frida, <sup>1</sup> fonte frida, | Fountain cool, fountain cool,     |
| Fonte frida y con amor,                | Fountain cool and winsome, too,   |
| Do todas las <b>avecicas</b>           | Where the little birdlings all    |
| Van tomar <sup>2</sup> consolacion,    | Gather 'round their mates to woo, |
| Sino es la <b>tortolica</b>            | Save the little turtle-dove       |
| Qu' está viuda y con dolor,            | That is widowed of its love.      |

*b. In, fem. ina*, peculiar to the *Bable* or Asturian dialect; *ino, fem. ina*, common in the province of Estremadura; and *iño, fem. iña*, in the dialect of Galicia, are all more or less used in Castilian to denote smallness merely:—

|   |  |
|---|--|
| un niño <b>chiquitin</b> ,  | } a wee little child.                        |
| una niña <b>chiquitina</b> ,  |  |
| <b>calcetin</b> ; <b>calcetines</b> ,                                     | sock; socks.                                 |
| peluca; <b>peluquin</b> ,   | wig; little wig.                             |
| baldosa; <b>baldosin</b> ,  | flooring-tile; fine flooring-tile.           |
| bolsa; <b>bolsin</b> ,  | exchange; evening exchange.                  |
| <b>padrino</b> ; <b>madrina</b> ,   | godfather; godmother.                        |
| paloma; <b>palomino</b> ,   | dove; pigeon.                                |
| recuérdome que era muy aficionado á los <b>langostinos</b> , <sup>3</sup> | I remember that he was very fond of shrimps. |
| cuerpo, <b>corpifio</b> , <i>body of a dress</i> .                        |  |

#### Form.

761. All these endings are attached to the *stem* of a word found by rejecting the terminal vowel, unless *accented*, even in diphthongs:—

|   |   |
|---|---|
| abeja, <b>abejita</b> , <i>little bee</i> .               | cuchara, <b>cucharita</b> , <i>teaspoon</i> . |
| pájaro, <b>pajarete</b> , <i>mean bird</i> .              | libro, <b>librillo</b> , <i>little book</i> . |
| mozo, <b>mozuelo</b> , <i>young lad</i> .                 | <b>jovenzuelo</b> , <i>a youngster</i> .      |
| rubio, a, <b>rubito</b> , a, <i>of light complexion</i> . |   |

<sup>1</sup> In Castilian, *Fuente fria*.

<sup>2</sup> A Gallicism for *van & tomar*.

<sup>3</sup> A sense not found in the Spanish-English dictionaries; Fr. *écrevisses*.

**762.** The final radicals *c*, *g* (*gu*), *z*, become respectively *qu*, *gu* (*gü*), *c*, when the ending is introduced by one of the vowels *e* or *i* :—

frac, **fracu-ecito**, *dress-coat*.  
fresco, **fresquito**, *quite cool*.  
amigo, **amigullo**, *little friend*.  
ciego, **cieguezuelo**, *blind boy*.

lengua, **lengu-ecita**, *little tongue*.  
pez, **pececillo**, *little fish*.  
cruz, **crucecita**, *little cross*.  
pedazo, **pedacillo**, *little piece*.

*a.* With regard to radical diphthongs that are movable (*ie*, *ue*), usage generally requires them to be retained at the present day, except in primitives of more than two syllables :—

huevo, **huevo-ecito**, *little egg*.  
caliente, **calentito**, *nice and hot*.

nieto, **nieto-ecillo**, *little grandson*.  
valiente, **valenton**, *a swaggerer*.

Still we say : **puerta**, **portezuela**, *door (of a carriage)*.

**763.** The second forms of the diminutives, namely, **cito** (**cico**), **cillo**, **zuelo**, **cete**, are required with words of more than one syllable ending in *n* or *r* :—

salon-cillo, *a small parlor*.  
gratificacioncita, *small gratuity*.  
ladroncillo, *little pilferer*.  
jovencete, *a youth (contempt)*.

amor-cillo, *slight affection*.  
autorcico, *boy-author*.  
mujerzuela, *silly woman*.  
Dolorcitas, *little Dolores*.

Jardin makes **jardinito** and **jardincito**, *small garden*.

**764.** The third forms of the diminutives, namely, **ecito** (**ecico**), **ecillo**, **ezuelo**, are to be used :—

*a.* With monosyllables :—

sol-ecillo, *little sun*.  
flor-ecita, *little flower*.  
pan-ecillo, *loaf of bread*.  
fracu-ezuelo, *dress-coat*.

red-ecilla, *net (for the hair)*.  
nuez, nuececica, *little walnut*.  
cruz, crucecita, *little cross*.  
pez, pececillo, *little fish*.

Pié makes **piececito**, *a charming little foot*; and *mano*, *hand*, **manita** or **manecita**.

*b.* With words ending in *e* or *y* : —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| fraile, <b>frail-ecico</b> , <i>little friar</i> . | viaje, <b>viaj-ecito</b> , <i>short trip</i> .   |
| ave, <b>avecilla</b> , <i>little bird</i> .        | rey, <b>reyezuelo</b> , <i>petty sovereign</i> . |
| alegre, <b>alegrecito</b> , <i>jolly</i> .         | grande, <b>grandecito</b> , <i>rather tall</i> . |
| amable, <b>amablecillo</b> , <i>kind</i> .         | pobre, <b>pobrezuelo</b> , <i>sadly poor</i> .   |

But proper names in *e* are excepted : —

|                                       |   |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| Pepe, <b>Pepito</b> , <i>Joseph</i> . | Felipe, <b>Felipico</b> , <i>Philip</i> . |
|---------------------------------------|---|

*c.* With words ending in *a* or *o*, only when they have a diphthong in the stem : —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| piedra, <b>piedrecilla</b> , <i>little stone</i> . | pleito, <b>pleitecillo</b> , <i>law-suit</i> .     |
| cuerpo, <b>cuerpezuelo</b> , <i>little body</i> .  | viento, <b>vientecito</b> , <i>slight breeze</i> . |
| ciego, <b>cieguecillo</b> , <i>blind</i> .         | quieto, <b>quietecillo</b> , <i>still</i> .        |
| nuevo, <b>nuevecico</b> , <i>new</i> .             | viejo, <b>viejezuelo</b> , <i>old</i> .            |

Except abuelo, *a*, **abuelito**, *a*, *grandfather*, *-mother*, and perhaps others.

**AUGMENTATIVES.**

**765.** The leading augmentatives are : —

*a.* **On**, *fem.* **ona**, denoting large size, grotesqueness, and in general an extraordinary degree of what is contained in the primitive. Feminine nouns usually become masculine in assuming this ending, unless natural gender is indicated : —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| calavera, <b>calaveron</b> , <i>rascal</i> .         | cigarro, <b>cigarron</b> , <i>big cigar</i> .    |
| ala, <b>alon</b> , <i>wing (of a fowl, served)</i> . | encuentro, <b>encontron</b> , <i>shock</i> .     |
| cuchara, <b>cucharon</b> , <i>ladle</i> .            | pícaro, <b>picaron</b> , <i>great rogue</i> .    |
| jarra, <b>jarron</b> , <i>large vase</i> .           | señor, <b>señoron</b> , <i>great gentleman</i> . |
| barba, <b>barbon</b> , <i>thick beard</i> .          | tunante, <b>tunanton</b> , <i>scoundrel</i> .    |
| migaja, <b>migajon</b> , <i>large crumb</i> .        | autor, <b>autoron</b> , <i>big author</i> .      |
| mujer- <b>ona</b> , <i>big woman</i> .               | valiente, <b>valenton</b> , <i>a brave</i> .     |

tan de **sopeton**, *so suddenly, unexpectedly*.

*b.* **Azo**, *fem.* **aza**, has a similar meaning applied according to the gender of the primitive : —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| boca, <b>bocaza</b> , <i>big mouth</i> . | hereje, <b>herejazo</b> , <i>great heretic</i> . |
|--|--|

REMARK 1. — The ending **azo** invariable, is oftenest used to represent a blow or discharge of something indicated in the primitive : —

|                             |                                  |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------------|
| abanico, <b>abanicazo</b> , | a blow with a fan.               |
| baston, <b>bastonazo</b> ,  | a blow with a cane.              |
| bombo, <b>bombazo</b> ,     | a beating of drums.              |
| porra, <b>porrazo</b> ,     | a cudgelling.                    |
| navaja, <b>navajazo</b> ,   | a thrust with the clasp-knife.   |
| cañon, <b>cañonazo</b> ,    | report of a cannon, cannon-shot. |
| fusil, <b>fusilazo</b> ,    | a rifle-shot.                    |

REMARK 2. — The ending **ada** has a similar meaning; often a thrust with a sharp weapon : —

|                                |                                      |
|--------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| una <b>lanzada</b> (lanza),    | thrust with a lance.                 |
| una <b>pufialada</b> (puñal),  | a stab with the short dirk.          |
| una <b>estocada</b> (estoque), | thrust with a long, thin sword.      |
| una <b>andanada</b> ,          | a broadside.                         |
| dar <b>manotadas</b> ,         | to throw up the hands as in falling. |
| una <b>bufonada</b> ,          | a piece of buffoonery.               |
| una <b>campanada</b> ,         | stroke of a bell.                    |

c. **Ote**, *fem.* **ota**, has a depreciative sense sometimes, and others only the augmentative : —

|   |  |
|---|--|
| amigo, <b>amigote</b> , <i>old friend</i> .     | hereje, <b>herejote</b> , <i>great heretic</i> . |
| un <b>librote</b> de á folio,                   | an old folio volume.                             |
| rico, <b>ricote</b> , <b>ricota</b> ,           | rich and pretentious.                            |
| <b>grandote</b> , <b>feote</b> , <b>feota</b> , | pompous, ugly old person.                        |

d. **Acho** and **ucho** have the more definite sense of disdain, contempt : —

|  |  |
|--|--|
| el <b>populacho</b> , <i>the masses</i> .  | <b>animalucho</b> , <i>an insect</i> . |
| una <b>casucha</b> , <i>a poor house</i> . |  |

766. Combinations of diminutives and augmentatives are very frequent to lend an accumulative force to words. Such are : —

**a. Ito with ito and in : —**

chico, *small*; chiquito, **chiquitito**, **chiquitín**.  
los piés **chiquirrititos**, *little mites of feet*.

**b. Illo with on : —**

grande, *large*; **grandillon**, *rather biggish*.

**c. Ete with on : —**

mozo, *lad*; mocete, **moceton**, *quite a tall lad*.  
pobre, *poor*; pobrete, **pobreton**, *a poor old fellow*.

**d. Ejo with on : —**

calle, *street*; calleja, **callejon**, *a lane, alley*.

**e. Acho with uelo : —**

rió, *river*; riacho, **riachuelo**, *rivulet*.

**f. Acho with on : —**

bueno, *good*; bonacho, **bonachon**, *easy-going, "clever."*

**g. On with azo : —**

pícaro, *rogue*; picaron, **picaronazo**, *piece of knavery*.  
encuentro, *meeting*; encontron, **encontronazo**, *crash*.

**767. Occasional forms are : —**

nube; **nubarron**,  
bobo; **bobarron**,  
bobalías; **bobalicon**,  
lámpara; **lampion**,  
nariz; **narigon**,  
raíz; **raigon**,  
vivo; **vivaracho**,  
**mamarracho**,  
ave; **avechucho**,  
pillo; **pillastro**,  
gente; **gentuza**,  
**migaja** (pop. *mieja*),  
latin, **latinajo**,

cloud; threatening cloud.  
stupid; great dunce.  
dolt; great blockhead.  
lamp; large lantern.  
nose; big nose; big-nosed.  
root; snag.  
lively; sprightly.  
grotesque ornament, botch.  
bird; bird of ill-omen.  
rogue; great rogue.  
people; rabble.  
crumb, grain. [ous].  
Latin; Latin quotation (*humor-*

**768.** Diminutive and augmentative endings often express independent ideas :—

señora, (*married*) *lady*;  
paño, *cloth*;  
pan, *bread*;  
manta, *blanket, wrap*;  
azúcar, *sugar*;  
calzas, *knee-breeches*;  
calle, *street*;

señorita, *young lady*.  
pañuelo, *handkerchief*.  
panecillo, *loaf of bread*.  
mantilla, *Spanish veil*.  
azucarillo (*a confection*).  
calzoncillos, *drawers*.  
callejon, *lane*.

**769.** Many words have endings that are only apparently diminutive and augmentative :—

varon, *a man, male*.  
tornillo, *screw*.  
sencillo, *simple, plain*.  
pantorrilla, *calf of the leg*.  
vajilla (vasilia), *plate (collect.)*.  
ladrillo, *brick*.  
bosquejo, *sketch*.  
cotejo, *collation of a book*.  
azulejo, *Dutch tile*.

conejo, *rabbit*.  
guedeja, *lock of hair*.  
madeja, *skein*.  
oveja, *sheep*.  
anzuelo, *fish-hook*.  
cazuela, *skillet (earthen)*.  
billete, *ticket*.  
bigotes, *mustachios*.  
escondrijo, *lurking-place*.

escondite, *hiding-place*.

## SECTION FOURTH.

---

### DRILL-BOOK.

#### *Pronunciation.*

[The accentuated syllable that should not bear the graphic accent is here noted by a long mark placed over the vowel that has the principal stress; thus, *papēl*, but *dnimo*.]

#### Simple Vowels.

Ama, ala, amára, amīgo, amistād (31), almenāra, ánima, andēn, abalōrios, amapōla. Era, época, epístola, escāla, escalēra, mandadēro, embarcadēro, sombrero, sombrerēro, es, está, escuēla, eslabōn, alfilēr, elemento, elefānte, ébano, inglés, cordobés. Libro, fila, tira, timbre, tinta, cortīna, triste, visita (40), baladí, papelito, tilīn, bailarīn, motin. Olōr, opāco, reló, autōr, mediadōr, corredōr, con (never *kōn*), conmīgo, contento, confiādo, consonānte, narigōn, pasiōn. Pluma, uso, ustēd, gusto, busto, susto, busca, bulto, duda, burla, gula, nulo, único, ambigú, abuso, adulaciōn (28).

#### Diphthongs.

Āire, airōso (40), bāile, caigo, traigo, fraile, vaivēn, maitīnes. Āuto, aula, bautismo, āun (*even*), caudāl, caudalōso, raudāl (39), autōr, fautōr, auditōrio. Āureo, áurea, empíreo, línea. Pēine, vēinte, treinta, afeite, deleite, aceite (28), reino, reinādo, ley, rey. Fēudo, neutro, deudo, leudo, Euro, Eurōpa. Fēria, āmplio, āmplia, līmpio, līmpia, nimio, nimia, indio, india, vicio, ciēncia, servicio, paciēncia, codícia, albrícias.

Hiēlo, griēta, niēto, viēne, consiente, doliente, teniente, biēn, tambiēn, siēnes, bienes, siempre, tiēntan, siēnten, viēntos. Ciudadāno, viūdo; cōima, oīgo, estóico, heróico. Cuāndo, cuanto, guārdia, agua, státua, contīnua. Fuēgo, duelo, vuelo, suelo, fuero, agüēro, nuevo, muero, trueno, grueso. Cuīdadōso, ruidōso, arruinado, huiréis; ambíguo, tortuōso, virtuoso.



**Improper Diphthongs.**

Cãe, trãe, caïda, traïdo, caí; baül, ataüd *or* atahüd, aün (*yet, still*); galantêa, alancêa, hebrêa, marêa; crêe, lêe, alancêe, galantêe; ref, creïmos, creïdo, leïdo; torêo, hebrêo, licêo, galantêo; galería, alegría, tropelía, tontería, hería, comíamos, vivían; rie, avíe; rio, varío; oïdo, oïd; huïda, imbuïdo; continúa, falúa.

**Consonants.**

Biênes, viênes, bota, voto, bebe, vive, bata, vate, tubo, tuvo, bacía, vacía, balido, valido, barôn, varôn, hombre, nombre, bribôn. Casa, caldo, caridád; queso, quema, querella, palenque, alcornôque, albaricôque; quiên, quiso, quieto, química, alquila, tranquilo; cosíta, coro, corôna; curioso, cubo, alcuza; escuálido, cuantioso, cuasi; cuestiôn, cuela, cuero, Cuenca; cuita, cuidádo; cuôta, íncuo. Muchacho, leche, Elche, noche; cuchillo, chico, marchito; ocho, ducho, chorro, dicho, ricachôn, cachorro; chucho, higo-chumbo, chulo, chusma.

Gato, galgo, ganga; guerra, sigue, albergue, droguería, guedêja, Águeda; guia, guiôn, guitarra, erguido, águila, guisântes, segúa, borceguí; hidalgo, gozo, hago, sirgo, higo, consígo; gula, gusto, argüyo, regulár. Guapo, guarida, água, frágua, averígua; frágüe, deságüe, averígue, antigüedád; argüir; antiguo, averíguo, santíguo. Hallazgo, ahora, habêis, halagüêño, tahür, desahücio, haba, héroe, hilo, horadado, hule, huso. Jäula, alhāja, baraja, jalêo; mujêr, generál, ajeno, rige, aflige, gesto, genio, ingenio; giro, gitano, dijiste, registro; tasajo, atajo, trabajo, influjo, trujo; juzgo, enjuto, jura; Juân, enjuague; juego, majuelo, tejuelo, juêz; juicio.

Halla, batalla, llama, llanto; calle, valle, Ballêcas, calleja; allí, cepillito; huello, murmullo, grulla, orgullo; llüvia, velludo. Niña, riña, seña, viña, engaña; enseña, engañe; reñir, ceñir, teñido; señôr, engaño, año, baño, daño; sañudo, ñudo. Vara, toro, moro; hablär, comêr, decír, llegär, placêr, dolôr; arte, tarde, hurto, guárdia; rota, rueda, ruego, rasgo. rindo; chorro, torre, burra, ahorrär; enredo, es regulár, irregulár, corro. Santo, eso, pasa, pasado, lloroso, odioso, Toboso, cosa, musa. Yema, yedra, yeso, yugo, tuyo, suyo, argüyo. Raza, taza, caza, haz, feliz, deslíz; hice, cena, dice, alanceär; cita, civil, ciudad, lícito; mozo, gozo, zozobra; panzüdo, zumbär, azül, azucêna.

Faccioso, colecciōn, dictionário, accionista. Desdicha, dardo, humilde, muerdo, ardiendo; dedo, hablado, arbolēda, comida, soldado, embudo, greda; maldād, caridād, verdād, hablād, comēd, ustēd, mercēd, red, ved, acudid, Madrid, sacudid, ardid, virtūd, ataūd, almūd; odre, pudrīr, vendrá, tendrá, albedrío. Inmenso, inmortal, inmarcesible. Sexo, exacto, máxime, próximo, exhortār, exultār. Naranja, lisonja, gengibre.

#### Geographical Names.

Álava, Albacēte, Alcalá, Alcántara, Alcázar, Almería, Álora, Alsásua, Aranjuēz, Arévalo, Ávila. Badajōz, Barcelona, Baztān, Beasoāin, Būrgos. Castellējos, Cēuta, Ciudādreal, Cuenca. Darincharinēa. Elizondo, Escoriāl. Fuenterrabía. Gijōn, Granada, Granja, Guadalajāra, Guadalaviār, Guadalhōrce, Guadalquivir, Guipúzcoa. Hellin. Irūn, Jabalquinto, Jaēn, Játiva, Jerēz. Medellin, Menjibar, Mérida, Montilla, Múrcia. Pamplona. Quintanapalla. Santandēr, Santipōnce, Sevilla, Socuéllamos. Tánjer, Teruēl, Trujillo. Valencia, Valladolid, Villalba, Vitōria, Vizcāya. Zaragōza.

#### Proper Adjectives.

Asturiāno, Valenciāno, Murciāno, Guipuzcoāno, Toledano, Sevillano, Jerezano, Gaditano, Vallisoletano, Zaragozano, Castellano; Alicantino, Granadino, Vizcaīno, Alcalaīno, Bilbaīno; Madrilēño, Estremeño, Malagueño; Matritense, Conquense, Tudense, Vascuence; Catalān, Alemān; Gallēgo, Manchēgo; Alavés, Aragonés, Leonés, Cartaginés, Cordobés, Tudés, Francés, Inglés, Irlandés, Escocés; Navarro; Españōl, Andalūz, Flamenco, Maragāto.

#### Family Names.

Álvaro, Álvarez, Arderius, Benítez, Bermúdez, Carvajāl, Cervantes, Díaz, Díez, Domínguez, Eguílaz, Estébanez, Fernández, García, Garcés, Gómez, González, Gutiérrez, Hervás, Ibáñez, Íñigo, Íñiguez, Jiménez, Loáisa, Núñez, Pérez, Ramfrez, Rodríguez, Sánchez, Sanchíz, Téllez, Velásquez.

## FIRST SERIES.

*Essentials of Form and Inflection.*

[The words will be found in the vocabulary at the end of the book. Words in parentheses are to be expressed in Spanish. Hyphens connect English terms which are to be given in Spanish by one word. The small figures at the top of the line indicate the order of the words in Spanish. Words to be left untranslated are placed between brackets.]

**Exercise First.**

*Learn and Recite* §§ 79, 81, 82, 84, 85, 101-104, 107-110.

1. The friend of the king, *or* the king's friend. 2. The queen's room. 3. The captain's ships. 4. The boy's pens. 5. The estates of the gentlemen, *or* the gentlemen's estates. 6. The ladies' presents. 7. The leaves of the trees. 8. The palaces of the king-and-queen (106). 9. The houses of the prince-and-princess. 10. The master-and-mistress of the servants.

11. A tree of the garden. 12. A door of the house. 13. The verdict of a judge. 14. The counsels of a mother. 15. The water of the sea. 16. The child's hunger. 17. The stir of a town. 18. The girl's needle. 19. The birds of the air (Span. *sky*). 20. The flight of the eagle.

21. The joy of the house. 22. The judge speaks to the prisoner. 23. The captain gives (to) the sailor the command of a vessel. 24. The lady lends a book to the girl. 25. A gentleman gave money to the errand-boys. 26. The queen gave the jewels to the ladies. 27. The souls of (the) men. 28. The laws of the commonwealth. 29. The crosses of the generals. 30. The servants of the judges.

31. (The) trees have leaves. 32. (The) vessels have sails. 33. Charles has money. 34. Agnes has sisters. 35. Lewis' father has houses and lands. 36. A town has streets. 37. A house has doors and windows. 38. A man has friends and enemies. 39. (The) nations have government and laws. 40. (The) wild boars live in the mountains. 41. The ministers wear crosses. 42. (The) partridges and quails live in the woods.

Exercise Second.

Learn and Recite §§ 112-118.

1. The rose is a beautiful flower. 2. (The) roses are beautiful flowers. 3. The garden has high<sup>2</sup> walls.<sup>1</sup> 4. (The) benevolent<sup>2</sup> ladies<sup>1</sup> are always beautiful. 5. The water is (*está*) cool; it-comes from a living<sup>2</sup> spring.<sup>1</sup> 6. My friend lives in a white<sup>2</sup> house.<sup>1</sup> 7. The Spanish language is rich and harmonious. 8. The [ladies] of-Cadiz are beautiful. 9. The boys and girls have roguish<sup>2</sup> eyes.<sup>1</sup> 10. The streets of the city are broad.

11. The German<sup>2</sup> literature<sup>1</sup> is modern, the Castilian is ancient. 12. (The) wise<sup>2</sup> men<sup>1</sup> are good companions. 13. The French<sup>2</sup> rail-ways<sup>1</sup> are (*están*) well made. 14. (The) Spanish<sup>2</sup> laws<sup>1</sup> are very ancient. 15. (The) Andalusian<sup>2</sup> customs<sup>1</sup> are very graceful and picturesque. 16. The houses in Spain are generally low, but spacious. 17. Madrid has the characteristics of a French<sup>2</sup> town.<sup>1</sup> 18. The men wear tall<sup>2</sup> hats,<sup>1</sup> and the young-men caps of curious<sup>2</sup> shape.<sup>1</sup>

19. You will-find English<sup>2</sup> and French<sup>2</sup> goods<sup>1</sup> in the Spanish<sup>2</sup> shops.<sup>1</sup> 20. A good memory is necessary in-order-to learn a language. 21. The Andalusian<sup>2</sup> wit-and-humor<sup>1</sup> is known everywhere. 22. The young-man directed treacherous<sup>2</sup> glances<sup>1</sup> toward his opponent. 23. The highland-women of Spain serve as (*de*) nurses in the capital. 24. They wear tall<sup>2</sup> head-dresses<sup>1</sup> and picturesque<sup>2</sup> costumes<sup>1</sup> with much jewelry and bright<sup>2</sup> colors.<sup>1</sup> 25. Charles gave (to) his sister a new<sup>2</sup> book<sup>1</sup> illustrated with many engravings.

Exercise Third.

Learn and Recite §§ 119-122.

1. An easy<sup>2</sup> lesson.<sup>1</sup> 2. Spain has many religious<sup>2</sup> festivals,<sup>1</sup> and few national [ones]. 3. (The) parents are faithful<sup>2</sup> friends.<sup>1</sup> 4. We spent many happy<sup>2</sup> hours<sup>1</sup> at (*en*) his house. 5. (The) rainy days are dull, but useful. 6. There-are noble<sup>2</sup> men<sup>1</sup> and vile<sup>2</sup> men.<sup>1</sup> 7. A common<sup>2</sup> interest<sup>1</sup> unites<sup>2</sup> them.<sup>1</sup> 8. Agnes gave (to) her sister a blue<sup>2</sup> ribbon.<sup>1</sup> 9. (The) young-men are capable of doing (to do) many things which are impossible to the old. 10. The customs of-Morocco are very different from those (*las*).

of-Europe. 11. All his remarks were courteous. 12. Spain is a wine-growing<sup>2</sup> country.<sup>1</sup>

13. (The) Spanish<sup>2</sup> villages<sup>1</sup> generally<sup>2</sup> have<sup>1</sup> one broad<sup>2</sup> street.<sup>1</sup> 14. A large<sup>2</sup> house<sup>1</sup> has many rooms of different sizes. 15. A palace has public<sup>2</sup> and private<sup>3</sup> apartments.<sup>1</sup> 16. The sweet<sup>2</sup> orange<sup>1</sup> is for Mary, and the sour<sup>2</sup> lemon<sup>1</sup> is for John. 17. The gentlemen understand many different languages. 18. The official<sup>2</sup> buildings<sup>1</sup> of a capital where<sup>1</sup> the government<sup>3</sup> resides<sup>2</sup> are usually large and magnificent. 19. The Catalanian<sup>2</sup> manufacturers<sup>1</sup> furnish all Spain with (*de*) common<sup>2</sup> fabrics.<sup>1</sup> 20. All (the) wars are serious, and are contrary to the spirit of (the) Christianity.

#### Exercise Fourth.

#### *Learn and Recite §§ 123-127.*

1. A good man always has good friends. 2. Lewis wants a good pen, the-one that (*la que*) he has is poor. 3. (The) good books are good companions, and much more convenient than (the) living [ones]. 4. One bad<sup>2</sup> boy<sup>1</sup> can do much harm. 5. This<sup>3</sup> has<sup>3</sup> been<sup>4</sup> [a] bad<sup>1</sup> year<sup>2</sup> for the farmers. 6. One bad thought may engender a bad habit. 7. A poor book is [a] poor companion. 8. The bad<sup>2</sup> boys<sup>1</sup> cherish bad designs. 9. The last moment of (the) life. 10. The last day of the fair. 11. The first month of-the year. 12. My friend lives in the first white<sup>2</sup> house<sup>1</sup> on the right. 13. In the three first centuries the Latin<sup>2</sup> language<sup>1</sup> was spoken (*fem.*) over all Spain. 14. The campaign began in the third month of-the third year of the emperor's reign.

15. The third man. 16. The third week. 17. The first and third row. 18. One book read with care is-worth more than many read (*m. pl.*) carelessly. 19. One day a friend<sup>2</sup> came<sup>1</sup> to our house. 20. One week has seven days. 21. Some day we-shall-go to Spain. 22. Some time after he-read the newspaper. 23. I-saw the (§ 76) man some weeks before. 24. Some oranges are sour. 25. No occasion is better than the present (*fem.*). 26. No day is free from cares. 27. No friends are so faithful as those (the) of our own household. 28. A great danger threatened<sup>2</sup> him.<sup>1</sup> 29. In a great house there-are many servants. 30. A great man has many friends. 31. A great general is often [a] guarantee of (the) peace.

32. The blow may fall any day. 33. Better is no book than any book. 34. The father gave (to) his son [one] hundred dollars. 35. I-saw [one] hundred soldiers drawn-up in the public-square. 36. [One] hundred and one is [an] odd<sup>s</sup> number.<sup>1</sup>

**Exercise Fifth.**

*Learn and Recite §§ 128-131.*

1. He-brings an important piece-of-news. 2. He-is an influential man. 3. The parable of-the prodigal son. 4. The poem of (the) Paradise Lost. 5. The young-man's threatening looks. 6. The measures of (the) foreign governments. 7. The iron-clad ships of the French and English (§ 655). 8. Madrid society (the society of-Madrid) is gay in (the) winter. 9. He-speaks the Spanish language. 10. Cabrera was [a] Carlist chieftain. 11. Espartero was the principal general of the Constitutional party.

12. The definite decision of-the government. 13. The innocent lambs. 14. (The) entangling alliances. 15. The producing classes. 16. The active and passive service, that is, the employed and pensioned officers. 17. The second and third chapters. 18. (The) books first and fifth. 19. He-gives good advice (*pl.*). 20. He-undergoes a just<sup>s</sup> punishment.<sup>1</sup> 21. He-writes with a bad pen. 22. He-leads (*lleva*) a bad life. 23. In (the) ancient times the selectmen represented (*representaban*) the (*al*) third estate, that is to say (*it-is to say*), the (*al*) people. 24. He-has a great defect, which (*que*) is almost a vice. 25. My father has a large house. 26. The doctor lives in the new street. 27. The poor man has the sympathies of all (the) charitable persons. 28. He-placed several volumes on the table. 29. I-found that poem in a volume of miscellaneous papers. 30. The messenger brought reliable news (*pl.*).

**Exercise Sixth.**

*Learn and Recite §§ 132-139.*

1. The building is as large as a palace. 2. The window is as high as the ceiling. 3. The toys are as amusing as the books. 4. The pens are as poor as the paper and the ink. 5. The women are as tall as the men. 6. The house is as white as (the) snow. 7. John is as small as his brother. 8. Agnes is as gentle as a lamb.

9. The merchant is as rich as the banker. 10. The paper is<sup>2</sup> not<sup>1</sup> so fine as the envelopes. 11. The house is not so large as the palace. 12. The streets of Toledo are not so broad as those (the) of Madrid.

13. Paul has as-much courage as Peter. 14. Mary has as-much diligence as her sister. 15. The boys have as-many projects as the men. 16. The tables have as-many legs as the chairs. 17. Julia has as-many pens as her friend Louisa. 18. The merchant has<sup>2</sup> not<sup>1</sup> so-much money as the banker. 19. The horse has not so-much patience as the ox. 20. John has not so-many friends as Peter. 21. The farmer has not so-many houses as the judge. 22. The cat is not so useful as the dog.

23. The horse is more useful than the ox. 24. (The) gold and (the) silver are more precious (684) than (the) iron or (the) lead. 25. The houses of-the king are more spacious than those (the) of (the) citizens. 26. The merchants are richer than the scholars. 27. The wise are happier than the ignorant. 28. The tables are taller than the chairs. 29. John is less amiable than his sister. 30. The laborer has fewer books than the mechanic. 31. The farmer has less money than the shop-keeper, but *he-is* more contented than the-latter (*éste*). 32. We-have more than (§ 137, *b*) [one] hundred acquaintances in this town. 33. The royal palace is larger than any (125) of the houses in (of) the capital. 34. It-is difficult to say which is (*sea*) better, (the) riches or (the) wisdom; both are-important to the state and to (the) society.

#### Exercise Seventh.

#### *Learn and Recite* §§ 140-148.

1. The count's palace is the largest<sup>2</sup> building<sup>1</sup> in (147) the city. 2. This is the widest<sup>2</sup> street<sup>1</sup> in the capital. 3. He-gave the wisest<sup>2</sup> counsel<sup>1</sup> of all. 4. He-is the best friend (that) I have. 5. A dulled conscience is our worst enemy. 6. He-took the smallest<sup>2</sup> coin<sup>1</sup> that I had (*tenía*). 7. The wisest [men] err sometimes. 8. The love-liest<sup>2</sup> women<sup>1</sup> are<sup>2</sup> not<sup>1</sup> always the most beautiful. 9. The best schools in (the) town are the public [ones]. 10. The most enter-taining<sup>2</sup> books<sup>1</sup> for (the) children are those (the) which have pictures. 11. He-gave<sup>2</sup> me<sup>1</sup> [some] of his poorest (*peores*) pens. 12. The fleece of the lamb was of the whitest<sup>2</sup> color.<sup>1</sup>

13. The justest judgments are always the wisest. 14. The shortest<sup>2</sup> road<sup>1</sup> is<sup>2</sup> not<sup>1</sup> always the best. 15. (The) Spanish proverbs are full of the profoundest<sup>2</sup> truths.<sup>1</sup> 16. The earliest collection is of-the marquis of Santillana. 17. The Broad<sup>2</sup> Street<sup>1</sup> of St. Bernard is one of the longest *in* the Spanish capital. 18. The street of Alcalá is the most beautiful *in* Madrid. 19. The Gate of the Sun is the most spacious<sup>2</sup> square<sup>1</sup> *in* that town. 20. The<sup>1</sup> shortest<sup>2</sup> street,<sup>2</sup> or<sup>3</sup> rather<sup>4</sup> lane,<sup>5</sup> is that (the) of Seville. 21. The city of Cadiz is the most ancient *in* Europe. 22. Seen (*fem.*) from the sea, it-appears [to be] a mass of [the] whitest clouds (*superl. abs.*).

### Exercise Eighth.

#### Learn and Recite §§ 149-159.

1. The day is very fine. 2. The night was (*estuvo*) very dark. 3. He-is a most<sup>2</sup> congenial<sup>3</sup> person<sup>1</sup> (with *muy*). 4. His arrival was most-timely (in-*tsimo*). 5. The benches are very-low (or *very low*). 6. The review *was* most-brilliant. 7. We-have very-many friends in this town. 8. There-is very-much fruit this year. 9. The houses of Cadiz are very-white. 10. The Phœnicians were a very-ancient people (151). 11. This is a most-beautiful bird. 12. The boy is exceedingly diligent. 13. The ring is of [the] finest<sup>2</sup> gold<sup>1</sup> (*absol.*). 14. The lecture was (*estuvo*) very-well-attended.

15. He-is a very-learned<sup>2</sup> man.<sup>1</sup> 16. His manners were very-mild. 17. Some of the streets of London are very-long. 18. His conduct was (*fué*) most-shocking. 19. The occasion was most-happy. 20. Last-night occurred a most-shocking<sup>2</sup> attempt<sup>1</sup> against the king's life. 21. This afternoon the attendance at the Córtes *was* very-slim. 22. The way is very-long and the night very dark. 23. The countess is a very-amiable lady. 24. Our neighbor's father-and-mother are very-old. 25. The envelopes are very-poor. 26. The question is [a] very-difficult [one]. 27. The news is quite certain.

28. The dog is a very-faithful<sup>2</sup> friend.<sup>1</sup> 29. It-was a very-devout action (reg. of *piadoso*). 30. The inside room is more quiet than the front [one]. 31. This gentleman is my most intimate friend. 32. He-is quite young, but he-has considerable experience. 33. He



has a very<sup>2</sup> pretty<sup>2</sup> hotel<sup>1</sup> on the "Castellana."\* 34. He-is very [much of a] gentleman.

#### Exercise Ninth.

#### Learn and Recite §§ 160-165.

1. Two men and three boys. 2. Four books and five pencils. 3. Seven churches and six schools. 4. Nine windows and eight doors. 5. Ten oranges and twelve pears. 6. Eighteen ships and three-hundred men. 7. Fifteen trees and thirteen statues. 8. Twenty horses and fifty sheep. 9. Five-hundred houses and twelve thousand residents. 10. Ninety-nine cents and nine mills.

11. Eight and six are fourteen. 12. A year has twelve months. 13. A month has thirty or thirty-one days. 14. A year has three-hundred [and] sixty-five days. 15. A Spanish real is-worth about five cents, and a Cuban [one] ten cents. 16. There-are nineteen ships and twenty-six steamers in the port. 17. A set of twelve chairs, two sofas, and three or four easy-chairs form a *sillerta*. 18. The permanent<sup>2</sup> army<sup>1</sup> of Spain in time of peace consists of more *than* seventy-five thousand men. 19. They-have fifty thousand men in the Basque provinces since the peace of 1876. 20. The year (of) 1492 was [a] very notable [one]. 21. The capture of Constantinople in the year (of) 1453 was coetaneous with the invention of (the) printing in Europe.

#### Exercise Tenth.

#### Learn and Recite §§ 166, 168-170.

1. The first day of the week. 2. The second month of the year. 3. The third Saturday of the month. 4. Three is the fourth part of twelve. 5. The seventh exercise is easier than the eighth. 6. The first lessons of a new language are more difficult than the last. 7. The second half of the nineteenth<sup>2</sup> century.<sup>1</sup> 8. The twenty-third<sup>2</sup> chapter<sup>1</sup> of the book. 9. The thirtieth<sup>2</sup> volume<sup>1</sup> of the history of Spain.

10. The Arabs entered (into) Spain in the eighth century. 11. Alfonso the Tenth was a wise and enlightened king. 12. A

---

\* The name of a fashionable drive in Madrid, the extension of the *Prado* and *Recoletos*.

Spanish real is the twentieth part of a dollar. 13. He-spends one (the) half of his time in the streets. 14. He-lost three fourths (the three quarter parts) of his income. 15. Nine tenths of them were favorable to the project. 16. He-gave (to) his son one fifteenth (the fifteenth part) of his receipts. 17. (The) four fifths of the soldiers were raw-recruits.

18. The servant bought a quarter of flour, a quarter of wine, a little beef, and [some] lettuce for the salad. 19. The farmer gave (to) the parish-priest his tithe of wheat. 20. Last-night the conscripts disturbed the neighborhood with their shouts and songs. 21. At the introduction of printing into Spain at the close (*á últimos*) of the fifteenth<sup>2</sup> century,<sup>1</sup> all (the) books were printed in folio or in quarto. 22. (The) ancient<sup>2</sup> Spanish<sup>3</sup> books<sup>1</sup> in 8vo are usually of the size of our books in 16mo, or smaller still.

#### Exercise Eleventh.

#### Learn and Recite §§ 171-175.

1. Five and three are \* eight and ten are eighteen, and seven are twenty-five. 2. Three times nine are twenty-seven. 3. Four times eight are thirty-two. 4. Twelve times twelve [are a] hundred and forty-four. 5. Twice thirteen are twenty-six and nine are thirty-five. 6. A day and [a] half. 7. An hour and [a] quarter. 8. He-gave one (the) half of his goods to the poor. 9. He-worked half [a] day. 10. He-will-wait half [an] hour.

11. I-spent a couple of days in the country. 12. He-bought half [a] dozen (of) oranges. 13. He sold a dozen and [a] half (of) boxes of raisins. 14. He-has a score of acquaintances. 15. He-lived there a score-and-a-half of years. 16. He spoke once or twice (two). 17. He-plays sometimes. 18. (The) children cry many times *or* often. 19. (The) thoughtful<sup>2</sup> men<sup>1</sup> jest seldom. 20. Some (*unas*) times he-wrote, other [times] he-read.

21. He-plays every day. 22. He-goes to the country twice a (*al*) year. 23. He-writes every month. 24. He-visits (to) his parents every two months. 25. He attends (to) the church every week. 26. He studies (at) every moment; he-is very diligent. 27. Every three months I-go to (the) town.

---

\* *Are* is usually omitted in ordinary calculations.

28.  $6 + 3 + 9 - 8 = 10$ . 29.  $\frac{2}{3}$  and  $\frac{3}{5}$  are how-many? 30. In a couple of hours he-will-be here. 31. I have visited the palace of the Alhambra a score of times. 32. Sometimes he-comes in (*por*) the morning, and others in (*por*) the afternoon. 33. Every day I write three or four letters. 34. Every time that I-see<sup>2</sup> him<sup>1</sup> he-pleases<sup>2</sup> me<sup>1</sup> less.

### Exercise Twelfth.

*Learn and Recite* p. 90; *Read* pp. 91-93; and *Learn Pres. Ind.* of § 536, p. 254.

tengo, or } *I have.*  
yo tengo

V. tiene, or } *you have.*  
tiene V.

{ tengo yo? or } *have I?*  
{ tengo?

{ tiene V.? or } *have you?*  
{ V. tiene?

no tengo, or } *I have not, or*  
yo no tengo } *I have no.*

V. no tiene, or } *you have not, or*  
no tiene V. } *you have no.*

{ no tengo yo? or } *have I not? or*  
{ no tengo? } *have I no?*

{ no tiene V.? or } *have you not? or*  
{ V. no tiene? } *have you no?*

So all the persons in all the tenses throughout the verb.

1. I have a book and a pencil. 2. Thou hast more knives than I. 3. He has many houses, and she has many [lady] friends. 4. You have fewer oranges than I. 5. I have better presents than you. 6. We boys (189, *a*) have more time than you girls. 7. Agnes' sisters have prettier dresses than she. 8. They have also bracelets and necklaces. 9. Mary and Jane have rings; we have no ornaments. 10. Charles and Peter have no rings. 11. John has new<sup>2</sup> shoes<sup>1</sup> and a new<sup>2</sup> hat.<sup>1</sup> 12. Ye (2d *pl.*) have a good father and a good mother. 13. Children, have ye no toys? 14. Peter and Manuel have a top and a drum; but they haven't [any] hoops.

15. We have good friends; they have no friends. 16. Have you no needles, Julia? 17. What have we? 18. You have kind<sup>2</sup> parents and relatives.<sup>1</sup> 19. Has<sup>2</sup> the poor boy<sup>3</sup> no<sup>1</sup> kite<sup>4</sup>? 20. Have<sup>1</sup> the boys<sup>3</sup> [any] friends<sup>2</sup>? 21. What have you (*pl.*)? 22. We have a ball and a hoop. 23. Who has my brother's slate? 24. We have his slate. 25. You have my sister's paper and pens.

26. Have I a pen? 27. You have not [an] inkstand. 28. Have you a sister? 29. We have cousins, but we have not [an] uncle and [an] aunt (§ 106). 30. Have we no paper? 31. Have<sup>2</sup> the children<sup>3</sup> no<sup>1</sup> toys<sup>4</sup>? 32. Have they [any] letters? 33. Hast thou a pencil and a rule? 34. Here is (have you) a pencil, but I have<sup>2</sup> no rule.

Exercise Thirteenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 184-186, 205, and Pres. Ind. of § 362, p. 171.

|                        |                              |                              |  |                  |                          |
|------------------------|------------------------------|------------------------------|--|------------------|--------------------------|
| le hablo, <i>or</i>    | } <i>I speak to</i>          | { <i>him.</i><br><i>her.</i> |  | ¿lo hallo yo?    | } <i>do I find it?</i>   |
| yo le hablo            |                              |                              |  | ¿lo hallo?       |                          |
| V. le habla            | } <i>you speak to</i>        | { <i>him.</i><br><i>her.</i> |  | ¿lo halla V.?    | } <i>do you find it?</i> |
| le habla V.            |                              |                              |  | ¿V. lo halla?    |                          |
| no le hablo, <i>or</i> | } <i>I do not speak to</i>   | { <i>him.</i><br><i>her.</i> |  | ¿no lo hallo yo? | } <i>do I not find</i>   |
| yo no le hablo         |                              |                              |  | ¿no lo hallo?    |                          |
| V. no le habla         | } <i>you do not speak to</i> | { <i>him.</i><br><i>her.</i> |  | ¿no lo halla V.? | } <i>do you not find</i> |
| no le habla V.         |                              |                              |  | ¿V. no lo halla? |                          |

So all the persons in all the tenses throughout the verb.

Like **hablar**, conjugate: **buscar**, to look for, to seek; **hallar**, to find; **alabar**, to praise; **engañar**, to deceive.

1. I-am-looking-for something (379). 2. What are-you-looking-for? 3. I-am-looking-for a needle, but I do not find it (*fem.*). 4. Do you not find it? 5. You deceive yourself (398), you have it in your (the) hand. 6. Does he speak to thee? 7. He does not speak to me. 8. You deceive him. 9. I do not deceive him; he deceives me (*pleon.*, 185). 10. We praise them because they are (*son*) diligent. 11. Do they praise us? 12. Do they praise us? 13. Do *they*<sup>3</sup> praise<sup>2</sup> us<sup>1</sup>? 14. You deceive yourself. 15. You deceive yourselves. 16. They find what (*lo que*) they-are-looking-for. 17. Do you find what [you] are-looking-for (218)? 18. We do not find what we-are-looking-for.

19. The boys deceive themselves (176, a). 20. Do the boys<sup>3</sup> deceive<sup>2</sup> themselves<sup>1</sup>? 21. Does he not speak to us? 22. [He] speaks to them, not<sup>3</sup> to<sup>1</sup> us.<sup>2</sup> 23. Why does he not speak to us? 24. Because we do not praise him. 25. Does he praise us? 26. He does not praise us, he deceives us. 27. Have you the boy's top?

28. I haven't it, his brother has it. 29. Who has Jane's bracelet?  
 30. Her sister has it. 31. She is-looking-for it everywhere. 32. Her  
 sister deceives her. 33. Do (the) brothers-and-sisters<sup>3</sup> deceive<sup>2</sup>  
 each-other<sup>1</sup>? 34. They praise each-other, but they do not deceive  
 each-other.

#### Exercise Fourteenth.

Read pp. 96-105; *Learn and Recite* §§ 217-224, and Pres. Ind. of  
 §§ 363, 364.

Like *comer*, conjugate: *aprender*, to learn; *le-er*, to read; *temer*,  
 to fear, to be afraid of.

Like *vivir*, conjugate: *escribir*, to write; *cumplir con*, to fulfil, to  
 discharge (a duty, etc.); *permitir*, to allow, permit.

1. Are you learning a new language? 2. What are you reading?  
 3. Are you not afraid to talk to him (*con él*).<sup>\*</sup> 4. I do not fear him.  
 5. He is reading the newspaper. 6. Where do you live? 7. Are  
 you writing a letter? 8. At what o'clock do you dine? 9. [We]  
 usually<sup>1</sup> dine<sup>2</sup> late. 10. We discharge (*con*) our obligations as well  
 as (the) time<sup>3</sup> and (the) strength<sup>4</sup> permit<sup>2</sup> (*it to-us*<sup>1</sup>). 11. Do you  
 allow it? 12. I do not allow it. 13. We have a house in the  
 country, and we live there during the summer.

14. In the winter they live in the city, because the weather does  
 not permit (to) them to live in the country. 15. I am writing a  
 letter to my cousin who (*que*) lives at (in) Rome. 16. The children  
 do not allow us to write; they are learning to (*d*) read with their  
 blocks of wood. 17. If you discharge your duties faithfully up-to  
 the measure of your capacity, you will have (*tendré*) your reward.

18. We do not live (in-order) to eat, but (*sino*) we eat in-order-to  
 live. 19. We are reading in a most amusing book. 20. You are  
 writing with a pencil, and I am writing with a pen. 21. My brother  
 writes more than (*de*) fifteen letters a (*al*) day. 22. The weather  
 does not allow us to go-out. 23. The good do not fear their  
 fellow-men (§ 76). 24. He does not allow me to write with his pen.

---

\* **Hablar** followed by the dative signifies to address a person, to speak to  
 him; to talk with a person, involving conversation, is **hablar con una persona**.

**Exercise Fifteenth.**

*Learn and Recite* §§ 233-238, and Pres. Ind. of §§ 539, 543.

1. He gives it to me. 2. He says it to him. 3. He writes them (*fem. and m.*) to us. 4. They permit him to (it to him). 5. I tell you; I tell it to you; I tell it to you (*pleon.*). 6. I give you; I give it to you; I give it to you (*pleon.*). 7. John has three oranges and he-gives<sup>3</sup> them<sup>2</sup> all<sup>4</sup> to-me.<sup>1</sup> 8. The children give us their play-things; they give them to us. 9. Agnes has a story, and she is reading it to us.

10. The old-people (*ancianos*) have a letter from their children, and a lady is reading it to them. 11. The boys and girls are looking-for their toys, but their parents do not allow them to (it to them). 12. If I find them, I [shall] give them to you. 13. They tell it to them. 14. They give them to them. 15. I do not say so (it) to him. 16. We do not say so to them.

**Exercise Sixteenth.**

*Learn and Recite* §§ 243-254, and the past definite of **hablar**, **comer**, and **vivir** (pp. 171, 175, 178).

1. My father spoke to him. 2. My brothers found a treasure. 3. Thy friend deceived us. 4. His servants feared his anger. 5. Your friends praised the artist (§ 76). 6. Their pens were (*fue-ron*) poor. 7. He did not learn his exercises. 8. They did not look-for their money. 9. Did you not fear (the) punishment? 10. He fulfilled his duties.

11. They allowed us to see our (§ 76) friends. 12. We did not write our letters. 13. You did not learn your lessons. 14. Did I not praise (§ 76) my teachers? 15. They deceived their friends. 16. Didst thou find thy knife, my son? 17. A friend of mine found it, and gave (*dió*) it to me. 18. Did you write the letter to your uncle? 19. John did not allow me to (it to me). 20. Did you speak to me? 21. Who allowed them to go-out? 22. We did not deceive you. 23. Where did they dine last-night? 24. We lived in his house many years.

## Exercise Seventeenth.

*Learn and Recite* §§ 254-258, and the past indefinite indic. of **hablar**, **comer**, and **vivir** (pp. 173, 176, 180).

The past participle of **escribir** is *escrito* (§ 561).

1. Have you found your book? 2. I have not found mine, but I have found my sister's (*the* of). 3. My friend and yours. 4. Thy house and mine. 5. His pictures and ours. 6. Their parents and mine. 7. My sister and thine. 8. Our cousins and yours. 9. Your houses and ours. 10. Their hats and mine.

11. I have spoken to my friend, but not to yours. 12. Thou hast not deceived (§ 76) thy friend, but (*sino*) mine. 13. He has not found my slate, but his-own. 14. We have written letters to our parents and to his. 15. You have looked-for your paper, and not [for] ours. 16. They have feared my anger, and not thine. 17. I have read their letters and yours.

## Exercise Eighteenth.

*Learn and Recite* §§ 259-269, and the imperative of the three conjugations.

## SINGULAR.

|                     |                         |                       |                                |
|---------------------|-------------------------|-----------------------|--------------------------------|
| háblale (familiar)  | } <i> speak to him.</i> | no le hables (fam.)   | } <i> do not speak to him.</i> |
| háblele V. (polite) |                         | no le hable V. (pol.) |                                |

## PLURAL.

|   |                         |   |                                |
|---|-------------------------|---|--------------------------------|
| hablémosle, <i>let us speak to him.</i> | } <i> speak to him.</i> | no le hablemos, <i>let us not speak to him.</i> | } <i> do not speak to him.</i> |
| habladle (fam.)                         |                         | no le habéis (fam.)                             |                                |
| háblenle VV. (pol.)                     |                         | no le hablen VV. (pol.)                         |                                |

## SINGULAR.

|                  |                   |                      |                          |
|------------------|-------------------|----------------------|--------------------------|
| cómelo (fam.)    | } <i> eat it.</i> | no lo comas (fam.)   | } <i> do not eat it.</i> |
| cómalo V. (pol.) |                   | no lo coma V. (pol.) |                          |

## PLURAL.

|                                  |                   |  |                          |
|----------------------------------|-------------------|--|--------------------------|
| comámoslo, <i>let us eat it.</i> | } <i> eat it.</i> | no lo comamos, <i>let us not eat it.</i> | } <i> do not eat it.</i> |
| comēdlo (fam.)                   |                   | no lo comáis (fam.)                      |                          |
| cómanlo VV. (pol.)               |                   | no lo coman VV. (pol.)                   |                          |

The third conjugation take *-íd* instead of *-ed*, otherwise the same as the second, — **vivíd**, **vivan** VV., etc.

1. Speak to this man (fam. and pol.). 2. Speak to him. 3. Permit (to) this lady. 4. Permit (to) her. 5. Praise these boys (§ 76). 6. Praise them. 7. Read this letter; read it. 8. Read these letters; read them. 9. Fear this punishment; fear it. 10. Fear these penalties; fear them.

11. Do not speak to that man; do not speak to him. 12. Do not praise that girl; do not praise her. 13. Do not deceive (§ 76) these gentlemen; do not deceive them. 14. Do not learn those lessons; do not learn them. 15. Do not write that letter so badly. 16. Do not write it so badly. 17. Do not look-for (§ 371) those books; do not look-for them.

18. Let us speak to these gentlemen. 19. Let us not deceive these children. 20. Let us not fear them. 21. Let us praise them. 22. Let us not live in this house. 23. Let us fear God (§ 76), and keep his commandments. 24. Let us not deceive our (§ 76) parents, because they are (*son*) our best friends. 25. Let us live in peace with all (the) men. 26. Let us not live (in-order-) to eat, but (*sino*) let us eat (in-order-) to live.

### Exercise Nineteenth.

*Learn and Recite* §§ 271-276, and the present indicative of **ser** and **estar** (pp. 190, 193).

**ser** is absolute being; **estar**, accidental being or state.

1. This is the boy who lives in my house. 2. These are the persons who deceive (§ 76) their friends. 3. The book which I have read *is* on the table. 4. The inkstands which I have bought are not good. 5. The papers of which I spoke *are* in the table-drawer. 6. The ladies whom I seek *are* not here. 7. The friends with whom I live wrote me a long<sup>2</sup> letter.<sup>1</sup> 8. The boys to whom I read the exercise are diligent.

9. The days on (in) which he writes are (the) Tuesdays and Fridays. 10. The books of which he speaks are<sup>2</sup> unknown to-me.<sup>1</sup> 11. The rule with which he makes the lines belongs to (is of) my brother. 12. The exercises that we write are more difficult to-day than those (the) of yesterday. 13. You are my friend. 14. *Are* you tired? 15. Where *is* the inkstand? 16. Do you know (*sabe V.*)



where' my pens *are*? 17. I have not seen them. 18. I am the person (whom) you deceived. 19. We are the artists whom they praised. 20. Thou art the boy to whom I spoke yesterday.

### Exercise Twentieth.

*Learn and Recite* §§ 277-282, and the past def. of **estar** and **ser**.

1. The table near which he *was*. 2. The balcony from which he spoke to-me. 3. The charge with which he honored me. 4. The judge before whom he *stood*. 5. The books about which they deceived us. 6. The conditions on (*bajo*) which they wrote. 7. The limits beyond which he did not wish (*quiso*) to go. 8. The measures against which we spoke. 9. The individuals among whom we *were*. 10. The city toward which he-was-going (*iba*). 11. The roofs upon which the birds\* alighted.<sup>1</sup>

12. He says what he thinks. 13. He writes what he wishes. 14. I praise what pleases me. 15. They find what they seek. 16. They fulfil what they promise. 17. They read what they find. 18. We eat what we like (pleases us). 19. We praise what we read. 20. We know what we write. 21. He finds all that he looks-for. 22. He praises all that *I* do (*hago*). 23. He does not fulfil all that he promises. 24. He does not praise all that you do (*hace*). 25. He allows me to do all that I like (*quiero*).

### Exercise Twenty-First.

*Learn and Recite* §§ 284-287, and the imperfect indicative of **estar**, **ser**, **hablar**, **comer**, and **vivir**.

1. That is the gentleman in whose house *I* was-living. 2. The young-man whose father *is* ill was-looking-for a physician. 3. This is the teacher (*é*) whose scholars we-were-praising so-much. 4. *He* is the-one-who was-writing when we-came-in. 5. *She* is the-one who found what we-were-looking-for. 6. You are the one who deceived us about what we-were-asking. 7. They are the ones who were-reading while we were-speaking to them.

8. He who seeks finds, and he who asks receives. 9. Those who study, learn. 10. They do not praise him who deceives (*Al que engaña no le alaban*). 11. They do not always believe him who

praises. 12. Him who fears they do not honor (him). 13. Him who discharges his duties they honor. 14. He who wrote the letter which we have received lives in London. 15. They who deserve rewards are those who have written<sup>1</sup> their exercises well.<sup>2</sup> 16. She who deceived her sister is worthy of blame.

**Exercise Twenty-Second.**

*Learn and Recite* §§ 288-292, and the future indicative of **hablar, comer, vivir, estar, and ser.**

1. Who is-looking-for a book? 2. Whose pen is this? 3. Whose toys are these that *are* [lying] on the floor? 4. Whom will-you-deceive? 5. What will he fear? 6. Whom will-they-praise? 7. What shall I learn? 8. What wilt-thou-write? 9. What shall-we-find? 10. To what [purpose] will-they-write? 11. To whom shall I speak? 12. What will-it-be?

13. What house is that? 14. What is the number of this house? 15. What day of the week is-it? 16. What is the object of the visit? 17. What measures have you taken? 18. What are the lessons that he-is-learning? 19. Which of these houses is yours? 20. With which of these pens will you write the letter? 21. What day will you dine with us? 22. How proud they are! 23. What a misfortune [it is]! 24. Where will you live in Paris? 25. They will praise what pleases (to) them. 26. Thou wilt arrive to-morrow night (*m. por la n.*). 27. When shall we dine? 28. I do not know when it will be.

**Exercise Twenty-Third.**

*Learn and Recite* §§ 293-308, and conjugate all the simple forms of the verb **hablar**.

1. The true master praises another's work, but not his-own. 2. The thief seeks the treasures of others. 3. The unjust [man] speaks freely of others' lives, and does not consider his own. 4. Somebody is calling us; do you not hear a voice? 5. I hear

(*siento*) steps; some-one is-coming (*viene*). 6. Somebody will praise the master (§ 76) whose works deserve it (*merezcan*). 7. Has<sup>1</sup> anybody<sup>3</sup> found<sup>2</sup> what I lost? 8. Somebody wrote him a letter which gave him (a) great offense.

9. Some-one of our acquaintances spoke ill of him. 10. Some of these trees do not grow. 11. Are you looking for anything? 12. Is-there (*hay*) anything more troublesome than to listen-to the twaddle of the vain? 13. Every day has its duties. 14. Every country has its language and its customs. 15. Every year we go to the baths. 16. The Spaniards go to the drive every day. 17. I-met<sup>2</sup> so-and-so<sup>3</sup> yesterday,<sup>1</sup> and he-told (*dijo*) me that you were-looking-for [a] house. 18. When he had (*hubo*) spoken he sat down. 19. He would not speak to me if I were not (*estuviese*) with influential friends. 20. They spoke of the grand dinner at (*en*) [the] palace.

#### Exercise Twenty-Fourth.

*Recite* §§ 309-321, and *Learn* the compound forms of the verb **hablar**.

1. He told me nothing. 2. I had not eaten anything. 3. He would not learn anything. 4. He-who knows<sup>2</sup> nothing<sup>1</sup> fears<sup>2</sup> nothing.<sup>1</sup> 5. He has found nothing. 6. Nobody has written more than the great dramatic author, Lope de Vega. 7. He praises no one. 8. No one will deceive him. 9. He was-looking-for no one. 10. [Let] no one deceive you (*subj.*). 11. No one would find it (*cond.*) even if he-should-search (*subj.*) all the year.

12. In no house do-they-do (*hacen*) this. 13. None of these things moves me. 14. None of these things move me. 15. None of the trees grows more than this [one]. 16. He has deceived none of them. 17. They have looked-for [a] house, but have found none. 18. We have not received any news from our friends. 19. No house in (of) the city is as large and beautiful as the royal<sup>2</sup> palace.<sup>1</sup> 20. None of these ladies is as amiable as the marchioness. 21. I cannot (*no puedo*) write with any (*neg.*) of these pens. 22. No paper is so good as (the) hand-laid paper.

**Exercise Twenty-Fifth.**

*Recite* §§ 323-335, and conjugate all the simple forms of the verb **comer**.

1. Have<sup>2</sup> you no<sup>1</sup> time? 2. The poor people have (has) no home. 3. We eat no meat [on] (the) Fridays. 4. They have no friends. 5. Others toil in-order-that I may-eat (*subj.*). 6. I shall write the letter another day. 7. That (*eso*) is another thing. 8. The other day I dined with a friend. 9. In Spain some dine at (*á las*) two in (of) the afternoon, and others at (*á las*) six. 10. Do you want these books or the others? 11. I will take these and you may (*puede*) have the rest.

12. Some went (*fuieron*) to the country, others to the baths, and the rest staid home (*reft.*). 13. I shall dine with any one who invites (*subj.*) me. 14. Give me (*déme V.*) any book. 15. I cannot (*no puedo*) write with any pen. 16. I-am-looking-for any house that is (*sea*) comfortable and convenient. 17. Such-a thing might (*podría*) happen to any [one]. 18. Such men are-not-accustomed (*no suelen*) to be idle. 19. The history of such-a period is full of interest. 20. Such books are very useful to (*para*) the young (youth).

**Exercise Twenty-Sixth.**

*Recite* §§ 336-349, and *Learn* the compound forms of the verb **comer**.

1. I have been-reading all (the) day. 2. We had been-watching all night. 3. He has been (*estado*) in the National<sup>2</sup> Library<sup>1</sup> all the morning. 4. Have you<sup>2</sup> ever<sup>4</sup> travelled<sup>1</sup> over all Andalusia? 5. I had been-waiting-for him all that afternoon. 6. All (the) days are alike (*iguales*) to (*para*) him (*or dat. pron.*). 7. All classes praise him. 8. The whole battalion entered into the fight. 9. This is that Light that lightens every man who comes into (*á*) this world. 10. We see the same [thing] everywhere. 11. They arrested them all (§ 76). 12. He had eaten it all. 13. They had read it all before.

14. Every one who learns Spanish must (*ha de*) begin with (*por*) the grammar. 15. All those who do (*hacen*) such things receive their reward. 16. All that we learned was profitable to us (during)

all [our] (the) life. 17. All that the best men approve is good. 18. In the school the teacher gave (some<sup>1</sup>) very<sup>3</sup> severe<sup>4</sup> lessons.<sup>2</sup> 19. Having dined he went to the gardens with some friends. 20. We have two houses, one (of) stone, and the other (of) wood. 21. He was looking-for a number of good paintings with which he wished to adorn the walls of his drawing-room.

### Exercise Twenty-Seventh.

*Recite* the conjugation of the entire verbs **vivir**, **haber** (p. 162), and §§ 354-355.

1. Living in (*de*) this way we spent little money. 2. Having written a<sup>1</sup> very<sup>3</sup> long<sup>4</sup> letter,<sup>2</sup> he went-out to take (*á dar*) a walk in the gardens. 3. (In-order) to have friends, it-is necessary to be friendly. 5. (The) to have lived soberly in our youth is a pleasant reflection for our old-age. 6. We-used-to-live (p. 346, *c*) in the country, but now we reside in (the) town. 7. In-order that we may discharge (with) all our obligations, it-is necessary to have principles of honor. 8. He was-fearing that I should write to his parents. 9. He does not wish *me to live (that I may live)* in the capital, surrounded by (*del*) pageant and luxury, until my moral forces and my judgment are (*subj.*) more<sup>2</sup> developed.<sup>1</sup> 10. I-feared (*imperf.*) that he would not find what he-was-looking-for. 11. I wrote him in-order that he might permit me to-do what I-wished.

12. There-are days in which one cares (not) neither to read nor to write. 13. There-were more than three hundred persons at the dinner. 14. There-will-be no school to-morrow. 15. There is no one who does not know (*sepa*) what is just. 16. There-has been much rain this year. 17. There have been occasions of great interest and profit during this season. 18. In the Castiles there are no trees, and therefore there are no birds. 19. There would have been much less danger, if every one had remained (*hubiese permanecido*) in his place (*sitio*). 20. Will there be [*a*] war, or will there be none (§ 197)? 21. There were (*sing.*) people whom I did not know (*imperf.*). 22. There was nobody in the sitting-room. 23. There would be no remedy if a fire<sup>2</sup> should-break-out.<sup>1</sup> 24. There was a moment of the deepest silence, and then<sup>1</sup> the conversation<sup>3</sup> went-on.<sup>2</sup>

## Exercise Twenty-Eighth.

## El Barómetro.

## COMEDIA EN UN ACTO

*La Condesa.*<sup>1</sup> ¡Dios mio<sup>2</sup>! ¡Dios mio! esto<sup>3</sup> es insoportable. Hace<sup>4</sup> tres meses y medio<sup>5</sup> que llegué<sup>6</sup> á esta quinta, y ni un solo día ha dejado<sup>7</sup> de llover. Yo<sup>8</sup> no tengo<sup>9</sup> resignacion para<sup>10</sup> sufrir este tiempo, que me aburre, me desespera y me mata. Vamos á<sup>11</sup> ver si el barómetro me da alguna esperanza. ¡Nada!<sup>12</sup> Ayer marcaba<sup>13</sup> lluvia, y hoy indica tempestad. ¡Esto<sup>3</sup> es horroroso! Pues bien, voy<sup>11</sup> á acabar de una vez<sup>14</sup> con<sup>15</sup> el cómplice de esta lluvia eterna. (Descuelga<sup>16</sup> el barómetro y le arroja al suelo,<sup>17</sup> haciéndole pedazos<sup>18</sup> con estrépito.) Ya<sup>19</sup> no me mortificará más con sus presagios. (*Vase.*<sup>20</sup>)

In this passage the following verbs are *regular*: 1st conj., *acabar*, *arrojar*, *dejar*, *desesperar*, *matar*; 2d conj., none; 3d conj., *sufrir*, *aburrir* (used in the 3d pers. sing. and plur. only; otherwise in the reflexive form, *aburrirse*). The following make *orthographic changes*: *indicar*, *marcar*, *mortificar*, *llegar* (§ 371). The following are *irregular*: 1st conj., *dar* (§ 543), *descolgar* (like *rogar*, §§ 483, 371); 2d conj., *hacer* (§ 530), *llover* (§ 418, impers.), *ser* (§ 385), *tener* (§ 536), *ver* (§ 548); 3d conj., *ir* (§ 552), *irse* (§ 552, a). All these verbs must be learned or reviewed before the lesson is passed.

1. The countess *is* in her summer-house in the south of Spain, in that ancient province that is called (calls itself) Andalusia. 2. It has rained incessantly during all the time that she has *been* there, and she has become-impatient at (*de*) so much bad weather. 3. In the capital of Spain, where she lives, it scarcely ever rains (*no ll. casi nunca*). 4. Seeking some victim of her anger, she hits on the

<sup>1</sup> 97, d. <sup>2</sup> 249 and a. <sup>3</sup> 266. <sup>4</sup> 426, b. <sup>5</sup> 172. <sup>6</sup> 371 and b. <sup>7</sup> 415 and 726, b. <sup>8</sup> 187, a. <sup>9</sup> 322. <sup>10</sup> 729. <sup>11</sup> 552 and 725, a: *vamos á ver* is much more energetic than *veámos*, which a calm person would use, *let us see*. <sup>12</sup> 313. <sup>13</sup> 697, a. <sup>14</sup> *De una vez*, adverbial phrase, "of one time," *at once*, *once for all*. <sup>15</sup> *Con*, *with*, is the regimen of *acabar*, *to finish with* (*con*), we say, "to put an end to." <sup>16</sup> From *descolgar*: *descuelgo*, *gas*, *ga*, like *rogar*, § 483. <sup>17</sup> *On the floor*, lit. *to the floor*. <sup>18</sup> *Hacer pedazos*, with the direct obj., lit. *to make a thing pieces*, i.e. *to break it in pieces*. <sup>19</sup> 607. <sup>20</sup> 552, a; 206.

barometer, which does not cease to point to [a] storm. 5. She takes it down from the nail on (*de*) which it-was-hanging (*pendía*), and she throws it violently on-the floor. 6. Thus<sup>2</sup> triumphant<sup>1</sup> over (*de*) her foe, and leaving the field strewn with the evidences of the fray, she retires from the scene.

### Exercise Twenty-Ninth.

#### ESCENA SEGUNDA.

*Anselmo*, criado; *Victorina*, criada.

*Vict.* ¿Qué ruido es este? ¡Jesús<sup>1</sup>! El barómetro hecho añicos<sup>2</sup>!

*Ans.* ¡Qué lástima<sup>3</sup>! Después que le<sup>5</sup> costó mil quinientos reales<sup>4</sup> al<sup>5</sup> señor<sup>6</sup> conde, ha tenido el pobre chisme un fin muy desgraciado. Todavía me acuerdo<sup>7</sup> de la tarde que fui con el amo<sup>8</sup> á la tienda del óptico<sup>9</sup> de la calle de la Montera, y . . .

*Vict.* Vámos,<sup>10</sup> no empiece<sup>11</sup> usted ya con los discursos de siempre,<sup>12</sup> y recoja<sup>13</sup> usted esos pedazos ántes que vuelva<sup>14</sup> la señora. (Lee un periódico.)

*Ans.* Mejor sería que usted me ayudára,<sup>15</sup> para<sup>16</sup> acabar más pronto. ¿No oye<sup>17</sup> usted? (¡Se hace<sup>18</sup> la sorda y sigue<sup>19</sup> leyendo<sup>20</sup> sin hacer<sup>21</sup> caso!) ¿Trae alguna noticia interesante ese<sup>22</sup> periódico?

*Vict.* Muy interesante. Han preso<sup>23</sup> á Vargas.<sup>24</sup>

*Ans.* ¡Eso<sup>25</sup> es imposible, imposible!

*Vict.* ¿Imposible? Oiga<sup>26</sup> usted: “Al fin se ha conseguido<sup>27</sup> capturar al célebre bandido, que por espacio de un año ha sido el azote de los pueblos de Andalucía.”

<sup>1</sup> 658, *d. Rem.* <sup>2</sup> añicos, stronger than *pedazos*, and popular; *hecho a.*, broken into a thousand fragments. <sup>3</sup> 291, *a.* <sup>4</sup> i.e. \$75. <sup>5</sup> 215. <sup>6</sup> *señor* and *señora* are used with titles, and words denoting relatives, to indicate *respect*; omit in English. <sup>7</sup> From *acordarse*, 474, 396, 757. <sup>8</sup> *el amo*, for *mi amo*, as being sufficiently explicit in common language. <sup>9</sup> *á casa de*, to so and so's (house); *á la tienda de*, to so and so's (shop, store); translate to the optician's in Montera Street. <sup>10</sup> 659, *a.*, imperat. of *ir*, lit. let us go, here used as an exclam. like the French *allons, voyons*, "come now!" <sup>11</sup> From *empezar*, 371, 469, 367, *a. b.* <sup>12</sup> *Speeches of always = the old story.* <sup>13</sup> 375. <sup>14</sup> *volver*, 491, 710. <sup>15</sup> 713, 709, *e.* <sup>16</sup> 729. <sup>17</sup> From *oir*. <sup>18</sup> *hacerse la s.*, to pretend not to hear (to be deaf). <sup>19</sup> From *seguir*. <sup>20</sup> From *leer*. <sup>21</sup> 718; *h. caso*, to take notice, to pay attention. <sup>22</sup> 263. <sup>23</sup> 569, 410. <sup>24</sup> 748. <sup>25</sup> 266. <sup>26</sup> From *oir*, 553. <sup>27</sup> 410.

*Ans.* Y ¿dónde han atrapado á ese tunante?

*Vict.* En Mairēna.

*Ans.* ¡Caramba! y qué cerca estaba de<sup>28</sup> nosotros.

*Vict.* Á media lēgua<sup>29</sup> de esta casa. No he acabado de<sup>30</sup> leer todavía. Oiga usted: "Várgas es un hombre muy original, y podemos dar algunos pormenores de su persona. Su mirada es terrible, pero llena de inteligencia; su boca perfecta, aunque contrada por una sonrisa irónica; de frente sombría, adornada de una magnífica cabellera negra. Con los hombres es implacable, pero tan galante con las señoras que jamás las despoja de sus sortijas sin besar<sup>31</sup> caballerosamente la mano." Como que<sup>32</sup> es hijo de una buena familia, segun dicen.

*Ans.* ¡Ya! Y le ha quedado esa costumbre de cuando gastaba levita.<sup>33</sup>

Conjugate the *regular* verbs: 1st conj., *atrapar*, *ayudar*, *besar*, *capturar*, *despojar*, *gastar*, *quedar*; 2d conj., *leer* (549, *b*), *prender* (569), *recoger* (375). Conjugate the *irregular* verbs: 1st conj., *acordarse* (474), *costar* (473), *empezar* (469, 371), *estar* (382); 2d conj., *poder* (532), *traer* (537), *volver* (491); 3d conj., *decir* (539), *oir* (553), *seguir* and *conseguir* (516).

1. Do you hear a noise? 2. It is the barometer falling (that falls). 3. It has been broken into (*se ha hecho*) fragments. 4. How much did it cost our (to the) master? 5. He purchased it at the optician's (*en la t.*, etc.). 6. Do you know the optician? 7. I have often<sup>2</sup> *been*<sup>1</sup> in his shop. 8. I have bought<sup>1</sup> opera-glasses there.<sup>2</sup> 9. His shop *is* near the Gate of the Sun, [a] famous square in (of) Madrid. 10. Do you not remember it? 11. I think I do (that yes). 12. Will you pick-up the pieces? 13. I will (yes), if you will help me (*fut.*). 14. The lady will come-back soon. 15. What are you doing (do you)? 16. I am reading the newspaper. 17. What news is there? 18. They have caught a famous marauder. 19. Who (*cuál*)? 20. A highway-robber who has been the terror of this region.

<sup>28</sup> 627. <sup>29</sup> 629, *f*. <sup>30</sup> *Finished reading*, 726, *b*. <sup>31</sup> "Without saluting them politely;" ancient Spanish salutation was by *kissing the hand* of the person saluted: see also § 253, *a*. <sup>32</sup> *como que*, an ellipse for *¿cómo no? puesto que, why not? since*, etc. <sup>33</sup> *levita*, the gentleman's afternoon or Prince Albert coat; hence *gastar l.*, *to be dressed like a gentleman* (to wear a levita), *to be a respectable citizen*.



## Exercise Thirtieth.

## ESCENA TERCERA.

*La Condesa.* Mayo, lluvia; Junio, lluvia; Julio, grandes lluvias, y Agosto, tempestades. (Ve á los criados.) ¿Qué haceis<sup>1</sup> aquí?

*Ans.* Señora, estábamos recogiendo<sup>2</sup> los restos mortales del barómetro que fué.<sup>3</sup> (Váse.)

*La Cond.* (á Vict.) ¿Qué papel es ese que tienes en la mano?

*Vict.* Es un periódico de Sevilla, con una noticia que de seguro la<sup>4</sup> agradará.

*La Cond.* ¿Qué noticia?

*Vict.* La de que<sup>5</sup> el famoso bandido Vargas ha sido preso al fin.

*La Cond.* ¡Oh! ¡cuánto me alegro<sup>6</sup>! Te aseguro que su recuerdo<sup>7</sup> me ha hecho pasar noches terribles. Todavía le veo en mis sueños.

*Vict.* Y además dice el periódico que desde Sevilla lo llevarán á Madrid con una cadena de hierro muy gruesa para que no se escape.<sup>8</sup>

*La Cond.* No tendría yo<sup>9</sup> necesidad de cadena para que me llevarán allá.

Conjugate or review the following verbs: 1st conj. (*regular*), **agradar**, **asegurar**, **llevar**, **pasar**; (*refl.*, 399), **alegrarse**, **escaparse**; (*prog.*, 380, 382), **estar recogiendo**; (*pass.*, 386), **ser preso**; 2d conj. (*irreg.*), **hacer**, **tener**, **ver**; 3d conj., **decir**.

1. It has rained the whole month of May. 2. What *are* the servants doing (*progress.*)? 3. They *are* busy at (*en*) (the) work. They are working. 4. The news pleases me. 5. Does the news please you? 6. I do not wish anybody (§ 317) to be (*subj.*) unfortunate. 7. You cannot be (*no se puede ser*) kind to some people (certain people). 8. Do you remember him? 9. I do not remember him. 10. I have a vivid recollection (*recuerdo*) of what took-

<sup>1</sup> 180 (*d*), 182. <sup>2</sup> 380. <sup>3</sup> *que fué*, that was, i.e. the late barometer; so: *el ministro que fué*, (if dead) the late minister; *el m. que ha sido* (if alive, but out of office), the late m. <sup>4</sup> 220. <sup>5</sup> *La de que* is an ellipse = *la noticia de*, the news of, namely (*que*) the, etc. We would say simply: *that the famous*, etc. <sup>6</sup> *How I rejoice* = *how glad I am!* <sup>7</sup> Lit. *his memory* = the thought of him. <sup>8</sup> 710. <sup>9</sup> 365, 190.

place that night. 11. What does the paper say further? 12. Read it, madam. 13. You read (*famil.*) it for me (*léemelo tú*) 14. Are you glad? 15. I am very glad (I rejoice much). 16. What are you glad of (of what)? 17. That he has been arrested and carried-off (*de que ha sido*, etc.). 18. *He* is-going (*not* prog.) where I should-like (*quisiera*) to go. 19. Where would you like to go? 20. Home; I do not like<sup>1</sup> the country any more (*ya no*<sup>2</sup>). 21. When it rains the town is more agreeable than the country. 22. To (*para*) me it-is the (*lo*) same.

### Exercise Thirty-First.

#### ESCENA CUARTA.

*La Condesa.* (sola. Sin dejar su asiento mira á la campifia á través de los cristales de las ventanas.) Nada, no escampa. Esto es peor que el diluvio universal, que no duró más que cuarenta dias, y ahora hace<sup>1</sup> ciento que llueve sin descanso en este pais que dicen es un rincon del cielo. ¡Me gusta el tal rincconcito<sup>2</sup>! Y yo que creía reunir aquí una tertulia de más de<sup>3</sup> treinta personas, me veo sola. Lo único<sup>4</sup> que me consuela es, que hoy llegará la familia del marqués de la Peña, que es numerosa y de excelente humor sobre todo, especialmente la buena marquesa, que me ha pedido permiso<sup>5</sup> para traer á su sobrino Cárlos, con<sup>6</sup> quien tiene el proyecto de casarme. Difícil me parece que lo consiga.<sup>7</sup> He sido tan dichosa en mi matrimonio, que la segunda prueba no será nunca como la primera. (Dan<sup>8</sup> las doce.) ¡Las doce! Ya debe estar el tren de Sevilla en la estacion inmediata. ¡Si no hubiese llegado! No quiero pensarlo. ¡Si pasaré todavía un mes en esta soledad! ¡Imposible! Prefiero morirme.<sup>9</sup>

Conjugate the following verbs: (*Regular*), casarse, durar, gustar, mirar; creer (549, *b*), deber, verse (548); reunir; (*Irreg.*), consolar (476), pensar (457); parecer (374, *a*), querer (534); decir (539), morir (509), pedir (512), preferir (500).

<sup>1</sup> 696, *e*. <sup>2</sup> 759, *a*; lit. "I like such a little nook, indeed," said in irony; we would say, *a pretty nook, indeed, this!* <sup>3</sup> 137, *b*. <sup>4</sup> 83. <sup>5</sup> 753. <sup>6</sup> Regimen of *casarse*; we say, *to whom*. <sup>7</sup> *That she will succeed in it*; subj. after *difficil* with impers. verb. <sup>8</sup> 678, *Rem*. <sup>9</sup> 395.

## IDIOMS.

1. **Gustarle á uno, to like** (lit. *to please any one*).

|                                |                                       |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| me gusta el libro,             | I like the book.                      |
| me gustan los libros,          | I like (the) books.                   |
| la casa que me gusta,          | the house that I like.                |
| las casas que nos gustan,      | the houses that we like.              |
| no me gusta — gustan,          | I do not like it — them.              |
| ¿le gusta á V.?                | do you like it?                       |
| ¿no le gusta á V.? [aquello?   | don't you like it? [(thing).          |
| ¿qué le gusta á V. más, esto ó | what do you like better, this or that |
| á mi amigo le gusta charlar,   | my friend likes to talk.              |

2. **Casarse con álguien, to marry somebody.**

|                       |                             |
|-----------------------|-----------------------------|
| ¿con quién se casa?   | whom does he (she) marry.   |
| se casa con su primo, | she marries her cousin.     |
| se casó ya,           | he has already got married. |

3. **Pedirle á uno alguna cosa, to ask any one for anything.**

|                            |                                  |
|----------------------------|----------------------------------|
| le pido á V. permiso para, | I ask your permission to . . .   |
| qué me pide V.?            | what do you ask me for?          |
| no me pidió nada,          | he did not ask me for anything.  |
| pide al caballero dinero,  | he asks the gentleman for money. |

1. Without getting-up the lady looks out of (*se asoma á la*) the window. 2. The countess does not like the rain. 3. All the country round-about is impassable on account of the bad weather. 4. The weather will never clear-up. 5. The friend of the countess wants to marry her to (*con*) a gentleman whose name is (who calls himself) Charles. 6. She does not wish to marry the (*por*) second time. 7. He has asked me for my (the) hand. 8. We expect some friends by (*con*) the Seville train. 9. The train has already<sup>2</sup> left<sup>1</sup> the station of Mairena, and presently it-will-arrive at this [one]. 10. The train carries two engines, because the weather *is* so bad. 11. What-if (*si*) our friends should not arrive! 12. They would have to (*que*) pass the night in the cars. 13. They might (*podrían*) return to Seville.

Exercise Thirty-Second.

ESCENA QUINTA.

*La Condesa.* ¿Ha llegado el tren de Sevilla?

*Anselmo.* No, señora Condesa, las aguas han destrozado la vía, y por un milagro han podido salvarse los viajeros. No se sabe<sup>1</sup> cuándo podrá<sup>2</sup> estar expedito el camino.

*La Cond.* Haz<sup>3</sup> que enganchen<sup>4</sup> en seguida.

*Ans.* Pero ¿qué piensa V. hacer, señora?

*La Cond.* Irme con Victorina y contigo á Sevilla, aunque sea<sup>5</sup> nadando, y desde allí á Madrid.

*Ans.* ¿Á Madrid á nado?

*La Cond.* Sí, á Madrid; ¿y eso te espanta? Vamos ¿qué esperas? Corre.

*Ans.* Pero, señora, si<sup>6</sup> no se puede<sup>7</sup> dar un paso,<sup>8</sup> ni á pié ni en coche, por la campiña, y además la casa de Madrid está en obra, aprovechando el verano, y luego tienen que arreglarla los pintores y los tapiceros. De modo que hasta dentro de un mes lo ménos<sup>9</sup> . .

*La Cond.* Tienes razon,<sup>10</sup> véte,<sup>11</sup> no quiero ver á nadie. (Váse el criado.)

ESCENA SEXTA.

*La Cond.* (sola). Es decir,<sup>12</sup> que me veo<sup>13</sup> obligada á permanecer aquí como un prisionero. Dicen que los prisioneros<sup>14</sup> se resignan; me resignaré. Voy á leer. (Toma un libro y lee.) "EL LAGO." ¡Jesús! me horroriza todo lo que<sup>15</sup> es agua. (Arroja el libro y se levanta.) ¿En qué me ocuparé, cielo santo? Voy á dibujar. Sí, el dibujo es una gran distraccion, y divierte al mismo tiempo.

<sup>1</sup> 409. <sup>2</sup> *can be cleared*, lit. "will be able to be cleared." See 532, a. <sup>3</sup> 530; *hacer* is causal, signifying that *another* is to carry out the action expressed by the principal verb. We generally omit it: "*Solomon built him an house*"; Span., "*Salomon hizo edificar una casa*," caused a house to be built. <sup>4</sup> 709, c. <sup>5</sup> 710. <sup>6</sup> 601. <sup>7</sup> 408. <sup>8</sup> *dar*, to give, has many other meanings, here to take; so, *dar un paseo*, to take a walk. <sup>9</sup> 83 and 610. <sup>10</sup> *tener razon*, to have reason = to be right. <sup>11</sup> Imperative of *ir*se. See 552, a. <sup>12</sup> *eso* understood, but never expressed in this phrase: *that is to say, that means*. <sup>13</sup> 389, a. <sup>14</sup> 664. <sup>15</sup> 343.

Copiaré la iglesia de ese pueblo inmediato, y el campanario gótico que tambien se distingue desde aquí. (Toma un álbum, y se coloca frente á la ventana en actitud de dibujar; pero en seguida vuelve á llover<sup>16</sup> con furia.) ; Otro aguacero! Ya no veo<sup>17</sup> ni el campanario, ni la iglesia, ni las casas, ni el horizonte, ni nada. Todo<sup>18</sup> ha desaparecido detrás de esa catarata. ; Qué espectáculo tan<sup>19</sup> horrible! Ni un sér viviente se ve<sup>20</sup> en el camino. Pero ; calla! me parece que aquel es un viajero. Sí, no hay duda. Ha ido á ampararse debajo de un árbol. ; Porqué no se refugiara en mi casa? Si supiese<sup>21</sup> cómo me fastidió de estar sola. ; Oh, qué idēa! Quizás venga<sup>22</sup> de Madrid. Traerá noticias, y frescas; eso es indudable. (Tira del<sup>23</sup> cordon de la campanilla.)

Conjugate the following verbs: *enganchar*, *refugiarse*; *horrorizar* (§ 371, c), *colocar* (§ 371, a); *desaparecer* (§ 374, a), *permanecer* (*id.*); *saber* (§ 535), *poder* (§ 532); *distinguir* (§ 376, a); *divertir* (502), *venir* (§ 541).

#### IDIOMS.

1. **Acabar de** (*infin.*), *to finish* (*pres. part.*), or *to have just* (*past part.*).

acaba de escribir la carta,  
acabábamos de salir, }  
acabamos de salir, }  
acabo de recibir una carta,

{ he finishes *writing* the letter.  
{ he has just *written* the letter.  
we had just *gone* out.  
I have just *received* a letter.

2. **Volver á** (*infin.*), *to* (second verb) *again*.

vuelve á salir,  
no le he vuelto á ver,  
cuando vuelven VV. á escribirles, dēn-  
les muchas memorias de mi parte,  
acababa V. de escribir la carta, y  
ahora la vuelve á escribir de  
nuevo,

he goes out again.  
I have not seen him again.  
when you (*pl.*) write them again,  
give them my kindest regards.  
you had just written the letter, and  
now you are writing it over  
again.

1. The train has just arrived, and it will not go-out again to-day.
2. I-shall-learn this lesson so well that<sup>1</sup> it-will<sup>4</sup> not<sup>2</sup> be necessary<sup>3</sup>

<sup>16</sup> 608; 725, a.    <sup>17</sup> 607.    <sup>18</sup> 341, a.    <sup>19</sup> 291, Rem.    <sup>20</sup> 408.    <sup>21</sup> From *saber*.  
<sup>22</sup> 710.    <sup>23</sup> *Tirar* means *to throw away*: *tirar de*, *to pull at*.

for-me<sup>3</sup> (to-me) to learn it again (*volverla á ap.*). 3. The lady persists in returning (*infin.*) to the city. 4. The carriage cannot go (*andar*) over the country on account of the inundation. 5. A gentleman has just come-in who says that the roads *are* impassable. 6. It-is necessary to resign one's self to one's (the) fate, and to have patience. 7. A Spanish-woman out-of-patience goes and comes, jumps-up and sits-down, skips-about again, and runs (*corre que corre*) over (*por*) the<sup>2</sup> whole<sup>1</sup> house. 8. An English [woman] or an American [woman] in like circumstances sits-down calmly and busies herself with (*en*) something useful (*of profit*).

Exercise Thirty-Third.

ESCENA SÉPTIMA.

*La Condesa.* (al criado.) ¿Ves á un viajero debajo de aquel árbol tan corpulento?

*Anselmo.* Sí, señora.

*La Cond.* Corre á él<sup>1</sup> y díle<sup>2</sup> que venga.<sup>3</sup>

*Ans.* La señora Condesa le conoce sin duda.

*La Cond.* Corre, te digo. (Váse.) ¡Ah! es atrevido, es temerario lo que acabo de hacer, pero lo primero es vivir, y yo no puedo vivir de esta manera. Sin embargo, abrir las puertas de mi casa á un hombre que no conozco, es más que rareza, es una verdadera locura — es . . . ¡Victorina-a-a! ¡Victorina-a-a!

ESCENA OCTAVA.

*La Cond.* (á la doncella.) Llama en seguida á Anselmo, que<sup>4</sup> venga al momento.

*Victorina.* Es imposible, señora, ya va<sup>5</sup> muy léjos.

*La Cond.* No importa, vé á buscarle.<sup>6</sup>

*Vict.* Pero, señora ¿cómo voy á hacerlo? Mire usted, ya vuelve.

*La Cond.* ¿Solo quizás? . . . ¡Qué miro! Viene con el otro. ¡Qué es lo que he hecho! ¡Ah! Ya estoy arrepentida. Oigo que suben.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 210. <sup>2</sup> 212, from *decir*. <sup>3</sup> 709, *c.* <sup>4</sup> 708, *b*, *Rem.* <sup>5</sup> Substitute for *estar*, 389, *a.* <sup>6</sup> *ir á buscar*, to go after *a. o.* <sup>7</sup> *I hear them coming up-stairs*; *los* is understood.

*Vict.* (aparte.) ¿Quién será<sup>8</sup>? . . . La señora no está satisfecha con nada. Continúa la tormenta; me voy ántes que empiecen<sup>9</sup> los truenos.

Conjugate the verbs *llamar*, *correr*, *abrir* (§ 561); *conocer* (§ 374, c), *oir* (§ 553). *Continuar* is regular, but notice accent: *continúo*, *continúas*; *continúe*, *continúes*, etc.

# IDIOMS.

**Tener razon** (*reason*),  
**no tener razon**,  
**tener vergüenza** (*shame*),  
 “ **miedo** (*fear*),  
 “ **sueño** (*sleep*),  
 “ **hambre** (*hunger*),  
 “ **sed** (*thirst*),  
 “ **frio** (*cold*),  
 “ **calor** (*warmth*),

to be right.  
 not to be right, to be wrong.  
 to be ashamed.  
 “ afraid.  
 “ sleepy.  
 “ hungry.  
 “ thirsty.  
 “ cold.  
 “ warm.

tiene razon, no tiene razon,  
 ¿tengo yo razon, ó no?  
 no tenemos miedo de nadie,  
 tendrán hambre y frio,  
 el que bebiere del agua que yo  
 le daré, no volverá á tener sed  
 jamás.

he is right, he is wrong.  
 am I right or wrong.  
 we are afraid of no one.  
 they will be hungry and cold.  
 he who drinketh of the water that I  
 shall give him will never thirst  
 again.

1. The traveller stood under a large<sup>2</sup> tree<sup>1</sup> to (*para*) shelter himself from the rain. 2. The lady, who found in (the) society her only resource, saw him and sent for him. 3. (The) reflection, which always comes late to the impatient, suggested to-her her folly, when the step that she-had taken (*given*) could not be recalled (*no se podía revocar*). 4. In her selfish vanity she rejects blindly the humiliating reproof of a servant couched in these words: “Madam knows the gentleman, of course.” 5. She has more confidence in (the) man than respect for herself (*st misma*). 6. The great qualities that once shone-forth (*imperf.*) in the nations of the South have survived only in the impetus of the senses.

Exercise Thirty-Fourth.

ESCENA NONA.

*La Condesa.* Caballero . . . dispense V. si le<sup>1</sup> he hecho entrar casi á la fuerza, pero . . . pero . . . (¿Qué le digo<sup>2</sup> á este hombre<sup>3</sup>?) Pero anoche hubo<sup>4</sup> una tempestad horrorosa; el viento soplaba con furor, y como se han roto<sup>5</sup> todos los cristales de la casa, y el tiempo está tan malo, hay necesidad absoluta de<sup>6</sup> volverlos á poner.

*El Desconocido.* De modo que V. me ha tomado por un vidriero. (Pues me gusta la ocurrencia.)

*La Cond.* Sí, eso es, por un vidriero . . . (No sé lo que digo.) Ya comprenderá V. que á cierta distancia . . .<sup>7</sup> créf que . . . Ahora veo que me he equivocado.<sup>8</sup>

*Descon.* En efecto, un poco, señora, porque soy militar.<sup>9</sup>

*La Cond.* ¡Ah! Conque usted . . .

*Descon.* Siento de todo corazon no ser vidriero<sup>9</sup> en estos momentos.

*La Cond.* En verdad, caballero, que estoy confusa y avergonzada de mi error. Quisiera darle<sup>10</sup> una satisfaccion completa, y no sé . . .

*Descon.* Ninguna reparacion me debe V., señora. Lo único que le<sup>10</sup> suplico es, que tenga<sup>11</sup> la bondad de<sup>6</sup> prestarme un paráguas para ir á la estacion, y en ese caso, yo seré el que la dé<sup>12</sup> un millon de gracias.<sup>13</sup>

*La Cond.* (Acaba de entrar, y ya piensa irse.) ¡Cómo! ¿No esperará V. siquiera<sup>14</sup> que pase<sup>15</sup> este aguacero? Es imposible transitar por esos<sup>16</sup> caminos llenos de barro.

*Descon.* Cuando se han pasado<sup>5</sup> cuatro meses en los campos de África, el andar<sup>17</sup> media hora sobre la tierra un poco húmeda de Andalucía, es bien poca cosa. Por tanto, si tuviera<sup>18</sup> V. la bondad de prestarme un paráguas . . .

*La Cond.* ¡Ah! Conque ¿V. ha estado<sup>19</sup> en África? ¡Brillante campaña! \*

*Descon.* Un poquito penosa.

*La Cond.* ¿V. sirvió<sup>20</sup> en infantería? Es un arma que me gusta mucho.

<sup>1</sup> 219. <sup>2</sup> 696, c. <sup>3</sup> 215. <sup>4</sup> 354. <sup>5</sup> 408 and 571. <sup>6</sup> 724; 726, a. <sup>7</sup> 629, f. <sup>8</sup> 397. <sup>9</sup> 669, a. <sup>10</sup> 219, 220. <sup>11</sup> 709, c. <sup>12</sup> From dar, 711. <sup>13</sup> 163. <sup>14</sup> 605. <sup>15</sup> 709, b. <sup>16</sup> 265. <sup>17</sup> 719. <sup>18</sup> 708, b. <sup>19</sup> 391, b. <sup>20</sup> 513.

\* General O'Donnell's unjustifiable war against Morocco in 1859-60.



*Descon.* No, señora.

*La Cond.* Entónces sería<sup>21</sup> en caballería. Todavía me gusta más.

*Descon.* He servido en ingenieros, señora.

*La Cond.* ¡En ingenieros! Á mí me<sup>22</sup> agradan infinito los ingenieros.

*Descon.* Señora ¿tendría V.<sup>23</sup> la bondad de mandar que me trajesen<sup>24</sup> un paráguas?

*La Cond.* (Vuelta al tema del paráguas.) De modo que ha tenido V. la gloria de encontrarse<sup>25</sup> en la famosa batalla de que tanto se habló...<sup>26</sup>

*Descon.* ¿En la batalla del cuatro de febrero,<sup>27</sup> ó en la<sup>28</sup> de Vad-Ras?

*La Cond.* Eso es,<sup>29</sup> en la de Vad-Ras.

*Descon.* Sí, señora, he tenido esa honra. — Aunque el paráguas sea<sup>30</sup> malo, no importa.<sup>31</sup>

The student cannot review the conjugations too frequently. It is the basis of thoroughness in the handling of the spoken language. Henceforward, however, he need give only the first person singular of each tense, conjugating any specially irregular or peculiar parts of the verb. Give the outline, then, of the following, conjugating the necessary tenses of those in *italics*: *entrar*, *mandar*, *importar* (§ 415); *suplicar*, (§ 371), *andar* (§ 528), *dar* (§ 543), *encontrar* (§ 477), *pensar* (§ 457); *comprender*, *creer* (§ 549, *b*), *deber*, *haber* (§ 354); *hacer* (§ 530), *querer* (§ 534), *romper* (§ 571), *saber* (§ 535); *tener* (§ 536), *traer* (§ 537), *ver* (§ 548); *decir* (§ 539), *ir* and *irse* (§ 552), *sentir* (§ 499), *servir* (§ 513).

(Imperative — polite form.)

1. Excuse me, madam. 2. Excuse me, ladies. 3. Come in (*sing.* and *pl.*). 4. Go-out (*sing.* and *pl.*). 5. Come-up. 6. Go-down. 7. Come-out. 8. Go-in. 9. Don't come-in. 10. Don't go-out. 11. Don't come-up. 12. Don't go-down. 13. Don't come-out. 14. Don't go-in. 15. Do it (*hágalo V.*). 16. Don't do it (*no lo h. V.*). 17. Try it; don't try it. 18. Ask-for it; don't ask-for it. 19. Give it to-me; don't give it to-him. 20. Look-for it; don't look-for it. 21. Forgive him; don't forgive him. 22. Hang it up;

<sup>21</sup> 706, *f.* <sup>22</sup> 214. <sup>23</sup> 706, *e.* <sup>24</sup> 709, *c.*; 713. <sup>25</sup> 389, *a.* <sup>26</sup> 409. <sup>27</sup> 675, date of the battle of Tetuan. <sup>28</sup> 267. <sup>29</sup> *That's it.* <sup>30</sup> 710. <sup>31</sup> 415.

don't hang it up. 23. Come-near; don't come-near. 24. Go-away; don't go (away). 25. Do him the favor; don't do him the favor. 26. Have the goodness to . . . ; don't refuse to . . . 27. Turn-around; don't turn-around.

### Tema Trigésimo-Quinto.

#### ESCENA NONA — CONTINUACION.

*La Condesa.* (llamando al criado.) ¡Anselmo! ¡Anselmo! (aparece.) Ya que este caballero quiere absolutamente ponerse en camino, vé á buscar un paráguas, y tráelo al instante. (Que no haya<sup>1</sup> ni un solo paráguas en la casa ¿entiendes?) (Váse el criado.) Pero siéntese V., caballero.

*Descon.* Señora, tengo prisa por marcharme, y agradezco<sup>2</sup> la invitacion de V. Me esperan algunos amigos en la estacion, y ademas, prolongando<sup>3</sup> mi presencia en esta casa, temo<sup>4</sup> ser indiscreto, cuando<sup>5</sup> no me es posible ni aún componer los cristales que se han roto.

*La Cond.* Puede V. estar tranquilo, porque el tren no sale hasta dentro de<sup>6</sup> tres horas. Conque decía V. que en África . . . Y ¿fué V. herido<sup>7</sup> en campaña?

*Descon.* Sí, señora, dos veces, y muy gravemente por cierto, miéntras tratábamos de establecer una paralela.

*La Cond.* Conque ¿V. ha tratado de establecer una paralela? No sabe V. lo que<sup>8</sup> yo he deseado siempre saber lo que es una paralela.

*Descon.* Voy á satisfacer entónces la curiosidad de V. miéntras traen el paráguas.

*La Cond.* Pero siéntese V., yo se lo<sup>9</sup> ruego.

*Descon.* Gracias. La paralela, señora, consiste en una linea de ataque y de defensa trazada sobre el terreno que ocupan los sitiadores, con objeto de avanzar por zanjas ó caminos cubiertos hácia la plaza ó el punto sitiado.

*La Cond.* Comprendo perfectamente.

*Descon.* Esas zanjas se construyen en tres líneas unidas entre sí

<sup>1</sup> 708, b, Rem. <sup>2</sup> agradecer (§ 374, a). <sup>3</sup> 735. <sup>4</sup> 723, "that I shall be." <sup>5</sup> since. <sup>6</sup> hasta dentro de = before, in, with a negative verb. <sup>7</sup> 390. <sup>8</sup> 282, a. <sup>9</sup> 754.

por otras en forma de zig-zags. La profundidad de cada zanja es la de un metro, y su longitud varía desde uno hasta tres metros próximamente. Hay seis modos de construirlas: de zapa sencilla, de zapa volante, llena, medio-llena, doble y semi-doble. ¿Comprende V.?

*La Cond.* ¡Vaya<sup>10</sup> si comprendo! Es muy interesante todo eso. Decía V. que hay cincuenta y seis maneras de construir las zanjas . . .

*Descon.* ¡Cincuenta y seis! ¡Ave María Purísima<sup>11</sup>! seis, señora, seis.

*La Cond.* Es verdad, perdone V., me he equivocado. Como nosotras no tenemos obligación de saber esos trabajos de zapa . . .

*Descon.* ¡Pues ya lo creo! Como que los hacemos nosotros.<sup>12</sup> Vamos ahora á<sup>13</sup> definir claramente lo que es zapa sencilla.

*La Cond.* Vamos á ver.

*Descon.* Se llama zapa sencilla . . . (Sale<sup>14</sup> el criado.)

Conjugate *desear*, *variar*; *avanzar* (§ 371, c); *rogar* (§ 483), *sentarse* (§ 459); *agradecer* (§ 374); *entender* (§ 471), *componer* (§ 533); *construir* (§ 522), *salir* (§ 554); *ser herido* (§ 386).

#### IDIOM.

**tratar de** (inf.), *to try to* (inf.).

tratemos de averiguarlo,  
trataré de encontrarle,

let us try to ferret it out.  
I shall try to find him.

1. I wish you [a] good journey. 2. He has changed his (*de*) opinion. 3. The ship changed her (*de*) course. 4. He-came-forward boldly. 5. Let him come-forward. 6. I came-forward to (*d*) salute him. 7. I begged him to (*it to-him*). 8. He begged us to. 9. I beg you not to go-out (*subj.*). 10. He begged me not to go-out. 11. We beg you to sit-down (*que se siente*). 12. I thank you for it (*it to you*). 13. I shall be infinitely obliged to you for it. 14. He does not understand me. 15. Don't you understand me?

16. Nobody understands him; he speaks badly. 17. He who makes shoes is called [a] shoemaker; he who mends them is called [a] cobbler. 18. He who draws up plans of houses or property is

<sup>10</sup> 659, a, "Of course I do." <sup>11</sup> 658, d, *Rem.* <sup>12</sup> "Oh! of course, since we are the ones to construct them"; **zapa** has the two meanings here. <sup>13</sup> "Now let us explain" . . . <sup>14</sup> **Salir**, in plays, means "to enter."

called a draughtsman. 19. He is trying to construct a tramway from (*desde*) his village to the city. 20. When do you start for Seville? 21. The train will leave in (within) two hours. 22. Will you leave by the mail-train or by the accommodation? 23. There-are excursion-trains almost every day during the bathing-season.

**Tema Trigésimo-Sexto.**

**ESCENA DÉCIMA.**

*Anselmo.* (á su ama.) Señora, he revuelto toda la casa, y no he podido encontrar más que esto. (Saca de la funda el armazón de un paraguas viejo y muy grande y le abre.)

*La Condesa.* (al Desconocido.) Ya ve V., caballero, que no le falta más que la tela.<sup>1</sup> Creímos que haría<sup>2</sup> buen tiempo y no hemos pensado en traer paraguas (*plur.*) de Madrid.

*Ans.* Y además, será inútil dentro de pocos minutos. La lluvia ha cesado, y cualquiera diría que el sol va á salir.

*La Cond.* (corriendo hácia la ventana.) ¿Será<sup>3</sup> posible? Va á salir el sol. ¡Qué alegría! Hará buen tiempo y vendrán los amigos que espero con tanta ansiedad.<sup>4</sup> Anselmo, sube al momento á la azotëa y cada cinco minutos baja á decirme cuál<sup>5</sup> es el estado del cielo.

*Ans.* (Pues, señor,<sup>6</sup> vamos arriba á desempeñar las funciones del barómetro que se hizo pedazos esta mañana.) (Váse.)

Conjugate *bajar*, *sacar* (§ 371); *revolver* (§ 491); *venir* (§ 541).

**IDIOMS.**

**Hacer, to be** (of the temperature and weather).

hace buen (mal) tiempo,  
¿qué tal tiempo hará mañana?

hacía mucho frío, calor,  
hizo un tiempo muy templado,

it is good (bad) weather.  
what kind of weather will it be to-morrow?  
it was very cold, warm.  
it was quite moderate weather.

<sup>1</sup> lit. *it does not lack to it more than the cloth*, i.e. "it lacks only the cover." <sup>2</sup> *It would be.* <sup>3</sup> 703, *b.* <sup>4</sup> 624. <sup>5</sup> 292. <sup>6</sup> Addressed to himself in good humor.

1. What kind [of] weather is-it-going to be (*va á h.*) to-morrow?  
 2. The sun set (has set) clear; I fancy (that) it will be fair weather.  
 3. It-was very cold that night, do you remember?  
 4. It-has not been very hot this summer.  
 5. It-is hotter in Madrid than in Boston, but one does not feel it (*no se siente*) so-much there, because the atmosphere is very dry in the centre of Spain.  
 6. One never perspires there, and they (*se*) do not wear<sup>1</sup> straw-hats or (*nor*) white clothes much.<sup>2</sup>  
 7. Spaniards only want good government and (the) material<sup>3</sup> prosperity.<sup>4</sup>

### Tema Trigésimo-Séptimo.

#### ESCENA UNDÉCIMA.

*Desconocido.* Como decíamos, la zapa sencilla . . .

*La Condesa.* Caballero, V. me permitirá que le diga<sup>1</sup> que es una imprudencia por mi parte detenerle más tiempo, y que estoy abusando de<sup>2</sup> su amabilidad.

*Descon.* Al contrario, señora.

*La Cond.* Sé bien lo que es un viaje. Falta el tiempo para todo; los momentos son preciosos.

*Descon.* Pero ¿no me ha dicho V., hace un momento, que tengo tres horas disponibles? Ahora soy yo el que pide<sup>3</sup> á V. el favor de no abandonar tan pronto esta casa.

*La Cond.* Si es así . . . caballero . . . (de mal humor.)

*Descon.* Vuelvo á mi narracion. La zapa sencilla . . .

*La Cond.* ¡Dios mio! ¡Dios mio!

*Descon.* ¿Se pone V. mala<sup>4</sup>?

*La Cond.* No, no es nada.

*Descon.* En la zapa sencilla sólo se emplean gaviones y faginas, que consisten . . .

#### ESCENA DUODÉCIMA.

*Anselmo.* ¡Señora Condesa, señora Condesa!

*La Cond.* ¿Qué ocurre?

*Ans.* El sol que apareció un instante se ha retirado bruscamente. El cielo está cubierto de unos nubarrones<sup>5</sup> negros que asustan . . . y oiga V., señora, la lluvia cae á torrentes.

*La Cond.* ¡Horrible contrariedad! La marquesa y su familia no podrán venir, y voy á continuar sola en este infierno.

<sup>1</sup> 709, c.    <sup>2</sup> 757.    <sup>3</sup> 694, a.    <sup>4</sup> Idiom: *are you ill?*    <sup>5</sup> 767.

*Ans.* (Se ha puesto furiosa. Me voy á escape, porque como ahora soy yo el barómetro, no tendría nada de extraño<sup>6</sup> que hiciera conmigo<sup>7</sup> lo que hizo con mi antecesor).

Conjugate *aparecer* (§ 374) and *caer* (§ 544).

IDIOM.

*Ponerse*, to place or put one's self; (of dress) to put on; (of the sun) to set; (of physical or moral state) to get, to become, to be.

1. He has been wounded by (*de*) a ball (§ 765, *Rem.* I.). 2. We have been wounded in our self-respect. 3. The sun appears through (*por entre*) the clouds. 4. The sun sets, had set, went-down. 5. A friend put himself between the two combatants. 6. When the sun<sup>2</sup> goes-down<sup>1</sup> among clouds it is [a] sign that (*de que*) the following day will be overcast or stormy. 7. They know (*conocer*) the signs of the sky, but they do not discern the signs of the times. 8. He put on *his* (frock-)coat and went-out to (*d*) make some calls. 9. (The) excursion tickets are called in Spain tickets of out and back (go and return). 10. The machine or engine that draws the train is called there "locomotora," and in (the) Spanish America "locomotiva" from-the English. 11. He-has got well (good) again. 12. If he should go to Malaga he would get well (good). 13. I should become very angry if he said that *to-me*. 14. He is ill; he is getting\* better.

Tema Trigésimo-Octavo.

ESCENA DÉCIMA-TÉRCIA.

*La Condesa* (al desconocido, con dulzura). Cuando V. guste,<sup>1</sup> mi querido amigo, puede continuar esa deliciosa descripción de los trabajos de zapa.

*Descon.* Al momento, señora. Toda vez que V. lo desea, pasaremos á la zapa volante.

*La Cond.* Ya escucho. (Y es buen mozo.)

*Descon.* La zapa volante se comienza á practicar casi siempre de noche, y se hace salir<sup>2</sup> de la trinchera un destacamento de trabajadores; cada uno lleva una pala, una espiocha y un fusil.

*La Cond.* Una pala, una espiocha y un fu . . .

<sup>6</sup> "It would not be at all strange if" (*que*). <sup>7</sup> 203; *con* here = to. \* *he goes getting better*, se va poniendo m. <sup>1</sup> 710. <sup>2</sup> Literally: a detachment is made to come forth; we say: *they take from the trinchera a detachment of*.

## ESCENA DÉCIMA-CUARTA.

*Anselmo.* ¡Victoria! ¡Victoria! El sol ha triunfado de la lluvia, y el cielo, casi despejado, presenta un aspecto magnífico.

*La Cond.* ¡Oh! qué alegría! Vé á prepararlo todo, Anselmo, para recibir á mis amigos, que vendrán hoy fijamente en el primer tren. (Al Desconocido.) Caballero, retener á V. un momento más en esta quinta sería un abuso, una inconveniencia. Y ántes de marchar reciba V. un millon de gracias por la paciencia y la amabilidad con que me ha hecho compañía por espacio de una hora. Crea V. que jamás olvidaré su conducta.

*Descon.* Adios, señora Condesa, y gracias por la hospitalidad que he encontrado en su casa de V.

*La Cond.* Y yo ruego á V., caballero, que olvide la manera especial y violenta que he tenido de hacerle entrar en ella.

*Descon.* Dichosa violencia, señora, que me ha permitido conocerla.

*La Cond.* Tampoco olvidaré que V. me ha hecho pasar una de las horas más deliciosas que he disfrutado en tres meses.

*Descon.* Esa hora pasada cerca de V. va á hacer muy largas las<sup>3</sup> que faltan para que salga el tren. Adios, Señora.

*La Cond.* ¿Quiere V. seguir mi consejo? Ese tiempo lo puede V.<sup>4</sup> emplear en visitar los alrededores, que son deliciosos. Ahora no hay peligro ninguno de caer en manos de los bandidos y ser degollado por el famoso Vargas.

Indicate all the verbs that are in the subjunctive mode,—*guste, olvide, salga*,—and apply the principle regulating each. Give the imperative in the *familiar* form, and change it into the imperative with the *polite* form. Give all those in the *polite* form, and change them to the *familiar* form, affirmative and negative, with and without a pronoun. As: *haz, házlo, no hagas, no lo hagas; haga V., hágalo V., no haga V., no lo haga V.*

1. The treaty of the United States with Spain was signed at (*en*) St. Lawrence, that is, at the Escorial, near Madrid, by the famous Manuel Godoy, called [the] Prince of the Peace, and Thomas Pinckney on (*de*) [the] part of the United States, the twenty-seventh of October,\* (of) one thousand seven hundred [and] ninety-five. 2. The

<sup>3</sup> Will make those that remain before the train starts very long. <sup>4</sup> The object comes first for *emphasis*, and is repeated in a pronoun substitute (*lo*) superfluous in English. Unemphatic is: *Puede V. emp. ese tiempo en.* \* 675.

king, Charles [the] Fourth,\* ratified it at the palace of Aranjuez, April 25, 1796, and George (*Forge*) Washington ratified the same by-the (*de*) advice and with the consent of the Senate, at (*en*) Philadelphia, March 7, 1796, Timothy<sup>5</sup> Pickering<sup>6</sup> being<sup>1</sup> then<sup>2</sup> Secretary of State.<sup>4</sup> 3. The Treaty, with all its documents, was then<sup>2</sup> printed<sup>1</sup> (*se imprimió*) at Madrid in a small 4to volume of fifty pages, with this title: Treaty | of Friendship, Limits and Navigation | concluded | between the King our Lord | and the United States of America: | Signed at (*en*) St. Lawrence the Royal | October 27th † (of) 1795. | By (*de*) order of the King. | Madrid, in the Royal Press, | year of 1796. 4. This volume is (*está*) in two columns, the one for the Spanish text and the other for the English, with the powers (*poderes*) and ratifications at-the end, running across the page (*á renglon seguido*), and with two engraved plans of passports or sailing patents (*patentes de mar*). The draft of the treaty is said to have been made (was made, as it is said,) by the celebrated Count de Aranda, one of Spain's ablest statesmen.

### Tema Trigésimo-Nono.

#### ESCENA DÉCIMA-CUARTA — CONTINUACION.

*Desconocido.* ¿Vargas?

*La Condesa.* Sí, un bandido que ha sido el terror de este país, y que me ha hecho pasar noches terribles. Sólo con nombrarle me echo á<sup>1</sup> temblar como una azogada.<sup>2</sup>

*Descon.* (Voy á vengarme de tí.) En efecto, ahora recuerdo que ayer arrestaron á ese célebre bandido y que hoy le he visto en el camino de hierro.

*La Cond.* Gracias á Dios que nos vemos libres de ese hombre.

*Descon.* No tan libres como V. cree.

*La Cond.* ¿Cómo! Pues ¿qué ha sucedido?

*Descon.* Hombre de una destreza y de una fuerza increíbles, ha logrado romper los hierros que le aprisionaban; ha herido á cuatro guardias que le custodiaban, y echó á correr por esos<sup>3</sup> campos sin que fuera<sup>4</sup> posible darle alcance.

\* 674. † *d veinte y siete de O.* <sup>1</sup> *echarse á, to begin*; "at the bare mention of his name I begin to." <sup>2</sup> An *azogado* (from *azogue*, *quicksilver*) is one who has destroyed his nervous system by labor in the quicksilver mines. We say, "to tremble like a leaf." <sup>3</sup> 265, translate "the open fields." <sup>4</sup> 710.



*La Cond.* ¡Eso es horrible! Van á empezar otra vez los robos y los crímenes, y yo vuelvo á mis noches de insomnio y de angustia. Dicen que ese hombre es un mónstruo de fealdad.

*Descon.* Se exagēra mucho, señora.

*La Cond.* ¿V. lo conoce? Ahora recuerdo que acaba V. de decir que esta mañana . . .

*Descon.* No es tan feo como se asegura. Figúrese V. el color de mis cabellos.

*La Cond.* ¿Es posible?

*Descon.* Frente igual á la mía.

*La Cond.* ¿De véras?

*Descon.* La nariz, la boca y la barba de una semejanza perfecta.

*La Cond.* Pero ¡eso es raro! ¿Y su estatura? (inquieta.)

*Descon.* Como la mía; ni más alta ni más baja.

*La Cond.* Y ¿qué edad representa?

*Descon.* La misma que yo.

*La Cond.* ¡Dios mio! Empiezo á sospechar. (El jóven cierra por dentro todas las puertás y se guarda<sup>5</sup> las llaves en el bolsillo.) ¿Qué está V. haciendo, caballero?

*Descon.* Señora, el famoso bandido que tanto la aterrera, soy yo.

*La Cond.* ¡Socor . . . !<sup>6</sup>

*Descon.* No dé V. un solo grito si quiere V. conservar la vida.

*La Cond.* ¡Estoy perdida!

*Descon.* V. misma me ha hecho entrar en su casa y por fuerza.

*La Cond.* ¿Qué quiere V.? ¿Dinero? Le daré todo el que me pida.

*Descon.* ¿Por quién me toma V.? por un vidriero al principio, y ahora por un cambiante de monedas!

*La Cond.* ¡Quién lo creyéra! Un hombre que me parecía de modales tan distinguidos!

1. The stranger made her tremble, feigning himself [to be] the robber of whom<sup>1</sup> the morning<sup>4</sup> paper<sup>3</sup> spoke.<sup>2</sup> 2. It would seem to be a very ungallant vengeance to take on a lady,\* but we must remember that her behavior toward a stranger had been quite extraordinary. 3. The lady began to cry (to the) help, but the

<sup>5</sup> *guardar*, to keep, also to lay aside, as a book; here to put (away). For the *se*, see §§ 231 and 253. <sup>6</sup> ¡Socorro! help! \* It seems little gallant to avenge one's self thus of a lady, but one must, etc.

pretended robber, seeing the gravity of the situation, sought to (*procurar*) moderate the terror of his victim [by] giving her an account of his life. 4. Knowing the character of (the) ladies, he sought to excite her sympathy even in [the] midst of the danger that seemed to surround her. 5. While<sup>2</sup> the narration<sup>4</sup> went-on,<sup>2</sup> however,<sup>1</sup> the lady found means to (*para*) notify the servants of her position. 6. The-latter<sup>3</sup> having<sup>1</sup> come<sup>2</sup> to (*en*) her aid, the stranger was obliged to acknowledge that he was acting a farce. 7. The declaration of his attachment to the lady under the circumstances does not add to the interest of the play in our opinion. 8. It is, however, very popular in [a] certain class of Spanish theatres, which are called summer or café theatres (631, *b*).

**Tema Cuadragésimo.**

**ESCENA DÉCIMA-CUARTA — CONTINUACION.**

*Descon.* Es que<sup>1</sup> yo no soy bandido por instinto, sino por un raptó de amorosa desesperacion.

*La Cond.* (Un poco más tranquila.) ¡Es posible!

*Descon.* Sí, señora Condesa. No he hecho más que vengarme. El amor únicamente es lo que me convirtió<sup>2</sup> en un hombre criminal.

*La Cond.* (Para ganar tiempo.) Debe ser esa una historia romántica y terrible á la vez.

*Descon.* Sí, señora, romántica y terrible.

*La Cond.* Tengo miedo de estar sola con V., y sin embargo quisiera saberla.

*Descon.* Yo adoraba con delirio en mi país á la hija de un rico labrador. (La Condesa se sienta junto á la mesa y escribe sin ser vista algunas palabras en un pedazo de papel, mientras sigue la relacion.)

*La Cond.* Que sería hermosa sin duda.

*Descon.* Hermosa como un ángel de la gloria. Diría que era la más bella de todas las mujeres, si no hubiera tenido la fortuna de conocer á V.

*La Cond.* (Esto es lo que se llama un bandido bien educado. Yo había oído decir que había algunos muy finos, pero no en el campo).

<sup>1</sup> 188, *Rem.*

<sup>2</sup> convertir, 502.

*Descon.* Nos amábamos con frenesí. Pues bien, señora, aquella niña, á quien yo creía un modelo de pureza, me proporcionó el más cruel de los desengaños.

(La Condesa se había aproximado todo lo posible á la puerta, y, fingiendo que se le cayó el pañuelo, pasó por la rendija el papel donde había escrito.)

#### ESCENA DÉCIMA-QUINTA.

*Anselmo.* (por fuera.) Señora, señora ¿llamaba V.?

*Descon.* (á la Cond.) Puede V. decir lo que le plazca.<sup>3</sup> Ya sabe V. que estoy armado.

*La Cond.* (al criado, con voz conmovida.) Anselmo ¿ha llegado el tren?

*Ans.* Sí, señora.

*La Cond.* ¿Y la familia que esperaba?

*Ans.* No ha venido. El tren llegó con dos horas de retraso á causa del mal estado de los caminos. La tormenta ha descargado sobre el rio y ha convertido en un lago la campiña.

*Descon.* (aparte.) ¡Demonio! Yo me marchó. Además, voy vengado, y el susto ha sido de primera clase. (A la Condesa.) Señora, con permiso de V., me retiro, y ahora estoy seguro que no me detendrá más tiempo á su lado. Pero ¿qué ruido es ese? (Dan fuertes golpes en la puerta.)

*Ans.* (desde fuera.) Señora, valor, aquí estamos para librarla de ese infame bandido. Somos seis hombres y traemos cada uno nuestra escopeta.

*La Cond.* (al Descon.) Ese ruido significa que mis criados van á acabar con V., dentro de pocos momentos, si se atreve á dar un solo paso.

*Descon.* (aparte.) Pues me he metido en buen zipizape. No hay más remedio que confesar la verdad y salir de este atolladero. (Alto, á la Condesa) Sepa V., señora Condesa, que todo ha sido una farsa. V. me tomó como recurso contra la lluvia y contra el fastidio; yo lo comprendí, y quise darla un susto fingiéndome ese bandido que tanto la aterra.

*La Cond.* ¡Cómo!

*Descon.* Sí; pertenezco á una de las familias más nobles de

Andalucía, y soy sobrino de la marquesa de la Peña, que hoy debía salir de Sevilla para ir á la quinta de la Condesa de Alvarado, con quien tiene el proyecto de casarme.

*La Cond.* Conque V. . . . (La puerta cede al fin á los golpes, y entra Anselmo con cinco criados, todos armados de escopetas.)

1. There are rail-ways over all Spain. 2. One goes from the French frontier on the north to Cadiz in the extreme south. 3. This road gives-off lateral branches that lead to Lisbon and Oporto in Portugal, and on the other hand to Malaga, Carthagená, and Valencia along (*por*) the eastern coast. 4. Besides, there are roads from Madrid to Barcelona via (*por via de*) Saragossa, and to the north-west as-far-as-to Bilbao and Santander. 5. These are the great lines; there are many short [ones] which connect important places with the capital. 6. The Spanish language is spoken to-day by more people than any other language in western Europe, except the English. 7. In a few years the demands of commerce will make it the<sup>1</sup> only<sup>2</sup> absolutely<sup>3</sup> indispensable<sup>4</sup> foreign<sup>5</sup> language<sup>6</sup> in (*de*) this country. 8. It is spoken over the whole of Central and South America (*por toda la A. del Centro y del Sur*), but with [a] certain local type like that which (*al que*) distinguishes the Anglo-American from the Englishman. 9. Still the educated of both countries may be said\* to have a common speech and type. 10. Many distinguished Mexicans, Chilians, *et cetera*, have contributed by (*con*) their writings to (the) Spanish literature, and have become (*hacerse*) members of the various Academies of the mother-country.

**Tema Cuadragésimo-Primo.**

ESCENA DÉCIMA-SEXTA.

*Anselmo.* (al Desconocido.) Dáte preso,<sup>1</sup> tunante, ahora las vas á pagar<sup>2</sup> todas juntas.

*La Cond.* ¡Eh, detenéos<sup>3</sup>! Y tú, Anselmo, respecta la persona de este caballero como si fuese la mia propia.

*Ans.* Pero, entónces ¿qué significa el papel que me dió V. por debajo<sup>4</sup> de la puerta?

\* Still, it may be said that the educated of both countries have, etc.

<sup>1</sup> Lit., give yourself up as a prisoner; that is, "you are my prisoner." <sup>2</sup> Often render *ir á* by the future of the following verb: "you'll pay now for the whole score." <sup>3</sup> 209, 404. <sup>4</sup> 649, *Rem.*

*La Cond.* Calla; luego lo sabrás todo.

*Descon.* Conque ¿V. dió aviso sin que<sup>5</sup> yo lo notara?

*La Cond.* Creo que V. en mi lugar hubiera hecho lo mismo. El lance no ha sido para ménos.<sup>6</sup> Pero despues he procurado enmendar mi error.

*Descon.* ¡Oh, sí! mil gracias. Mi nombre es Cárlos Velazquez, y ofrezco á V. mi mano y mi corazon que sabrá amarla siempre.

*Ans.* (aparte.) Me parece que esto va á acabar en tragédia, es decir, en boda.

*La Cond.* Pero ¿y esa señora con quien desêa casarle<sup>7</sup> la marquesa de la Peña?

*Cárlos.* Renuncio á ella para siempre.

*La Cond.* Entónces, caballero, siento no poder dar á V. mi mano, porque V. mismo acaba de negarse á ello.<sup>8</sup>

*Cárlos.* ¡Yo negarme<sup>9</sup>! . . . No comprendo.

*La Cond.* Está V. en casa de la Condesa de Alvarado.

*Cárlos.* (con alegría.) ¡Será posible! ¡Ah! soy feliz, y voy á obedecer ciegamente las órdenes de mi tia.

*Ans.* (¡Caramba! esto va por la posta.<sup>10</sup> Es preciso ponerse bien con este hombre.) Caballero, V. dispense si hace poco<sup>11</sup> me tomé la libertad de poner<sup>12</sup> la mano . . .

*Cárlos.* Estás perdonado.

#### ESCENA ÚLTIMA.

*Victorina.* ¿Está ya preso?

*Anselmo.* Sí, preso, y para toda su vida el infeliz.

*La Condesa.* (al público.)

En la pasada lluvia

Tendí mis redes,

Y pesqué este ingeniero

Que ofrezco á ustedes.

Ya importa un bledo<sup>13</sup>

<sup>5</sup> Lit., *without that I should note it*, i.e., "without my observing it." <sup>6</sup> *The occasion demanded it*; lit., "the critical occasion was not for less." <sup>7</sup> *le* = *you*.

<sup>8</sup> *ello* refers to the *idea*, — not to the mere word *mano*, which is fem. <sup>9</sup> 731.

<sup>10</sup> *ir por la posta*, to go "by express," as we say. <sup>11</sup> *hace poco*, just now, a little while ago. <sup>12</sup> to lay my hands (on you). <sup>13</sup> *Bledo*: Low Lat. *bledum*,

Germ. *Blatt*, Fr. *blé*: a grain, a whit. A negative is understood with the verb: "I don't care a whit now, whether" (*que*).

Que el barómetro marque  
 Bueno ó mal tiempo.  
 Ayer, al verme sola,  
 Aquí moría . . .  
 Y hoy puede<sup>14</sup> qué me estorbe  
 La compañía.  
 Sí . . . yo soy franca,  
 Y con franqueza pido  
 Una palmada.<sup>15</sup>

1. He shuts the door; shut the door (*fam.* and *pol.*). 2. He opens the door; open the door. 3. He goes up stairs; go up stairs (*la escalera*). 4. He goes down stairs; go down stairs. 5. He leaves him; leave him; don't leave him. 6. He calls them; call them; don't call them. 7. Do not speak to me. 8. Let no one come in (*que nadie pase* or *entre*). 9. Let no one see me. 10. Let there be no one at the door. 11. Let it not be so. 12. Let us go (*vamos*); let us go up; let us go down. 13. Let us not listen to him. 14. Let us give (to)-the poor<sup>2</sup> [man] something.<sup>1</sup> 15. Let us not give him anything (nothing). 16. Pardon, brother! 17. May (*que*) God relieve you. 18. Farewell, cavalier (*Go with God, cavalier*). 19. To (*para*) deny an alms in Spain, they say to the beggar: "Pardon, brother," or "God protect you" (*Dios le ampare*), or both (things). 20. The beggar answers cheerfully, "Go, your worships, with God; another time it will be" (*otra vez será*).

---

<sup>14</sup> *puede que*, popular for *puede ser que*, impersonal. <sup>15</sup> The usual ending of Spanish plays, the "*vos plaudite*" of the ancients. Observe that in poetry similar vowels meeting one another are absorbed in pronunciation; vowels that are not similar are diphthongized, or even uttered in triphthongs.

# SPANISH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.



## A.

**Á**, to, at, in, within, at — off.  
**Abalórios**, M. PL., glass beads.  
**Abandonār**, to forsake, to leave.  
**Abrir**, to open, § 561.  
**Absolutamente**, absolutely; *quiere a.*, is determined to.  
**Absoluto**, a, absolute.  
**Aburrir**, to weary, to wear out.  
**Abusār**, to abuse, foll. by *de*, § 757.  
**Abuso**, M., abuse, outrage.  
**Acabār**, to bring to an end, to finish, to close; to get through; *a. con*, to put an end to, to make an end of; *a. de*, to finish (doing something); to have just, p. 422.  
**Accionista**, M., shareholder.  
**Acêite**, M., (olive) oil.  
**Acordarse**, to remember, foll. by *de*, § 474.  
**Actitud**, F., attitude; *en a. de*, in a position for.  
**Acto**, M., act.  
**Acudid** — *acudir*.  
**Acudir**, to apply (*d*, to).  
**Acuerdo(me)** — *acordarse*.  
**Además**, besides, furthermore.  
**Adiós**, good bye.  
**Adorār**, to be in love with, to adore.  
**Adornado**, a, adorned (*de*, with).  
**Adulaciōn**, F., flattery.  
**Afêite**, M., cosmetic.  
**Aflige** — *afligir*.

**Afligido**, a, sorrowful.  
**Afligir**, to grieve.  
**Agosto**, M., August.  
**Agradār**, to please, to like; used same as *gustar*, p. 420.  
**Agradecēr**, to thank, §§ 374, 754.  
**Agradêzco** — *agradecer*.  
**Água**, F., water; *las ā* — *s*, rain; inundation.  
**Aguacero**, M., shower.  
**Águeda**, F., Agathe or Agatha.  
**Agüero**, M., augury, omen.  
**Águila**, F., eagle, § 81.  
**Ahōra**, now, at present.  
**Ahorrar**, to lay up, to save.  
**Áire**, M., air, atmosphere.  
**Airōso**, a, successful, triumphant.  
**Ajēno**, a, another's, of others; foreign (*de*, to).  
**Ala**, F., wing; rim, § 81.  
**Alancēa** — *alancear*.  
**Alanceār**, to dart, to spear.  
**Alancēe** — *alancear*.  
**Alavés**, a, Alavese, of Álava.  
**Albaricōque**, M., apricot.  
**Albedrío**, M., will (*arbitrium*).  
**Albêrgue**, M., refuge.  
**Albricias**, F. PL., present for bringing good news.  
**Álbum**, M., album, sketching-book.  
**Alcalaīno**, a, of Alcalá.  
**Alcānce**, M., range; *dar a.*, to come up to, to reach.  
**Alcornōque**, M., cork-tree.

**Alcūza**, F., cruet, oil-jar.  
**Alegrārse**, to rejoice, to be glad (*de*, at, of).  
**Alegria**, F., joy, delight; *¡qué a.!* how glad I am!  
**Alemān**, a, German.  
**Alfilēr**, M., pin; (two and three penny) nail, (four and six cent) nail.  
**Algūno**, a, some, any; PL., some, a few.  
**Alhāja**, F., jewel.  
**Alicantino**, a, of Alicante.  
**Almenāra**, F., beacon.  
**Almūd**, M., measure.  
**Alquīla**, F., sign (which indicates that a hack is not engaged).  
**Alrededōr**, adv., around; *a. de*, prep., around; *los a — es*, M. PL., the environs, outskirts.  
**Alto**, a, high, tall.  
**Allá**, thither, there (motion).  
**Allí**, there (rest).  
**Ama**, F., lady or mistress of a house (with respect of the servants); nurse, § 81.  
**Amabilidad**, F., kindness.  
**Amapōla**, F., poppy.  
**Amār**, to love.  
**Amāra**, from *amar*.  
**Ambigū**, M., rotunda.  
**Ambíguo**, a, ambiguous.  
**Amīga**, F., friend (lady).  
**Amīgo**, M., friend.  
**Amistād**, F., friendship.  
**Amo**, M., the gentleman or master of a house.  
**Amōr**, M., love.  
**Amorōso**, a, pertaining to love, on account of love.  
**Amparārse**, to seek shelter.

**Ámplio**, a, full, ample.  
**Andalucía**, F., Andalusia (southern Spain).  
**Andalūz**, a, Andalusian.  
**Andār**, to go, to walk (indefinite); *el a.*, the going, walking, § 528.  
**Andēn**, M., platform, inside of a railway station.  
**Ángel**, M., angel; *a. de la gloria*, an angel in paradise.  
**Angūstia**, F., anguish, suffering.  
**Ánima**, F., (disembodied) soul, § 81.  
**Anōche**, last night.  
**Ansiedad**, F., anxiety; *con tanta a.*, so anxiously.  
**Antecesōr**, M., predecessor.  
**Ántes**, adv., before, formerly; *a. de*, prep., before; *a. que*, conj., before (with subj.).  
**Antigüedad**, F., antiquity.  
**Antiguo**, a, old, ancient.  
**Añicos**, M. PL., fragments; *hecho a.*, broken into fragments.  
**Año**, M., year.  
**Aparecēr**, to appear, to present one's self, § 374.  
**Aprisionār**, to bind, to hold captive.  
**Aprovechār**, to take advantage of, to avail one's self of.  
**Aproximārse**, to approach, to draw near.  
**Aquēl**, la, lo, that, that one, yonder.  
**Aquí**, here.  
**Aragonés**, a, Aragonese.  
**Árbol**, M., tree.  
**Arbolēda**, F., row of trees; trees (coll.).  
**Ardēr**, to burn.  
**Ardid**, M., cunning.  
**Ardiēdo**, aglow, burning.  
**Argüir**, to argue, § 526.



**Argūyo** — *argüir*.

**Arma**, F., arm, weapon; branch of military service, § 81.

**Armādo**, a, armed.

**Armasōn**, M., frame, skeleton (without the cover).

**Arte**, M. and F., art, §§ 81, 94, 6.

**Arreglār**, to arrange, to "fix," to put in order.

**Arrepentido**, a, repentant.

**Arrestār**, to arrest.

**Arriba**, up, above, up-stairs.

**Arrojār**, to throw, to throw away or down.

**Arruinādo**, a, in ruins.

**Asegurār**, to assure, to assert; *asegura*, it is asserted.

**Asiēto**, M., seat, chair.

**Aspēcto**, M., appearance.

**Asturiāno**, a, Asturian.

**Asustār**, to frighten, to scare; to be dreadful.

**Atājo**, M., short-cut (of roads).

**Atāque**, M., attack.

**Ataūd**, M., casket, coffin.

**Aterrār**, to terrify, to frighten; *reg. aterro, aterras*, etc.

**Atolladēro**, M., bog, slough, mire; scrape, difficulty.

**Atrapār**, to catch.

**Atrevērse**, to dare, to presume, foll. by *d*.

**Atrevīdo**, a, bold; *es a.*, it is a piece of effrontery.

**Auditōrio**, M., audience.

**Āula**, F., public hall; university; court.

**Āun**, even.

**Āun**, yet, still.

**Āunque**, although.

**Aureo**, a, golden.

**Auto**, M., judicial indictment; order for commitment; trial.

**Autōr**, M., author.

**Avanzār**, to advance, to come forward.

**Ave María Purísima**! bless me!

**Avergonzādo**, a, abashed, ashamed.

**Averigua** — *averiguar*.

**Averiguār**, to find out.

**Averigüe** — *averiguar*.

**Averiguo** — *averiguar*.

**Aviār**, to arrange, to put in order, to prepare.

**Avie** — *aviar*.

**Avīso**, M., notice; *dar a.*, to notify, to give an alarm.

**Ayēr**, yesterday.

**Ayudār**, to aid, to help.

**Azogādo**, a, (a man or woman whose nervous system has been destroyed by work in a quick-silver mine); *temblar como un a.*, to tremble like a leaf.

**Azōte**, M., scourge, terror.

**Azotēa**, F., flat roof of southern houses, the terrace.

**Azucēna**, F., white lily.

**Azūl**, blue.

## B.

**Bacia**, F., barber's basin.

**Bailarīn**, a, dancer, ballet girl.

**Bāile**, M., dance; ball.

**Bajār**, to go down, to come down (*d* with infinitive).

**Bajo**, a, low, short.

**Baladī**, of no value.

**Balīdo**, M., bleating of sheep.

**Bandīdo**, M., robber, marauder.

**Baño**, M., bath.

**Barāja**, F., pack of cards.

**Barba**, F., chin.  
**Barómetro**, M., barometer.  
**Barón**, M., baron.  
**Barro**, M., clay, mud; *lleno de b.*, muddy.  
**Bata**, F., morning-gown.  
**Batalla**, F., battle, engagement.  
**Baúl**, M., trunk, box.  
**Bautismo**, M., baptism.  
**Bêbe** — *beber*.  
**Bebër**, to drink.  
**Bello**, a, fair, beautiful.  
**Besâr**, to kiss; *besarle á uno la mano*, to salute any one.  
**Biên**, adv., well, very.  
**Biên**, M., good, blessing; PL., goods, property.  
**Bilbaíno**, a, of Bilbao.  
**Bledo**, M., a blade of corn; *me importa un b.*, I don't care a straw.  
**Boca**, F., mouth, lips.  
**Boda**, F., marriage, wedding.  
**Bolsillo**, M., pocket.  
**Bondād**, F., goodness, kindness; *tener la b. de*, to be so good as to.  
**Bonito**, a, pretty.  
**Boreguí**, M., buskin.  
**Bota**, F., wine-bag.  
**Bribón**, M., rascal.  
**Brillānte**, brilliant, magnificent.  
**Bruscamente**, suddenly.  
**Buêno**, a, good, well.  
**Bulto**, M., bundle, package, lay-figure.  
**Burla**, F., mockery, jest.  
**Burra**, F., she-ass.  
**Busca**, F., search, guest.  
**Buscār**, to look for, to seek, to search; *ir á b.*, to go after or for; *enviar á b.*, to send for.  
**Busto**, M., bust.

C.

**Caballería**, F., cavalry.  
**Caballêro**, M., gentleman; (in direct address) sir.  
**Caballerôsamente**, adv., politely, like a well bred gentleman.  
**Cabellêra**, F., head of hair.  
**Cabêllos**, M. PL., the hair of the head.  
**Cachorro**, M., whelp, cub.  
**Cada**, each, every.  
**Cadêna**, F., chain; *c. de hierro*, iron chain.  
**Cāe** — *caer*.  
**Caër**, to fall, § 544.  
**Caërse**, to fall down; *se le cae el pañuelo*, her handkerchief falls, she has let her handkerchief fall.  
**Caí** — *caer*.  
**Caída**, F., fall.  
**Cāigo** — *caer*.  
**Caldo**, M., broth.  
**Calla**! hush! be still! hold! stop!  
**Callār**, to keep silent.  
**Calle**, F., street.  
**Callêja**, F., lane.  
**Cambiānte**, M., changer; *c. de monedas*, money changer.  
**Camino**, M., road, way; *ponerse en c.*, to set out, to go.  
**Campanário**, M., church tower, belfry, spire.  
**Campanilla**, F., door-bell, service bell.  
**Campaña**, F., campaign.  
**Campiña**, F., country (around a city or village).  
**Campo**, M., field; *esos campos*, the open fields.  
**Capturār**, to take captive, to catch.  
**Carāmba**, zounds!

**Caridad**, F., charity, love.  
**Cárlas**, Charles.  
**Cartaginés**, a, Carthaginian.  
**Casa**, F., house.  
**Casār**, to marry any one (to, *con*).  
**Casārse**, to marry, to get married.  
**Cási**, almost.  
**Caso**, M., case; *hacer c. de*, to take notice, to pay attention (*de*, to).  
**Castellāno**, a, Castilian.  
**Catalān**, a, Catalanian.  
**Catarāta**, F., cataract, deluge.  
**Caudāl**, M., capital.  
**Caudalōso**, a, swift-flowing (of a river); of abundant means.  
**Cāusa**, F., cause; *d c. de*, on account of.  
**Caza**, F., shooting; game.  
**Cedēr**, to give way, to yield.  
**Célebre**, celebrated, famous.  
**Cena**, F., supper.  
**Ceñir**, to gird on.  
**Cepillito**, M., little brush (dim. of *cepillo*).  
**Cerca**, adv., near; *c. de*, prep., near, close to, by.  
**Cerrār**, to shut, to shut up; to lock (with a key).  
**Cesār**, to cease, to stop; *la lluvia ha cesado*, it has stopped raining.  
**Ciēlo**, M., sky, heaven.  
**Ciēn** — *ciento*.  
**Ciēncia**, F., science, knowledge.  
**Ciento**, one hundred (before noun *cien*).  
**Cierto**, a, sure, certain; a certain; *d c — a distancia*, at a certain distance, some distance off; *por c — o*, surely, indeed.  
**Cierra** — *cerrar*.  
**Cincuēta**, fifty.

**Cita**, F., summons, engagement, citation.  
**Ciudad**, F., town, city.  
**Ciudadāno**, M., citizen.  
**Civil**, civil.  
**Clāramente**, clearly.  
**Claro**, a, clear, light; *es c.*, of course.  
**Clase**, F., class; *de primera c.*, a first-class one.  
**Coche**, M., carriage, car; *en c.*, by carriage.  
**Codicia**, F., greed, covetousness.  
**Cōima**, F., hag.  
**Colār**, to strain; to slip through, to slip in, § 476.  
**Colección**, F., collection.  
**Colocār**, to set, to place; *c. bien*, to adjust properly.  
**Colocārse**, to place one's self, to take one's place, § 371.  
**Colōr**, M., color.  
**Comēd** — *comer*.  
**Comēdia**, F., a play.  
**Comenzār**, to begin, foll. by *d* with an infinitive, § 469.  
**Comēr**, to eat, to dine.  
**Comíamos** — *comer*.  
**Comida**, F., dinner, meal.  
**Comiēnza** — *comenzar*.  
**Como**, as, since, like.  
**Cómo**, how? how!  
**Compañía**, F., company; *hacerle d uno c.*, to keep one company.  
**Complēto**, a, complete, full.  
**Cómplice**, M., accomplice.  
**Componēr**, to repair, to mend, § 553.  
**Comprendēr**, to understand.  
**Con**, with.  
**Conde**, M., earl.  
**Condēsa**, F., countess.

**Condūcta**, F., behavior.  
**Confesār**, to confess, to acknowledge, § 461.  
**Confīado**, a, trusting, relying.  
**Confūso**, a, confused, confounded.  
**Connīgo**, with me [*mecum*].  
**Conmovīdo**, a, pitiful.  
**Conocēr**, to be acquainted with, to become acquainted with, to know, to make one's acquaintance, § 374.  
**Conōzco** — *conocer*.  
**Cōnque** or **con que**, so then.  
**Conquēnse**, of Cuenca.  
**Conseguīdo**, a, succeeded in; *se ha c.*, they have s. in (w. inf.).  
**Conseguīr**, to attain, to succeed in, § 516.  
**Consējo**, M., counsel, advice.  
**Consentīr**, to consent, § 499.  
**Conservār**, to preserve.  
**Consiente** — *consentir*.  
**Consiga** — *conseguir*.  
**Consigo** — *conseguir*.  
**Consigo**, with him (her, them, you) [*secum*].  
**Consistīr**, to consist (*en*, of).  
**Consolār**, to comfort, § 476.  
**Consonānte**, F., consonant.  
**Construīr**, to construct; to dig (a trench); *se constrūyen*, are constructed, § 522.  
**Constrūyen** — *construir*.  
**Consuēla** — *consolar*.  
**Contento**, a, satisfied, pleased.  
**Contigo**, with thee, with you [*tecum*].  
**Continúa** — *continuar*.  
**Continuaciōn**, F., continuation, continued, of a story.  
**Continuār**, to continue, to go on.  
**Contínuo**, a, continuous.

**Contraído**, a, contracted, drawn up, distorted.  
**Contrariedad**, F., disappointment, unfortunate circumstance.  
**Contrārio**, a, contrary; *al c.*, on the contrary.  
**Convertīr**, to convert, to transform, § 502.  
**Convirtiō** — *convertir*.  
**Copiār** (cōpio, as, a), to copy.  
**Corazōn**, M., heart, valor; *de todo c.*, with all one's heart; (with verb *sentir*) deeply.  
**Cordobēs**, a, Cordovese, of Córdoba.  
**Cordōn**, M., cord; *c. de la campanilla*, bell-pull.  
**Coro**, M., choir.  
**Corōna**, F., crown.  
**Corpulento**, a, immense, of a large trunk (as a cork-tree).  
**Corredōr**, M., runner, agent.  
**Corrēr**, to run, to be quick.  
**Corriēdo** — *correr*.  
**Corro**, M., group, knot.  
**Córtes**, F. PL., the Spanish Parliament.  
**Cortīna**, F., curtain.  
**Cosa**, F., thing; *no es c. de*, there is no question of.  
**Cosīta**, F., little thing, trifle.  
**Costār**, to cost, § 473.  
**Costūmbre**, F., custom, habit.  
**Crēe** — *creer*.  
**Creēr**, to believe, to think, to suppose; to be assured, to rest assured, § 549, b.  
**Cref** — *creer*.  
**Crefa** — *creer*.  
**Creído**, a, believed.  
**Creīmos** — *creer*.  
**Creyēra** — *creer*.

**Criãda**, F., maid, servant.  
**Criado**, M., servant.  
**Crímen**, M., crime.  
**Criminal**, adj., criminal; *hombre c.*, criminal.  
**Cristal**, M., window-pane, pane of glass.  
**Cruel**, cruel.  
**Cuál**, which? what?  
**Cualquiêra**, any one, any.  
**Cuando**, when, since; *de c.*, since the time when.  
**Cuándo**, when?  
**Cuantiôso**, a, large, copious.  
**Cuanto**, a, as much, as many.  
**Cuánto**, a, how much? how many?  
**Cuarênta**, forty.  
**Cuâsi** or **casi**, almost.  
**Cuatro**, four.  
**Cubiêrto**, a, covered (*de*, with).  
**Cubo**, M., pail.  
**Cuchillo**, M., (table) knife.  
**Cuela** — *colar*.  
**Cuero**, M., leather.  
**Cuestiôn**, F., question, matter.  
**Cuidado**, M., care.  
**Cuidadôso**, a, careful.  
**Cuita**, F., woe.  
**Cuota**, F., share, scot.  
**Curiosidad**, F., curiosity.  
**Curiôso**, a, inquisitive; neat.  
**Custodiâr**, to guard, to accompany, as a guard.

## CH.

**Chico**, a, little; a little boy or girl.  
**Chisme**, M., implement, tool, thing.  
**Chorro**, M., stream of water.  
**Chucho**, M., kind of owl.  
**Chulo**, M., boy of the ring, bull-fighter.

**Chusma**, F., crowd, rabble.

## D.

**Daño**, M., injury, harm.  
**Dar**, to give; to hit, to strike; to take, § 543.  
**Dardo**, M., dart.  
**Dê** — *dar*.  
**Debajo de**, under, beneath; *por d. de*, (along) under.  
**Debêr**, to owe; to be to; ought, must.  
**Decidido**, a, decided, resolved (*d.* to).  
**Decir**, to say, to tell; to mean; *digo que*, I mean that; *es d.*, that is to say, § 539.  
**Dedo**, M., finger, toe.  
**Defensa**, F., defense.  
**Definir**, to define, to explain; *vamos d d.*, let us explain.  
**Degollado**, a, beheaded; *ser d.*, to be beheaded, to have one's throat cut [*gola*].  
**Dejâr**, to leave; *d. de*, to leave off, to cease.  
**Delêite**, M., joy, pleasure.  
**Deliciôso**, a, delightful.  
**Delirio**, M., delirium; *con d.*, wildly, madly, passionately.  
**Demônio**, heavens!  
**Dentro de**, within; *por d.*, on the inside.  
**Derecha**, F., right (hand); *d la d.*, to the right, on the right.  
**Desâgüe**, M., drainage.  
**Desahûcio**, M., ejection.  
**Desaparecêr**, to disappear.  
**Desbordamiênto**, overflowing, inundation.  
**Descanso**, M., rest; *sin d.*, without cessation, incessantly.

**Descargār**, to fall with fury (*sobre*, upon), § 371.

**Descolgār**, to take down (anything suspended), § 483.

**Desconocido**, a, unknown; a stranger.

**Descripciōn**, F., description.

**Descuēlga** — *descolgar*.

**Desde**, from, since; *d.* — *hasta* or *d.* from — to; *d. alli*, from there; *d. aquí*, from here, hence.

**Desdicha**, F., misfortune.

**Deseār** (*desēo*, *as*, *a*), to desire, to wish.

**Desempeñār**, to discharge; to act, to play.

**Desengāño**, M., disillusion, disenchantment; *proporcionārle d uno un d.*, to undeceive one.

**Desesperaciōn**, F., despair, desperation; *amorosa d.*, desperation on account of love.

**Desesperado**, a, in despair.

**Desesperār**, to put in despair, discourage.

**Desgraciado**, a, unfortunate, lamentable.

**Dealiz**, M., delinquency, slip.

**Despedir**, to dismiss, § 512.

**Despejado**, a, clear, free from clouds or obstacles.

**Despide** — *despedir*.

**Despojar**, to despoil, to strip, to rob.

**Despuēs**, afterward, subsequently; *despuēs de*, prep., after; *despuēs que*, conj., after.

**Destacamēto**, M., detachment.

**Destrēza**, F., dexterity, cunning, shrewdness.

**Destrozār**, to break up; to carry away, § 371.

**Detendrá** — *detener*.

**Detenēr**, to detain, § 536.

**Detenērse**, to stop, § 536.

**Detrás**, behind; *d. de*, behind, beyond.

**Dêudo**, M., relative.

**Dī** — *decir* and *dar*.

**Dia**, M., day.

**Dibujār**, to sketch, to draw.

**Dibūjo**, M., drawing, sketching.

**Diccionārio**, M., dictionary.

**Dice** — *decir*.

**Dicen** — *decir*.

**Dicho**, a, said, told (*decir*).

**Dichōso**, a, happy, fortunate, blessed.

**Difficil**, difficult; not likely.

**Diga** — *decir*.

**Digo** — *decir*.

**Dijiste** — *decir*.

**Dilūvio**, M., flood, deluge.

**Dinēro**, M., money.

**Diōs**, God; *D. mio*, dear me!

**Diría** — *decir*.

**Dirigirse**, to direct one's self, to proceed (*d.*, toward), § 375.

**Discurso**, M., speech; *d. de siempre*, old story.

**Disfrutār**, to enjoy.

**Disimūlo**, M., simulation; *con d.*, slyly.

**Dispensār**, to excuse; *V. dispēse*, pardon, beg pardon.

**Disponible**, to dispose of, to spare.

**Distancia**, F., distance; *d. cierta d.*, at a certain distance off.

**Distinguido**, a, distinguished, high born (*distingué*, *gué*).

**Distinguir**, to descry; *se distingue*, is visible, § 376.

**Distracciōn**, F., something to occupy one's mind.

**Divertir**, to amuse, § 502.  
**Divierte** — *divertir*.  
**Doble**, double.  
**Doce**, twelve; *las d.*, twelve o'clock, noon, midnight.  
**Doliente**, grieving, pitiful.  
**Dolór**, M., pain, grief.  
**Doncella**, F., lady's maid.  
**Donde**, where; *¿dónde?* where?  
**Droguería**, herb-shop; (Spanish America, drug-store).  
**Ducho**, a, clever, skilful.  
**Duda**, F., doubt; *sin d.*, doubtless, of course; *no hay d.*, there is no doubt of it, it is certain.  
**Duelo**, M., pain; mourning [Fr. *deuil*].  
**Dulzura**, F., sweetness; *con d.*, affably.  
**Durar**, to last.

## E.

**Ébano**, M., ebony.  
**Echār**, to throw, to toss; *echar d* and *echarse d*, to begin to (foll. by an infinitive).  
**Edād**, F., age, number of years.  
**Educación**, F., education; *buena e.*, good manners, courtesy.  
**Educādo**, a, educated; *bien e.*, well bred.  
**Efecto**, M., effect; *en e.*, indeed you have; in fact.  
**Ejecutārse**, to be effected, executed.  
**El que**, he who, the one who.  
**Elefānte**, M., elephant.  
**Elemento**, M., element.  
**Embarcadēro**, M., station, landing.  
**Embargo** — *sin e.*, notwithstanding, still.  
**Embūdo**, M., funnel.

**Emociōn**, F., emotion.  
**Empeñārse**, to persist (*en*, in), to insist (*en*, on).  
**Empezār**, to begin (by, *con*), foll. by *d* with an infinitive, § 469.  
**Empiece** — *empezar*.  
**Empiecen** — *empezar*.  
**Empiezo** — *empezar*.  
**Empíreo**, a, celestial.  
**Empleār**, to employ, to use, to make use of; *se emplea*, is used.  
**En**, in, into, at, on.  
**Encontrār**, to meet with, to find, to come upon casually; refl., to find one's self, to be.  
**Enganchār**, to harness up, to put the horses to the carriage; *haz que engāchen en seguida*, have the carriage made ready at once.  
**Engaña** — *engañar*.  
**Engañār**, to deceive.  
**Engaño** — *engañar*.  
**Engaño**, M., deception.  
**Enjuāgue**, M., finger-bowl.  
**Enjūto**, a, dry, thin.  
**Enmendār**, to amend, to correct, § 459.  
**Enrēdo**, M., plot, snarl.  
**Enseñār**, to teach; to show.  
**Enseñe** — *enseñar*.  
**Entender**, to understand, to hear, § 471.  
**Entiēdes** — *entender*.  
**Entōnces**, then.  
**Entrār**, to go in, to come in, to enter.  
**Entre**, between (two), among (several); *entre sí*, together.  
**Epístola**, F., letter, epistle.  
**Época**, F., period, epoch.  
**Equivocārse**, to be mistaken; *me he equivocado*, I made a mistake.

**Era** — *ser*.

**Erguido**, *a*, erect, with head set back.

**Errör**, *M.*, error, mistake.

**Es** — *ser*.

**Escala**, *F.*, steps, ladder.

**Escalëra**, *F.*, staircase, ladder.

**Escampär**, to stop raining.

**Escapärse**, to get away, to escape.

**Escäpe** — *a escape*, quick; *irse d e.*, to be off.

**Escöna**, *F.*, scene; stage.

**Escocës**, *a*, Scotch, Scotsman (or woman).

**Escopëta**, *F.*, musket.

**Escribir**, to write, § 561.

**Escuälido**, *a*, squalid.

**Escuëla**, *F.*, school.

**Ese, esa, eso**, that (where you are, which you have, or which you say).

**Esabön**, *M.*, link of a chain; flint.

**Eso**, that (thing); *eso es*, that's it.

**Espäcio**, *M.*, space, period; *por e. de*, during, for.

**Espantär**, to scare, to terrify.

**Españöl**, *a*, Spanish, a Spaniard.

**Especiäl**, peculiar, extraordinary.

**Especialmente**, especially.

**Espectäculo**, *M.*, sight, view, display.

**Esperanza**, *F.*, hope, encouragement.

**Esperär**, to expect; to wait, to wait for, to await.

**Espiöcha**, *F.*, pickaxe.

**Estä** — *estar*.

**Estäba** — *estar*.

**Establecër**, to establish, to construct (as a parallel), § 374.

**Estaciön**, *F.*, station, "depot" (*Fr. gare*).

**Estado**, *M.*, state, condition.

**Estär**, to be (incidentally or temporarily); to be in, at home, § 382.

**Estätua**, *F.*, statue; effigy.

**Estatüra**, *F.*, stature, height.

**Este, esta, esto**, this.

**Estóico**, stoic; stoical.

**Estorbär**, to disturb, to be in one's way.

**Estöy** — *estar*.

**Extremëño**. See *Extremëño*.

**Estrépito**, *M.*, loud noise, crash; *con e.*, with a crash, noisily.

**Eterno**, *a*, unceasing, eternal.

**Euro** (*é-u-ro*), *M.*, Eurus.

**Euröpa**, *F.*, Europe.

**Exacto**, *a*, exact.

**Exagerär**, to exaggerate; *se exagerä*, they exaggerate, it is exaggerated.

**Excelënte**, excellent, first rate.

**Exhortär**, to exhort.

**Expedito**, *a*, cleared, put in running order (of trains).

**Experimentädo**, *a*, experienced.

**Extraño**, *a*, strange.

**Extremëño**, *a*, of Extremadüra or Extremadüra.

**Exultär** (seldom), for *exultärse*, to exult.

## F.

**Facciöso**, *M.*, rebel (Carlist).

**Fagïna**, *F.*, fascine (long fagot for military defense).

**Faltär**, to lack, to be wanting; *falta el tiempo*, there is no time (*para*, to, for).

**Falúa**, *F.*, marine launch, felucca.

**Família**, *F.*, family.

**Famoso**, *a*, famous, notorious.



**Farsa**, F., farce.

**Fastidiarse** (*fastidio*, *as*, *a*), to be weary (*de*, *of*).

**Fastidio**, M., ennui.

**Fautör**, M., abettor.

**Fealdad**, F., ugliness, plainness; *mōnstruo de f.*, prodigiously ugly looking.

**Febrero**, M., February.

**Feliz**, happy.

**Feo**, *a*, ugly, plain, "homely."

**Feria**, F., fair.

**Fēudo**, M., fief.

**Figurarse**, to fancy, to imagine, to picture to one's self.

**Fijamente**, without fail.

**Fila**, F., row.

**Fin**, M., end; *al fin*, at last, at length.

**Fingir**, to pretend, to feign, § 375.

**Fino**, *a*, polite, elegant.

**Flamēno**, *a*, Fleming.

**Forma**, F., form; *en f. de*, in the form of.

**Fortūna**, F., good fortune.

**Frāgua**, F., forge.

**Fraguār**, to forge, § 372.

**Fragüe**—*fraguar*.

**Fraile**, M., friar.

**Francēs**, *a*, French, Frenchman or woman.

**Franco**, *a*, frank.

**Franquēza**, F., frankness; *con f.*, frankly, openly.

**Frenesí**, M., frenzy; *con f.*, wildly, passionately.

**Frente**, F., forehead; *f. d.*, in front of, before.

**Fresco**, *a*, fresh, cool; recent.

**Fuego**, M., fire.

**Fuera**—*ser* and *ir*.

**Fuera**, outside; *desde f.*, from with-out; *por f.*, outside, from the outside.

**Fuero**, M., privilege.

**Fuerte**, strong, powerful; *fuertes golpes*, hard blows.

**Fuerza**, F., strength; *por f.* or *á la f.*, by force.

**Fuese**—*ser* and *ir*.

**Fuí**—*ser* and *ir*.

**Función**, F., office; PL., *id*.

**Funda**, F., cover for furniture, etc.

(Fr. *houssé*, *étui*.)

**Fūria**, F., fury; *con f.*, furiously.

**Furiōso**, *a*, furious, in a fury.

**Furör**, fury; *con f.*, furiously.

**Fusil**, M., gun.

## G.

**Gaditāno**, *a*, of Cadiz.

**Galānte**, polite, courteous, pleasing to ladies.

**Galantēa**—*galantear*.

**Galanteār**, to court ladies' society, to play the beau.

**Galantēe**—*galantear*.

**Galantēo**—*galantear*.

**Galería**, F., gallery.

**Galgo**, M., grey-hound.

**Gallēgo**, *a*, Galician.

**Ganga**, F., bargain.

**Gastār**, to spend; to waste; to wear (a garment).

**Gato**, M., cat.

**Gaviōn**, M., gabion (a cylindrical wicker basket, open at both ends, used, filled with earth, for defense).

**Generāl**, M., general.

**Gengibre**, M., ginger. (Some spell *jengibre*.)

**Gênio**, M., disposition, genius.  
**Gente**, F., people; PL., *id.*; *las gentes del país*, the people of the locality; the country people.  
**Gesto**, M., gesture, movement.  
**Giro**, M., whirl, turn; draft.  
**Gitano**, M., gypsy.  
**Gloria**, F., glory, honor; *ángel de la g.*, an angel in paradise.  
**Golpe**, M., blow; *dar un g.*, to strike; *fuertes g — s*, hard blows (*en*, on).  
**Gótico**, a, Gothic.  
**Gozo**, M., joy.  
**Gracias**, F. PL., thanks, thank you.  
**Gran** — *grande*.  
**Granadino**, a, of Granada.  
**Grande**, great, large (before a noun sing., *gran*).  
**Gravemente**, seriously.  
**Greda**, F., chalk.  
**Grieta**, F., crevice.  
**Grito**, M., cry, shout; *dar un g.*, to utter a cry.  
**Grueso**, a, thick, heavy, big.  
**Grulla**, F., crane.  
**Guapo**, a, pretty.  
**Guardarse**, to put away, to put (in one's pocket).  
**Guárda**, F., guard; M., guard.  
**Guarida**, F., den, lair.  
**Guedêja**, F., lock of hair.  
**Guerra**, F., war.  
**Guia**, F., guide.  
**Guiôn**, M., hyphen.  
**Guipuzcoano**, a, a Basque from Guipúzcoa.  
**Guisantes**, M. PL., peas.  
**Guitarra**, F., guitar.  
**Gula**, F., gluttony.  
**Gustarle á uno**, to please any one,

to like, p. 420; *me gusta*, I like; *cualdo V. guste*, when you like.  
**Gusto**, M., taste, pleasure.

## H.

**Haba**, F., bean.  
**Habéis** — *haber*.  
**Habêr**, to have (only as an auxiliary), § 351.  
**Había**, there was, there were, § 354.  
**Había** — *haber*.  
**Hablād** — *hablar*.  
**Hablādo**, a, spoken, talked.  
**Hablār**, to speak, to talk (*d*, to; *con*, with; *de*, of).  
**Hace** — *hacer*.  
**Hace**, it is; ago; *h.* — *que*, it is — since; *h. un momento*, a moment ago; *h. poco*, a short time ago, a while ago.  
**Hacêr**, to make, to do, to cause, to be; *hacer pedazos*, to break in pieces; *h. caso*, to take notice, to pay attention, § 530.  
**Hacêrse**, to be made, to become; to pretend to be, to dissemble; *se hace la sorda*, pretends not to hear.  
**Hácia**, toward, in the direction of.  
**Hago** — *hacer*.  
**Hálagüño**, a, flattering, charming.  
**Halla** — *hallar*.  
**Hallār**, to find.  
**Hallāzgo**, M., discovery.  
**Han** — *haber*.  
**Hará** — *hacer*.  
**Hasta**, until, up to, to; *desde — hasta* or *d*, from — to.  
**Hay** — *haber*, § 354.  
**Haya** — *haber*, § 354.  
**Haz** — *hacer*.

**Has**, F., bundle.

**He** — *haber*, § 351.

**Hebrêo**, a, Hebrew.

**Hecho**, a, made, done, caused, had — *hacer*.

**Hería** — *herir*.

**Herido**, a, wounded; *ser h.*, to be wounded.

**Herir**, to wound, § 500.

**Hermoso**, a, beautiful, fine.

**Héroe**, M., hero.

**Heróico**, a, heroic.

**Hice** — *hacer*.

**Hidalgo**, M., gentleman.

**Hielo**, M., ice.

**Hierro**, M., iron; *camino de h.*, railway; PL., *hierros*, fetters, handcuffs.

**Higo**, M., fig.

**Higo-chumbo**, M., prickly-pear.

**Hija**, F., daughter.

**Hijo**, M., son, child; descendant.

**Hilo**, M., thread, linen.

**História**, F., history, story.

**Hizo** — *hacer*.

**Hollar**, to trample, § 475.

**Hombre**, M., man.

**Honra**, F., honor.

**Hora**, F., hour, o'clock.

**Horadado**, a, pierced.

**Horizante**, M., horizon.

**Horrorizâr**, to terrify, § 371.

**Horroroso**, a, horrible.

**Hospitalidad**, F., hospitality.

**Hoy**, to-day; at the present day.

**Hubiêse** — *haber*.

**Hubo** — *haber*, § 354.

**Huello** — *hollar*.

**Huïda**, F., flight.

**Huir**, to flee, § 522.

**Huiréis** — *huir*.

**Hule**, M., oil-cloth.

**Húmedo**, a, damp, wet.

**Humilde**, lowly, humble.

**Humôr**, M., spirits, humor; *de mal h.*, ill naturedly, in ill humor.

**Hurto**, M., theft.

**Huso**, M., spindle.

## I.

**Idêa**, F., idea; *qué i.*, what a happy thought!

**Ido**, a, gone — *ir* or *irse*.

**Iglêsia**, F., church.

**Iguâl**, like, the same as, foll. by *d.*

**Imbuído**, a, permeated.

**Implacable**, inexorable.

**Importâr**, to be important, to be of consequence; *importa*, it matters; *no i.*, never mind.

**Imposible**, impossible, it cannot be.

**Imprudência**, F., indiscretion; *es una i.*, it is imprudent.

**Inclinado**, a, inclined, bent over.

**Inconveniência**, F., impropriety; *es una i.*, it is inexpedient.

**Increible**, incredible.

**Indicâr**, to point out, to indicate, § 371.

**Índio**, a, Indian.

**Indiscreto**, a, indiscreet, imprudent.

**Indudable**, undoubted, sure.

**Infame**, infamous.

**Infantería**, F., infantry.

**Infeliz**, unfortunate; poor man.

**Infierno**, M., torture.

**Infinito**, exceedingly.

**Inflüjo**, M., influence.

**Ingeniêro**, M., engineer; PL., corps of engineers.

**Ingênio**, M., genius; talent.

**Inglês, a**, English, Englishman or woman.

**Inícuo, a**, heinous.

**Inmarcescível**, unfading.

**Immediato, a**, next.

**Inmenso, a**, boundless.

**Inmortâl**, immortal, undying.

**Inquiêto, a**, uneasy, anxious.

**Insômnio, m.**, sleeplessness; *noches de i.*, sleepless nights.

**Insoportável**, intolerable.

**Instante**, instant, moment; *al i.*, immediately, at once.

**Instinto, m.**, instinct.

**Inteligência, f.**, intelligence.

**Interesante**, interesting, of interest.

**Inútil**, useless.

**Invitação, f.**, invitation.

**Ir**, to go, § 552; *ir d.*, to be going to (with infinitive); *ir d buscar*, to go after, for.

**Irse**, to go away, to go off, to be going; *vdse*, exit (in plays).

**Irlandês, a**, Irish, Irishman or woman.

**Irónico, a**, sarcastic.

**Irregular**, irregular.

## J.

**Jalão, m.**, outcry, uproar.

**Jamás**, never, ever.

**Jâula, f.**, cage.

**Jerezano, a**, of Jerêz or Sherry.

**Jesús**, heavens!

**Jóven**, young man or woman, youth.

**Juân**, John.

**Juêgo, m.**, play, game.

**Juêz, m.**, judge.

**Juício, m.**, judgment.

**Júlio, m.**, July.

**Júnio, m.**, June.

**Junto, a**, joined; together; *pagar-las todas juntas*, to pay off old scores, to make a final settlement.

**Junto á**, near.

**Jura, f.**, oath taking; act of administering an oath.

**Juzgâr, to judge**, § 371.

**Juzgo** — *juagar*.

## L.

**Labradôr, m.**, farmer.

**Lado, m.**, side; *d su l.*, by him, by her.

**Lago, m.**, lake.

**Lance, m.**, occasion; *el l. no ha sido para mênos*, the o. demanded it.

**Largo, a**, long.

**Lástima, f.**, pity; *qué l.*, what a pity!

**Lección, f.**, lesson.

**Leche, f.**, milk.

**Lêe** — *leer*.

**Leêr, to read**, § 549, b.

**Lêgua, f.**, league.

**Leído, a**, read — *leer*.

**Lêjos, far, far off**; *muy l.*, a good way off.

**Leonês, a**, Leonese, of Leôn.

**Lêudo, a**, leavened.

**Levantârse**, to get up, to rise.

**Levita, f.**, frock-coat; *gente de l.*, middle and upper classes; *gastar l.*, to be a gentleman.

**Ley, f.**, (PL., *leyes*), law.

**Leyêndo** — *leer*.

**Libertad, f.**, liberty; *tomârse la l.*, to take the liberty (*de*, to).

**Librâr, to deliver**, to set at liberty.

**Libre**, free, rid.

**Libro, m.**, book; *l. de molde*, (printed) book; *l. de mano*, manuscript.

**Licão**, M., Lyceum.  
**Lícito**, a, allowed, lawful.  
**Límpio**, a, clean, neat.  
**Línea**, F., line.  
**Lisōnja**, F., flattery.  
**Locūra**, F., folly, piece of folly.  
**Logrār**, to succeed in.  
**Longitūd**, F., length.  
**Luego**, then, next; presently.  
**Lugār**, M., place, stead.

## Ll.

**Llama**, F., flame.  
**Llamār**, to call; to knock (*d*, at).  
**Llamārse**, to be called, to be named;  
*se llama*, is called; *¿cómo se llama*  
*V.?* what is your name?  
**Llanto**, M., weeping [*planctus*].  
**Llave**, F., key.  
**Llegādo**, a, arrived — *llegar*.  
**Llegār**, to arrive, to come, § 371.  
**Lleno**, a, full, filled (*de*, with).  
**Llevār**, to carry, to take.  
**Llorōso**, a, tearful.  
**Llovēr**, to rain; *volver á ll.*, to rain  
again, § 418.  
**Llueve** — *llover*.  
**Lluvia**, F., rain; *grandes lluvias*,  
heavy rains, much rainy weather.

## M.

**Madrilēño**, a, Madrilanian, of  
Madrid.  
**Magnífico**, a, magnificent.  
**Mairēna**, name of a town about  
sixteen miles from Seville, prop-  
erly, *M. del Alcōr*.  
**Maitīnes**, M. PL., matins.  
**Majuēlo**, M., vine-patch newly  
planted or set out.  
**Malaguēño**, a, of Málaga.

**Maldād**, F., evil, wickedness.  
**Malo**, a, bad, evil; poor; ill (before  
a sing. noun masc., *mal*).  
**Manchēgo**, a, of *La Mancha*.  
**Mandadēro**, messenger, errand-boy.  
**Mandār**, to order; to cause, have  
(anything done).  
**Manēra**, F., manner, way; *de esta*  
*m.*, in this way.  
**Mano**, F., hand; *besār la mano d*,  
to salute (a person).  
**Mañāna**, F., morning; M., to-morrow.  
**Maragāto**, a, a man or woman of  
Astorga.  
**Marcār**, to mark, to indicate, § 371.  
**Marchār**, to walk, to go.  
**Marchārse**, to go away, to depart,  
to go.  
**Marchīto**, a, withered.  
**Marēa**, F., tide.  
**Mārque** — *marcar*.  
**Marquēs**, M., marquis.  
**Marquēsa**, F., marchioness.  
**Más**, more, longer; *no — m.*, no  
longer; *no — más que*, only,  
nothing but.  
**Matār**, to kill; to wear out.  
**Matrimōnio**, M., marriage; man  
and wife.  
**Matritēnse**, of Madrid.  
**Máxime**, especially.  
**Mayo**, M., May.  
**Mediadōr**, M., mediator.  
**Mēdio**, M., means; *de qué m.*, in  
what way?  
**Mēdio**, a, half.  
**Mejōr**, better; *serta m. que*, it would  
be better if, you had better.  
**Ménos**, less; *lo m.*, the least thing;  
at least.  
**Mercēd**, F., grace, favor.

**Merecēr**, to deserve, § 374.  
**Mes**, *M.*, month.  
**Mesa**, *F.*, table, writing desk, desk (in schools).  
**Metērse**, to get (*en*, into).  
**Metro**, *M.*, metre.  
**Miēdo**, *M.*, fear; *tenēr m.*, to be afraid (*de*, to).  
**Miēntas**, while.  
**Mil**, a thousand.  
**Milāgro**, *M.*, miracle, wonder.  
**Militār**, soldier, military officer.  
**Millōn**, *M.*, million.  
**Mipūto**, *M.*, minute.  
**Mirāda**, *F.*, look, glance.  
**Mirār**, to look, to see, to behold; *m. d.*, to look at; *mire V.*, see, look.  
**Mismo**, *a.*, same, self; *lo m.*, the same (thing).  
**Modāles**, *M. PL.*, manners, style.  
**Modēlo**, *M.*, model, beau-ideal.  
**Modo**, *M.*, way, manner; *de m. que*, so that, so.  
**Momēnto**, *M.*, moment; *al m.*, this instant, instantly; *en estos m — s*, at present.  
**Monēda**, *F.*, coin, piece of money, small change, change.  
**Mōnstruo**, *M.*, monster; *m. de fealdad*, prodigiously ugly.  
**Montēra**, *F.*, hunting-cap; name of a central street in Madrid, leading from the Puerta del Sol to those of Fuencarrāl (pop. *Funcarrāl*) and Hortaleza.  
**Mordēr**, to bite, § 490.  
**Morir**, to die, § 509.  
**Morirse**, to die, to give up.  
**Moro**, *M.*, Moor.  
**Mortāl**, mortal.  
**Mortificār**, to provoke, § 371.

**Motīn**, *M.*, riot, disturbance.  
**Mozo**, *M.*, boy, waiter; *buen m.*, fine looking.  
**Muchācho**, *a, M. F.*, boy, girl.  
**Mucho**, *a.*, much, a good deal of; *PL.*, many, a good many.  
**Mucho**, *adv.*, much, greatly.  
**Muerdo** — *morder*.  
**Muero** — *morir* or *morirse*.  
**Mujēr**, *F.*, woman, wife.  
**Murciāno**, *a.*, of Mūrcia.  
**Murmūllo**, *M.*, murmur.  
**Musa**, *F.*, muse.  
**Muy**, very.

## N.

**Nada**, nothing, not anything, no!  
**Nadār**, to swim.  
**Nādie**, no one, not anyone.  
**Nado** — *d nado*, swimming, by water.  
**Narānja**, *F.*, orange.  
**Narigōn**, *M.*, long-nosed.  
**Nariz**, *F.*, nose.  
**Narraciōn**, *F.*, story, recital.  
**Navarro**, *a.*, Navarrese.  
**Necesidād**, *F.*, need, necessity.  
**Necesitār**, to need, to be in need of (generally foll. by *de*).  
**Negārse**, to decline, to refuse (foll. by *d* with pron. or infin.), § 371.  
**Negro**, *a.*, black, dark.  
**Nēutro**, *M.*, neuter.  
**Ni**, neither, nor, not; *no — ni — ni*, neither — nor, not — either — or; not even, not so much as.  
**Nieta**, *F.*, granddaughter.  
**Nieto**, *M.*, grandson.  
**Nimio**, *a.*, excessive.  
**Ningūno**, *a.*, no, not any, not at all; no one, not anyone.

**Niña**, F., child, girl.

**Niño**, M., boy, child.

**No**, not, no.

**Noble**, noble, high-born.

**Noche**, F., night; *de n.*, by night, at night.

**Nombrār**, to mention by name, to speak a name; *sólo con nombrārle*, at the bare mention of his name.

**Nombre**, M., name.

**Nosotros**, *as*, we (men), we (women), us (after prep.).

**Notār**, to observe.

**Noticia**, F., news, item, piece of news; PL., news.

**Nubarrōn**, M., great cloud, black cloud.

**Nuevo**, *a*, new.

**Nulo**, *a*, null, void.

**Numerōso**, *a*, numerous.

**Nunca**, never (with neg. verb if it follows verb).

## Ñ.

**Ñudo**, M., knot.

## O.

**Objeto**, M., object; *con o. de*, for the purpose of.

**Obligaciōn**, F., duty, obligation; *no tener o. de*, not to be supposed to.

**Obligādo**, *a*, compelled, forced (*d*, to).

**Obra**, F., work; *estar en o.*, to be in repairs, or repairing.

**Ocupār**, to occupy, to hold.

**Ocupārse**, to employ one's self (*en*, in, about).

**Ocorrēncia**, F., occurrence, incident, coincidence.

**Ocurrir**, to happen, to be the matter; *¿qué ocurre?* what is the matter?

**Ocho**, eight.

**Odiōso**, *a*, hateful.

**Odre**, M., wine-skin.

**Ofrecēr**, to offer, § 374.

**Ofrezco** — *ofrecer*.

**Oir** — *oir*.

**Oído**, *a*, heard; *o. decir*, heard say — *oir*.

**Oído**, M., hearing; ear.

**Óiga** — *oir*.

**Óigo** — *oir*.

**Oir**, to hear, to listen, § 553.

**Olōr**, M., odor, smell.

**Olvidār**, to forget; refl. with *de*.

**Opāco**, *a*, opaque, dark.

**Óptico**, M., optician.

**Órden**, F., order (command); M., order (sequence).

**Orgūllo**, M., pride.

**Origināl**, M., extraordinary, peculiar.

**Otro**, *a*, other, another, other one.

**Oye** — *oir*.

## P.

**Paciēncia**, F., patience.

**Pagār**, to pay; *pagārlas*, to pay for it, to "catch" it; *pagārlas todas juntas*, to settle for old scores, §§ 371, 753.

**País**, M., country; district, region.

**Pala**, F., shovel.

**Palābra**, F., word (in discourse; a single word is *voz*, F.).

**Palēnque**, M., wrestling place, arena.

**Palmāda**, F., clap of the hands, applause.

**Panzūdo**, *a*, corpulent.

- Pañuelo**, *m.*, handkerchief; shawl (anything put over the head or shoulders).
- Papel**, *m.*, paper; newspaper; part, character (in a play); *hacer un p.*, to act a part, to cut a figure.
- Papelito**, *m.*, little paper; pop., paper segar.
- Para**, for; to, in order to, so as to; *p. que*, in order that, that, so that (subj.).
- Paraguas**, *m.*, SING. and PL., umbrella.
- Paralēla**, *f.*, parallel (a trench with a parapet constructed opposite the enemy's works).
- Parēce**, it appears, it seems—*parecer*.
- Parecēer**, to appear, to seem, § 374.
- Parezcō**—*parecer*.
- Parte**, *f.*, part; *por mi p.*, on my part, in me.
- Pasa**, *f.*, raisin.
- Pasādo**, *a*, passed, spent; past, late.
- Pasādo**, *m.*, past.
- Pasār**, to pass, to spend, to experience; to pass over; to pass anything (*por*, through).
- Pasatiēmpo**, *m.*, pastime, passing amusement.
- Pasiōn**, *f.*, passion.
- Paso**, *m.*, step; *dar un p.*, to take a step.
- Pedāzo**, *m.*, piece; *hacer pedazos*, to break in pieces.
- Pedir**, to ask, to ask for, §§ 512, 753.
- Pēine**, *m.*, comb.
- Peligro**, *m.*, danger.
- Penōso**, *a*, painful, severe.
- Pensār**, to think, to reflect, to imagine; to intend; *p. en*, to think of, § 457.
- Peña**, *f.*, cliff, rock. Proper name, *Fr. de la Roche*.
- Peōr**, worse; *lo peōr*, the worst.
- Perdēr**, to lose; to ruin, § 470.
- Perdido**, *a*, lost, ruined, undone.
- Perdonār**, to forgive.
- Perfēctamente**, perfectly.
- Perfecto**, *a*, perfect, complete.
- Periódico**, *m.*, newspaper.
- Permanecēr**, to remain, § 374.
- Permiso**, *m.*, permission; *pedir d uno p. para*, to ask leave to.
- Permitir**, to allow, to permit (*que* with subj., to).
- Pero**, but; why.
- Persōna**, *f.*, person; appearance.
- Pertenecēr**, to belong, § 374.
- Pertenezco**—*pertenecer*.
- Pescār**, to fish, to fish up, to catch (a fish), § 371.
- Pesqué**—*pescar*.
- Pida**—*pedir*.
- Pide**—*pedir*.
- Pido**—*pedir*.
- Pié**, *m.*, foot; *d p.*, on foot.
- Piensa**—*pensar*.
- Pintōr**, *m.*, painter.
- Placēr**, *m.*, pleasure.
- Placēr**, to please; *place*, it pleases, § 545.
- Plaza**, *f.*, square, market; fortress.
- Plazca**—*placer*.
- Pluma**, *f.*, pen.
- Pobre**, poor, sorry, wretched.
- Poco**, *a*, small, little; PL., few; *un p.*, a little, slightly.
- Podēmos**—*poder*.
- Podēr**, to be able, can, may, § 532.
- Podido**, been able—*poder*.
- Podrá**, will be able, can—*poder*.



**Ponēr**, to put, to place, to lay; to put in; *p. la mano*, to lay one's hand (*en*, *on*), § 533.

**Ponērsē**, to become, to get; *p. bien con*, to get on good terms with; *p. bueno* or *malo*, to be well or ill; *p. en camīno*, to start off, to set out, to go.

**Poquīto**, very little, rather, somewhat.

**Por**, by, for, through, along, over.

**Pormenōres**, *M. PL.*, particulars, details.

**Pōrque**, because, for (consequence).

**Porqué** and **Por qué**, why?

**Posīble**, possible.

**Posta**, *F.*, post; *ir por la p.*, to go by express.

**Practicārsē**, to be constructed, § 371.

**Preciōso**, *a.*, precious, valuable; magnificent, superb.

**Preciso** — *es p.*, it is necessary.

**Preferir**, to prefer, § 500.

**Prefiēro** — *preferir*.

**Prendēr** (*pp. preso*), to arrest, to seize, to take.

**Preparār**, to prepare, to arrange; *prepararlo todo*, to get everything in readiness.

**Presāgio**, *M.*, prophecy.

**Presēncia**, *F.*, presence.

**Presentār**, to present.

**Preso**, *a.*, arrested, taken — *prender*; *darse p.*, to surrender.

**Prestār**, to lend.

**Primēro**, *a.*, first; *lo p.*, the first thing.

**Principio**, *M.*, beginning; *al p.*, at first.

**Prisa**, *F.*, haste; *tener p.*, to be in a hurry (*por* or *para*, to).

**Prisionēro**, *M.*, prisoner.

**Procurār**, to try, to seek (*de*, to).

**Profundidād**, *F.*, depth.

**Prolongār**, to prolong, to lengthen out, § 371.

**Pronto**, quick, soon; *más p.*, quicker.

**Prōpio**, *a.*, self, own.

**Proporcionār**, to bestow, to afford, to give.

**Próximamente**, approximately.

**Próximo**, *a.*, near, next.

**Proyecto**, *M.*, plan, purpose; *tener el p. de*, to purpose.

**Prueba**, *F.*, proof, trial; essay.

**Público**, *M.*, public.

**Pudrīr**, to decay, § 510.

**Pueblo**, *M.*, village; town; people.

**Puede**, may, can, is able — *poder*.

**Puedo**, *no p.*, I cannot — *poder*.

**Puerta**, *F.*, door, gate.

**Puēa**, then, well, why; *p. bien*, well.

**Puesto**, *a* — *poner* and *ponerse*.

**Puesto que**, since.

**Punto**, *M.*, point; moment.

**Purēza**, *F.*, purity, virtue.

## Q.

**Que**, who, which, whom; that, since; until; let (with subj.).

**Qué**, what? what! how!

**Quedār**, to remain, to be left; *q. d.*, to keep; *quedarse con.*, to keep.

**Quema**, *F.*, burn, scorching.

**Querēlla**, *F.*, feud.

**Querēr**, to wish, to want, to like; will, § 534.

**Querido**, *a.*, dear.

**Queso**, *M.*, cheese.

**Quiēn**, who; after a prep., whom.

**Quién**, who? whom?

**Quiere** — *querer*.

**Quiero** — *querer*.  
**Quieto**, a, quiet, still.  
**Química**, F., chemistry.  
**Quiniētos**, as, five hundred.  
**Quinta**, F., summer-house.  
**Quise** — *querer*.  
**Quisiēra** — *querer*.  
**Quise** — *querer*.  
**Quizás**, or **quizá**, perhaps (subj.).

## R.

**Rapto**, M., burst.  
**Rarēza**, F., eccentricity.  
**Raro**, a, odd, curious, strange.  
**Rasgo**, M., dash, stroke.  
**Rato**, M., while.  
**Ratito**, M., little while, moment.  
**Raudāl**, M., torrent, rapid.  
**Raza**, F., race, stock.  
**Razōn**, F., reason; *tener r.*, to be right.  
**Real**, M., a rial or royal (5 cts. in Spain, and 10 cts. in Cuba).  
**Recibir**, to receive.  
**Recogēr**, to gather up, to pick up, § 375.  
**Recōja** — *recoger*.  
**Recordār**, to remember, § 474.  
**Recuerdo** — *recordar*.  
**Recuerdo**, M., recollection, memory, thought; *su r.*, the thought of him.  
**Recūrso**, M., resource, recourse, convenience.  
**Red**, F., net.  
**Refugiārse**, to take refuge (*en*, in).  
**Regir**, to rule, § 515.  
**Registro**, M., record.  
**Regulār**, usual.  
**Rei** — *reir*.  
**Reinādo**, M., reign.  
**Rēino**, M., kingdom.

**Reir** and **reirse**, to laugh (*de*, at), § 520.  
**Relój** (more often now, *reloj*), M., watch, clock.  
**Remēdio**, M., remedy; *no hay más r. que*, the only way is to.  
**Rendija**, F., opening, rent, crevice.  
**Rendirse**, to surrender, § 513.  
**Renunciār**, to give up, to abandon (foll. by *d*).  
**Reñir**, to quarrel, to fight, § 518.  
**Reparaciōn**, F., amends, satisfaction.  
**Representār**, to appear to be of (such an age).  
**Resignaciōn**, F., patience.  
**Resignārse**, to be resigned.  
**Respetār**, to respect.  
**Resto**, M., the remainder; PL., remains.  
**Retenēr**, to hold, to keep, § 536.  
**Retirārse**, to withdraw, to disappear.  
**Retrāso**, M., backwardness; *llegar con r.* (of a train), to be behind, to be late.  
**Reunir**, to gather.  
**Revolvēr**, to turn upside down, to ransack, § 491.  
**Revuelto**, a — *revolver*.  
**Rey**, M., king.  
**Ricachōn**, very rich.  
**Rico**, a, rich.  
**Rie** — *reir* or *reirse*.  
**Rige** — *regir*.  
**Rincōn**, M., corner.  
**Rinconcito**, M., little corner, nook.  
**Rindo**, me — *rendirse*.  
**Riña**, F., quarrel, fight.  
**Rio** — *reir* or *reirse*.  
**Rio**, M., river.  
**Robo**, M., robbery, theft.

**Rodilla**, F., knee; *de r—s*, on one's knees.

**Rogār**, to request, to beg, to beseech, § 483.

**Romántico**, a, romantic, full of romance.

**Rompēr**, to break; *refl.*, to be broken.

**Rota**, F., rout, defeat.

**Roto**, a — *romper*, § 571.

**Rueda**, F., wheel,

**Ruego** — *rogar*.

**Ruego**, M., request.

**Ruido**, M., noise, tumult.

**Ruidoso**, a, boisterous, noisy.

## S.

**Sabe**, knows; *se s.*, is known — *saber*.

**Sabēr**, to know, to know how, to learn; to be able, can, § 535.

**Sabrás** — *saber*.

**Sacār**, to take out; to take down, § 371.

**Sacudid**, shake ye — *sacudir*.

**Sacudir**, to shake.

**Salir**, to go out, to come out, to go away, to go, to start to leave; to get out of, to escape from (with *de*); to set out from, to leave, to start (foll. by *de*, from), § 554.

**Salvārse**, to save one's self, to be saved.

**Santiguārse**, to make the sign of the cross, § 372.

**Santiguo** — *santiguarse*.

**Santo**, a, holy; *cielo s.*, heavens!

**Santo**, a, M. and F., saint.

**Sañudo**, a, full of wrath.

**Satisfacciōn**, F., satisfaction, atonement, amends.

**Satisfacēr**, to satisfy, § 531.

**Satisfêcho**, a, satisfied, contented, pleased — *satisfacer*.

**Sé** — *saber*.

**Sêa** — *ser*.

**Seguía** — *seguir*.

**Seguïda** — *en s.*, at once, immediately.

**Seguir**, to follow, to take (advice); to go on, § 516.

**Segün**, according to, according as, as.

**Següro**, a, sure; *de s—o*, surely, certainly.

**Semejanza**, F., likeness, similarity.

**Semi-doble**, half-double.

**Sencillo**, a, simple, plain, single.

**Sentārse**, to sit down, § 459.

**Sentir**, to perceive by the senses, to feel, to hear (as steps); to regret, to be sorry, § 499.

**Seña**, F., sign, address; standard.

**Señor**, M., sir, gentleman, Mr.

**Señora**, F., madam, Mrs., the lady, mistress (of the house).

**Sēpan** — *saber*.

**Ser**, to be (absolutely, of what is permanent, inherent), § 385.

**Sér**, M., being; soul, individual.

**Servicio**, M., service.

**Servir**, to serve; *s. en*, to be of (a branch of public service), § 513.

**Sevilla**, F., Seville (pron. *sev'-il*, and not *se-vill*, because from *Hispalis*, and Arab. *Isbilis*, so that *vill* is not separate from the stem); *tren de S.*, Seville train.

**Sevillāno**, a, of Seville.

**Sexo**, M., sex.

**Si**, if, whether; why.

**Sí**, yes.

**Sido**, been — *ser*.

**Siempre**, always, ever; *para s.*, for ever; *de s.*, eternal; continuing to (verb).

**Siën**, F., temple, forehead; *las sienes*, the temples.

**Sienta** — *sentarse* and *sentir*.

**Siéntese** V., sit down — *sentarse*.

**Sienten** — *sentir* and *sentarse*.

**Siento** — *sentir* and *sentarse*.

**Significār**, to signify, to mean, § 371.

**Significativo**, a, significant.

**Sigue** — *seguir*.

**Siguen** — *seguir*.

**Sin**, without; *sin que*, without (that).

**Sino**, but; *no — sino*, only.

**Siquiëra**, even; *ni s.*, not even.

**Sirgo**, M., twisted silk.

**Sirvió** — *servir*.

**Sitiado**, a, besieged.

**Sitiador**, besieger.

**Sobre**, on, upon, above, over; *s. todo*, above all.

**Sobrino**, M., nephew.

**Socorro**, M., help.

**Sol**, M., sun.

**Soldado**, M., soldier.

**Soledad**, F., solitude, lonely situation.

**Solo**, a, single, alone, only.

**Sólo**, adv., only.

**Sombrerero**, M., hatter.

**Sombrero**, M., hat.

**Sombrío**, a, gloomy, morose.

**Somos** — *ser*.

**Son** — *ser*.

**Sonrisa**, F., smile.

**Soplār**, to blow.

**Sordo**, a, deaf; *hacerse la sorda*, to pretend not to hear.

**Sortija**, F., (jewelled) ring.

**Sospechār**, to suspect.

**Soy** — *ser*.

**Su**, his, her, its, one's, your, their.

**Subir**, to go up, to come up; to go up stairs, up the steps; to come up stairs, up the steps.

**Sucedor**, to happen.

**Sucedido**, a, happened.

**Suelo**, M., ground, floor; *al s.*, on the floor, down.

**Sueño**, M., dream.

**Sufrir**, to endure.

**Supiese** — *saber*.

**Suplicār**, to beg, to request, § 371.

**Susto**, M., fright, scare.

**Suyo**, a, his, hers, its, yours.

## T.

**Tahūr**, M., gambler.

**Tal**, such, such a.

**Tambiën**, also, too; likewise.

**Tampoco**, and — not, nor.

**Tan**, as, so.

**Tanto**, a, as much — many, so much — many; *por t.*, therefore, consequently.

**Tapicero**, M., upholsterer.

**Tarde**, F., afternoon.

**Tarde**, adv., late.

**Tasajo**, M., flitch of bacon.

**Taza**, F., cup (coffee or tea).

**Tejuëlo**, M., lettering on the back of a book.

**Tela**, F., cloth (cotton or linen), material, covering.

**Tema**, M., theme, subject, talk; old story; exercise.

**Temblār**, to tremble, § 463.

**Tembloroso**, a, tremulously.

**Temër**, to fear, to be afraid.

**Temerario**, a, rash, fool-hardy.

**Tempestad**, F., storm, violent storm.

**Tendêr**, to stretch, to spread (as a net), § 471.

**Tendrá** — *tener*.

**Tendría** — *tener*.

**Tenêr**, to have; to take; *t. que*, to have to, § 536.

**Tenga** — *tener*.

**Tenido** — *tener*.

**Teniênte**, M., lieutenant.

**Tentâr**, to try; to tempt, § 459.

**Teñido**, a, dyed — *teñir*, § 518.

**Terrêno**, M., ground.

**Terrible**, terrible.

**Tertulia**, F., party, company.

**Tia**, F., aunt.

**Tiempo**, M., time; weather; *mds t.*, longer.

**Tienda**, F., shop, "store"; *en la t. de*, at —'s; *á la t. de*, to —'s.

**Tienes** — *tener*.

**Tientan** — *tentar*.

**Tierra**, F., earth, land, soil.

**Tilín** — *hacerle á uno t.*, to make one tingle.

**Timbre**, M., stamp; hand-bell.

**Tinta**, F., ink.

**Tio**, M., uncle.

**Tira**, F., strip.

**Tirâr**, to pull (*de*, at).

**Todavía**, yet, still; *t. un, una*, another.

**Todo**, a, all, the whole; M., everything; *todo lo que*, all that.

**Toledão**, a, of Toledo.

**Tomâr**, to take, to take up (as a book); *t. por*, to take any one for.

**Tomârse** (*la libertad de*), to take (the liberty to).

**Tontería**, F., folly, nonsense.

**Torêo**, M., bull-fighting.

**Tormenta**, F., tempest.

**Toro**, M., bull.

**Torre**, F., tower.

**Torrente**, M., torrent; *á torrentes*, in torrents.

**Tortuoso**, a, winding.

**Trabajadôr**, M., laborer.

**Trabajâr**, to work.

**Trabájo**, M., work; PL., operations; *t — s de sapá*, undermining operations.

**Trâe** — *traer*.

**Traêr**, to bring, to carry; to contain (of a newspaper), § 537.

**Tragédia**, F., tragedy.

**Traído** — *traer*.

**Tráigo** — *traer*.

**Trajêsen** — *traer*.

**Trájo** — *traer*.

**Tranquilo**, a, quiet, calm; at ease.

**Transitâr**, to go, to make one's way.

**Tratâr**, to try (*de*, to).

**Travês** — *á t. de*, through, across.

**Trazádo**, a, traced, carried (*sobre*, along) — *trazar*.

**Trazar**, to trace, § 371.

**Trêinta**, thirty.

**Tren**, M., train.

**Trinchêra**, F., intrenchment.

**Triste**, sad.

**Triunfâr**, to triumph, to get the better (*de*, over, of).

**Tropelia**, F., outrage.

**Trueno**, M., a clap of thunder, thunder; PL., peals of thunder, thunder.

**Trujo** — *traer*.

**Tube**, M., lamp chimney.

**Tudêense**, of Tuy (learned).

**Tudés**, a, of Tuy (popular).

**Tunãnte**, M., rascal.

**Tuviêra** — *tener*.

**Tūvo** — *tener*.

**Tuyo**, **a**, thine.

**U.**

**Último**, **a**, last, final.

**Único**, **a**, only; *lo ú.*, the only (thing).

**Unido**, **a**, united, connected (*entre sí*, together, to each other).

**Unir**, to join, to unite.

**Universāl**, universal.

**Unos**, **as**, some (usually omitted in Eng.), a few.

**Uso**, **M.**, use.

**Ustêd**, your worship, you.

**V.**

**Va** — *ir* and *irse*.

**Vacia** — *vaciar*.

**Vaciâr**, to empty.

**Vaivên**, **M.**, vibration, oscillation; undulation. [*Va y ven*, go and come.]

**Valenciâno**, **a**, Valencian.

**Valido**, **M.**, confidential minister, king's favorite.

**Valôr**, **M.**, courage.

**Valle**, **M.**, valley.

**Vallisoletâno**, **a**, of Valladolid.

**Vâmos**, let us go, let us come; come! come now! *vamos d*, let us —. From *ir*.

**Van** — *ir* or *irse*.

**Vara**, **F.**, cane, stick; yard (meas.).

**Variâr**, to change, to vary, to alter; *v. de parecer*, to change one's opinion.

**Varío** — *variar*.

**Varõn**, **M.**, man; male.

**Vascuênce**, Basque language.

**Vâse**, exit — *irse*.

**Vate**, **M.**, bard, poet.

**Vaya** — *ir*, indeed! of course! *vaya sí* — of course I do, I will!

**Vé** — *ir*; **véte** — *irse*.

**Ve** — *ver*.

**Veces**, **F. PL.**, times; *dos v.*, twice.

**Ved** — *ver*.

**Vēinte**, twenty.

**Vellúdo**, **a**, hairy, shaggy.

**Vendrá** — *venir*.

**Venga** — *venir*; *dile que v.*, tell him to come.

**Vengârse**, to avenge one's self (*de*, of, on), § 371.

**Venir**, to come, § 541.

**Ventâna**, **F.**, window; *los cristales de la v.*, window panes.

**Veo** — *ver*.

**Ver**, to see; *vamos d v.*, let us see, § 548.

**Verse**, to be (substitute of *estar*).

**Verâno**, **M.**, summer.

**Vêras** — *de v.*, truly! indeed!

**Verdâd**, **F.**, truth; *en v.*, truly; *en v. que*, truly I —.

**Verdadêro**, **a**, true, genuine, down-right.

**Véte** — *irse*.

**Vez**, **F.**, a time; *otra v.*, again, once more; *de una v.*, at once, once for all.

**Via**, **F.**, track (of a railway).

**Viaje**, **M.**, journey; travelling.

**Viajêro**, **M.**, traveller, passenger.

**Vício**, **M.**, vice; bad habit.

**Victôria**, **F.**, victory; hurrah!

**Vida**, **F.**, life.

**Vidriêro**, **M.**, glazier.

**Viejo**, **a**, old.

**Viene** — *venir*.

**Viento**, **M.**, wind.

**Viña**, F., vineyard.  
**Violencia**, F., force, violence.  
**Violento**, a, forcible, violent.  
**Virtud**, F., virtue.  
**Virtuoso**, a, virtuous.  
**Visita**, F., visit, call.  
**Visitār**, to visit, to pay a visit to.  
**Visto**, a, seen — *ver*.  
**Viudo**, M., widower.  
**Vive** — *vivir*.  
**Vivian** — *vivir*.  
**Viviente**, living.  
**Vivir**, to live.  
**Vizcaíno**, a, Basque (of Biscay).  
**Volante**, flying; *sapa v.*, defence made of baskets filled with earth and placed close together.  
**Volvēr**, to return, to come back, § 49I.  
**Volvēr á**, again (as *v. á hacer*, to do again).  
**Voto**, M., vow.  
**Voy** — *ir* or *irse*.  
**Voz**, F., voice, tone of voice; a word.  
**Vuelo**, M., flight (of a bird); soaring.

**Vuelta**, F., turn, return; *v. al tema*, back to the old subject again.

**Vuelva** — *volver*.

**Vuelve** — *volver*.

**Vuelvo** — *volver*.

## Y.

**Y**, and (before initial *i* or *hi*, é).

**Ya**, now, already; *ya no* — *más*, not — any more, no more, no longer; yes! of course!

**Ya que**, conj., since.

**Yedra**, F., ivy.

**Yema**, F., yolk.

**Yeso**, M., lime, mortar.

**Yugo**, M., yoke.

## Z.

**Zanja**, F., trench, ditch.

**Zapa**, F., sap, trench, undermining.

**Zapadōr**, M., sapper.

**Zaragozāno**, a, of Saragossa.

**Zig-zag**, PL., zig-zags, M., zig-zag.

**Zipizape**, M., scrape; scuffle.

**Zozōbra**, F., anxiety.

**Zumbār**, to buzz, to hum.

# ENGLISH-SPANISH VOCABULARY.



## A.

**Able** (*to be*), poder — puedo, es, e.

**About** (*concerning*), acérca de; (*nearly*), cosa de; poco más ó menos.

**Absolutely**, absolutamente.

**Academy**, Acadēmia, F.

**Accommodation-train**, el tren mixto (composed of 1st, 2d, and 3d class carriages); tren-ómnibus (from French).

**Account** (*narration*), relación, F.; *to give an a. of*, hacer la r. de; *on a. of*, á causa de.

**Accustomed** (*to be*), soler (with infin.); estar acostumbrado á.

**Acknowledge** (*to*), confesar.

**Acquaintance**, conocido, a, m. and f.

**Across**, á través de; por; *running a. the page*, á renglón seguido.

**Act** (*to*), representar.

**Action**, acción, F.; acto, M.

**Active**, activo, a.

**Add** (*to*), contribuir; *does not a.*, no contribuye.

**Adorn** (*to*), adornar.

**Advice**, consejo, M. (usually PL., los consejos); *by the a.*, de consejo; (*in government*) de acuerdo.

**Afternoon**, tarde, F.; *this a.*, esta t.; *in the a.*, por la t.

**Again**, otra vez; volver á (with an infin.); as, *he goes out a.*, vuelve á salir, p. 422.

**Against**, contra.

**Agnes**, Inēs, F.

**Agreeable**, agradāble.

**Aid**, auxilio, M.; *to come to one's a.*, venir or acudir en su auxilio.

**Air**, āire, M.; cielo, M.; (*that which we breathe*) el āire or la atmósfera.

**Alight** (*to*), posar (*of birds*).

**Alike**, igual; PL., iguales.

**All**, adj., todo, a; PL., todos, as; (*everything*) todo.

**Alliance**, alianza, F.

**Allow** (*to*), permitir.

**Almost**, casi.

**Alms**, limosna, F.

**Already**, ya.

**Also**, también.

**Always**, siempre.

**America**, América, F.

**American**, Americano (if Span.); Anglo-American (if from the U. S.).

**American**, adj., americano, a.

**Amiable**, amable.

**Among**, entre (*rest*), por entre (*motion*).

**Amusing**, divertido, a; entretenido, a.

**Ancient**, antiguo, a.

**And**, y; (*before i or hi*) é.

**Andalusia**, Andalucía, F.

**Andalusian**, andalúz, a.

**Anger**, cólera, F., ira, F. [no.

**Anglo-American**, Anglo-americā-



**Angry**, incomodado, a, (*moderate*); enfadado, a.

**Another**, otro, a; *a. time*, otra vez.

**Answer** (*to*), respondē; contestār á (*when questioned*).

**Any** (*you please*), cualquiera; *in a. language*, en cualquier idioma, p. 437; (*otherwise, any is usually left untranslated*); *a. more*, ya — no; *as, I don't like the country a. more*, ya no me gusta el campo.

**Anybody** (*with neg.*), nadie; (*without neg.*) águien.

**Apartment** (*of a house*), cuarto, M.; (*of a floor*) habitacion, F.; (*of a palace*) salón, M.

**Appear** (*to*), in the sense of *to present one's self*, aparecēr.

**Appear** (*to*), meaning to seem, parēcēr; *it appears*, parēce.

**Approve** (*to*), aprobār.

**April**, abril, M.; *April 25th*, á veinte y cinco de A.

**Arab**, árabe, M. and F.

**Aranjuéz**, [*aram Jovis*], a royal seat, about two hours by rail from Madrid.

**Are**, son; están.

**Are** (*there*), hay.

**Army**, ejército, M.

**Arrest** (*to*), prendēr.

**Arrested**, preso, a.

**Arrival**, llegāda, F.

**Arrive** (*to*), llegār.

**Artist**, artista, M.

**As** (*according as*), segun, conforme á.

**As**, conj., como; adv., tan; *as — as*, tan — como.

**As-far-as**, hasta.

**As-many — as**, tantos, as — como.

**As-much — as**, tanto, a — como.

**Ask** (*to*), *as a question*, preguntār; *as a request*, pedir, p. 420; *to ask for a thing*, pedir alguna cosa.

**At**, en, á.

**Atmosphere**, atmósfera, F.; *aire*, M.

**Attachment**, amōr, M., cariño, M.

**Attempt**, atentādo, M.

**Attend** (*to*), asistir, *followed by á*.

**Attendance**, asistēncia, F.

**Attended**, concurrido, a; *very well a.*, muy concurrido, a, *or* concurridísimo, a.

**Attends** (*he*), asiste á.

**Aunt**, tia, F.

**Author**, autōr, M.

**Avenge one's self** (*to*), vengārese (*of, de*).

## B.

**Bad**, malo, a (*mal*).

**Badly**, mal.

**Balcony**, balcón, M.

**Ball**, pelōta, F.; (*weapon*) bala, F., (*shot*) balāzo, M.; *wounded by a b.*, herido de un balāzo.

**Banker**, banquero, M.

**Basque**, subst., Vizcaíno, a.

**Basque**, adj., vascongādo, a.

**Bath**, baño, M.

**Bathing-season**, temporāda de baños (la).

**Battalion**, batallōn, M.

**Be** (*to*), ser (*absolute*); *estār* (*accidental*); (*of weather*) hacēr, p. 429.

**Beautiful**, hermōso, a; bello, a.

**Because**, pōrque.

**Become** (*to*), hacēirse; ponēirse, p. 431. ✓

**Beef**, carne de vaca, *or simply* carne, F.

**Been**, sido; *estādo*; (*of weather*)  
hecho; *b. able*, podido.  
**Before** (*time*) *ántes*; (*presence*)  
ante.  
**Beg** (*to*), *meaning to request*, rogār;  
*meaning to solicit alms*, pedir.  
**Beggar**, mendigo (seldom used);  
pobre.  
**Begin** (*to*), *empezār* (*to*, á); *echār*  
á; *echarse á*; *ponerse á*.  
**Behavior**, conducta, F., *compor-*  
*tamiēto*, M.  
**Believe** (*to*), *creer*.  
**Belong** (*to*), *pertenecer* (*to*, á);  
*ser* (*to*, de).  
**Bench**, banco, M.  
**Benevolent**, caritativo, a.  
**Bernard**, Bernārdo.  
**Besides**, además.  
**Best**, el (la, lo) *mejōr*.  
**Better**, *mejōr*; PL., *mejōres*.  
**Beyond**, *más allá de* (*farther*);  
(*outside or besides*) *fuera de*.  
**Bilbao**, *Bilbāo*, a large town on the  
Bay of Biscay.  
**Bird**, ave, F.; *pájaro*, M. (p. is less  
used in poetry or in the higher  
style of prose).  
**Blame**, *censūra*, F.  
**Blindly**, *ciegamente*.  
**Block**, trozo, M., *trocito*, M.  
**Blow**, golpe, M.  
**Blue**, *azul*.  
**Boldly**, *resueltamente* (*bravely*);  
*desvergonzadamente* (*impudently*).  
**Book**, libro, M.  
**Boston**, Bóston.  
**Both**, ambos, as; los (las) dos.  
**Box**, caja, F.  
**Boy**, *muchācho*, M.  
**Bracelet**, *pulsēra*, F.

**Branch**, ramo, M., *ramāl*, M.  
**Break** (*to*), *rompēr*; *to b. in pieces*,  
*hacer pedāzos*, or *añicos*.  
**Break out** (*to*), *estallar*.  
**Bright**, vivo, a; claro, a.  
**Brilliant**, *brillānte*.  
**Bring** (*to*), *traer*; *brings*, *trāe*; *he*  
*brought*, *trājo*.  
**Broad**, ancho, a.  
**Brother**, hermano, M.  
**Building**, edificio, M.  
**Busy**, *ocupādo*, a, (*at*, en).  
**Busy one's self** (*to*), *ocuparse* (*with*  
or *at*, en).  
**But**, pero, mas; (*after neg. sent.*),  
*sino*.  
**Buy** (*to*), *comprār*.

C.

**Cadiz**, Cádiz; *of or pertaining to*  
*Cádiz*, *gaditāno*, a.  
**Cadiz** (*of*), *Gaditāno*, a.  
**Call**, visita, F.  
**Call** (*to*), *llamār*; *called*, *llamādo*, a.  
**Call one's self** (*to*), *llamarse*.  
**Called** (*to be*), *llamarse*; *is c.* or  
*named*, *se llama*; *are c. (they)*, *se*  
*llaman*.  
**Calmly**, con calma; tranquilo, a,  
(adj. for adv.).  
**Campaign**, *campaña*, F.  
**Can**, poder; *I c.*, puedo; *I cannot*,  
*no puedo*; *he c.*, puede; *he cannot*,  
*no puede*; *you c.*, V. puede, or V.  
*podrá* (if the idea is future).  
**Cap**, gorra, F.  
**Capable**, *capaz*.  
**Capacity**, *capacidād*, F.  
**Capital**, *capitāl*, F.; (*of Spain*)  
*corte*, F.  
**Captain**, *capitān*, M.

- Capture**, toma, F.  
**Car** (*railway*), coche, M.; *the cars*, el tren, SING.  
**Care**, cuidādo, M.  
**Care** (*to*), *meaning inclination*, querē (quiero, quieres, etc.); *not to c.*, no querē.  
**Carelessly**, descuidādamente; con ligerēza.  
**Carlist**, Carlista, M. and F.  
**Carriage**, coche, M.  
**Carry** (*to*), llevār.  
**Carry off** (*to*), llevār; llevāse; llevār fuera.  
**Carthage**, Cartagēna, F.  
**Castile**, Castilla, F.; *New C.*, Castilla la Nueva; *Old C.*, Castilla la Vieja.  
**Castilian**, Castellāno, a, M. and F.; adj., castellāno, a.  
**Cat**, gato, M.; gata, F.  
**Catalonian**, Catalān, a; catalan, a.  
**Catch** (*to*), cogēr (cojo, coges, etc.); capturār.  
**Cavalier**, caballēro, M.  
**Cease** (*to*), dejār (*to*, de).  
**Ceiling**, techo, M.  
**Celebrated**, célebre, famōso, a.  
**Cent**, centāvo, M. (Span. Am.).  
**Centre**, centro, M.  
**Century**, siglo, M.  
**Certain**—*a c.*, cierto, a (*without un, una*); *in a c. class*, en cierta clase; *superl.* certísimo, a, and certísimo, a.  
**Chair**, silla, F.  
**Change** (*to*), variār de (*direction, opinion*); mudār de (*residence, clothes, etc.*).  
**Chapter**, capítulo, M.  
**Character**, carácter, M.  
**Characteristics of** (*the*), el carácter de.  
**Charge** (*care, office*), encargo, M.  
**Charitable**, caritativo, a.  
**Charles**, Cárlos.  
**Cheerfully**, alēgremente.  
**Cherish** (*to*), abrigār.  
**Chieftain**, cabecilla (*of Carlist bands*), M.  
**Child** (*young*), niño; (*of any age*), hijo, M.  
**Children** (*young*), niños; (*of any age*), hijos, M.  
**Chilian** (*of Chili*), Chilēno, a, M. and F.; chilēno, a.  
**Christianity**, cristianismo, M.  
**Church**, iglésia, F.  
**Circumstance**, circunstācia, F., caso, M.; *under the c—s*, bajo las circunstancias.  
**Citizen** (*civilly*), vecino, M.; (*politically*), ciudadāno, M.  
**City**, ciudad, F. (*common name*); poblaciōn, F. (*with reference to its inhabitants*); villa, F. (*officially and administratively*).  
**Class**, clase, F.; *in a certain c.*, en cierta c.  
**Clear**, claro, a; despejādo, a.  
**Clear up** (*to*), aclarār.  
**Clever**, hábil.  
**Close**, fin, M.; *at the c. of*, á fines de, á últimos de (*in dates*).  
**Clothes**, ropa, F. (coll.).  
**Cloud**, nube, F.  
**Coast**, costa, F.  
**Cobbler**, zapatēro de viejo, M.  
**Coetaneous**, coetáneo, a.  
**Coin**, monēda, F.  
**Cold**, frio, M.; *to be c.*, hacēr f.; *to be very c.*, hacer mucho f.

**Collection**, colección, F.

**Color**, color, M.

**Column**, columna, F.

**Combatant**, combatiente, M.

**Come** (*to*), venir (vengo, vienes, *etc.*); *he came*, vino.

**Come back** (*to*), volver (vuelvo, vuelves, *etc.*).

**Come down** (*to*), bajar.

**Come forward** (*to*), adelantarse; presentarse.

**Come from** (*to*), venir de; salir de.

**Come in** (*to*), entrar; pasar.

**Come near** (*to*), acercarse.

**Come out** (*to*), salir (salgo, sales, *etc.*).

**Come up** (*to*), subir.

**Comfortable**, cómodo, a.

**Command**, mando, M. (*authority over*).

**Commandment**, mandamiento, M. (*divine*); mandato, M. (*human*).

**Commerce**, comercio, M.

**Common**, común; ordinario, a.

**Commonwealth**, república, F.

**Companion**, compañero, a, M. and F.

**Concluded**, concluido, a.

**Condition**, condición, F.

**Conduct**, conducta, F., comportamiento, M.

**Confidence**, confianza, F.

**Congenial**, simpático, a.

**Connect** (*to*), unir (*with*, á); enlazar (*with*, con).

**Conscience**, conciencia, F.

**Conscript**, quinto, M.

**Consent**, consentimiento, M.; *with the c. of*, con c. de.

**Consider** (*to*), considerar (considero, as, a); meditar.

**Considerable**, bastánte.

**Consist** (*to*), consistir (*of*, en); constar (*of*, de).

**Constantinople**, Constantinópla, F.

**Constitutional**, constitucional.

**Construct** (*to*), construir.

**Contented**, contento, a; satisfecho, a.

**Contrary**, contrário, a; opuesto, a.

**Contribute** (*to*), contribuir (contribuyo, yes, ye); *have contributed* (*they*), han contribuido.

**Convenient**, cómodo, a, (*comfortable*); conveniente (*expedient*).

**Conversation**, conversaci6n, F.

**Cool**, fresco, a.

**Cost** (*to*), costar (cuesto, as).

**Costume**, traje, M.

**Couched**, concebido, a.

**Counsel**, consejo, M.

**Count**, conde, M.

**Countess**, condesa, F.

**Country**, pais, M. (*general*); campo, M. (*not city*, rus); patria, F. (*native country or province*); campiña, F. (*environs*, campagna).

**Couple**, par, M.

**Courage**, valor, M.

**Course**, rumbo, M.; *of c.*, sin duda; naturalmente.

**Courteous**, cortés, fino, a.

**Cousin**, primo, a, M. and F.

**Cross**, cruz, PL., cruces, F.

**Cry** (*to*), llorar (*to weep*); gritar (*to exclaim*).

**Cuban**, Cubano, a, M. and F.; cubano, a; de Cuba.

**Curious**, raro, a; extraño, a.

**Custom**, costumbre, F.

## D.

- Danger**, peligro, M.  
**Dark**, oscuro, a.  
**Day**, día, M.; *every d.*, todos los días.  
**Deceive** (*to*), engañar.  
**Decision**, decisión, F.  
**Declaration**, declaración, F., confesión, F.  
**Deep**, profundo, a.  
**Defect**, defecto, M.; falta, F.  
**Definite**, definitivo, a.  
**Demand**, exigencia, F.  
**Deny** (*to*), negar, rehusar.  
**Deserve** (*to*), merecer (merezo, merces, ce).  
**Design**, proyecto, M.; propósito, M.  
**Develop** (*to*), desarrollar; *to be d—d*, desarrollarse; *may be d—d more*, se hayan desarrollado más.  
**Devout**, piadoso, a; pio, a.  
**Different**, distinto, a; diferente.  
**Difficult**, difícil.  
**Diligence**, aplicación, F.  
**Diligent**, aplicado, a.  
**Dine** (*to*), comer.  
**Dinner**, comida, F.  
**Direct** (*to*), dirigir (dirijo, diriges, -ge); *he directed*, dirigió.  
**Discern** (*to*), discernir (discierno, -nes, -ne).  
**Discharge** (*to*), desempeñar; cumplir con (*as an obligation*).  
**Distinguish** (*to*), distinguir (distingo, gues, gue).  
**Distinguished**, distinguido, a, (before the noun).  
**Disturb** (*to*), alborotar (*of turmoil*); estorbar (*of inconvenience*).

- Do** (*to*), hacer (hago, haces); *of doing*, de hacer.  
**Doctor**, doctor, M.; médico, M.; facultativo, M.  
**Document**, documento, M.  
**Dog**, perro, M.  
**Dollar**, peso, M. (Spain and Amer.); duro, M. (Spain).  
**Door**, puerta, F.  
**Dozen**, docena, F.  
**Draft**, borrador, M.  
**Dramatic**, dramático, a.  
**Draughtsman**, perito, M.; dibujador, M.  
**Draw** (*to*), tirar (*pull*).  
**Draw up** (*to*), extender (*a document*); redactar, hacer (*of plans*); *drawn up*, puesto en orden (*of soldiers*).  
**Drawing-room**, sala, F.  
**Dress**, vestido, M.; traje, M.  
**Drive**, paseo, M.  
**Dry**, seco, a.  
**Drum**, tambor, M.  
**Dull**, triste; fastidioso, a.  
**Dulled**, entorpecido, a; insensible (*of conscience*).  
**During**, durante.  
**Duty**, deber, m.; obligación, F.

## E.

- Eagle**, águila, F.  
**Earl**, conde, M.  
**Early**, temprano; adj., antiguo, a, (*ancient*).  
**Eastern**, oriental.  
**Easy**, fácil.  
**Easy-chair**, sillón, M.  
**Eat** (*to*), comer.  
**Educated**, educado, a; *the educated*, PL., la gente ilustrada (coll.).

**Emperor**, emperadōr, M.  
**Employ**, empleār; *employed*, em-  
 pleado, a.  
**End**, fin, m.; *at the end*, al fin.  
**Enemy**, enemigo, M.  
**Engender** (*to*), engendrār.  
**Engine**, máquina, F.; locomotora;  
 (Sp. America) locomotiva, F.  
**English**, inglēs, a.  
**Englishman**, Inglēs, M.  
**Englishwoman**, Inglēsa, F.  
**Engraved**, grabado, a.  
**Engraving**, grabado, M.  
**Enlightened**, ilustrado, a.  
**Entangling**, enredadōr, a.  
**Enter** (*to*), entrār (*into*, en).  
**Entertaining**, divertido, a.  
**Envelope**, sobre, M.  
**Err** (*to*), errār (yerro, as, a).  
**Errand-boy**, mozo, M.; mandadē-  
 ro, M.  
**Escorial**, el Escoriāl; (*full name*:  
 San Lorenzo del Escoriāl).  
**Estate**, estado, M. (*class*); heredad,  
 F. (*property*).  
**Et cætera**, et cætera.  
**Europe**, Eurōpa, F.; *western E.*, la  
 Europa occidental; el oeste de E.  
**Europe** (*of*), European, europēo, a.  
**Even**, áun; *even if*, áun cuando  
 (w. subj.).  
**Every**, cada.  
**Everywhere**, por todas partes.  
**Evidence**, prueba, F.; indicio, M.  
**Exceedingly**, sūmamente.  
**Except**, excepto; salvo.  
**Excite** (*to*), excitār, movēr.  
**Excursion-ticket**, billēte de re-  
 creō (*i.e.*, de ida y vuelta).  
**Excursion-train**, tren de recreō;  
 "excursion" is viaje de r.

**Excuse** (*to*), dispensār.  
**Exercise**, tema, M.  
**Expect** (*to*), esperar.  
**Experience**, experiēcia, F.  
**Express-train**, el tren corrēo, or  
 el corrēo; el tren de gran veloci-  
 dad (*of express freight*).  
**Extraordinary**, especial, extraor-  
 dinario, a.  
**Extreme**, extrēmo, a.  
**Eye**, ojo, M.

# F.

**Fabric**, tejido, M.  
**Fair**, feria, F.  
**Fair** (*of weather*), bueno, a.  
**Faithful**, fiel.  
**Faithfully**, fielmente; con fidelidad.  
**Fall** (*to*), caer (cāigo, cāes, cāe).  
**Fall down** (*to*), caerse.  
**Famous**, célebre; famōso, a.  
**Fancy** (*to*), figurārse; (*to think, be-  
 lieve*) creēr.  
**Farewell**, adiōs; vaya V. con Diōs,  
 or simply con Diōs.  
**Farce**, farsa, F.; *to act a'f.*, repre-  
 sentār una farsa.  
**Farmer**, labradōr, M.; cultivadōr, M.  
**Fate**, suerte, F.; destino, M.  
**Father**, padre, M.  
**Favor**, favōr, M.  
**Favorable**, favorable.  
**Fear** (*to*), temēr.  
**Feign one's self to be** (*to*), fingirse  
 (me finjo, te finges, etc.).  
**Fellow-man**, semejānte, M.  
**Festival**, fiesta, F.  
**Few** (*a*), algūnos, as; unos cuantos,  
 as; *f.*, pocos, as; *in a f. years*,  
 dentro de algunos años; *f. men*,  
 pocos hombres.

**Fewer**, ménos; no tantos, as.  
**Field**, M., campo, M.  
**Fight**, riña, F. (*personal*); com-  
 bâte, M., pelêa, F. (*general*).  
**Find** (*to*), hallâr (*what was lost*);  
 encontrâr (*to meet with*).  
**Fine**, hermôso, a; fino, a, (*quality*).  
**Fire**, fuego, M. (*element*); incêndio,  
 M. (*conflagration*).  
**Fleece**, vellôn, M.  
**Flight**, vuêlo, M. (*as of a bird*).  
**Floor**, suelo, M.; *on the f.*, al suelo  
 (*motion*); en el suelo (*rest*).  
**Flour**, harina, F.  
**Flower**, flor, F.  
**Foe**, enemigo, M.  
**Folio**, folio, M. (*size*); foja (*foliated  
 leaf*), F.  
**Following**, adj., siguiente (*after  
 noun*); *f. day*, el dia s.  
**Folly**, imprudência, F.; locûra, F.  
**For**, para (*destination*); pörque  
 (*reason*).  
**Force**, fuerza, F.  
**Foreign**, extranjêro, a.  
**Forgive** (*to*), perdonâr.  
**Form** (*to*), formâr, constituir; *they  
 f.*, constituyen.  
**Fragment**, pedâzo, M.; añicos, M.  
 PL.; *to break in f—s*, hacêr p—s,  
 a—s.  
**Fray**, lucha, F.; combâte, M.  
**Free**, libre; exento, a (*from, de*).  
**Freely**, libremente.  
**French**, francês, a.  
**Frenchman**, Francês, M.  
**Frenchwoman**, Francêsa, F.  
**Friday**, viêrnes, M.; *on F.*, el v.;  
*Fridays*, los viêrnes.  
**Friend**, amigo, M.; amiga, F.  
**Friendly**, amistôso, a; amâble.

**Friendship**, amistād, F.  
**Frock coat**, levita, F.  
**From**, de; (*place, time*) desde;  
*f. — to*, desde — á or hasta.  
**Front room**, cuarto exteriôr, M.;  
 habitaciôn exteriôr, F., or cuarto  
 que da á la calle.  
**Frontier**, frontêra, F.  
**Fruit**, fruto, M. (*on the tree*); fruta,  
 F. (*plucked*).  
**Fulfil** (*to*), cumplir; *to f. (an obli-  
 gation)*, cumplir con.  
**Full**, lleno, a; replêto, a, (*of, de*).  
**Furnish** (*to*), surtir (*to provide*);  
*they f.*, surten — (*with, de*).  
**Further**, más; además (*besides*).

## G.

**Gallant**, galânté.  
**Garden**, jardín, M.; huerta, F.  
**Gate**, puerta, F.  
**Gay**, alêgre.  
**General**, general, M. adj., *id.*  
**Generally**, ordinariamente.  
**Gentle**, dulce, suave (*of persons*);  
 manso, a, (*of animals*).  
**Gentleman**, caballêro, M.; señôr, M.  
**German**, alemân, a; Alemân, a,  
 M. and F.  
**Get up** (*to*), levantârse; *without  
 getting up*, sin levantârse.  
**Get better**, ponêrse mejôr; *to be  
 getting b.*, ir poniëndosem.  
**Get well** (*to*), ponêrse bueno, a;  
*to g. w. again*, volvêrse á ponêr  
 bueno, a.  
**Girl**, muchâcha, F.; niña, F.  
**Give** (*to*), dar; (*as a present*)  
 regalâr; *to give an account of*,  
 hacêr la relaciôn de.

**Give off** (*to*), echār.

**Give up** (*to*), abandonār; entregār.

**Glad** (*to be*), alegrārse; *I am g.*, me alegró (*that, de que*); *are you g.?* ¿se alegró V.? *How g. I am!* ¡qué alegría! *or*; cuánto me alegró!

**Glance**, mirāda, F.

**Go** (*to*), ir (*definite*); andār (*vague*); *to be going to* (*inf.*), ir á; *I am going*, voy; *I am going to* (*inf.*), voy á; *one goes*, se va.

**Go away** (*to*), irse.

**Go down** (*to*), bajār; *to go d. stairs*, bajār la escalēra.

**Go in** (*to*), entrār.

**Go on** (*to*), seguir (*sigo, sigues*).

**Go out** (*to*), salir (*to, á*); *to go o. again*, volvēr á salir (*salgo, sales, sale*).

**Go up** (*to*), subir; *to go up stairs*, s. la escalēra.

**Go and return** (*out and back*), ida y vuelta, F.

**God**, Diōs, M.

**Godōy** (*Manuēl*), favorite of Charles IV., and his universal minister till the 18th of March, 1808.

**Gold**, oro, M.

**Good**, bueno, a, (*buen*).

**Goods** ( *blessings*), biēnes, M. PL.; (*mdse.*), géneros, M. PL.

**Goodness**, bondād, F.

**Government**, gobiērno, M.

**Graceful**, graciōso, a.

**Grammar**, gramática, F.

**Grand**, grande (*gran*); *in full uniform*, de gran lujo; de gala.

**Gravity**, gravedad, F.; lo grave.

**Great**, grande (*gran*).

**Grow** (*to*), crecēr (*crezco, creces, crece*).

**Guarantee**, garantía, F.

## H.

**Habit**, costūmbre, F.; *bad h.*, mala c., *or* vicio, M.

**Half** (*subst.*), mitād, F.; *one h.*, la m.; *one h. of a day*, la m. de un día.

**Half** (*adj.*), mēdio, a; *h. a*, medio, a; *h. a day*, medio día; *a day and a h.*, un día y medio.

**Hand**, mano, F.; *on the other h.*, por otra parte; por otro lado.

**Hand-laid**, hecho á mano; *h.-l. paper*, papēl h. á m.

**Hang** (*to*), colgār (*on, de*); pendēr (*to, on, de*).

**Hang up** (*to*), colgār (*cuelgo, as, a*).

**Happen** (*to*), sucedēr; *it happens*, sucede.

**Happy**, feliz; dichōso, a.

**Harm**, daño, M.

**Harmonious**, armoniōso, a.

**Hat**, sombrero, M.

**Have** (*to*), habēr (*only as an auxil.* — *he, has, ha*); tenēr (*the proper verb* — *tengo, tienes, tiene*).

**Have just** (*to*), acabār de (*inf.*); *he has just gone out*, acaba de salir.

**Have to** (*to*), tenēr que; *I h. to do it*, tengo que hacērlo.

**Head-dress**, toca, F.; peinādo, M.

**Hear** (*to*), oír (*oigo, oyes*); enten-  
dēr (*to understand* — *entiendo, des, de*); (*of a slight noise*) sen-  
tir (*siento, tes, te*).

**Help** (*to*), ayudār (*ayūdo, as, a*).

**Help**, socorro; *to cry for h.*, gritār al s.



**Here**, aquí.

**High**, alto, a.

**Highlander**, Montañés, a.

**Highway-robber**, salteador de caminos, m.

**History**, historia, f.

**Hit on** (*to*), dar con.

**Home**, adv., á casa (*motion*); en casa (*rest*).

**Honor**, honor, m.; honra, f.

**Honor** (*to*), honrar.

**Hoop**, aro, m.

**Horse**, caballo, m.

**Hot**, caluroso, a, (*of the sun*); caliente (*of fire*).

**Hot** (*to be*), hacer calor (*of the weather*); *it is hot*, hace c.; *it is very hot*, hace mucho c.; *it is hotter than*, hace más c. que.

**Hotel**, hotel (*not an apartment house*), m.; fonda (*for guests*), f.

**Hour**, hora, f.

**House**, casa, f.

**Household**, casa, f.

**How?** ¿cómo? *how much?* ¿cuánto, a? *many?* ¿cuántos, as?

**However**, sin embargo.

**Humiliating**, humillante.

**Hundred** (*one*), ciento (cien).

**Hunger**, hambre, f.; *to be hungry*, tener h.

## I

**Idle**, ocioso, a, (*with estar*).

**If**, si.

**Ignorant**, ignorante (*with ser*).

**Ill**, malo, a; enfermo, a, (*with estar*).

**Ill**, adv., mal.

**Illustrated**, ilustrado, a.

**Impassible**, intransitable.

**Impatient**, impaciente; *to become i.*,

impacientarse; *out of patience*, impacientado, a.

**Impetus**, ímpetu, m.; impetuosidad, f.

**Important**, importante.

**Important** (*to be*), importar; convenir; *is i.*, importa; conviene; *is very i.*, importa mucho; conviene mucho.

**Impossible**, imposible.

**In**, en; *in order that*, para que (w. subj.); *in order to*, para (w. inf.).

**Incessantly**, sin cesar, continuamente.

**Income**, renta, f., or rentas, f. PL.

**Indispensable**, indispensable.

**Individual**, individuo, m.

**Infinitely**, infinito.

**Influential**, influyente.

**Ink**, tinta, f.

**Inkstand**, tintero, m.

**Innocent**, inocente.

**Inside**, interior.

**Interest**, interés, m.; *great i.*, mucho interés; *to the i. of the play*, al interés que inspira la comedia.

**Intimate**, íntimo, a.

**Into**, en.

**Introduction**, introducción, f.

**Inundation**, desbordamiento, m.; avenida, f.

**Invention**, invención, f.

**Invite** (*to*), convidar.

**Iron**, hierro, m.

**Iron-clad**, blindado, a; *i.-c. frigate*, fragata blindada.

## J

**Jane**, Juana, f.

**Jest** (*to*), chancear (chanceo, ceas, cea).

**Jewel**, joya, F.; alhāja, F.  
**Jewelry**, joyería, F.; alhājas, F. PL.  
**John**, Juan, M.  
**Journey**, viāje, M.; *good j.*, feliz viāje.  
**Joy**, alegría, F.; gozo, M.  
**Judge**, juēz, M. (PL., juēces).  
**Judgment**, juicio, M.  
**Julia**, Jūlia and Juliāna, F.  
**Jump up** (*to*), saltar.  
**Just**, justo, a; *to have j.*, acabār de.

## K.

**Keep** (*to*), guardār; quedārse con.  
**Kind**, bueno, a; bondadōso, a, (*to*, para).  
**Kind**, clase, F.; espēcie, F.; *what k. of weather?* ¿qué tal tiempo?  
**King**, rey, M.; *k. and queen*, los reyes, PL. (*the sovereigns*).  
**Kite**, comēta, F.  
**Knife**, cuchillo, M. (*table k.*); cuchilla, F. (*in machinery*); cortaplūmas, M. SING. and PL. (*pocket k.*); navaja, F. (*clasp k.*, and common name for jack-k. among the lower classes).  
**Know** (*to*), sabēr (*of things*, sé, sabes, sabe); conocer (*of persons and of things*, to k. thoroughly, conozco, conoces, ce).  
**Know how** (*to*), sabēr (w. inf.).  
**Known**, conocido, a, (*persons*); sabido, a, (*things*).

## L.

**Laborer**, trabajadōr, M.; obrēro, M.  
**Lady**, señōra, F.; dama, F.  
**Lamb**, cordēro, M.; corderito, a, M. and F.

**Land**, tierra, F.; terrēno, M. (*tract*); heredādes, F. PL.  
**Lane**, callejuēla, F.  
**Language**, lengua, F.; idiōma, M.; la lengua castellāna: el castellano es idioma muy fácil.  
**Large**, grande (after the noun).  
**Largest**, el (la, lo) más grande; el (la) mayōr.  
**Last**, último, a; postrēro, a, (postrēr); *last night*, anoche.  
**Late**, tarde.  
**Lateral**, lateral.  
**Latin**, subs., Latin; adj., latino, a.  
**Latter** (*the*), éste, ésta; éstos, éstas.  
**Law**, ley, F.  
**Lawrence** (*St.*), San Lorenzo.  
**Lead** (*to*), conducir, llevar; *to l. to*, llevar, conducir.  
**Lead** (*metal*), plomo, M.  
**Leaf**, hoja, F. (*of a tree or a book*).  
**Learn** (*to*), aprendēr (*to*, á).  
**Learned**, erudito, a; sábio, a.  
**Leave** (*to*), dejār (*not to take*); salir (*to depart*, foll. by de); *to l. by the train*, salir con el tren; salir, partir (*to go*); *when do you l.?* ¿cuándo sale V.? or ¿parte V.?  
**Lecture**, conferēncia, F.  
**Leg**, pié, M. (*of a table*).  
**Lemon**, limōn, M.  
**Lend** (*to*), prestār (with dat. of pers.).  
**Less**, ménos; no — tanto, a.  
**Lesson**, lección, F.  
**Let** (with imperat.), que (with subj.), with 3d pers. SING. and PL.  
**Letter**, carta, F.  
**Lettuce**, lechuga, F.  
**Lewis**, Luis.  
**Library**, bibliotēca, F.

**Notify** (*to*), avisar; dar aviso (*to*, á).

**Now**, ahora.

**Number**, número, M.; *a n. of*, una porción de.

**Nurse**, nodriza, F.

## O.

**Object**, motivo, M. (*cause, end*); objeto, M. (*visible*).

**Obligation**, obligaci3n, F.; *to discharge one's o.*, cumplir con su obligaci3n.

**Obliged** (*to be*), agradecer (agradezco, agradeces, ce — *under obligation*); *the stranger was o. to...*, al desconocido le fué forzoso el... (inf.).

**Occasion**, ocasi3n, F.

**Occur** (*to*), suceder; acaecer; tener lugar.

**O'clock**, hora, F.; *at what o'clock?* ¿á qué hora?

**Octavo**, octavo, M.; *in octavo*, en octavo.

**October**, Octubre, M.; *Oct. 27th*, á veinte y siete de Octubre, *or* el día veinte y siete de Octubre.

**Odd**, raro, a; extraño, a; *o. (number)*, impar.

**Offence**, disgusto, M.; *to take offence*, incomodarse.

**Officer**, oficial, M.

**Official**, oficial.

**Often**, amenudo; muchas veces.

**Old**, viejo, a; antiguo, a; *old man*, anciano, M.

**Old age**, vejez, F.

**Old people**, ancianos, M. PL.

**On**, en; sobre; encima de.

**Once**, una vez (*one time*); ántes (*formerly*); antiguamente (*of old*).

**One**, with a verb, is expressed by the reflexive *se*, 3d SING.; *one goes*, se va.

**One's**, su; PL., sus.

**Only**, adv., sólo; únicamente; adj., único, a.

**Open** (*to*), abrir; p.p. abierto.

**Opera-glasses**, gemelos, M. PL.

**Opinion**, parecer, M.; *in our o.*, á nuestro parecer.

**Oporto**, Porto, M.

**Opponent**, contrario, M.; contrincante.

**Optician**, óptico, M.

**Or**, ó, (before *o* or *ho*) ú.

**Orange**, naranja, F.

**Order**, órden, F.; *by o. of*, de o. de.

**Ornament**, adorno, M.

**Others**, otros, as.

**Our**, nuestro, a.

**Out and back**, ida y vuelta.

**Out of patience**, impacientado, a; impaciente.

**Over**, por (*through*); por (*through-out*); *over all Spain*, por toda España.

**Overcast**, encapotado, a.

**Own**, propio, a.

**Ox**, buey, M. (PL. bueyes).

## P.

**Page**, página, F.

**Pageant**, fausto, M.

**Painting**, cuadro, M.; pintura, F.

**Palace**, palacio, M.

**Paper**, papel; periódico, M.; *the morning p.*, el per. de la mañana.

**Parable**, parábola, F.

**Paradise**, paraíso, M.  
**Pardon** (*to*), perdonar; *pardon*, brother, perdōne, hermano.  
**Parent**, padre, M.; PL., pādr̄es, M.  
**Parish-priest**, cura-párroco, M.  
**Part**, parte, F.; *on the p. of*, de parte de.  
**Partridge**, perdiz, F.  
**Party**, partido, M.  
**Pass** (*to*), pasar.  
**Passive**, pasivo, a.  
**Passport**, pasapórte, M.  
**Patent**, patente, F.  
**Patience**, paciēcia, F.  
**Paul**, Pablo.  
**Peace**, paz, F.  
**Pear**, pera, F.  
**Pen**, pluma, F.  
**Penalty**, pena, F.  
**Pencil**, lápiz, M.; lapicēro, M.  
**Pensioned**, jubilādo, a.  
**People**, gente, F.; pueblo, M.  
**Permanent**, permanēnte.  
**Permit** (*to*), permitir.  
**Persist** (*to*), empeñarse (*in*, *en*).  
**Person**, persōna, F.  
**Perspire**, transpirar; sudar.  
**Peter**, Pedro.  
**Philadelphia**, Filadēlfia.  
**Phœnician**, Fenicio, a; fenicio, a.  
**Physician**, médico, M.  
**Pick up** (*to*), recoger (*recōjo*, -cōges, -cōge).  
**Picture**, cuadro, M.; lámina (*in books*), F.  
**Picturesque**, pintoresco, a.  
**Piece**, pedāzo, M.; *piece of news*, noticia, F.  
**Place**, lugar, M.; sitio, M.  
**Place** (*to*), poner (pongo, pones, pone); colocar.

**Plan**, plano, M. (*of a place*); modēlo, M. (*model*).  
**Play** (*to*), jugar (juego, as, a).  
**Play**, comēdia, F.; piēza, F.  
**Plaything**, juguete, M.  
**Pleasant**, agradāble.  
**Please** (*to*), agradar; *it pleases* gusta, agrada, place.  
**Poem**, poema, M.  
**Point to** (*to*), indicār.  
**Poor**, pobre (*indigent*); malo, a, (*of things*).  
**Popular**, popular.  
**Post**, puesto, M.  
**Portugal**, Portugal.  
**Position**, situaciōn, F. (*state*); *of her p.*, de la situaciōn en que se encontrāba.  
**Power**, poder, M.  
**Praise** (*to*), alabar; (*of things*) celebrār.  
**Precious**, preciōso, a; de prēcio; *more p.*, de más precio.  
**Present**, regalo, M.  
**Present**, adj., presente.  
**Presently**, luego; pronto; dentro de poco.  
**Press**, imprenta, F.  
**Pretended**, fingido, a.  
**Pretty**, bonito, a; guapo, a.  
**Prince**, príncipe, M.  
**Princess**, princēsa, F.  
**Principal**, principal.  
**Principle**, principio, M.  
**Print** (*to*), imprimir; p.p. imprēso, a.  
**Printed**, imprēso, a.  
**Printing**, imprenta, F. (*the art*); impresiōn, F. (*the act*).  
**Private**, particular.  
**Prodigal**, pródigo, a.  
**Producing**, adj., productōr, a.

Profit, provecho, M.  
 Profitable, provechoso, a; de provecho.  
 Profound, profundo, a.  
 Project, proyecto, M.  
 Promise (*to*), prometer.  
 Property, fincas, F. PL.  
 Prosperity, prosperidad, F.  
 Proud, orgulloso, a.  
 Proverb, refrán, M.  
 Province, provincia, F.; país, M.  
 Public, público, a; subst. público, M.  
 Public square, plaza, F.  
 Punishment, castigo, M.  
 Purchase (*to*), comprar.  
 Purpose, propósito, M.; fin, M.; *for what p.?* ¿á qué? (pop.).  
 Put *one's self* (*to*), ponerse; colocarse.  
 Put on (*to*), ponerse.

## Q.

Quail, codorniz, F.  
 Quality, calidad, F.; condición, F.  
 Quarter, cuarto, M.; (*of a pound*), cuarterón, M.; (*of a hundred*), arroba, F.  
 Cuarto, cuarto, M.; *in q.*, en cuarto.  
 Queen, reina, F.  
 Question, cuestión, F.; asunto, M.  
 Quiet, tranquilo, a.  
 Quite, bastante; bien.

## R.

Rail-way, ferro-carril, M.; PL., ferro-carriles.  
 Rain (*to*), llover (llueve).  
 Rain, lluvia, F.  
 Rainy, lluvioso, a.  
 Raisin, pasa, F.

Rather, más bien; mejor dicho.  
 Ratification, ratificación, F.  
 Ratify (*to*), ratificar.  
 Raw-recruit, bisoño; PL., gente bisoña.  
 Read (*to*), leer; *he r.*, leyó.  
 Read (p. part.), leído, a.  
 Real, real, M.  
 Receipts, ingresos, M. PL.  
 Receive (*to*), recibir; admitir.  
 Recollection, recuerdo, M.  
 Reflection, recuerdo, M.; reflexión, F.  
 Refuse (*to*), negarse (*to*, á) — (me niego á).  
 Region, país, M.  
 Reign, reinado, M.  
 Reject (*to*), rechazar, despreciar.  
 Relative, pariente, M.; parenta (*popular*), F.  
 Relieve (*to*), aliviar, amparar; *God r. you!* ¡Dios le ampare á V.!  
 Religious, piadoso, a; devoto, a.  
 Remain (*to*), permanecer (-ezco).  
 Remark, observación, F.; advertencia, F.  
 Remedy, remedio, M.  
 Remember (*to*), acordarse (acuerdo, as, a — *fol.* by de, *to r. a thing or a person*); recordar (recuerdo, as, a — *to r. that*, etc.); *I r. him*, me acuerdo de él; *I r. that*, recuerdo que...; *do you r.?* ¿recuerda V.? *to r. (to keep in mind)*, tener presente; *one must r.*, se ha de tener p., *or se debe tener p.*  
 Reproof, censura, F.  
 Reside (*to*), habitar (direct or with *en*).  
 Resident, vecino, a, M. and F. (*of a town*).

**Resign** (*to*), hacē demisiōn; *to r. one's self*, resignāse (*to*, á), conformarse (*to*, con).

**Resource**, recurso, M.

**Respect**, consideraciōn, F. (*for*, para).

**Retire** (*to*), retirāse (*to withdraw*).

**Return** (*to*), volvēr (vuelvo, ves, ve); *in returning*, en v.

**Review**, revista, F.; formaciōn, F. (*popular*).

**Reward**, premio, M.; recompensa, F.

**Ribbon**, cinta, F.

**Rich**, rico, a.

**Riches**, riquēza, F., or PL. riquēzas.

**Right** — *on the r.*, á la derecha (*sc. mano*).

**Ring**, anillo, M. (*plain*); sortija, F. (*jewelled*).

**Road**, camino, M.; línea, F. (*system of railroads*).

**Robber**, bandido, M.; ladrōn, M.

**Roguish**, burlōn, a.

**Roof**, tejādo, M.

**Room**, habitaciōn, F., cuarto, M.

**Rose**, rosa, F.

**Round about**, alredecor (adv.).

**Row**, fila, F.

**Royal**, real.

**Rule**, regla, F.

**Run**, corrēr.

**Running**, corriendo; *r. across the page*, á renglōn seguido.

## S.

**Sail**, vela, F. (*of a vessel*).

**Sailor**, marinero, M.

**Salad**, ensalāda, F.

**Salute** (*to*), saludār.

**Same**, mismo, a; *the same (thing)*, lo mismo.

**Santander**, Santandēr.

**Saragossa**, Zaragōza [*Caesārea Augusta*].

**Saturday**, sábadō, M.

**Say** (*to*), decir (digo, dices, dice), *he says*, dice; *said*, dicho; *it is said*, se dice; *it may be said*, se puede decir.

**Scarcely**, apénas; no — casi.

**Scene**, escēna, F.; espectáculo, M.

**Scholar**, discípulo, M. (*pupil*); erudito, M. (*learned man*).

**School**, colēgio, M., and escuela, F. (*used interchangeably*).

**Score**, veintēna, F.

**Sea**, mar, m.

**Search** (*to*), or *to s. for*, buscār.

**Season**, temporāda, F.; *s. ticket*, abōno, or billete de a.; *I have a s. t.*, estoy abonādo, a.

**Secretary**, secretārio, M.; *s. of State*, s. de Estado, or ministro de Estado.

**See** (*to*), ver (veo, ves, ve); *I saw*, ví; *he saw*, vió; *seeing*, viendo.

**Seek** (*to*), buscār; *to s. to*, procurār de, tratār de (inf.).

**Seem** (*to*), parecer; *which seemed to surround her*, que al parecer la amenazaba; *it seems*, parece.

**Seen**, visto, a.

**Seldom**, raras veces; pocas veces.

**Selectman**, hombre bueno (*ancient*, home bueno).

**Self-respect**, amōr propio, M.

**Selfish**, egoista; *s. vanity*, vano egoismo.

**Sell** (*to*), vendēr; *he sold*, vendió.

**Senate**, senādo, M.

**Send for** (*to*), enviār á buscār.

**Sense**, sentido, M.

**Serious**, grave.

**Servant**, criado, M., criada, F.; *coll.*  
los criados *or* la servidumbre.

**Serve** (*to*), servir (sirvo, sirves, sirve).

**Service**, servicio, M.

**Set** (*to*), ponerse (*of the sun*).

**Set**, juego, M.; *s. of chairs*, silla-  
ría, F.

**Several**, vários, as.

**Severe**, severo, a.

**Seville** (pron. *Sév'il*), Sevilla;  
*S. train*, tren de Sevilla.

**Shape**, forma, F.

**Sheep**, oveja, F.

**Shelter** *one's self* (*to*), ampararse,  
refugiarse.

**Shine forth** (*to*), brillar.

**Ship**, buque, M. (*merchant*); buque  
de guerra, *or* fragata, F. (*war*).

**Shocking**, atroz.

**Shoe**, zapato, M.

**Shoemaker**, zapatero, M.

**Shop**, tienda, F.

**Shop-keeper**, tendero, M.

**Short**, corto, a.

**Shout**, grito, M.

**Shut** (*to*), cerrar (cierro, as, a);  
*he shuts*, cierra.

**Sign**, señal, F.; *it is a s.*, es señal.

**Sign** (*to*), firmar; *signed*, firmado,  
a; *it was s.*, fué firmado, a.

**Silence**, silencio, M.

**Silver**, plata, F.

**Since**, desde (*time*).

**Sister**, hermana, F.

**Sit down** (*to*), sentarse, (me siento,  
te sientas); *he sits down*, se sienta;  
*sit down*, siéntese V.

**Sitting-room**, gabinete, M.

**Situation**, situación, F.

**Sixteen** mo (16mo), dieciseisavo.

**Size**, tamaño, M.

**Skip about** (*to*), brincár; *to s. a.*  
*again*, volver á brincár; *she skips*  
*a. again*, vuelve á b.

**Sky**, cielo, M.

**Slate**, pizarra, F.

**Slim**, flojo, a, (*of attendance*).

**Small**, pequeño, a.

**Snow**, nieve, F.

**So**, tan; *s. bad*, tan malo; *s. (thus)*,  
así; *s. it is*, así es; *s. (it)*, lo;  
*s. much*, tanto, a; *s. many*, tan-  
tos, as.

**Soberly**, sobriamente.

**Society**, sociedad, F.

**Sofa**, sofá, M.

**Soldier**, soldado, M.; militar, M.

**Some**, algunos, as; unos, as; unos  
cuantos, unas cuantas.

**Something**, alguna cosa; algo.

**Sometimes**, algunas veces.

**Son**, hijo, M.

**Song**, canción, F., canto, M.

**Soon**, pronto, luego.

**Soul**, alma, F.; ánima, F. (*disem-  
bodied spirits*).

**Sour**, agrio, a.

**South**, mediodía, M.; *in the s. of*  
*Spain*, en el m. de España; *in*  
*the extreme s.*, en el extremo sur.

**Spacious**, espaciado, a.

**Spain**, España, F.

**Spaniard**, Español, a, M. and F.

**Spanish**, español, a; *S. woman*,  
Española, F.

**Spanish-America**, la América es-  
pañola.

**Speak** (*to*), hablar; *spoken*, hab-  
lado; *is s.*, se habla.

**Speech**, habla, F. (el habla, un  
habla).

**Spend** (*to*), *pasār (of time)*; *gastār (of outlay)*.

**Spirit**, espíritu, M.

**Spring**, fuente, F.; manantial, M. (*source*).

**Square**, plaza, F.

**St.** (*saint*), santo *and* san (§ 127).

**Stand** (*to*), *estār en pié or de pié (the act)*, *estār*; *stood*, *estuvo*.

**Start for** (*to*), *salir para*, *marcharse para*.

**State**, *estādo*, M.; *the United States*, los *Estados Unidos*.

**Statesman**, hombre de estado, *or* estadista, M.

**Station**, *estaciōn*, F.

**Statue**, *estātua*, F.

**Stay** (*to*), *quedarse*; *to s. home*, *quedarse en casa*.

**Steamer**, *buque de vapōr*, M., *or simply vapōr*, M. [paso.

**Step**, *paso*, M.; *to take a s.*, *dar un*

**Still**, *todavía*, *aún (yet)*; *sin embargo (notwithstanding)*.

**Stir**, *animaciōn*, F.

**Stone**, *piedra*, F.

**Storm**, *tempestād*, F.

**Stormy**, *malo*, a; *lluviōso*, a; *tempestuōso*, a.

**Story**, *cuento*, M.

**Stranger**, *desconocido*, M. (*unknown*); *forastēro*, M. (*from another place*).

**Straw**, *paja*, F.; *s. hat*, *sombrēro de paja*, M.

**Street**, *calle*, F.

**Strength**, *fuerza*, F. (*physical*); *fuerzas (moral)*.

**Strewn**, *cubierto*, a; *sembrādo*, a, (*with, de*). [estudia.

**Study** (*to*), *estudiār*; *he studies*,

**Suggest** (*to*), *sugerir*; *recordār*; *he suggested*, *sugirió*, *recordó*.

**Summer**, *verāno*, M.

**Sun**, *sol*, M.

**Surround** (*to*), *rodeār*; *that seemed to s. her*, *que al parecēr la amenazāba (of danger)*.

**Surrounded**, *rodeādo*, a, (*by, de*).

**Survive** (*to*), *sobrevivir*.

**Sweet**, *dulce*.

**Sympathy**, *simpatía*, F.; *better*, PL. *las s — s*.

## T.

**Table**, *mesa*, F.

**Table-drawer**, *el cajōn de la mesa*.

**Take** (*to*), *tomār*; *he took*, *tomó*; *to t. a step*, *dar un paso*; *to t. a walk*, *dar un pasēo*.

**Take down** (*to*), *descolgār (descuelgo, as, a, of anything suspended)*.

**Take place** (*to*), *sucedēr*; *verificarse*; *tenēr lugar*.

**Talk** (*to*), *hablār*; *to talk to*, h. con.

**Tall**, *alto*, a; *grande*.

**Teacher**, *maestro*, a, M. and F.

**Tell** (*to*), *decir (digo, dices)*.

**Terror**, *terrōr*, M.; *azōte*, M.

**Text**, *texto*, M.

**Than**, *que*; (*before a numeral*) *de*; (*with a verb*) *de lo que*.

**Thank** (*to*), *agradecēr (agradezco, agradēces)*.

**That**, *ese, esa, eso*; *aquel, aquella, aquello*; *t. is*, *es decir*; *t. is so*, *eso es*.

**That**, *conj.*, *que*.

**Theatre**, *teātro*, M.; *summer or café t — s*, *teatros de verano ó de café*.



- Them**, los, M.; las, F.; les, COM.  
(gov. by a verb); ellos, *ās* (gov. by a prep.).
- Then**, entōnces (*at that time*); luego (*afterwards*).
- There**, allí; en él, en ella, en ellos, as; *t. is*, hay; *t. are*, hay.
- Therefore**, por consiguiente.
- Thief**, ladrōn, M.
- Thing**, cosa, F.
- Think** (*to*), pensār (pienso, as, a); creēr (creo, crees).
- This**, este, esta, esto.
- Thomas**, Tomás.
- Those** (*of*), los *or* las de.
- Thought**, pensamiēto, M.
- Thoughtful**, sensāto, a; cuerdo, a; grave.
- Threaten** (*to*), amenazār.
- Threatening**, amenazadōr, a.
- Throw** (*to*), arrojár; *to t. on the floor*, a. al suelo.
- Thus**, así, de este modo.
- Ticket**, billēte, M.
- Time**, tiempo, M.; *a t.*, vez, F.; *the second t.*, por segunda vez; *times*, veces, F. PL. (*occasions*).
- Timely**, oportūno, a; acertādo, a.
- Timothy**, Timotēo.
- Tired**, cansado, a (*estar*).
- Tithe**, diezmo, M.
- Title**, título, M.
- To**, á; *up to*, hasta.
- To-day**, hoy; (*at the present d.*), hoy día, *or* en el día.
- Toil** (*to*), trabajār.
- To-morrow**, mañāna; *to-m. night*, m. por la noche; *the day after to-m.*, pasado mañāna.
- Top**, peōn, M.
- Toward**, hácia (*material and moral direction*); para con (*moral direction*).
- Town**, ciudad; poblaciōn, F., villa. See *City*.
- Toy**, juguēte, M.
- Train**, tren, M.; *Seville t.*, tren de Sevilla.
- Tramway**, tranvía, *and* tramvía, M.
- Travel** (*to*), viajār.
- Traveller**, viajēro, M.
- Treacherous**, traidōr, a.
- Treasure**, tesōro, M.
- Treaty**, tratādo, M.
- Tree**, árbol, M.
- Triumphant**, triunfānte; ufāno, a.
- Troublesome**, molesto, a; fastidiōso, a.
- Tremble** (*to*), temblār (tiemblo, as, a).
- True**, verdadēro, a.
- Truth**, verdād, F.
- Try** (*to*), probār (pruebo, as); *to t. to*, tratār de, procurār de.
- Tuesday**, mārtes, M.
- Turn around** (*to*), volverse (me vuelvo, ves, ve).
- Twaddle**, charladuría, conversaciōn, F.
- Twice**, dos veces.
- Type**, tipo, M.

## U.

- Uncle**, tio, M.
- Under**, debajo de; bajo; *u. the circumstances*, bajo las circunstancias.
- Undergo** (*to*), sufrir.
- Understand** (*to*), comprendēr, entendēr (entiendo).
- Unfortunate**, desgraciādo, a.
- Unite** (*to*), unir.

United, unido, a; *United States*, Estados Unidos.

Unjust, injusto, a.

Unknown, desconocido, a.

Until, conj., hasta que.

Up to, hasta.

Useful, útil; provechoso, a; de provecho.

Usually, ordinariamente.

## V.

Vain (*puffed up*), vanidoso, a.

Valencia, València, F.

Vanity, vanidad, F.; *selfish v.*, vano egoísmo, M.

Various, diverso, a.

Verdict, fallo, M.

Very, muy, bien; *I am v. glad*, me alegro mucho; *v. much*, muchísimo, a; *v. many*, muchísimos, as.

Vessel, buque, M.

Vice, vicio, M.

Victim, víctima, F.

Vile, ruin.

Village, pueblo, M.; aldéa, F.

Violently, con violencia, F.; *arrebataadamente*.

Visit, visita, F.

Visit (*to*), visitar; *pasār á ver*.

Vivid, vivo, a.

Voice, voz, F. (PL. voces).

Volume, tomo, M.; *volúmen*, M.; *in a small 4to vol.*, en un tomo en cuarto pequeño.

## W.

Wait (*to*), and *to w. for*, esperar, aguardar.

Walk, *paséo*, M.

Wall, *tāpia*, F. (*of an enclosure*); *paréd*, F. (*of a room*); *muralla*, F., or *muro*, M. (*of a town*).

Want (*to*), *meaning to wish*, *querer* (quiero, quieres, quiere); *he wants or wants to*, quiere; *he does not w. to*, no quiere.

Want (*to*), *meaning to need*, *faltār*; *I w.*, me falta; *what do you w.?* ¿qué le falta á V.? *Spaniards only w. good government*, á los Españoles sólo les falta buen gobierno.

War, guerra, F.

Was — *see ser*, *estār*.

Watch (*to*), *velār*.

Water, agua, F. (el agua).

Way, camino, M.; *via*, F.; *in this w.*, de este modo.

Wear (*to*), *llevār*, *gastār*.

Weather, tiempo, M.; *what kind of w.?* ¿qué tal t.?

Week, *semāna*, F.

Well, bien; *as w. as*, tan b. como; *so w. that*, tan b. que.

Were — *see ser*, *estār*.

Western, occidental; *W. Europe*, la Eurōpa o., or el Oeste de Eurōpa.

What? ¿qué? *w. kind of?* ¿qué tal?

What (*that which*), lo que; *w. if*, si (in interrog. and exclam.).

Wheat, trigo, M.

When, cuando; ¿cuándo?

Where, donde, ¿dónde? (*rest*); *adonde*, *adónde* (*motion*); *en donde* (*in what place*).

Which, que; (*of two*), cuál.

While, *miētras*.

White, blanco, a; *superl. blanquísimo*, a.

Who, *que*; *whom*, *que*, á quien.  
 Whole (*the*), todo el, toda la; *entero*, a, (after the noun).  
 Whose, cuyo, ¿cuyo? *w. name is*, que se llama.  
 Why? ¿por qué?  
 Wild-boar, jabalí, m.  
 Will (*to*), *meaning to wish*, *querer* (quiero, es, e); *w. you?* ¿quiere V.?  
 Window, ventāna, f.  
 Wine, vino, m.  
 Wine-growing, vinícola.  
 Winter, invierno, m.  
 Wisdom, sabiduría, f.  
 Wise, sabio, a; (*prudent*) *prudente*, *discreto*, a.  
 Wish (*to*) *anyone anything*, *desear* (deseo).  
 Wish (*to*), *to will, to desire*, *querer* (quiero); *she does not w.*, no quiere.  
 Wit and humor, sal, f.  
 With, *con*; *together w.*, *juntamente con*.  
 Within, dentro de.  
 Without, *sin*; *w. doing*, *sin hacer*.  
 Woman, mujer, f.  
 Wood, madera, f.

Woods, monte, m.  
 Word, palabra, f.; voz, f.; *in these words*, *en estos términos*.  
 Work (*to*), *trabajar*; *to be working*, *estar trabajando*.  
 Work, trabajo, m.; obra, f.  
 Worst (*the*), el (la, lo) peor.  
 Worth (*to be*), *valer* (valgo, vales, vale); *is w.*, *vale*.  
 Worthy, digno, a (*of, de*).  
 Wounded (*to be*), *ser herido*, a; *he has been w.*, *ha sido herido*.  
 Write (*to*), *escribir* (p.p. escrito, a).  
 Writings, escritos, m., obras, f.  
 Written, escrito, a.

## Y.

Year, año, m.  
 Yea, sí.  
 Yesterday, ayer.  
 You, *usted*, PL. *ustedes* (*polite*); *tú*, PL. *vosotros*, *as* (*familiar*).  
 Young, joven; *young man*, *joven*, m.; *young woman*, *joven*, f.  
 Your, *su*, PL. *sus* (*polite*); *vuestro*, a (*familiar*).  
 Youth, *juventud*, f.

## APPENDIX.

**Able**, hábil, capáz.

**After**, *adv.*, después; *some time a.*,  
algun tiempo d.

**Are** (*they*), son, están, § 391.

**Attends**, asiste á.

**Be** (*he-will*), será, estará.

**Been** (*has*), ha sido, *p.* 398, 5.

**Began** (*he, it*), empezó, principió.

**Between**, entre.

**Bought**, *p.p.*, comprado, a; *he*  
*bought*, compró.

**Brought** (*he*), trajo.

**By**, por, de.

**Came** (*he, it*), vino.

**Cherish** (*they*), abrigan.

**Comes**, viene.

**Comes from**, sale de, *p.* 397.

**Consists of**, consta de.

**Cry** (*they*), lloran.

**Disturbed** (*they*), alborotaron.

**Doing** (*of*), de hacer, § 718.

**Entered** (*they*), entraron.

**Err** (*they*), yerran.

**Ever** (*at any time*), alguna vez,  
*p.* 413, 4.

**Everywhere**, en todas partes.

**Few**, pocos, as, *p.* 397.

**Fifth**, quinto, a.

**Find** (*you-will*), V. encontrará,  
or hallará.

**First**, primero, a (primer, § 123).

**Found** (*I*), hallé, encontré.

**Gave** (*he*), dió, § 543.

**Gives**, da.

**Go** (*I*), voy.

**Go** (*we*), vamos; *we-shall-go*, iremos.

**Go** (*they*), van.

**Goes**, va.

**Goods** (*property*), bienes, M. PL.

**Has**, tiene; *has been*, ha sido,  
*p.* 398, 5.

**Have** (*we*), tenemos.

**Have** (*they*), tienen.

**He**, él.

**Her**, su, PL. sus.

**Highland-woman**, montanesa, f.

**Him** (*obj. of verb*), le, lo; (*after*  
*prep.*), él.

**His**, su, PL. sus.

**I**, yo.

**Important**, importante; *are i.*, im-  
portan.

**Is**, es; está, § 391.

**Jest** (*they*), chancéan.

**Known**, conocido, a, *p.* 397; sa-  
bido, a.

**Lands** (*estates*), heredades, tierras,  
F. PL.

**Live** (*they*), viven.

**Lived** (*he*), vivió.

**Lives**, vive; (*dwells*), vive, habita.

**Living** (*active*), vivo, a.

**Lost** (*he*), perdió.

**My**, mi, PL. mis.

**Occurred** (*it*), sucedió, tuvo lugar  
(*took place*).

One, uno, a (un).

[Ones], *not to be translated.*

Order to (*in*), para (*w. inf.*).

People (*folks*), gente, F.; (*the masses*), pueblo, M.

Placed (*he*), colocó.

Plays (*he*), juéga.

Pleases (*he, it*), gūsta, agrāda.

Port, puérto, M.

Prisoner, preso, M.

Read (*he*), leyó; *he was reading*, leía.

Rejoice (*to*), alegrāse.

Reliable, fidedigno, a; *r. news*, noticias ciertas, *or* fidedignas.

Religious, religiōso, a, *p.* 397.

Resides, habita, reside.

Saw (*I*), ví.

Second, segūndo, a.

See (*I*), vëo.

Serve (*they*), sirven (*de, as*).

Seven, siēte.

She, ella.

Some, alguno, a (algūn); PL. algunos, as.

Spanish language (*the*), la lengua castellana, *or* española.

Speaks, habla.

Spends (*he*), pasa (*of time*); gasta (*of money*).

Spent (*I*), pasé (*of time*).

Spent (*we*), pasāmos.

Spoke (*he*), habló.

Spoken, hablādo, a.

Studies, estūdia.

Summer-house, quinta, F.

Their, su, PL. sus.

These, estos, as.

They, ellos, as.

Those, esos, as; aquellos, as.

Threatened (*it*), amenazó; *imperf.*, amenazāba.

Three, tres.

Took (*he*), tomó.

Undergoes, sūfre.

Understand (*they*), entiēden, comprēden.

Unites, une.

Visited (*I have*), he visitādo.

Visits, visita.

Wait (*he-will-*), aguardará.

Was (*he, it*), fué, era; estuvo, estaba.

We, nosōtros, as.

Wear (*they*), llēvan, gāstan.

Were (*they*), fuéron, *p.* 398; éran; estuviéron, estāban.

Who? ¿quién? PL. ¿quiénes?

Wood (*material*), madēra, F.; (*fire-w.*), leña, F.; PL. bosque, M.; (*elevated wood-land*), monte, M.

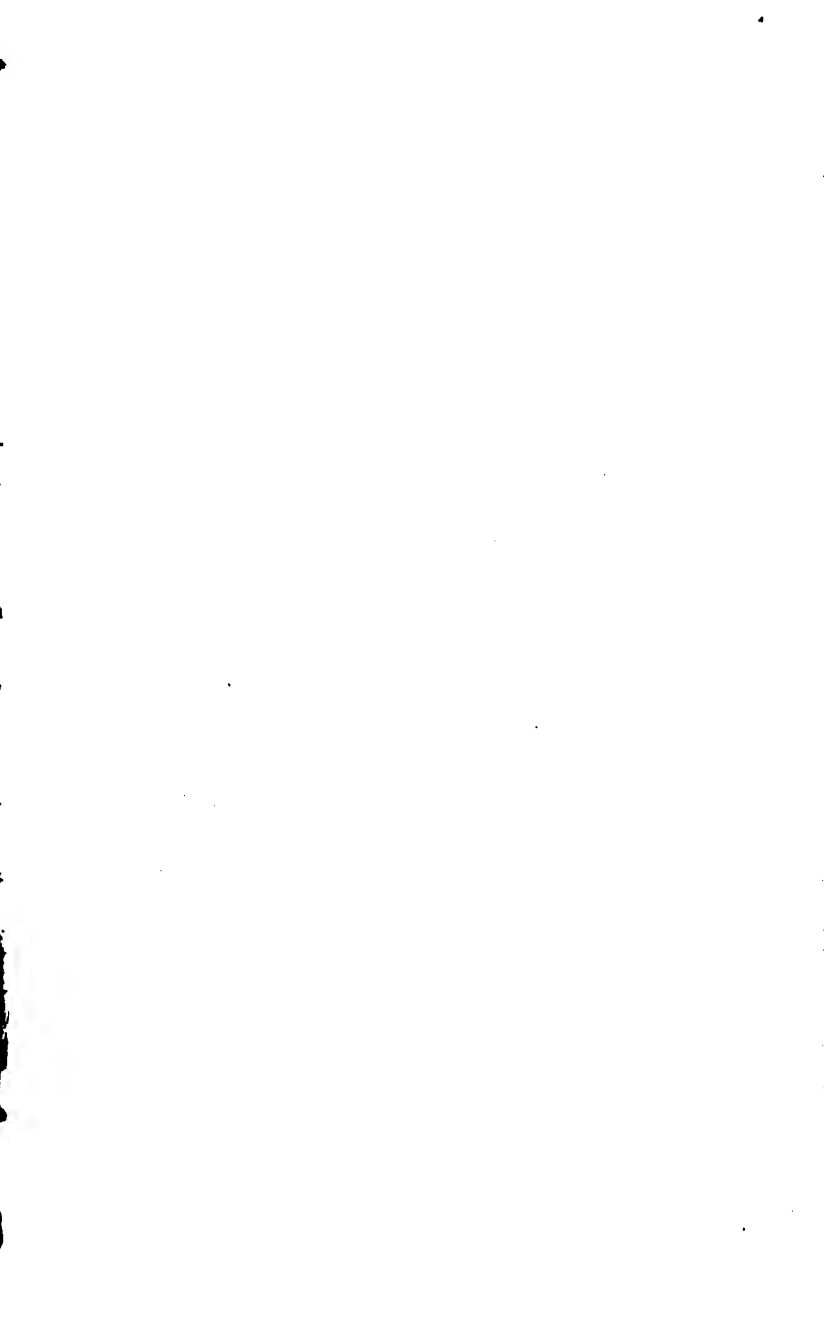
Worked (*he*), trabajó.

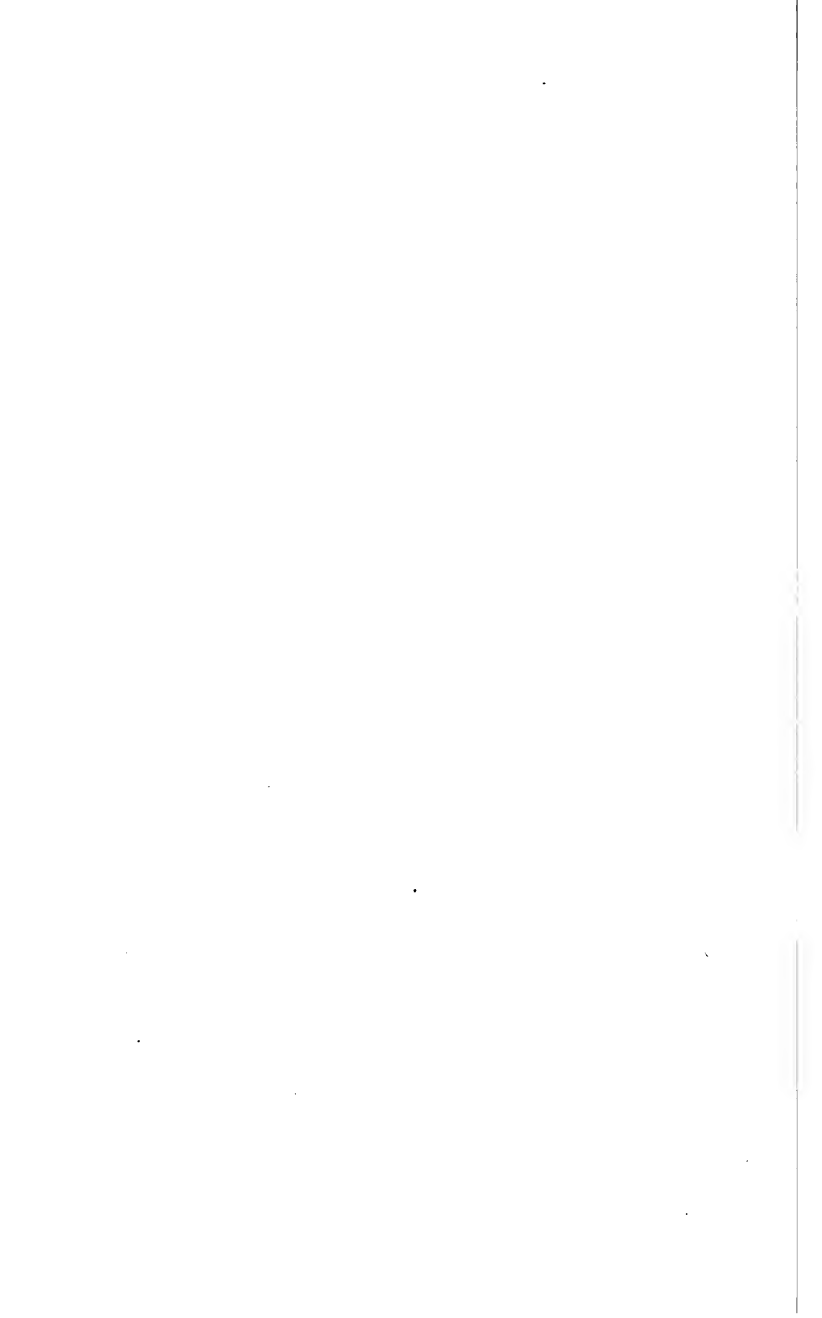
Writes, escribe.

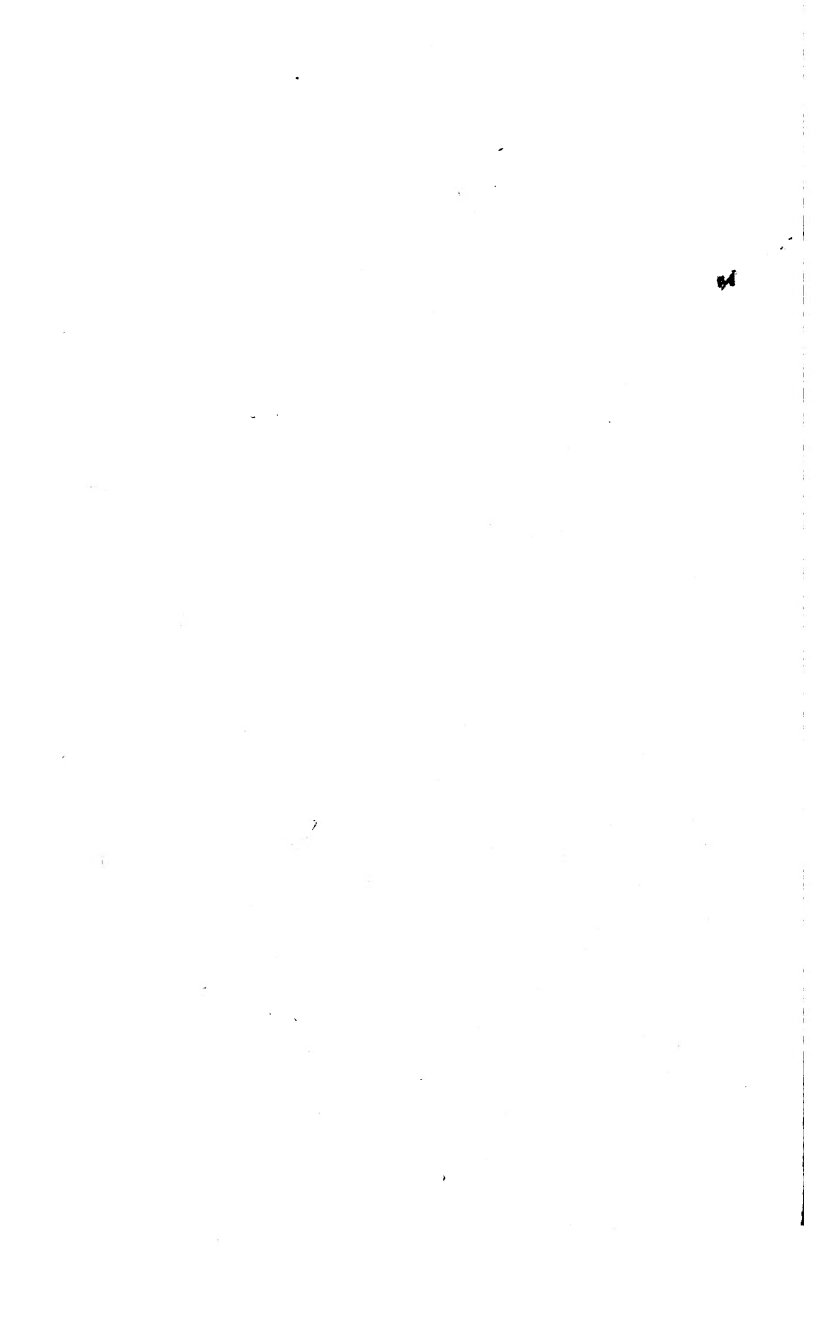
Writing (*he-was-*), escribía.

Wrote (*he*), escribió.

Ye, vosōtros, as.









UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY  
BERKELEY

Return to desk from which borrowed.

This book is DUE on the last date stamped below.

FEB 6 1948

REC'D LD

20 Nov '64 JC

JUN 17 1960

21 JUL '60 AE

30 Oct '49 MW

*Renewed*

1 Dec '50 BL

REC'D LD

JUL 30 1960

JAN 20 '65 - 8

Univ. Santa Clara

INTER-LIBRARY  
LOAN

1 Mar '58 RK

IN STACKS

MAR 25 1958

13 May '64 HK

SEP 8 1972

MAR 19 1980

*Cleared for*

JUN 10 '64

REC'D LD

MAR 25 1981

*Stack*

21 Apr '60 CR

MAY 21 '64 - 10 AM

LD 21-100m-9,'47(A5702s16)476

U.C. BERKELEY LIBRARIES



0024191964

00970

021799

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

